

**MINUTES**  
of the  
**NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY**

of the  
**PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH  
IN AMERICA**

**VOLUME 1**

Part I  
**DIRECTORY**  
Of General Assembly  
Committees and Agencies

Part II  
**JOURNAL**

Part III  
**CORRECTIONS OF  
PREVIOUS MINUTES**

Part IV  
**INDEX**

**VOLUME 2**

**APPENDICES**

**June 17-20, 1991  
Birmingham, Alabama**

The *Minutes of the General Assembly* are published by the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly and distributed by the Committee for Christian Education and Publications.

Order from:

The Committee for Christian Education and Publications  
PCA Bookstore  
1852 Century Place, Suite 101  
Atlanta, Georgia 30345

**TIME AND PLACE OF THE NEXT MEETING OF THE  
GENERAL ASSEMBLY:**

**Monday, June 15, 1992 through Friday, June 19, 1992  
Roanoke, Virginia**

**FUTURE GENERAL ASSEMBLIES:**

June 4 - 11, 1993 -- Columbia, South Carolina  
June 6 - 10, 1994 -- Atlanta, Georgia  
June 1995 -- Dallas, Texas  
June 1996 -- Fort Lauderdale, Florida

**19th GENERAL ASSEMBLY ACTIONS SENT TO PRESBYTERIES  
AND SESSIONS:**

- I. Proposed Amendments to *BCO*:
- \* *BCO* 10-3 See 19-56, p. 120
  - \* *BCO* 42-11 See 19-53, pp. 110 ff
  - \* *BCO* 42-5 See 19-53, p. 111
  - \* *BCO* 43-7 See 19-53, pp. 111 ff
  - \* *BCO* 43-3 See 19-53, p. 112
  - \* *BCO* 58-4 (continued) See 19-9, item 5, p. 54
- II. Papers for Study and Response:
- \* Report on Divorce and Remarriage  
Westminster Confession on Divorce and Remarriage  
Refer questions or comments to Committee by  
February 1, 1992  
See Appendix P, page 604 of Volume 2.

**MINUTES  
OF THE  
NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
VOLUME 1**

<b>PART I</b>	<b>DIRECTORY</b> . . . . .	3
<b>PART II</b>	<b>JOURNAL</b> . . . . .	19
<b>PART III</b>	<b>CORRECTIONS TO PREVIOUS MINUTES</b> . . . . .	211
<b>PART IV</b>	<b>INDEX</b> . . . . .	217

**VOLUME 2 -- APPENDICES**

Appendix A	- Stated Clerk . . . . .	227
Appendix B	- Board of Directors . . . . .	253
Appendix C	- Administrative Committee . . . . .	256
Appendix D	- Christian Education . . . . .	316
Appendix E	- Covenant College . . . . .	321
Appendix F	- Covenant Seminary . . . . .	329
Appendix G	- Insurance, Annuities & Relief . . . . .	330
Appendix H	- Interchurch Relations . . . . .	341
Appendix I	- Investor's Fund . . . . .	346
Appendix J	- Mission to North America . . . . .	352
Appendix K	- Mission to the World . . . . .	385
Appendix L	- Nominating Committee . . . . .	443
Appendix M	- PCA Foundation . . . . .	470
Appendix N	- Ridge Haven . . . . .	472
Appendix O	- Standing Judicial Commission . . . . .	475
Appendix P	- Ad Interim Committee on Divorce and Remarriage . . . . .	604
Appendix Q	- Certificate of Incorporation . . . . .	700
Appendix R	- Bylaws . . . . .	703
Appendix S	- Rules for Assembly Operations . . . . .	710

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### SUCCESSION OF MODERATORS

ASSEMBLY	YEAR	NAME	PLACE OF ASSEMBLY
1st	1973	Hon. W. Jack Williamson	Birmingham, AL
2nd	1974	Rev. Erskine L. Jackson	Macon, GA
3rd	1975	Judge Leon F. Hendrick	Jackson, MS
4th	1976	Rev. William A. McIllwaine	Greenville, SC
5th	1977	Hon. John T. Clark	Smyrna, GA
6th	1978	Rev. G. Aiken Taylor	Grand Rapids, MI
7th	1979	Hon. William F. Joseph, Jr.	Charlotte, NC
8th	1980	Rev. Paul G. Settle	Savannah, GA
9th	1981	Hon. Kenneth L. Ryskamp	Ft. Lauderdale, FL
10th	1982	Rev. R. Laird Harris	Grand Rapids, MI
11th	1983	Hon. L. B. Austin III	Norfolk, VA
12th	1984	Rev. James M. Baird, Jr.	Baton Rouge, LA
13th	1985	Hon. Richard C. Chewning	St. Louis, MO
14th	1986	Rev. Frank M. Barker, Jr.	Philadelphia, PA
15th	1987	Hon. Gerald Sovereign	Grand Rapids, MI
16th	1988	Rev. D. James Kennedy	Knoxville, TN
17th	1989	Hon. John B. White, Jr.	La Mirada, CA
18th	1990	Rev. Cortez A. Cooper, Jr.	Atlanta, GA
19th	1991	Hon. Mark Belz	St. Louis, MO

### SUCCESSION OF STATED CLERKS

YEARS	NAME
1973 - 1988	Rev. Morton H. Smith
1988 -	Rev. Paul R. Gilchrist

DIRECTORY

**PART I**

**DIRECTORY OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
COMMITTEES AND OFFICES**

**I. OFFICERS OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY**

**Moderator**

RE Mark Belz  
7777 Bonhomme, Suite 1710  
St. Louis, Missouri 63105  
Phone: 314-863-0200

**Stated Clerk, Coordinator for Administration**

TE Paul R. Gilchrist  
1852 Century Place, Suite 190  
Atlanta, GA 30345  
Phone: 404-320-3366

**OFFICES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY AGENCIES**

**Coordinator of Christian Education and Publications**

TE Charles H. Dunahoo  
1852 Century Place, Suite 101  
Atlanta, GA 30345  
Phone: 404-320-3388

**Coordinator for Mission to North America**

TE Terry L. Gyger  
1852 Century Place, Suite 205  
Atlanta, GA 30345  
Phone: 404-320-3330

**Coordinator for Mission to the World**

TE John E. Kyle  
1852 Century Place, Suite 201  
Atlanta, GA 30345  
Phone: 404-320-3373

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**President Covenant College**

RE Frank A. Brock  
Covenant College  
Lookout Mountain, Georgia 30750  
Phone: 404-820-1560

**President Covenant Theological Seminary**

TE Paul D. Kooistra  
12330 Conway Road  
St. Louis, Missouri 63141  
Phone: 314-434-4044

**Director of Insurance, Annuities and Relief**

RE James L. Hughes  
1852 Century Place, Suite 170  
Atlanta, GA 30345  
Phone: 404-320-3377

**Director of Investor's Fund for Building and Development**

TE Cecil A. Brooks  
1852 Century Place, Suite 204  
Atlanta, GA 30345  
Phone: 404-320-3311

**Director of the Presbyterian Church in America Foundation**

RE John W. S. Hudson  
1852 Century Place, Suite 180  
Atlanta, GA 30345  
Phone: 404-320-3303

**Director of Ridge Haven**

RE James Poteet  
P. O. Box 565  
Rosman, North Carolina 28772  
Phone: 704-862-3916

**Director of the PCA Historical Center**

RE Jerry Kornegay  
12330 Conway Road  
St. Louis, Missouri 63141  
Phone: 314-469-9077

DIRECTORY

II. PERMANENT COMMITTEES

ADMINISTRATIVE COMMITTEE

*Teaching Elders:*

L. Roy Taylor, Grace  
711 Huntindon Road  
Hattiesburg, MS 39402-2326

William C. Hughes, MS Valley  
1390 N. State  
Jackson, MS 39202

Donald J. MacNair, Missouri  
480 Brightspur Lane  
Ballwin, MO 63011

William A. Fox, Jr., Calvary  
1300 India Hook Road  
Rock Hill, SC 29730

Grady Love, N. Georgia  
1534 Collier Drive SE  
Smyrna, GA 30080

Robert S. Hornick, Gulf Coast  
406 S. Navy Blvd  
Pensacola, FL 32507

*Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1995  
Harold E. Whitlock, Heritage  
437 Stella Drive  
Hockessin, DE 19707

William Bonner, New Jersey  
625 Robert Fulton Highway  
Quarryville, PA 17566

Class of 1994  
David S. Huggins, Jr., TN Valley  
942 Van Leer Drive  
Nashville, TN 37220

Class of 1993  
William A. Rocap, Jr., C. Carolina  
Route 3, Box 687  
Conover, NC 28613

Class of 1992  
Richard Herbert, Mid-America  
P. O. Box 37  
Minco, OK 73059

Scott T. Levy, Illiana  
80 Steelecrest Lane  
Troy, IL 62294

Alternates

William H. Moore, IV, Potomac  
2902 Taylor Avenue  
Baltimore, MD 21234

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Chairman of Committee or Board or his designate

TE J. Render Caines, CC  
TE R. Thomas Cheely, MTW  
TE Cortez A. Cooper, Jr., MNA  
RE Robert C. Eberst, PCAF  
RE G. Paul Jones, Jr., CTS  
TE Ronald L. Shaw, CE & P  
TE James E. Shipley, IAR  
RE Neil Adams, IFBD  
RE Lindsey Tippins, RH

COMMITTEE FOR CHRISTIAN EDUCATION AND PUBLICATIONS

*Teaching Elders:*

J. Alan Carter, Evangel  
5120 Hollow Log Lane  
Birmingham, AL 35244

Paul Settle, Calvary  
P.O. Box 565  
Rosman, NC 28772

Robert Smallman, N. Illinois  
1007 E. Third Street  
Merrill, WI 54452

Norman E. Harper, Grace  
3907 N. 7th Avenue Ext.  
Laurel, MS 39440

John R. Riddle, Palmetto  
212 Sherwood Drive  
Conway, SC 29526

Ronald L. Shaw, Palmetto  
355 Hitchcock Parkway  
Aiken, SC 29801

James L. Shull, MS Valley  
1550 Riverwood Drive  
Jackson, MS 39211

*Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1995  
Gary Flye, Rocky Mountain  
6727 Taft Circle  
Arvada, CO 80004

Ralph Mittendorff, S. Florida  
6678 Tibauron Drive  
Boca Raton, FL 33433

Class of 1994  
Julian Davis, C. Georgia  
1806 Double Gate Court  
Augusta, GA 30904

Steve Fox, SE Alabama  
P. O. Box 11425  
Montgomery, AL 36111

Class of 1993  
Robert D. Rogland, Pacific NW  
18712 Pioneer Way  
Orting, WA 98360

Class of 1992  
Phil Johnson, Covenant  
Route 1, Box 30  
Osceola, AR 72370

Barrett Mosbacher, C. Carolina  
7411 Castlebar Road  
Matthews, NC 28105



## DIRECTORY

### Alternates

David Bowen, E. Carolina  
507 Colony Woods Drive  
Chapel Hill, NC 27514

Rodney A. Andrews, SE Alabama  
108 Shadowlawn Drive  
Dothan, AL 36303

### Advisory Members

James E. Poteet, Director of Ridge Haven  
Frank Brock, President of Covenant College  
Paul Kooistra, President of Covenant Theological Seminary

## COMMITTEE ON MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA

### *Teaching Elders:*

Kenneth A. Smith, New Jersey  
545 Meadow Road  
Princeton, NJ 08543

Lewis Ruff, N. California  
3410 Vermont Place  
Pleasanton, CA 94588

Harry Reeder, C. Carolina  
305 Pineville-Matthews Road  
Matthews, NC 28105

W. Wilson Benton, Missouri  
12928 Ladue Road  
St. Louis, MO 63141

Cortez A. Cooper, SE Alabama  
1728 South Hull Street  
Montgomery, AL 36104

William N. Whitwer, MS Valley  
P. O. Box 4862  
Jackson, MS 39216

Gerald G. Morgan, TN Valley  
9132 Kingston Pike  
Knoxville, TN 37923

### *Ruling Elders:*

#### Class of 1995

Eugene Betts, Philadelphia  
108 Rock Rose Lane  
Radnor, PA 19087-3736

#### Class of 1994

John White, Jr., N. Georgia  
1490 Montevallo Circle  
Decatur, GA 30033

John Wheeler, Calvary  
2553 East Georgia Road  
Simpsonville, SC 29681

#### Class of 1993

R. Arthur Williams, SW. Florida  
2218 Pinewood Blvd  
Sebring, FL 33870

James C. Turner, C. Georgia  
719 Valley Trail  
Macon, GA 31204

#### Class of 1992

John Jardine, Jr., Heritage  
1963 Mitten Street  
Dover, DE 19901

Authur Rogers, Covenant  
851 West Semmes  
Osceola, AR 72370

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Andrew Silman, Louisiana  
5314 Newell  
Zachary, LA 70791

### Alternates

James Hanemaayer, Pacific  
1551 W. Via Bello Drive  
Rialto, CA 92376

## COMMITTEE ON MISSION TO THE WORLD

### *Teaching Elders:*

Shelton Sanford, Calvary  
1300 India Hook Road  
Rock Hill, SC 29732

Robert F. Auffarth, Heritage  
505 Woodlawn Avenue  
Newark, DE 19711

Jerram Barrs, Missouri  
280 Amber Jack Drive  
Ballwin, MO 63021

Frank M. Barker, Evangel  
2200 Briarwood Way  
Birmingham, AL 35243

Jack B. Scott, MS Valley  
1530 Sherman Avenue  
Jackson, MS 39211

R. Thomas Cheely, Evangel  
3132 Dolly Ridge Road  
Birmingham, AL 35243

Thomas E. Ramsay, Pacific NW  
3101 SW 105th  
Seattle, WA 98146

Sanders L. Willson, TN Valley  
106 Hardy Road  
Lookout Mountain, GA 30750

### *Ruling Elders:*

#### Class of 1995

Pete Austin, TN Valley  
1703 Crestwood Drive  
Chattanooga, TN 37405

James Banks, W. Carolina  
Christ School  
Arden, NC 28704

#### Class of 1994

Gerald Sovereign, Gulf Coast  
3992 Baypoint Drive  
Gulf Breeze, FL 32561

James Wright, Palmetto  
2209 Raven Trail  
West Columbia, SC 29169

#### Class of 1993

Loyd Strickland, N. Georgia  
Crystal Farms  
Chestnut Mountain, GA 30502

#### Class of 1992

Donald MacKenzie, Philadelphia  
210 Stanwood Road  
Fairless Hills, PA 19030

Nelson M. Kennedy, Ascension  
RD #3, Box 173  
Darlington, PA 16115

### Alternates

Charles Burns, Heritage  
2509 Dorval Road  
Wilmington, DE 19810

## DIRECTORY

### III. AGENCIES

#### BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF COVENANT COLLEGE

##### *Teaching Elders:*

Arthur C. Broadwick, Ascension  
504 Geyser Road  
Pittsburgh, PA 15205

William S. Barker, Philadelphia  
163 Lismore Avenue  
Glenside, PA 19038

Robert S. Rayburn, Pacific NW  
818 South M Street  
Tacoma, WA 98405

Lonnie Barnes, New River  
5526 Twilight Road, NW  
Roanoke, VA 24019

Thomas G. Kay, Warrior  
139 Valley Street  
Centreville, AL 35042

C. Al Lutz, Great Lakes  
975 Charwood Drive  
Lexington, KY 40515

Allen Mawhinney, C. Florida  
Reformed Theological Seminary  
1015 Maitland Center Commons  
Maitland, FL 32751

J. Render Caines, TN Valley  
Route 8, 114 Larry Drive  
Ringgold, GA 30736

Whaley Barton, Palmetto  
3 Turtle Cove Lane  
Irmo, SC 29063

##### *Ruling Elders:*

##### Class of 1995

Hugh O. Maclellan, Sr. TN Valley  
109 East Brow Road  
Lookout Mountain, TN 37350

Robert A. Watts, Northeast  
17 Briarwood Drive  
Barrington, RH 02806

Robert G. Avis, Missouri  
1706 Warson Estates Drive  
St. Louis, MO 63124

Dwight L. Allen, N. Georgia  
7284 Milam Road  
Winston, GA 30187

##### Class of 1994

Richard C. Chewning, North Texas  
P. O. Box 430  
Hewitt, TX 76643

C. H. Crews, Jr., Calvary  
140 Glenbrooke Way  
Greenville, SC 29615

Robert L. Frederick, TN Valley  
9133 Pleasant Lane  
Ooltewah, TN 37363

Donald E. Rittler, Potomac  
506 Chadwick Road  
Lutherville, MD 21093

##### Class of 1993

Charles E. Carraher, S. Florida  
5760 NW 71 Terrace  
Parkland, FL 33067

John C. Wright, SE Alabama  
3524 Royal Carriage Drive  
Montgomery, AL 36116

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Mark Van Gilst, Heritage  
308 Possum Park Road  
Newark, DE 19711

J. Robert Fiol, James River  
1520 Narbonne Court  
Virginia Beach, VA 23456

Frederick Marsh, MS Valley  
2618 Southerland Drive  
Jackson, MS 39216-4825

John S. McNicoll, W. Carolina  
P. O. Box 67  
Hazelwood, NC 27838

Lane G. Adams, Potomac  
6722 Surrey Lane  
Clarksville, MD 21029

Robert W. Bowman, C. Georgia  
337 Washington Avenue  
Savannah, GA 31405

### Class of 1992

Kenneth E. Avis, Covenant  
2176 Gorham Place  
Germantown, TN 38138

G. Richard Hostetter, TN Valley  
1602 Lula Lake Road  
Lookout Mountain, GA 30750

James Roberts, SW Florida  
100 N. Starcrest Drive  
Clearwater, FL 34618

## BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

### *Teaching Elders:*

Hudson T. Armerding, Susq. Valley  
16 Fairway Drive  
Quarryville, PA 17566

David Alexander, Calvary  
1401 Walnut Grove Road  
Roebuck, SC 29376

Richard P. Ellingsworth, South Texas  
15822 N. Barker's Landing Road  
Houston, TX 77079

Michael N. Malone, Great Lakes  
123 South 21st Street  
Richmond, IN 47374

### *Ruling Elders:*

#### Class of 1995

Robert Burrows, Ascension  
6772 St. James Circle  
Hudson, OH 44236

Art Stoll, N. Illinois  
750 E. Main Street  
S. Elgin, IL 60177

Robert E. Morrison, Potomac  
116 S. Alfred Street  
Alexandria, VA 22314

John J. Reed, Missouri  
633 Hickory Lane  
St. Louis, MO 63131

#### Class of 1994

Bill Hay, Evangel  
65 Old Montgomery Highway  
Birmingham, AL 35209

Vernon Pierce, SW Florida  
5220 Brittany Dr, South - Apt 1201  
St. Petersburg, FL 33715

## DIRECTORY

James Reynolds, Missouri  
419 Conway Lake Drive  
St. Louis, MO 63141

James B. Orders, Jr., Calvary  
P. O. Box 3827  
Greenville, SC 29607

Richard W. Tyson, Philadelphia  
1518 Manley Road, Apt. B-32  
West Chester, PA 19382

Class of 1993  
Edward S. Harris, Great Lakes  
902 Canterbury Trail  
Richmond, IN 47374

William Spink, Jr., Covenant  
1665 Germantown Road, South  
Germantown, TN 38138

G. Paul Jones, C. Georgia  
P. O. Box 6838  
Macon, GA 31213

Robert B. Hezlep, Jr., Evangel  
104 Davis Drive  
Odenville, AL 35120

Allen L. Knox, Jr. SE Alabama  
3652 Gaylord Place  
Montgomery, AL 36105

Charles B. Holliday, Ascension  
141 Crescent Hills Road  
Pittsburgh, PA 15235

Class of 1992  
John E. Spencer, Evangel  
3500 Mill Run Road  
Birmingham, AL 35223

Stephen Smallman, Potomac  
1164 Wimbledon Drive  
McLean, VA 22101

James D. Hatch, N. Georgia  
4421 D Creek Ford Drive  
Duluth, GA 30136

Rodney D. Stortz, Missouri  
2209 North Ballas Road  
St. Louis, MO 63131

John W. Robertson, Warrior  
501 Rice Valley Road North  
Tuscaloosa, AL 35406

## BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE INSURANCE, ANNUITY, AND RELIEF FUNDS

Class of 1995

Denny Carew, Rocky Mountain  
6406 Dewsbury Drive  
Colorado Springs, CO 80918

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Ronald W. Horgan, Mid-America  
7441 S. Atlanta Avenue  
Tulsa, OK 74136

John Mardirosian, New Jersey  
101 E. Miami Avenue  
Cherry Hill, NJ 08034

Class of 1994

James E. Shipley, C. Georgia  
1907 Tucker Road  
Perry, GA 31069

Dudley M. Barnes, Covenant  
909 Oakhurst  
Clarksdale, MS 38614

William T. Clarke, Louisiana  
915 Holly Street  
Lake Charles, LA 70601

Class of 1993

Earle Morris, Jr., Palmetto  
159 Lake Murray Terrace  
Lexington, SC 29072

Gordon W. Frost, S. Florida  
9311 NW 38th Place  
Sunrise, FL 33321

Thomas J. Stein, Great Lakes  
6646 Plantation Way  
Cincinnati, OH 45224

Class of 1992

David Jussely, Grace  
2310 Eddy Street  
Hattiesburg, MS 39402

Ralph Paden, TN Valley  
14 Bartram Road  
Lookout Mountain, TN 37350

J. Allen Wright, N. Georgia  
894 Banford Court  
Marietta, GA 30068

Advisory Member: Paul Gilchrist, Stated Clerk

## DIRECTORY

### BOARD OF TRUSTEES FOR THE INVESTOR'S FUND FOR BUILDING AND DEVELOPMENT

#### *Teaching Elders*

Taylor McGown, Evangel  
1437 Tuscany Way  
Germantown, TN 38138

Manuel Salabarria, S. Florida  
175 SW 120 Avenue  
Miami, FL 33184

E. Lee Trinkle III, Evangel  
PO Box 846  
Sylacauga, AL 35150

#### *Ruling Elders*

Class of 1995  
Ben Coombs, Pacific  
5353 Sadring Avenue  
Woodland Hills, CA 91367

Class of 1994  
Charles E. Simpson, C. Georgia  
Star Route, Box 30 A3  
Harlem, GA 30814

Irv Wicker, SE Alabama  
132 Eswick Drive  
Prattville, AL 36037

Class of 1993  
Neil Adams, Pacific  
5594 Jed Smith Road  
Hidden Hills, CA 91302

Class of 1992  
Conley Moffett, Potomac  
4900 Kingston Drive  
Annandale, VA 22003

### BOARD OF TRUSTEES FOR THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA FOUNDATION

#### *Teaching Elders*

Loren V. Watson, Calvary  
3539 Valley High Lane  
Chattanooga, TN 37415

Randy H. Kimbrough, Grace  
P. O. Box 148  
Mt. Olive, MS 39119

#### *Ruling Elders*

Class of 1995  
John N. Albritton, SE Alabama  
3113 Jamestown Drive  
Montgomery, AL 36111

Jean Owens, SW Florida  
13003 Waterford Run Drive  
Riverview, FL 33569

Class of 1994  
David B. Sincere, S. Florida  
819 B Shelton Court  
Lake Worth, FL 33467

Class of 1993  
Robert C. Eberst, S. Florida  
9715 SW 142 Drive  
Miami, FL 33176

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Thomas G. Kay, Jr., Covenant  
905 W. 2nd Street  
Clarksdale, MS 38614

Class of 1992  
Robert C. ("Neal") Ham, C. Georgia  
P. O. Box 7166  
Macon, GA 31209

Advisory Member  
Paul R. Gilchrist, Stated Clerk

**BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF RIDGE HAVEN**

*Teaching Elders:*

Robert F. Brunson, Grace  
P.O. Box 425  
Centreville, MS 39631

Richard O. Smith, N. Georgia  
819 Highway 314  
Fayetteville, GA 30214

J. Allen Herrington, E. Carolina  
4709 Waterbury Road  
Raleigh, NC 27604

Malcolm M. Griffith, Calvary  
P. O. Box 606  
Montrose, AL 36559

*Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1996  
C. Gene Parks, Sr., C. Carolina  
2232 Wilkins Street  
Wilmington NC 27127

Class of 1995  
Howard Hokrein, C. Georgia  
Route 2, Box 330  
Thomson, GA 30824

Class of 1994  
Newton Brooks, Gulf Coast  
413 Main Street  
Chattahoochee, FL 32324

Don L. Lloyd, W. Carolina  
RT #2, Box 517  
Brevard, NC 28712

Class of 1993  
Lindsey Tippins, N. Georgia  
139 Midway Road  
Marietta, GA 30064

Class of 1992  
Royce C. Waites, Palmetto  
P. O. Box 4461  
Columbia, SC 29240

Advisory Member  
Charles H. Dunahoo, Coordinator  
Christian Education and Publications



## DIRECTORY

### IV. SPECIAL COMMITTEES

#### ASSEMBLY THEOLOGICAL EXAMINING COMMITTEE

##### *Teaching Elders:*

D. Clair Davis, Philadelphia  
300 Wenner Way  
Ft. Washington, PA 19034

Robert Reymond, S. Florida  
5748 NE 16th Avenue  
Ft. Lauderdale, FL 33334

Douglas F. Kelly, MS Valley  
2025 Riverside Drive  
Jackson, MS 39202

Curtis Crenshaw, Covenant  
6308 Heathcliff Cove  
Memphis, TN 38134

R. Laird Harris, Heritage  
9 Homewood Road  
Wilmington, DE 19803

##### *Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1994  
Roy Gamble, SE Alabama  
14 Creek Drive  
Montgomery, AL 36117

Class of 1993  
Bruce Kitchens, C. Georgia  
11 Summerville Lane  
Augusta, GA 30909

##### Class of 1992

##### Alternates

David Miner, New Jersey  
15 Ashwood Terrace  
Port Orange, NJ 07052

#### COMMITTEE ON CONSTITUTIONAL BUSINESS

##### *Teaching Elders:*

Craig Childs, Evangel  
1026 Mohring Place  
Leeds, AL 35094

Roland Barnes, C. Georgia  
119 College Blvd  
Statesboro, GA 30458

E. Crowell Cooley, N. Illinois  
6709 Arizona Avenue  
Hammond, IN 46323

##### *Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1995  
Daniel Domin, S. Florida  
20821 Soneto Drive  
Boca Raton, FL 33433

Class of 1994  
Richard Springer, New Jersey  
896 Cindi Court  
Lakewood, NJ 08701

Class of 1993  
David C. Lachman, Philadelphia  
127 Woodland Road  
Wyncote, PA 19095

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Rod S. Mays, Calvary  
329 Woodruff Road  
Simpsonville, SC 29681

Class of 1992  
Granville Dutton, North Texas  
9810 Ridgehaven  
Garland, TX 75238

Danny Levi, Grace  
12 Kayser Lane  
Gulfport, MS 39507

Alternates  
S. A. Miller, Westminster  
Route 1, Box 330A  
Rural Retreat, VA 24368

## COMMITTEE ON INTERCHURCH RELATIONS

### *Teaching Elders:*

Henry L. Smith, SE Alabama  
585 Upper Kingston Road  
Prattville, AL 36067

Robert Vasholz, Missouri  
1019 Orchard Lakes  
St. Louis, MO 63146

K. Eric Perrin, Palmetto  
5637 Bush River  
Columbia, SC 29212

Tim Fortner, Covenant  
1503 Lawndale Drive  
Tupelo, MS 38801-6133

### *Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1994  
George H. Gulley, Jr., Grace  
505 Storm Ave.  
Brookhaven, MS 39601

Class of 1993  
Jack Merry, Northeast  
21 Helen Drive  
Queensbury, NY 12804

Class of 1992  
Michael L. Frey, Philadelphia  
765 Hathaway Lane  
Ardmore, PA 19003

Alternates  
Wilson Barbee, C. Carolina  
P. O. Box 192  
Locust, NC 28097

### *Ex-Officio*

Paul R. Gilchrist, TN Valley, Stated Clerk  
Carl Wilhelm, North Georgia, MTW

## STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION

### *Teaching Elder*

Michael D. Bolus, C. Georgia  
P. O. Box 398  
Thomson, GA 30824

John Sartelle, Covenant  
4738 Walnut Grove road  
Memphis, TN 38117

### *Ruling Elder*

Class of 1995  
Mark Belz, Missouri  
429 Way  
Kirkwood, MO 63122

W. Jack Williamson, SE Alabama  
P. O. Box 467  
Greenville, AL 36037

## DIRECTORY

Paul Kooistra, Warrior  
12330 Conway Road  
St. Louis, MO 63141

Dewey Roberts, Mid-America  
8800 Urban View  
Fort Smith AR 72903

LeRoy Ferguson III, Palmetto  
3100 Covenant Road  
Columbia, SC 29204

Robert Stuart, Southwest  
14 Spurwood Court  
Colorado Springs, CO 80919-8103

Robert M. Ferguson, Pacific  
2704 McNutt Street  
Bakersfield, CA 93306

Dominic A. Aquila, S. Florida  
8485 SW 112 Street  
Miami, FL 33156

John S. Ragland, South Texas  
3333 Oak Ridge Drive  
Bryan, TX 77802

David W. Hall, TN Valley  
115 Bradley Avenue  
Oak Ridge, TN 37830

John Montgomery, S. Florida  
P.O. Box 950340  
Lake Mary, FL 32795

Morton H. Smith, W. Carolina  
105 Connestee Trail  
Brevard, NC 28712

Gerald Sovereign, Gulf Coast  
3992 Baypoint Drive  
Gulf Breeze, FL 32561

Class of 1994  
Harrison Brown, Susq. Valley  
RD 1, Box 520  
Palmyra, PA 17078

Frank Horton, MS Valley  
704 East Leake  
Clinton, MS 39056

John B. White, Jr., N. Georgia  
1490 Montevallo Circle  
Decatur, GA 30033

Class of 1993  
John E. Spencer, Evangel  
3500 Mill Run Road  
Birmingham, AL 35223

John W. Lane, New Jersey  
1008 Friendship Lane  
Cherry Hill, NJ 08002

William N. Brown, North Texas  
4214 Asheville Drive  
Garland, TX 75041

Class of 1992  
Roy E. Allen, Great Lakes  
1047 South Van Dyke  
Bad Axe, MI 48413

Stanley D. Wells, Heartland  
26 IndiCircle  
Brevard, NC 28712

Eugene Friedline, James River  
9601 Shiloh Drive  
Richmond, VA 23237

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**V. AD INTERIM COMMITTEES**

**AD INTERIM COMMITTEE ON DIVORCE AND REMARRIAGE**

TE Paul Fowler, S. Florida, Chairman  
3260 W. Quayside Drive  
Cooper City, FL 33026

RE Joe B. Johnson, TN Valley  
951 Scenic Drive  
Knoxville, TN 37919

TE Andrew Boswell, S. Florida  
2011 NE 60th Street  
Ft. Lauderdale, FL 33308

RE Terry Jones, Missouri  
7777 Bonhomme Ave, Suite 1806  
Clayton, MO 63105

TE Robert S. Rayburn, Pacific NW  
620 South Shirley  
Tacoma, WA 99465

Dr. Diane Langberg - Advisory Member  
8206 High School Rd.  
Elkins Park, PA 19117

TE Robert Stuart, S. Florida  
Mark IV Office Building  
7433 NW 4th Street  
Plantation, FL 33317-2204

TE George Knight, S. Florida  
2051 NE 54th Court  
Ft. Lauderdale, FL 33308

**AD INTERIM COMMITTEE ON PCA COMMUNICATIONS**

RE John D. Holmes  
4625 Centralia Road  
Chester, VA 23831

RE Rod Gragg  
1520 Forest View Road  
Conway, SC 29526

RE Edward Harris  
920 Canterbury Trall  
Richmond, IN 47374

RE W. Jack Williamson  
P. O. Box 467  
Greenville, AL 36037

TE Paul G. Settle, Chairman  
P.O. Box 565  
Rosman, NC 28772

RE John B. White, Jr.  
1490 Montevallo Circle  
Decatur, GA 30033

RE John B. Prentis, III  
12330 Conway Road  
St. Louis, MO 63141

JOURNAL

PART II

JOURNAL  
MINUTES  
NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY

June 17, 1991

First Session

**19-1 Assembly Called to Order and Opening Worship**

The Nineteenth General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America was convened at 1:30 p.m. on Monday, June 17, 1991, by the Moderator, TE Cortez A. Cooper, Jr. in the sanctuary of the Briarwood Presbyterian Church, Birmingham, Alabama. The moderator began with prayer and led the Assembly in the opening worship service according to the following order:

Organ Introit: "The Promised Land"

Jones

Prelude: "The Lord's My Shepherd"

Wright

Call to Worship: Psalm 89:1-8

Hymn 75: "O Father, You are Sovereign"

ST THEODULPH

Invocation and Lord's Prayer

Solo

Season of Prayer for the Church

Scripture: Psalm 11

Sermon: "STRENGTHENING THE FOUNDATION"

Retiring Moderator: Cortez Cooper, Jr.

Hymn 427: "Amidst Us Our Beloved Stands"

HAMBURG

Words of Institution and Invitation

Prayer of Consecration

The Bread and The Cup

Prayer of Thanksgiving

Hymn 57: "Hallelujah, Praise Jehovah, O my Soul:"

RIDLEY

Benediction

Response Hymn 726: "Spirit of the Living God"

IVERSON

Postlude: "O Sons and Daughters, Let Us Sing:"

Willian

Following the worship service the Assembly recessed for thirteen minutes at 3:17 p.m.

**19-2 Reconvening for Business**

Moderator Cooper reconvened the Assembly for business at 3:38 p.m. with RE Roy Gamble leading in prayer.

**19-3 Declaration of Quorum and Assembly Enrollment**

Enrollment so far was announced as 670 teaching elders and 340 ruling elders, plus 42 alternates. The moderator declared a quorum present. The final roll of commissioners was formulated as follows:

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### ASCENSION PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Pennsylvania, except as indicated.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Akron, OH	Faith	Carl Bogue	James Bruder
Akron, OH	Faith		George Caler
Aliquippa	New Life	Robert Bradbury	
Beaver Falls	Christ	Larry Elenbaum	
Butler	Middlesex	Earl Fair	
Butler	Westminster	John Grauley	Carl Jones
Butler	Westminster		Arthur Sloan *
Cumberland, MD	Faith	LeRoy Capper	
Darlington	Darlington Ref	Jeffrey Noyes	N. M. Kennedy
Erie	Faith Ref	Leon Ben-Ezra	Ken Peterson
Hudson, OH	Grace	Gil Odendaal	
Leechburg	Kiski Valley	E. Scott Johnston	
Ligonier	Pioneer	Don Kistler	
McKees Rocks	Providence	Arthur Broadwick	Robert Alouise
McKees Rocks	Providence		J. Howard Donahoe
McKees Rocks	Providence	John Koelling	
Monroeville	New Hope	Bruce Mawhinney	
Murrysville	Ref/Murrysville	Charles Winkler	
Valencia	Gospel Flwship	Bailey Cadman	William Hargest
Volant	Hillcrest	Jerry Maguire	Frederick Neikirk
Wellsville, NY	PC/Wellsville	Lawrence Oldaker	
Wexford	Covenant		Jean-Pierre Pressau

Christopher P. Bennett  
 Edwin Fontaine  
 James Kobb  
 Robert Peterson  
 Carl Stewart  
 William Voorhis

### CALVARY PRESBYTERY (All towns are in South Carolina)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Abbeville	New Hope	Charles Champion	Henry McCord
Anderson	New Covenant	David Rountree	
Clemson	Clemson	John Hall	Gil Wagle
Clinton	Westminster	David Bryan	Collie Lehn
Clinton	Westminster		Bruce Senn
Clover	Bethel	John Gess	Harold McCarter
Conestee	Reedy River	Kenneth Gentry	J. B. Ducker
Easley	Covenant	Michael Osborne	
Edgefield	Edgefield	C. Richard Barbare	
Greenville	Mitchell Road	Russell Loudon	Dean Anderson

## JOURNAL

Greenville	Mitchell Road	Peter Spink	Bill Weathers
Greenville	Second	Steve Wallace	Stuart Patterson
Greenville	Second		Ligon Duncan
Greenville	Shannon Forest	Michael Potts	Mark Wells
Greenville	Shannon Forest		David Turner
Greer	Fellowship	Wesley Horne	
Greer	Immanuel	Michael Mang	
Greer	Fulton	Grover Timms	
Greenwood	Rock	Clenton Ilderton	
Lake Wylie	Scherer Mem.	Richard Lindsay	Boyd Johnston
Landrum	Philadelphia	Jack Giddings	
Laurens	Friendship	Glen McClung	John Armstrong
Moore	Center Point	Jerry Lynn	
Newberry	Smyrna	Gaynor Phillips	
Rock Hill	Hopewell	Daren Russell	
Rock Hill	Westminster		Wilbur Livingston
Rock Hill	Westminster		Frank Limerick
Rock Hill	Westminster	William Fox	James Hambright
Roebuck	Mt. Calvary	David Alexander	Dale Springs
Simpsonville	Woodruff Road	Rod Mays	Ralph Price
Spartanburg	Providence	Daniel Coleman	
Woodruff	Antioch	Jerry Crick	
York	Filbert	Wallace Tinsley	John Mitchell

Thomas Brawner  
 Thomas Cross  
 Paul Settle  
 Jayme Sickert  
 Reuben Wallace

### CENTRAL CAROLINA PRESBYTERY (All towns are in North Carolina.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Albermarle	Second St.	David Frierson	
Belmont	Goshen	John Moore	
Burlington	Northside		Bennett Richardson
Burlington	Northside		Gene Parks
Charlotte	Prosperity	Stephen Stout	Theron Simmons
Charlotte	Univ. City	Wayne Zaepfel	
Concord	Bible	S. Scott Willet	
Denver	Lakeshore	Joel McCall	William Rocap, Jr.
Fayetteville	Cross Creek		Walter Parrish
Fayetteville	Cross Creek		Michael Simpson
Gastonia	South Point	Marvin Camp	
Greensboro	Friendly Hills	Clyde Godwin	Craig Hollowell
Harrisburg	Grace	Doug Agnew	Steve Caldwell

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Kannapolis	Calvary	Larry Frady	
Lexington	Meadowview	Gary Cox	Robert Jones
Locust	Carolina	Joseph Sullivan	Wilson Barbee
Matthews	Christ Covenant	Harry Reeder	Jim Sutton
Matthews	Christ Covenant		Robert Dyar
Matthews	Christ Covenant	Thomas Henry	Bernard Lawrence
Stanley	First	Robert D. King	George Robinson
Winston-Salem	Redeemer	Richard Downs	

Phil Henderso  
John Ottinger  
C. Greg Singer  
Robert Wilcox

**CENTRAL FLORIDA PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Florida.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
DeLand	Immanuel	David Boxerman	Frank Stallings
Edgewater	Indian River	C. David Trimmier	
Eustis	New Hope	Charles McArthur	Dick Hommes
Eustis	New Hope		Bill Christopher*
Eutis	New Hope		John Graves*
Gainesville	Faith	James Truitt	
Jacksonville	Christ	John Hutchinson	John DuBose
Jacksonville	Northshore	Thomas Ellis	
Jacksonville	Ortega	Benton Taylor	
Jacksonville	Westminster	Anthony Dallison	
Lake Mary	River Oaks	John Montgomery	
Maitland	Orangewood	Charles Green	Milton Clement
Maitland	Orangewood	Joseph Creech	
Maitland	Orangewood	Vaughn Stanley	
Middleburg	Pinewood	Rodney Whited	Lamar Johnson
Middleburg	Pinewood	Steven Reese	
New Port Richey	River Ridge	Allan Barth	Michael Kindt
Ocala	Grace	Neil Gilmore	Carlyle Ausley
Ocala	Grace		Bill Lyall
Ocala	Grace	Walt Kendall	
Ormond Beach	Coquina	Laurie Vidal	
Palm Bay	Covenant	Dan Hendley	Kevin Fox
Port Orange	Spruce Creek	Raymond Kruntorad	
Spring Hill	Day Spring	Phil Stogner	
Titusville	Christ Com.	Daniel Thompson	
Winter Park	Howell Branch	Jack Arnold	
Winter Springs	Willow Creek	Peter Alwinson	



## JOURNAL

Central Florida Presbytery - continued

Wyatt Folds  
David Gordon  
David Tubley

### CENTRAL GEORGIA PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Georgia.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Albany	Northgate	Ken Cross	
Augusta	Cliffwood	Timothy Stewart	
Augusta	First	John Nordan	John Bailie
Augusta	First	John Oliver	Henry Martin
Augusta	First	Randy Smith	Robert Adams
Augusta	Lakemont	John Jagoditsch	Dennis Harville
Columbus	St. Andrews	William Douglas	
Forsyth	Dayspring	John Browne	
Garden City	Chapel/Gardens	Tommy Carr	
Macon	First	Robert Cannada	John Clark
Macon	First	George Miller	Don Comer
Macon	First	Robert Wojohn	Wayne Gullatt
Macon	First		Ray Danner
Macon	First	Sam Cappel	
Macon	First	Joseph Wolstencoft	
Macon	North Macon	David Todd	
Macon	Vineville		Robert Ham
Martinez	Westminster	Archie Moore, Jr	Julian Davis
Martinez	Westminster		Rick Viger
Milledgeville	Covenant	John Kinser	Doug Pohl
Milledgeville	Covenant		David Guy
Perry	Perry	Jim Shipley	John Blythe
Savannah	Providence	Scott Reiber	
Statesboro	Trinity	Roland Barnes	Charles Davis
St. Mary's	Camden Com	Tom Musselman	
St. Simons Isle	Golden Isles	Richard Burguet	
Sylvania	Liberty	Tom Knowles	
Thomasville	Christ Comm.	Joe Easterling	
Thomson	Thomson		Charles Simpson
Tifton	New Life	Ronald Clegg	
Valdosta	Westminster		Rob Wise

Robert Ackley  
Terry Johnson  
Charles Morrison  
James Stewart  
Gordon Reed

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**COVENANT PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Mississippi, except as indicated.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Arlington, TN	Hickory Withe	Kenneth Camp	
Carrollton	Carrollton	Grover Gunn	
Clarendon	First	Mack Plunket	
Clarksdale	First	Thomas Kay, Jr.	Robert Traylor
Cleveland	Covenant	Timothy Starnes	Doug Wheeler
Columbus	Main Street	Darwin Jordan	Jack Brown
Dyersburg	First	Werner Mietling	
Germantown, TN	Riveroaks Ref	William Spink	
Greenville	Covenant	James Holland	Collins Brent
Greenwood	Westminster	George Coxhead	
Grenada	Grenada	James Perry	
Houlka	Houlka		William Scott
Houston	Houston	Robert Penny	
Indianola	First	Carl Brannan	John Clifton
Jackson, TN	Grace	Ford Williams	
Little Rock, AR	Covenant	Tim Reed	
Marks	Marks	Laurie Jones	
Osceola, AR	First	Joseph Grider	Arthur Rogers
Oxford	College Hill	Alan Cochet	
Sardis	Sardis	Raymond Cross	
Shewood, AR	Northside	James Hayes	
Stamps, AR	First	Cleve Chandler	
Starkville	Grace	Brad Stewart	Clay Taylor
Tupelo	Lawndale	James Daughtry	
Tupelo	Lawndale	H. Timothy Fortner	
Vaiden	Shongalo	Al Mersman	
Water Valley	First	John Wingard	Ersel King
Water Valley	First		Barron Caulfield *

Martin Biggs  
 Richard H. Cannon  
 Carl Chaplin  
 Samuel Downing  
 Robert Malone  
 William Rose  
 John Sartelle  
 George Soltau  
 William Wymond  
 Jim Young

**EASTERN CANADA PRESBYTERY**

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Guelph, On	Willow West	Stephen Christian	
L Sackville, NS	Bedford		Donald Campbell

## JOURNAL

### EASTERN CAROLINA PRESBYTERY (All towns are in North Carolina.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Cary	Peace	Steve Bostrum	Pete Shedor
Chapel Hill	Good Shepherd	David Bowen	Dwight Monk
Greensboro	Antioch	Lewis Baker	Bruce Holloman
Greenville	Christ	Mike Rasmussen	
New Bern	Village Chapel	James Routszong	John Leigh
Raleigh	Calvary	John Warren	

### EVANGEL PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Alabama.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Albertville	Grace Fwp	James Danner	
Anniston	Faith	Frank Erdman	Jack Thoterow
Birmingham	Altadena Valley	John W. Long	Charles Poole
Birmingham	Altadena Valley	Robert Muhlig	J. Philip Anderson
Birmingham	Briarwood	Kenneth Wilson	Harry Farris
Birmingham	Briarwood		Lamar Thomas *
Birmingham	Briarwood	Romaine Scott	Tom Harris
Birmingham	Briarwood		Elmore Scott
Birmingham	Briarwood	G Mark Roessler	Doug Haskew
Birmingham	Briarwood		John McKinstry
Birmingham	Briarwood	Frank Barker	Tom Leopard
Birmingham	Briarwood		George Moss
Birmingham	Briarwood	Tom Caradine	John Spencer
Birmingham	Briarwood		John Gunn
Birmingham	Briarwood	Tom Cheely	
Birmingham	Briarwood	Robert Flayhart	
Birmingham	Briarwood	George Mitchell	
Birmingham	Briarwood	Phillip Reddick	
Birmingham	Covenant	William Hay	Vern Betsch
Birmingham	Covenant	Grady Simpson	Bruce Bailey
Birmingham	Covenant		Fred Judd*
Birmingham	Covenant	Craig Boden	
Birmingham	Faith	J. Alan Carter	C. K. McEwen
Birmingham	Ref. Heritage	Peter Leihart	Gilbert Douglas
Birmingham	Third	Richard Trucks	Robert Hezlep
Birmingham	Third		Eugene Hill
Brent	Brent		Elliot Belcher
Decatur	Decatur	Larry King	
Gadsden	First		William Whorton
Gadsden	First	Harry Cooksey	
Gadsden	Rainbow	Calvin Frett	Cam Whorton
Helena	Evangel	Jeffrey Lowman	Michael Brooks
Huntsville	Courtland	Harry Miller	
Huntsville	Ebenezer	John W. Jamison	Cleamon Baker

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Huntsville	Southwood	William Heyward	Jim Hess
Huntsville	Westminster	Paul Alexander	Ross Blankley
Huntsville	Westminster	Jeffrey Meyers	Donald M. Johnson
Moody	Community	Craig Childs	Mike Russell
Moody	Community		Clayton Scott
Moody	Community	Burt Boykin	
Pinson	Mt. Calvary	George McGuire	George Hasken
Pleasant Grove	P R C	Carl Russell	Robert Dietz
Russellville	First	Hubert Stewart	John Jolly
Russellville	First		Ernest Treadway
Sylacauga	Knollwood	Michael Forester	Charles Crowther
Tuscumbia	First	R. W. Markert	Russell Trapp
		Jeff Carlton	
		William Cooper	
		W. Thomas Farr	
		Jimmy Lyons	
		E. Lee Trinkle	
		Leonard Van Horn	
		Michael Williams	

### GRACE PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Mississippi.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Bay Springs	Bay Springs	Philip McRae	
Biloxi	First	James Richter	Elvin Vestal
Brookhaven	Faith	John T. Shields	George Gulley
Centreville	Bethany		Dewitt Smylie
Centreville	Bethany		Richard Mayfield *
Centreville	Thomson Mem	Robert Brunson	
Collins	Collins	Andrew Fortier	
Ellisville	Ellisville	George Felton	Charlie Probst
Gulfport	First	Danny Levi	Charles Brueck
Gulfport	First	Bill Lyle	Bill Woleben
Hattiesburg	Bay Street	Paul Honomichl	Howard Stringer
Hattiesburg	Bay Street		Charles Roberts
Hattiesburg	First	Lee Roy Taylor	James Duncan
Hattiesburg	First	Frank Bertalan	Sam Duncan
Hattiesburg	Woodland	David Jussely	Chester Morgan
Heidelberg	Heidelberg	J. Ray Bobo	
Laurel	Covenant		Robert Thompson
Leakesville	Leakesville	James Watson	Gordon Rounsaville
Magee	Magee	John McArthur	
Moss Point	Moss Point	Norman Bagby	James B. McElroy
Mount Olive	Mount Olive		Bill Leonard
Picayune	First		Richard Ulerich
Prentiss	Prentiss	French Tripp	

JOURNAL

Waynesboro	Philadelphus	M. Lee Bloodworth
Woodville	First	E. C. Chase

Vaughn Hathaway, Jr.  
 Duane Mallow  
 William Mosal  
 William Stanway

**GREAT LAKES PRESBYTERY**

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Bad Axe, MI	First	Dennis Slack	Roy Allen
Bloomington, IN	Grace Covenant	John Peoples	David Canfield
Cincinnati, OH	Church/Covenant		Thomas Stein
Cincinnati, OH	Faith	Daniel Perrin	
Columbus	Christ Covenant	Max Forsythe	
Indianapolis, IN	Grace	David McKay	
Lexington	Dayspring	Andrew Adams	
Lexington, KY	Tates Creek	Al Lutz	Jule Robbe
Louisville, KY	Community	David Dively	
Muncie, IN	Westminster	Petros Roukas	Bob Wynkoop
Richmond, IN	Christ		Ed Harris

Corbett Heimburger  
 William A. Shell

**GULF COAST PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Florida, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Cantonment	Pinewoods	John Findlay	
Chattahoochee	Chattahoochee	Keith Lorick	Newton Brooks
Destin	Safe Harbor	Robert Dale	
Ft. Walton Bch.	Westminster	William H. Tyson	
Ft. Walton Bch	Korean Comm.	Joshua Jea	
Gulf Breeze	Concord	Robert Herrmann	Gerald Sovereign
Gulf Shores, AL	Grace Flwship		Daniel Atchison
Gulf Shores, AL	Grace Flwship	Richard Fennig	
Madison	Grace		Julian Gibson
Mobile, AL	Christ	Josiah Bancroft	
Mobile, AL	Christ	Bruce Longstreth	
Montrose	Eastern Shore	Malcolm Griffith	Joe Caldwell
Panama City	Covenant	Robert Hayes	Jesse L. Bealor
Panama City	First	Brian Johnston	Jack M. Garmon
Pensacola	Fairfield	Tom Irby	
Pensacola	McIlwain Mem.	Mark Rowden	William Harris

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Pensacola	McIlwain Mem.		George Fell
Pensacola	McIlwain Mem.	Donald Hoke	John Woodward
Pensacola	McIlwain Mem.		Ray Myers *
Pensacola	Northeast	Jack Waller	
Pensacola	Warrington	Robert Hornick	James Hansen
Pensacola	Warrington		Paul White
Quincy	New Philadelphia	Randy Wilding	
Robertsdale, AL	Faith	Raymond Fell	
Tallahassee	Wildwood	Mike Khandjian	
		H. Arnie Maves	

### HEARTLAND PRESBYTERY

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Ackley, IA	Faith	Timothy Diehl	
Holland	Colfax Center	Larry Hoop	
Kansas City	Ascension		John Carran
Lincoln, NE	Covenant	Hugh Barlett	
Olathe, KS	Christ	Robert Dunn	Stanley Wells
Olathe, KS	Olathe	Robert Baxter	Michael Milton
Omaha, NE	Trinity	Phillip Kayser	Lyle Nilson
Wichita	Evangel	James Spurgeon	
		Patrick Cook	

### HERITAGE PRESBYTERY

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Bear, DE	Glasgow Ref	Charles Betters	Michael Zimanski
Boothwyn, PA	Reformed	Dwight Dunn	Donald Korb
Dover, DE	Grace	Jonathan Seda	Glen M. Howell
Elkton, MD	Evangelical	Mike Chastain	John Pauley
Elkton, Md	Evangelical		Floyd Veatch*
Hockessin, DE	Berea		Harold Whitlock
Hockessin, DE	Berea		Eugene Wentling
Media, PA	Calvary Ref	Ernest Breen	James Albany
Media, PA	Calvary Ref		Charles Barlow
New Castle, DE	Heritage	Bruce Howes	
New Castle, DE	Manor	Timothy Von Duyke	
Newark, DE	Evangelical		Philip Hufnell
Salisbury, MD	Christ's Comm.	Dallard Stanton	
West Chester, PA	Reformed	Stanley Gale	
Wilmington, DE	Faith	James Brown	Wilhelmus Schaffers
Wilmington, DE	Faith	S. Edd Cathey	Richard Olson

## JOURNAL

Heritage Presbytery - continued

R. Laird Harris  
Lynden Stewart

**ILLIANA PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Illinois, except as indicated.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Carbondale	Evangelical		Scott Levy
Coulterville	Grandcote Ref	Richard Greene	
Sparta	Bethel RPC	Robert Ellis	William Hamilton
Waterloo	Concord	Daniel Dermeyer	

Bryan Chapell

**JAMES RIVER PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Virginia.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Charlottesville	Trinity	Joseph Ryan	Thomas Darnell
Charlottesville	Trinity	Tony Giles	
Charlottesville	Trinity	John Kuebler	
Chester	Centralia	John Holmes	Eugene Friedline
Hampton	Calvary Ref	Kerry Hurst	
Harrisonburg	Covenant		Jeff Jordan
Hopewell	West End	Robert Wilson	Ervin Hoover
Hopewell	W. Hopewell	Ira Staley	
Midlothian	Sycamore	Harry Long	
Norfolk	Calvary	Mark Bender	
Richmond	All Saints Ref	Howard Griffith	John Waddill
Virginia Beach	New Covenant	Joseph Mullen	
Virginia Beach	New Life	Wallace Sherbon	
Williamsburg	Grace Covenant	Robert Hopper	

Robert Fiol  
Donald Graham  
Steve Schoof

**KOREAN CENTRAL PRESBYTERY**

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Chicago, IL	Holy Nation	Ki Baek Shin	
Chicago, IL	Korean Bethel	Daniel Choe	
Chicago, IL	Sungmin	Joseph Kim	
Springfield, MO	First	Sang-Ho Nam	
Prospect Hgts, IL	Han-Maum	John T. Yu	

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### KOREAN EASTERN PRESBYTERY

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Flushing, NY	Korean Canaan	Joshua Yoo Ahn	
Woodside, NY	Korean	Samuel Park	

### KOREAN SOUTHEASTERN PRESBYTERY

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Burke, VA	Korean PC/Wash.	Paul Kim	Jung Kook Kim
McLean, VA	McLean Korean	Sang Mook Kim	
		James Ro	

### KOREAN SOUTHERN PRESBYTERY

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Del City, OK	Hahn Mee United	Dong-Min Shin	
Houston, TX	Choong Hyun	Edward Eun Jai Lee	
Houston, TX	Korean	Edward Kim	

### KOREAN SOUTHWEST PRESBYTERY

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Sierra Vista, AZ	United Korean	Abraham Shin	

### LOUISIANA PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Louisiana.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Alexandria	Jackson Street	Robert Vincent	
Baton Rouge	Grace	Wm. Frisbee	Forrest Hopson
Delhi	Delhi	J. Paul Lipe	
Lafayette	Covenant	Robert Berry	
Lake Charles	Bethel	Ron Davis	Dean Moore
Monroe	Auburn Avenue	Steve Wilkins	Dale Peacock
Monroe	Auburn Avenue		Bill Smith
New Orleans	Orleans	John Keen	
Opelousas	Westminster	Mark Duncan	Mark Hoyt
Ruston	John Knox	Don Locke	Oscar Barnes
Shreveport	Southern Pines	Robert Dillard	
Zachary	Plains	H. Andrew Silman	Malloy Stott
Zachary	Plains		Edwin Hackenberg
Zachary	Plains		Martin Stott



JOURNAL

Louisiana Presbytery - continued

James Meek

**MID-AMERICA PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Oklahoma, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Fayetteville,AR	Covenant	Paul Sagan	
Lawton	Beal Hts	John Butler	
Oklahoma City	Heritage	Charles Garriott	
Oklahoma City	Heritage	Jeffrey Willey	
Springfield, MO	Immanuel Ref.	Michael Obel	
Tulsa	Christ	Robert Petterson	Lyle Fogle
Tulsa	Christ		George O'Dell

**MISSISSIPPI VALLEY PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Mississippi.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Bailey	Bailey	Alton Phillips	Tommy McDonald
Bailey	Mt. Carmel		Americo Bonito
Belzoni	First	Richard Wiman	Steve Watsula
Brandon	Brandon	Steve Hill	
Carthage	Carthage	Dan Gilchrist	Billie Sudduth
Clinton	Providence	John Reeves	Oliver Anderson
Clinton	Mt. Salus	Basil Albert	
Forest	Covenant	Gary Crampton	
Forest	Forest	James Wagner	
Jackson	Alta Woods	Steve Jussely	Tom Sanford
Jackson	Alta Woods		Gabe Green
Jackson	First	James Baird	Robert Cannada
Jackson	First		James Elkin
Jackson	First	William Hughes	James Moore
Jackson	First	J Edward Norton	E. C. McRoberts
Jackson	First		Edmund Johnston
Jackson	First		Robert Cooper
Jackson	Grace	Roger Collins	John Kelley
Jackson	Lakeland	Robert Wolf	
Jackson	North Park	James Shull	Harold McDiarmid
Jackson	Trinity	James White	Ron McAnally
Kosciusko	First	James Barnes	
Louisville	Covenant	Robert Jackson	
Louisville	First	Robert Schwanebeck	Henry Fair
Madison	First	Robert West	
Pearl	Pearl	Robert Hayes	George Powe
Philadelphia	Carolina	Philip Blevins	
Philadelphia	First	Joel Beezley	
Raymond	Raymond		Elmer Adams

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Ridgeland	Pear Orchard	Charles Frost	Jack Laws
Ridgeland	Pear Orchard	Bill Davies	Jack Treloar
Shuqualak	Shuqualak	Edward Hurley	
Tchula	Tchula	Paul Zetterholm	
Union	First	Michael Ahlberg	James Cole
Vicksburg	Westminster	John Allen	Alan Formby
West	West	Gerald Morgan	
Yazoo City	First	Michael Sartelle	Henry Russell
Yazoo City	Second		Robert Cato

B. I. Anderson  
 James Carter  
 Donald Caviness  
 William Dempsey  
 Douglas Kelly  
 John Kyle  
 Ronald Lively  
 Mark Lowrey  
 Fredrick T. Marsh  
 Donald B. Patterson

**MISSOURI PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Missouri.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Ballwin	Heritage Ref.	William Bell	
Ballwin	Westminster		Carl Gilliam
St. Louis	Kirk/Hills	W Wilson Benton	John Prentis
St. Louis	Kirk/Hills	Donald Krafft	Charles Waldron
St. Louis	Kirk/Hills	William Swenson	
St. Louis	Memorial		Mark Belz
St. Louis	Memorial		Terry Jones
St. Louis	Providence	David Winecoff	
Washington	New Port	Robert Allyn	

Oliver Claassen  
 David A. Crum  
 Roger Hunt  
 Philip Douglass  
 Gerardo Gutierrez  
 Albert F. Moginot, Jr.  
 Donald J. MacNair  
 S. Michael Preg, Jr.  
 Richard Strom

## JOURNAL

### NEW JERSEY PRESBYTERY (All towns are in New Jersey.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Columbia	Knowlton	Stephen Clark	
Fairton	Fairfield	Allan Story	
Hainesport	Village	Albert Hitchcock	
Mt. Laurel	Evangelical	Gary Englestad	
Northfield	Faith	Edwin Jewell	
Princeton	Princeton	Ken Smith	
Somerset	Mt. Carmel	Robert Cameron	
Somerville	Grace Comm	Worth Carson	Tommy Saunders

James Smith

### NEW RIVER PRESBYTERY (All towns are in West Virginia, except as indicated.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Barboursville	Providence Ref		Virgil Roberts
Blacksburg, VA	Grace Covenant	Don Clements	
Charleston	R. Littlepage	Mike Hall	Calvin Stover
Cloverdale, VA	Valley Ref	Vic Wolf	
Cross Lanes	Faith	Robert Lane	James Jarvis
Fairmont	Faith Ref	Ken Robinson	James Mohr
Floyd, VA	Harvestwood	Riley Ware	Robert Miller
Malden	Kanawha Salines	John Smith, Jr.	Harry Garnder
Roanoke, VA	Westminster	Lonnie Barnes	Jimmy Harrell
St. Albans	Covenant	Rodney King	Jim Williams
Wheeling	Faith Ref.	Samuel Gibb	

### NORTH GEORGIA PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Georgia.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Athens	Athens Perimet.	Ed Hague	
Atlanta	New Covenant	Mitchell Hall	
Atlanta	Perimeter Intwn	Robert Cargo	Doug Russ
Atlanta	Perimeter Intown	Earl Witmer	
Atlanta	Westminster	David Robinson	John White
Atlanta	Westminster		James Hughes
Carrollton	Covenant	Donald Jones	
Cedartown	Grace	Steven Shuman	
Chestnut Mt	Chestnut Mt	John Batusic	Lawrence Payne
Decatur	Chapel Woods	Mark Gutzke	John Osborne
Decatur	Chapel Woods	Paul Owens	
Douglasville	Harvester	Donald Mountan	Dwight Allen

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Duluth	Old Peachtree	Mike Plunket	
Fayetteville	Covenant	Richard Smith	
Fayetteville	Covenant	Dale Welden	Ross Cook
Gainesville	Westminster	Leon Lovett	Loyd Strickland
Griffin	Trinity	Gary Elliott	
Jonesboro	Emmanuel	Clifford Brewton	Willis Smith
Norcross	Our Saviors		Marc Kyle
Norcross	Perimeter		Jim Jacobs
Norcross	Perimeter	Walter Wood	Duane Rasmussen
Peachtree City	Calvary	Douglas Griffith	
Powder Springs	Midway	Todd Allen	John Ross
Powder Springs	Midway	R. Eugene Hunt	
Smyrna	Smyrna	R. Grady Love	Guy Beckman
Stockbridge	The Rock	Donald Musin	Herman Miller
Stockbridge	The Rock		James White*
Stone Mountain	Grace	C. DeBardeleben	Leslie Brooks
Stone Mountain	Ingleside	Fred Guthrie	Jerry Weatherford
Tucker	Perimeter East		Carl Wilhelm
Watkinsville	Faith	Terry Mercer	Dan Horne
Winder	New Life	Warren Gardner	
Woodstock	Cherokee	James Lester	George Brent
Woodstock	Cherokee		Daryl Lipham *

Richard Aeschliman  
 Philip Clark  
 Charles Dunahoo  
 Robert Edmiston  
 Terry Gyger  
 James Hatch  
 John Jerguson  
 Dan Kim  
 Dwight Linton  
 Kennedy Smartt  
 Henry Thigpen  
 J. Allen Thompson  
 Robert Valentine  
 Carl Wilson  
 Michael Woodham

### NORTH TEXAS PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Texas.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Carrollton	Metrocrest	Ronald Dunton	
Colleyville	Colleyville	Dale Smith	Gary Campbell
Dallas	New Covenant	Robert Palmer	M. C. Culbertson
Dallas	New Covenant		Granville Dutton

## JOURNAL

Dallas	New Covenant		Clark Breeding*
Gainesville	Westminster	Danny Ketchum	
Gordonville	Sherwood Shores	Don Darling	
Greenville	Westminster	Thomas Barnes	Raiford Stainback
Lewisville	Christ	David Sherwood	
Mesquite	Town East	Charles Cobb, Jr.	
Richardson	Town North	David Clelland	Don Cole
Rowlett	First		Richard Bacon
Tyler	Fifth Street	Ronald Brady	
		Daniel Zink	

### NORTHEAST PRESBYTERY (All towns are in New York, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Coventry, CT	PC of Coventry	Brad Evans	
Lincolndale	Affirmation	Frank J. Smith	
Lincolndale	Affirmation	Frank E. Smith	
Nashua, NH	Christ	T. David Gordon	Stephen Magee
New York	Redeemer	Timothy Keller	
New York	Redeemer	Jeffrey White	
New York	Redeemer	Scot Sherman	
Rock Tavern	Westminster	John Vance	
St. Albans, VT	Community Cov.	Gerald Yost	
W. Springfield	W. Springfield	Alfred LaValley	Ron Heald
		David Crocker	

### NORTHERN CALIFORNIA (All towns are in California)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Los Altos	Peninsula	John Routzahn	
San Jose	Campbell	Marcus Serren	Arthur Schick
San Ramon	Canyon Creek	Lewis Ruff	
		David Brown	

### NORTHERN ILLINOIS PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Illinois, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Bloomington	Willowbee	John Ziegler	
Downers Grove	Christ	Edward Powers	Donald Kendall
Elgin	Westminster	Chas. Holliday	G. Craig Burdett
Hammond, IN	Covenant	E. Crowell Cooley	Robert Rathburn
Hammond, IN	Pine Street	Bruce Stanek	

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

LaCross, WI	Covenant	Jeffrey Buikema	
Macomb	Covenant	Peter Vaughn	Donald Murray
Merrill, WI	Bible	Robert Smallman	
Milwaukee, WI	Lakeside		Chris Vogel
Milwaukee, WI	Lakeside		Jim Collins *
Paxton	Westminster	Donald Rackley	William Sullivan
Peoria	Grace	Bruce Dunn	Robert Randolph
Peoria	Grace		James Dalton
Peoria	Grace		Thurmond Hall
Peoria	Grace		Thomas Johnson

**PACIFIC PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in California.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Artesia	Cornerstone	Bruce McRae	
Bakersfield	Covenant Comm.	David Crenshaw	Milton Pope
Chatsworth	Covenant	Richard Curnow	
Glendale	Calvary	Kenneth Orr	Jonathan Cameron
Pomona	Inland Korean	Wondae Lee	
Sepulveda	Valley	Ron Swendsen	Bob Taylor
Sepulveda	Valley	Ron Shaw	

Donald Aven  
Robert Ferguson  
Paul McKaughan

**PACIFIC NORTHWEST PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Washington, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Bellevue	Bellewood	Bill Willisford	
Calgary, Alb	Covenant Evan.	James Richwine	
Calgary, Alb	Woodgreen	John Smed	
Seattle	Green Lake	Curt Young	Alwin Van Wechel
Seattle	Hillcrest	Robert Bruhn	Mike Pfefferle
Spokane	Faith	Clifford Collins	
Tacoma	Faith	Robert Rayburn	Timothy Skrivan
Tacoma	Faith	Kevin Skogen	

John Hoogstrate

## JOURNAL

### PALMETTO PRESBYTERY (All towns are in South Carolina.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Aiken	Grace	James Hope	MacIellan Cash
Aiken	New Covenant	Ronald Shaw	Terry Shiver
Aiken	New Covenant	Douglas Domin	
Charleston	Church Crk Ref	James Simoneau	Cadwallader Jones
Cheraw	Faith	Robert Fidler	Claude Vernon
Chester	Trinity	John Tinsley	Jimmy Watts
Columbia	Calvary		Wm. Simoneau
Columbia	Calvary		C. Taber*
Columbia	Covenant	LeRoy Ferguson	
Columbia	Eau Claire	Harold Patterson	Robert Ilderton
Columbia	Northeast	George Crow	John Goodman
Columbia	Northeast		Wilson Lear
Columbia	Rose Hill	Craig Wilkes	J. J. Kirby
Columbia	Rose Hill		Robert Clarke III
Florence	Faith	James Ferguson	Hilton Terrell
Irmo	St Andrews	Whaley Barton	David Koon
Irmo	St Andrews	Emory Watson	Turner McDonald
Kingstree	Bethel/Mouzon	William Walsh	
Kingstree	Kingstree	John Dodd	
Manning	New Covenant	Charles Tyler	
Myrtle Beach	Faith	Arthur Scott	
N. Augusta	N. Augusta	Danny Wren	
N. Charleston	Metro North	Thomas Wood	
Orangeburg	Trinity	Tom Anderson	James Wells
Orangeburg	Trinity		Emery Bunn
Ridgeway	Aimwell	Karl McCallister	
Salters	Union	Theodore Martin	
Sardinia	Sardinia	Robert Korn	
St. Matthews	St. Matthews	Charles Hart	
Summerville	Oakbrook	P. Cameron Kirker	
Sumter	Westminster	John Ropp, Jr.	
Surfside Beach	Surfside Pres.	Michael Ross	
White Rock	Faith	Bill Powis	Robert Yount
Winnsboro	Lebanon	Joseph Beale	Benjamin Clowney
Winnsboro	Union Mem	George Busch, Jr.	

Bruce Davis  
E. Albert McCallister  
Hugh Powlison

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**PHILADELPHIA PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Pennsylvania.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Abington	Ch w/o Walls	Anees Zaka	
Allentown	Leigh Valley	Donald Stone	
Ft. Washington	New Life	Ronald Lutz	
Glenside	New Life	John Yenchko	
Hatboro	Covenant	Erwin Morrison	George Harris
Lansdale	Lansdale	John Clark, Sr.	John Clark
Lansdale	Lansdale		David Dykes *
Philadelphia	Korean United	Ted Lim	Paul Kim
Philadelphia	Korean United	Ken Wendland	
Philadelphia	New Life	John Julien	
Philadelphia	Tenth	James Boice	Eugene Betts
Philadelphia	Tenth	Glenn McDowell	Joseph Winston
Philadelphia	Third Ref	Frank Moser	
Warminster	Korean Saints	Sung Kyun Na	
Willow Grove	Calvary	Carl Derk	David Lachman
		William Barker	
		Thomas Patete	

**POTOMAC PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Maryland, except as indicated.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Abingdon	New Covenant	Larry Wanaselja	
Alexandria, VA	Alexandria	Tom Holliday	
Arlington	Christ Church	James Hutchens	
Annapolis	Evangelical	James Ferguson	
Baltimore	Aisquith	Ralph Davis	William Beck
Baltimore	Evangelical	Tom Nicholas	Paul Szatmary
Baltimore	Forest Park	Stanley Long	
Baltimore	Inverness	William Jones	
Bowie	Reformed	Michael Coleman	
Fairfax	New Hope	David Coffin	
Frederick	Faith Ref	George Miller	
Germantown	Shady Grove	Gary Yagel	Ira Ward
Gainesville, VA	Gainesville	Jack Lash	Larry Poe
Hyattsville	Wallace Mem	Palmer Robertson	Philip Fanara
Hyattsville	Wallace Mem	William Smith	Richard Larson
Hyattsville	Wallace Mem	Christopher O'Brien	
Hyattsville	Wallace Mem	Julian Dusenbury	
Lutherville	Valley	Michael Rogers	William Moore
Manassas, VA	Cornerstone	Stephen Dawson	
Marriottsville	Chapelgate	Ron Steel	Charles Suter
Marriottsville	Chapelgate	Jim McKee	



## JOURNAL

Martinsburg, WV	Pilgrim	Robert Thompson	James Brady
McLean, VA	McLean	Edward Satterfield	
Owings Mills	Liberty Ref	David Bryson	Marshall Streett
Pasadena	Severna Park	Tom Wenger	John Van Devender
Reisterstown	Covenant/Grace		Russell Doig
Reston	Reston	John Stringer	Wynonie Plummer
Springfield, VA	Harvester	Ron Bossom	Lightsey Wallace
Sunderland	Chesapeake	John Bash	
Timonium	Timonium	Edwin Olson	Joel Thornton
Warrenton, VA	Heritage	Timothy Habbershon	
Woodbridge, VA	Grace Ref		John Strain

Daniel Iverson

### SIouxLANDS PRESBYTERY (All towns are in South Dakota, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Chancellor	Germantown	Stan Sundberg	
Lemmon	Reformed	Jeffrey Yelton	
Lennox	Lennox Ebenezer	Dennis Eide	

David Peterson

### SOUTH COAST PRESBYTERY (All towns are in California, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Escondido	New Life	Richard Kaufmann	
Laguna Niguel	Aliso Creek	Walter Shepard	
Moreno Valley	Grace		Conrad Carnes
Moreno Valley	Grace		Mike Johnson

Peter Jensen  
Joseph Pipa  
Timothy Rott

### SOUTH TEXAS PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Texas.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Austin	PC/Hills	Frank Boswell	
Beaumont	First Ref	Ronald Rowe	
Bryan	Westminster	John Ragland	
Corpus Christi	Heritage		Lee White

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Harlingen	Covenant	Terry Traylor	
Houston	Bay Area	James Bland	
Houston	Covenant		Andrew Edwards
Houston	Northwest	William Hermann	
Houston	PC/Covenant	Larry Allen	
Houston	South West	William Fitzhenry	
Lufkin	Covenant	Paul Ferrie	
McAllen	Emmanuel	James Misner	
San Antonio	Evangelical	Timothy Hoke	
Spring	Spring Cypress	Michael Groves	Kent Hinkson
Sugarland	Providence	Alan McCall	

**SOUTHEAST ALABAMA PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Alabama.)

<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Andalusia	Covenant	Benny Powell	
Auburn	Covenant	Gary Spooner	
Brewton	First	Robert Oates	Rick Jones
Clanton	Clanton	Lamar Davis	
Clayton	Clayton	Jack Hoff	
Clio	Pea River	David Gilleran	
Dothan	First	Ed Ouimette	Rod Andrews
Dothan	First		Charles McAllister
Dothan	First	Gary Litchfield	Harold Wiggins
Dothan	Northwood	Tom Nash	
Floral	First		Rupert Greene
Ft. Deposit	Sandy Ridge	Robert Harvey	
Greenville	First	Milton Cutchen	Ted Aven
Greenville	First	Robert Watts	Jack Williamson
Hayneville	Hayneville	William Mason	
Millbrook	Millbrook	Kirby Smith	
Monroeville	Monroeville	Lawrence Gilpin	Armistead Harper
Montgomery	Covenant	Henry Bishop	Mac Gardner
Montgomery	Eastwood	Aaron Fleming	
Montgomery	Faith	Steve Jakes	Bill Goodner
Montgomery	First	Edward Johnson	John Wright
Montgomery	Oak Park	Terry Crahen	
Montgomery	Trinity	Cortez Cooper	Steve Fox
Montgomery	Trinity		Jack Noble
Montgomery	Trinity	Curtis McDaniel	Roy Gamble
Montgomery	Trinity		Bill Gordy
Montgomery	Trinity		Bill Joseph
Opelika	Trinity	Peter Doyle	Tom Rickles
Ozark	Ozark	Randall Yelverton	
Prattville	First	Henry L. Smith	Wallace Creamer
Troy	First	William Dever	Osborne Griffin

JOURNAL

SE Alabama Presbytery - continued

Paul Hahn

**SOUTHERN FLORIDA PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Florida.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Boca Raton	Spanish River	Jan Satterm	
Boca Raton	Spanish River	David Nicholas	John Slavic
Coral Gables	Granada	James L. Smith	Harold Grubbs
Coral Gables	Granada	Eric Hausler	Forrest Patterson
Coral Gables	Granada		Robert Bell
Coral Springs	First	Joseph Scharer	Frank Beauchamp
Delray Beach	Seacrest Blvd	John Langford	
Ft. Lauderdale	Coral Ridge		Al Bunke
Ft. Lauderdale	Coral Ridge	D. James Kennedy	Daniel Domin
Ft. Lauderdale	Coral Ridge	George Knight	Ralph Mittendorff
Ft. Lauderdale	Coral Ridge		Charles Rozzele
Hollywood	St. Andrews	Paul Fowler	
Key Biscayne	Key Biscayne	Lawrence Roff	Roland Smith
Key Biscayne	Key Biscayne	Jared Reed	
Lake Worth	Lake Osborne	Lynn Downing	Blair LittleJohn
Miami	Immanuel	Al LaCour	
Miami	Immanuel	Dale Linton	
Miami	Kendall	Domnic Aquila	
Miami	Kendall	John Swisher	
Miami	Korean BanSuk	Young Pal Cho	
Miami	Old Cutler	Collins Weeber	
Miami	Shenandoah	Carlos Salabarria	
Miami	Trinity	Franklin Knowles	
Plantation	First	Robert Stuart	Glenn Riner
Stuart	Grace	James Bowen	Sam Rowe
Vero Beach	Christ	Donis Watkins	

Stephen Brown  
 Cecil Brooks  
 Don Gahagen  
 Tim McKeown  
 Fred Reid  
 Robert Reymond

**SOUTHWEST FLORIDA**

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Bradenton	Hope	Randall Greenwald	
Brandon	Westminster	Elton Irby	Henry Darden

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Clearwater	Christ Comm.	Rod Culbertson	
Ft. Myers	Westminster		Bob Burrows
Lakeland	Covenant	David McWilliams	Michael Akin
Marco Island	Marco	Bruce Fiol	
Naples	Covenant	Michael Kendrick	Ralph Cross
Naples	Covenant	James Conrad	Edward Moll
North Port	First	George Crocker	
Palm Harbor	Community	Kenneth Matlack	
Pinellas Park	Grace	Robert Burrige	Charles Dunlap
Port Charlotte	Grace	Sammie Brooks	
Sarasota	Covenant Life	Larry Edison	
Sarasota	Covenant Life	Daryl Davis	
Sebring	Covenant	Alfred Bennett	Richard Williams
Tampa	Tampa Bay	James Saxon	
Venice	Auburn Road	Dwight Dolby	
Wauchula	Faith	Bruce Lax	Joe Vance

Brian Deringer  
William Faires  
Carlton Heil  
Russell Toms

**SOUTHWEST PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Arizona, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Alamogordo, NM	Westminster	Rick Smith	Jack Quigley
CO. Springs, CO	Grace	Richard Fite	
CO. Springs, CO	Village Seven	A. Berhard Kuiper	Dean Skaret
CO. Springs, CO	Village Seven	Arthur Ames	Wm. Perrett
Los Alamos, NM	Bryce Ave.	Henry Fernandez	Walt Meyers
Phoenix, AZ	Calvin		William Montgomery
Sedalia, CO	Crossroads Com	Richard Ruhl	
Sun City West	Covenant	Don Esty	Ralph Hahn
Wheat Ridge, CO	Covenant		Gary Flye

William Leonard

**SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Pennsylvania.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Dillsburg	First Korean	Paul Kim	
Ephrata	Reformed PC	Stephen Beck	Fred Gaston
Hershey	Church/Servant		Harrison Brown
Lancaster	Westminster		Robert B. Hayward
Lancaster	Westminster		Leonard Mollenkof
Quarryville	Faith Ref	John MacRae	Willard Lutz

JOURNAL

Shippensburg      Hope Ref      David Fidati  
    Gary Griffith

**TENNESSEE VALLEY PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Tennessee, except as indicated.)


<b>City</b>	<b>Church</b>	<b>Teaching Elder</b>	<b>Ruling Elder</b>
Chattanooga	Brainerd Hills	Gary Roop	
Chattanooga	Covenant	J. Render Caines	
Chattanooga	East Ridge	Thomas Schneider	
Chattanooga	First		Harold Weekley
Chattanooga	First		L.B. Austin
Chattanooga	First		Charles Flatt
Chattanooga	First		William Smith
Chattanooga	First		Gerry Stephens
Chattanooga	Lookout Valley	King Counts	
Chattanooga	New City	Barry Henning	Darrell Stewart
Chattanooga	Red Bank	Everett Gossett	
Chattanooga	St. Elmo	Cal Boroughs	Bob Harbert
Clarksville	New Covenant	Patrick Baiocchi	Daniel Mason
Columbia	Zion	Arch Warren	
Crossville	First	Steven Simmons	
Dalton, GA	Grace	Mark Cushman	Gene Hayes
Dalton, GA	Grace	Curt Rabe	
Flintstone	Chattanooga Vly	James Thornton	Downs Henry
Franklin	Christ Comm		Bill Puryear
Franklin	Christ Comm.	Mike Smith	Marvin Nischan
Franklin	Christ Fell.	Wm. Delvaux	
Ft. Ogleth., GA	First	James Campbell	
Harriman	West Hills	Clyde Cobb	Terry Futrell
Hixson	Hixson	Arthur Wood	Keith Palm
Knoxville	Cedar Springs	John Wood	Roy Zinn
Knoxville	Cedar Springs	Vernon Holstad	Joe Johnson
Knoxville	Cedar Springs		Seaton Garrett
Knoxville	Cedar Springs		Marion McKinney
Knoxville	Cedar Springs		Herbert Slatery
Knoxville	Ebenezer	David Howe	Creed Burchfield
Knoxville	West Hills	Fred Fowler	
Lookout Mt	Lookout Mt	Sanders Wilson	Fred Schumpert
Lookout Mt	Lookout Mt		Marion Barnes
Lookout Mt	Lookout Mt		Ralph Paden *
Maryville	Maryville Evan. Comm.		Peter LeQuire
Murfreesboro	Trinity	Leonard Hendrix	
Nashville	Christ	Charles McGowan	Thomas Delvaux
Nashville	Christ	Richard Jennigs	Marvin Padgett
Nashville	Covenant	James Bachman	
Oak Ridge	Covenant	David Hall	Don Goodin

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Oak Ridge	Covenant		Hank Quinn
Sevierville	Evergreen	Randall Davis	Dick Stradley
Signal Mt.	Wayside	Marshall St. John	Joe Smith
Sweetwater	Sweetwater Vly		David Cleveland
Sweetwater	Sweetwater Vly		Lewis Kinnard

Sanders Campbell  
 Larry Ferris  
 Fred Harrell  
 Paul Gilchrist  
 Nelson Jennings  
 John Lesondak  
 George W. Long  
 John Mason  
 Henry Schum  
 Dana Stoddard

**WARRIOR PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in Alabama.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Aliceville	First	Charles Spencer	Henry Ware
Aliceville	First		Horace Hammett
Brent	Brent	Walter Cathey	
Camden	First	Dennis Nolen	
Centerville	First	Michael Bonds	C. E. Hornsby, Jr. *
Demopolis	First		Robert DeWitt
Demopolis	First	William Gleason	
Eutaw	First	Wayne Fair	
Eutaw	Pleasant Ridge		Richard Owens
Greensboro	First	James Stade	
Linden	Linden		Charles Miller
Linden	Linden		William Mouchette *
Marion	Marion	Bruce Garris	
Selma	Woodland Hghts	Fredrick Mau	
Tuscaloosa	Riverwood	William Joseph	
Tuscaloosa	Riverwood	John Robertson	John Graham
York	Covenant	James Brown	
		Thomas Kay, Sr.	
		Paul Kooistra	

**WESTERN CAROLINA PRESBYTERY** (All towns are in North Carolina, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Andrews	Andrews	Frank Hamilton	

## JOURNAL

Arden	Arden	Edwin Graham	Bolus Chastain
Arden	Arden	John Furman	Sam Hall
Asheville	Covenant		Joel Belz
Asheville	Malvern Hills	William Clark	Jack Duckett
Asheville	Trinity	William Laxton	Mike Everhart
Barnardsville	Dillingham	William Clay	William Dillingham
Brevard	Grace Covenant		Rene Schmidt
Franklin	Emmanuel	Tom Schmitt	
Hendersonville	Covenant	John Neville	John Sullivan
Hickory	New Covenant	Peter LaPointe	
Marion	Story Mem.	[REDACTED]	Harold Lonon
Murphy	Providence	Larry Wilson	Burke Moore
Newland	Fellowship	James Bordwine	
Swannanoa	Swannanoa	Daniel Sulc	
		Sidney Anderson	
		John Graham	
		John McNicoll	
		George Ridgeway	
		Morton Smith	
		Robert Sweet	

### WESTMINSTER PRESBYTERY (All towns are in Tennessee, except as indicated.)

City	Church	Teaching Elder	Ruling Elder
Coeburn, VA	Coeburn	James Reedy	Ron Jenkins
Bristol	Eastern Heights	Rick Light	
Bristol	Edgemont	Tom Osterhaus	Charles Lowry
Cedar Bluff, VA	Covenant	Carl Howell	Denver Bush
Cedar Bluff, VA	Covenant	Bryon Snapp	
Elizabethton	Memorial	Steve Meyerhoff	David Slagle
Greenville	Meadow Creek	David Longacre	
Haysi, VA	Dickenson First	James Jones	
Johnson City	Asbury	Joe Wolfe	
Jonesborough	Midway	Ross Lindley	
Kingsport	Bridwell Hgts	Larry Ball	Robert Lane
Kingsport	Harmony	Bert Edwards	
Kingsport	Westminster	Brent Bradley	Joe Reynolds
Seven Mile Ford	Seven Mile Ford	George Wingard	Stewart Miller
Tazewell, VA	Trinity	Henry Johnson	

#### \* Ruling Elder Alternates

Teaching Elders	798
Ruling Elders	420
[Ruling Elder (Alt.)	17]
<b>TOTAL ENROLLMENT</b>	<b>1218</b>
Churches Represented	636

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 19-4 Adoption of Docket

On motion the Assembly adopted the docket as presented in its seventh draft, with one amendment to docket a partial report of the CoC on Bills and Overtures immediately prior to the report of the CoC on Administration Monday afternoon.

### 19-5 Election of Moderator

The Moderator opened the floor for nominations for moderator. RE Mark Belz being the sole nominee, on motion the Assembly voted to close nominations and elected him by acclamation. He was escorted to the podium and assumed the chair.

RE Scott Levy the chairman of the AC was recognized and presented to the retiring moderator, TE Cortez A. Cooper, Jr., a plaque in token of the Assembly's appreciation for his year of service as moderator.

### 19-6 Election of Recording and Assistant Clerks

On nomination by the stated clerk, TE's J. Robert Fiol, Bruce B. Howes, and Frank D. Moser were elected recording clerks; RE Walter Lastovica and TE H. S. (Hank) Schum were appointed timekeeper and overhead projector operator, respectively; and TE Robert M. Ferguson and RE John B. White, Jr. were appointed assistant parliamentarians.

### 19-7 Welcome of Host Church

The senior pastor of the host church, TE Frank M. Barker, Jr., and RE Thomas Leopard welcomed the Assembly and made pertinent announcements.

### 19-8 Report of Stated Clerk

TE Paul R. Gilchrist, stated clerk, presented his report (see Appendix A, pp. 227), speaking particularly to the statistical reports as found in Attachment 3. He then called the roll of churches added to the denomination since the last Assembly.

#### CHURCHES ADDED TO THE DENOMINATION IN 1990

Presbytery	Church	Address	Date Rec.	Source
Ascension	Grace of the Western Reserve Presbyterian Church of Wellsville	Hudson, OH  Wellsville, NY	01/06/90  12/02/90	Organized  Organized
Central Carolina	Cross Creek	Fayetteville, NC	12/06/90	Organized
	Friendly Hills	Greensboro, NC	11/17/90	Organized
Central Carolina	New Hope	Charlotte, NC	10/27/90	Independency
Central Florida	Christ Community	Titusville, FL	11/18/90	Organized
	New Hope	Eustis, FL	11/18/90	Organized
	Ortega	Jacksonville, FL	06/02/90	Independency
Central Georgia	South Liberty	Sharon, GA	05/05/91	PCUSA
Eastern Carolina	Christ Presbyterian	Greenville, NC	04/29/90	Organized
Evangel	Southwood	Huntsville, AL	09/16/90	Organized
Heartland	Hope Presbyterian	Iowa City, IA	11/10/90	Organized



## JOURNAL

Heritage	Heritage	New Castle, DE	02/10/90	Merge of Bethany & Covenant
Illiana	Marissa	Marissa, IL	10/13/90	Independency
Korean SE	Emmanuel	Timonium, MD	04/02/90	Independency
MS Valley	Providence	Clinton, MS	01/13/90	Merge of Clinton & Westminster
Missouri	Covenant	Town & Country MO	09/03/90	Organized
	Good Shepherd	St. Louis, MO	10/21/90	Organized
	Twin Oaks	Ballwin, MO	09/03/90	Organized
New River	Faith Reformed	Fairmont, WV	01/14/90	Organized
N. Georgia	First	Villa Rica, GA	04/28/91	PCUSA
	Ingleside	Stone Mtn, GA	12/09/90	PCUSA
	Our Savior's	Lilburn, GA	05/20/90	Organized
Northern California	Coastal Presbyterian	Los Osos, CA	01/20/91	Organized
	Peninsula Presbyterian	Pacific Grove, CA	02/24/91	Organized
Northern Illinois	Christ	Downer's Grove, IL	01/06/91	Organized
	Covenant	LaCrosse, WI	05/19/91	Organized
	Lakeside	Whitefish Bay, WI	03/17/91	Organized
	North Shore	Lake Forest, IL	09/16/90	Organized
Philadelphia	New Life	Glenside, PA	03/01/90	OPC
Potomac	Broadneck	Arnold, MD	09/09/90	Organized
	Hunt Valley	Hunt Valley, MD	10/23/90	Organized
	New Hope	Fairfax, VA	10/28/90	Organized
SE Alabama	Monroeville	Monroeville, AL	03/06/90	PCUSA
	Northwood	Dothan, AL	01/27/91	Organized
Southern Florida	Christ	Vero Beach, FL	05/04/90	Organized
Southwest	South Valley	Chandler, AZ	10/21/90	Organized
	Desert Springs	Tucson, AZ	03/17/91	Organized
Susquehanna Valley	Hope Reformed Msn	Shippensburg, PA	05/19/90	Mission
TN Valley	Alta Vista	Sweetwater, TN	10/28/90	PCUSA
	Christ Fellowship	Franklin, TN	05/20/90	Organized
	Covenant Presbyterian	Nashville, TN	04/21/91	Organized
	First	Crossville, TN	02/03/91	Organized
	New Covenant	Clarksville, TN	05/19/91	Organized
W. Carolina	Emmanuel	Franklin, NC	01/06/91	Organized

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**19-9 Voting on Book of Church Order Amendments**

The Assembly moved to consideration of amendments to the *Book of Church Order* proposed by the Eighteenth General Assembly. In connection with **Item 3**, the moderator ruled that its provisions for enrollment of additional delegates would take effect immediately, thus making eligible any alternates who had been so elected.

**Item 5** had not received the necessary votes to be considered. On motion the Assembly voted to extend the time on **Item 5** to allow the presbyteries not reporting to act and report their actions at the next General Assembly in accordance with *BCO* 26-5.

**ITEM 1. That BCO 14-1 (11) be amended:**

That the last sentence in first paragraph of *BCO* 14-1 (11) which reads:

"Each Presbytery shall through its representative present the Nominating Committee the name of one Ruling Elder and one Teaching Elder for each committee of the church, utilizing the nominating forms provided for this purpose by the Stated Clerk."

Be amended by substituting the following, so that it reads:

"Presbyteries shall utilize the nominating forms provided by the Stated Clerk for their nominations. Each presbytery may present one teaching elder and one ruling elder for each committee or agency."

STATED CLERK'S NOTE: This was adopted by the 17th General Assembly (*MI7GA*, 17-81, II, 7, p. 133) and inadvertently not sent down to presbyteries.

*Adopted*

PRESBYTERY	FOR	AGAINST	ABSTAIN	VOTE
ASCENSION	47	0	0	+
CALVARY	75	0	0	+
CENTRAL CAROLINA	44	0	0	+
CENTRAL FLORIDA	30	1	5	+
CENTRAL GEORGIA	55	0	1	+
COVENANT	24	0	0	+
EASTERN CANADA	11	0	0	+
EASTERN CAROLINA	23	0	1	+
EVANGEL	49	0	0	+
GRACE	58	0	1	+
GREAT LAKES	28	0	0	+
GULF COAST	34	0	0	+
HEARTLAND	23	0	1	+
HERITAGE	28	2	2	+
ILLIANA	28	0	0	+
JAMES RIVER	15	4	2	+
KOREAN CENTRAL				
KOREAN EASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHERN	8	1	0	+
KOREAN SOUTHEASTERN				

JOURNAL

KOREAN SOUTHWEST				
LOUISIANA	24	0	0	+
MID-AMERICA	12	0	0	+
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY	50	0	0	+
MISSOURI	26	0	0	+
NEW JERSEY	22	1	1	+
NEW RIVER	20	0	1	+
NORTH GEORGIA	50	0	1	+
NORTH TEXAS	22	0	6	+
NORTHEAST	15	4	4	+
NORTHERN CALIFORNIA	9	0	0	+
NORTHERN ILLINOIS	14	0	1	+
PACIFIC	17	0	4	+
PACIFIC NORTHWEST	34	0	1	+
PALMETTO	59	1	0	+
PHILADELPHIA	29	0	0	+
POTOMAC	78	2	3	+
SIOUXLANDS	16	0	1	+
SOUTH COAST	16	0	0	+
SOUTH TEXAS	9	4	0	+
SOUTHEAST ALABAMA	25	0	3	+
SOUTHERN FLORIDA	37	0	0	+
SOUTHWEST	29	0	4	+
SOUTHWEST FLORIDA				
SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY	20	1	1	+
TENNESSEE VALLEY	62	1	0	+
WARRIOR	0	24	1	-
WESTERN CAROLINA	34	12	1	+
WESTMINSTER	2	37	1	-

FOR 42 AGAINST 2

**ITEM 2.** That *BCO* 14-1 (12) be amended:

By inserting after the first paragraph of *BCO* 14-1 (12), Article V Administrative Committee of General Assembly RAO 5-1:

The Administrative Committee of General Assembly shall consist of twenty (20) members: (a) Eleven members in classes elected through the standard nomination and election procedure, (b) one member each from the following program committees or agencies: (1) Christian Education and Publication; (2) Covenant College; (3) Covenant Theological Seminary; (4) Insurance, Annuities and Relief; (5) Investor's Fund for Building and Development; (6) Mission to North America; (7) Mission to the World; (8) PCA Foundation; (9) Ridge Haven Conference Center.

The eleven members at large shall serve a term of four years. The chairman of the Administrative Committee shall be one of its members at large.

Each program committee and agency shall designate its member each year at the last meeting of the committee or board before the meeting of General

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Assembly. The chief administrative officers of the program committees and agencies may attend any meeting of the Administrative Committee. They shall be entitled to the privilege of the floor but shall not have a vote and must be excluded when an executive session is called.

*Adopted*

PRESBYTERY	FOR	AGAINST	ABSTAIN	VOTE
ASCENSION	21	28	4	-
CALVARY	77	1	0	+
CENTRAL CAROLINA	47	0	0	+
CENTRAL FLORIDA	37	4	2	+
CENTRAL GEORGIA	54	1	0	+
COVENANT	3	21	0	-
EASTERN CANADA	11	0	0	+
EASTERN CAROLINA	11	9	3	-
EVANGEL	39	9	0	+
GRACE	44	12	4	+
GREAT LAKES	19	6	3	+
GULF COAST	21	14	1	+
HEARTLAND	23	2	0	+
HERITAGE	25	2	1	+
ILLIANA	27	1	0	+
JAMES RIVER	13	6	2	+
KOREAN CENTRAL				
KOREAN EASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHERN	7	0	2	+
KOREAN SOUTHEASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHWEST				
LOUISIANA	0	23	1	-
MID-AMERICA	12	0	0	+
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY	52	4	2	+
MISSOURI	27	2	0	+
NEW JERSEY	23	0	1	+
NEW RIVER	16	2	3	+
NORTH GEORGIA	44	4	3	+
NORTH TEXAS	32	0	0	+
NORTHEAST	6	17	4	-
NORTHERN CALIFORNIA	8	1	0	+
NORTHERN ILLINOIS	1	12	0	-
PACIFIC	17	3	1	+
PACIFIC NORTHWEST	18	3	14	+
PALMETTO	66	0	0	+
PHILADELPHIA	17	23	2	-
POTOMAC	83	0	2	+
SIOUXLANDS	17	0	2	+
SOUTH COAST	18	0	0	+
SOUTH TEXAS	8	5	0	+

JOURNAL

SOUTHEAST ALABAMA	26	0	6	+
SOUTHERN FLORIDA	39	0	1	+
SOUTHWEST	26	4	5	+
SOUTHWEST FLORIDA				
SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY	21	3	1	+
TENNESSEE VALLEY	3	62	4	-
WARRIOR	0	24	1	-
WESTERN CAROLINA	0	47	2	-
WESTMINSTER	1	36	2	-

FOR 33 AGAINST 11

**ITEM 3. That BCO 14-2 be amended:**

By replacing the present 14-2 with the following:

The General Assembly, which is a permanent court, shall meet at least annually upon its own adjournment. It shall consist of all Teaching Elders in good standing with their presbyteries and Ruling Elders as elected by their Session. Each congregation is entitled to two Ruling Elder representatives for the first 350 communing members or fraction thereof, and one additional Ruling Elder for each additional 500 communing members or fraction thereof.

**Grounds:** This would allow for greater RE involvement at General Assembly.

*Adopted*

PRESBYTERY	FOR	AGAINST	ABSTAIN	VOTE
ASCENSION	29	20	4	+
CALVARY	76	0	1	+
CENTRAL CAROLINA	48	0	0	+
CENTRAL FLORIDA	40	1	2	+
CENTRAL GEORGIA	39	16	5	+
COVENANT	13	10	0	+
EASTERN CANADA	12	0	0	+
EASTERN CAROLINA	18	0	1	+
EVANGEL	47	6	0	+
GRACE	40	20	2	+
GREAT LAKES	25	2	1	+
GULF COAST	21	13	1	+
HEARTLAND	25	0	2	+
HERITAGE	26	6	2	+
ILLIANA	28	0	0	+
JAMES RIVER	19	3	1	+
KOREAN CENTRAL				
KOREAN EASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHERN	2	1	6	-
KOREAN SOUTHEASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHWEST				

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

LOUISIANA	19	2	2	+
MID-AMERICA	9	1	2	+
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY	5	61	5	-
MISSOURI	28	0	0	+
NEW JERSEY	22	1	1	+
NEW RIVER	1	18	2	-
NORTH GEORGIA	48	2	1	+
NORTH TEXAS	17	16	3	-
NORTHEAST	6	19	0	-
NORTHERN CALIFORNIA	9	0	0	+
NORTHERN ILLINOIS	9	4	3	+
PACIFIC	22	0	0	+
PACIFIC NORTHWEST	16	11	8	-
PALMETTO	61	5	0	+
PHILADELPHIA	39	5	0	+
POTOMAC	91	0	0	+
SIouxLANDS	12	4	2	+
SOUTH COAST	17	0	0	+
SOUTH TEXAS	13	0	0	+
SOUTHEAST ALABAMA	22	7	2	+
SOUTHERN FLORIDA	41	0	0	+
SOUTHWEST	24	1	7	+
SOUTHWEST FLORIDA				
SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY	25	0	0	+
TENNESSEE VALLEY	40	20	5	+
WARRIOR	29	2	0	+
WESTERN CAROLINA	12	35	2	-
WESTMINSTER	0	39	0	-

FOR 36 AGAINST 8

**ITEM 4. That BCO 15-2 be amended:**

By adding before the last sentence,

"The quorum for a commission appointed as an interim session need not conform to the requirements of a judicial commission, but only to those of a session (BCO 12-1)."

**Grounds:** It is prudent to make the quorum requirements for a mission church's acting session the same as for a church session (1 RE and 1 TE), rather than Judicial Commission (2 REs plus 2 TEs). The lower quorum requirement is more prudent for efficiently helping to start new churches.

*Adopted*

PRESBYTERY	FOR	AGAINST	ABSTAIN	VOTE
ASCENSION	40	9	3	+
CALVARY	78	0	0	+

JOURNAL

CENTRAL CAROLINA	47	0	0	+
CENTRAL FLORIDA	35	0	4	+
CENTRAL GEORGIA	58	1	0	+
COVENANT	22	1	0	+
EASTERN CANADA	12	0	0	+
EASTERN CAROLINA	18	1	1	+
EVANGEL	55	1	0	+
GRACE	6	40	0	-
GREAT LAKES	29	0	0	+
GULF COAST	36	0	0	+
HEARTLAND	27	0	0	+
HERITAGE	24	6	3	+
ILLIANA	28	0	0	+
JAMES RIVER	13	5	4	+
KOREAN CENTRAL				
KOREAN EASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHERN	7	1	1	+
KOREAN SOUTHEASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHWEST				
LOUISIANA	23	0	0	+
MID-AMERICA	12	0	0	+
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY	61	1	0	+
MISSOURI	29	0	0	+
NEW JERSEY	24	0	0	+
NEW RIVER	5	14	2	-
NORTH GEORGIA	51	0	0	+
NORTH TEXAS	23	9	1	+
NORTHEAST	17	4	3	+
NORTHERN CALIFORNIA	9	0	0	+
NORTHERN ILLINOIS	0	15	1	-
PACIFIC	22	0	0	+
PACIFIC NORTHWEST	31	0	2	+
PALMETTO	67	0	0	+
PHILADELPHIA	45	0	1	+
POTOMAC	89	0	3	+
SIOUXLANDS	18	0	1	+
SOUTH COAST	17	0	0	+
SOUTH TEXAS	13	0	0	+
SOUTHEAST ALABAMA	27	0	2	+
SOUTHERN FLORIDA	43	0	0	+
SOUTHWEST	32	0	0	+
SOUTHWEST FLORIDA				
SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY	23	1	0	+
TENNESSEE VALLEY	67	2	1	+
WARRIOR	31	0	0	+
WESTERN CAROLINA	22	23	3	-
WESTMINSTER	33	0	6	+

FOR 40 AGAINST 4

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**ITEM 5.** That *BCO 58-4* be revised to read as follows:

That the third paragraph of *BCO 58-4* be revised to read as follows:

Since by our Lord's appointment, this sacrament sets forth communion of the saints, it is fitting to welcome to the table of the Lord not only those who have confessed His name in our fellowship and oversight, but also those who have professed the true religion in the fellowship and discipline of other churches that proclaim the gospel. Before the observance begins, the Minister, at the discretion of the Session, may either

- (1) invite all such communicants present to participate in the ordinance with the communicant members of the church; or
- (2) invite all such communicants present to participate who have been examined and approved by the Session.

In either case the Minister shall clearly state the Scriptural conditions for partaking of the sacrament, welcoming penitent sinners to the table of the Lord, but warning the impenitent and undiscerning against unworthy participation, in accord with I Corinthians 11:27-32. It is proper to give a special invitation to non-communicants to remain during the service.

**Grounds:** See Minutes 18th GA, 18-77, p. 171 for Report on Fencing the Lord's Table.

*Deferred to 20th GA*

PRESBYTERY	FOR	AGAINST	ABSTAIN	VOTE
ASCENSION	36	5	13	+
CALVARY	55	23	0	+
CENTRAL CAROLINA	12	28	0	-
CENTRAL FLORIDA	33	5	6	+
CENTRAL GEORGIA	62	0	1	+
COVENANT	7	13	0	-
EASTERN CANADA	12	0	0	+
EASTERN CAROLINA	1	18	1	-
EVANGEL	39	13	6	+
GRACE	36	6	2	+
GREAT LAKES	24	4	3	+
GULF COAST	34	1	0	+
HEARTLAND	20	5	3	+
HERITAGE	29	3	0	+
ILLIANA	28	0	0	+
JAMES RIVER	20	0	1	+
KOREAN CENTRAL				
KOREAN EASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHERN	9	0	0	+
KOREAN SOUTHEASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHWEST				
LOUISIANA	4	19	0	-
MID-AMERICA	12	0	0	+
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY	58	6	1	+



JOURNAL

MISSISSIPPI VALLEY	58	6	1	+
MISSOURI	26	5	0	+
NEW JERSEY	12	9	2	+
NEW RIVER	1	19	1	-
NORTH GEORGIA	42	8	1	+
NORTH TEXAS	25	8	0	+
NORTHEAST	9	22	5	-
NORTHERN CALIFORNIA	9	0	0	+
NORTHERN ILLINOIS	6	10	0	-
PACIFIC	21	0	1	+
PACIFIC NORTHWEST	33	0	4	+
PALMETTO	3	58	7	-
PHILADELPHIA	37	5	1	+
POTOMAC	20	63	12	-
SIOUXLANDS	17	2	1	+
SOUTH COAST	15	1	1	+
SOUTH TEXAS	5	9	0	-
SOUTHEAST ALABAMA	23	5	5	+
SOUTHERN FLORIDA	39	3	3	+
SOUTHWEST	32	1	0	+
SOUTHWEST FLORIDA				
SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY	22	0	1	+
TENNESSEE VALLEY				
WARRIOR	23	7	1	+
WESTERN CAROLINA	26	16	4	+
WESTMINSTER	2	36	1	-

FOR 32 AGAINST 11

**ITEM 6. That BCO 14-1 (11) be amended so that the second and third sentence read as follows:**

"Each presbytery shall be assigned to a class by the Stated Clerk based on its date of formation. The members shall serve in classes of three year terms, alternating between ruling and teaching elders."

**Grounds:** Nominating Committee has recommended such a change to allow for greater continuity and better knowledge of the process of nominating. The 17th GA asked the Committee on Constitutional Business to prepare appropriate language for the BCO (17-81, II, 8, p. 133).

*Adopted*

PRESBYTERY	FOR	AGAINST	ABSTAIN	VOTE
ASCENSION	2	1	30	-
CALVARY	75	2	2	+
CENTRAL CAROLINA	50	0	0	+
CENTRAL FLORIDA	32	0	0	+

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

CENTRAL GEORGIA COVENANT	60	0	1	+
EASTERN CANADA	10	1	0	+
EASTERN CAROLINA	12	0	8	+
EVANGEL	50	2	1	+
GRACE	49	0	0	+
GREAT LAKES	36	0	1	+
GULF COAST	40	0	0	+
HEARTLAND	27	0	1	+
HERITAGE	33	0	0	+
ILLIANA	28	0	0	+
JAMES RIVER	5	7	10	-
KOREAN CENTRAL				
KOREAN EASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHERN				
KOREAN SOUTHEASTERN				
KOREAN SOUTHWEST				
LOUISIANA	22	0	1	+
MID-AMERICA				
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY	68	0	0	+
MISSOURI	29	0	0	+
NEW JERSEY	0	15	3	-
NEW RIVER	15	0	6	+
NORTH GEORGIA	46	4	1	+
NORTH TEXAS	28	0	2	+
NORTHEAST	13	5	7	+
NORTHERN CALIFORNIA	15	0	0	+
NORTHERN ILLINOIS	14	0	1	+
PACIFIC	8	14	0	-
PACIFIC NORTHWEST	33	0	2	+
PALMETTO	67	0	1	+
PHILADELPHIA	43	0	0	+
POTOMAC	84	1	3	+
SIOUXLANDS	16	0	3	+
SOUTH COAST	16	0	0	+
SOUTH TEXAS	14	0	0	+
SOUTHEAST ALABAMA	23	0	6	+
SOUTHERN FLORIDA	59	0	0	+
SOUTHWEST	35	0	0	+
SOUTHWEST FLORIDA	28	0	10	+
SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY	30	0	1	+
TENNESSEE VALLEY	61	3	1	+
WARRIOR				
WESTERN CAROLINA	46	0	2	+
WESTMINSTER	33	1	5	+

FOR 37 AGAINST 4

## JOURNAL

### 19-10 Overtures and Communications Received

- OVERTURE 1 From Evangel Presbytery** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Restatement of *BCO* 38-2" (See 19-67, p. 156)
- OVERTURE 2 From Northeast Presbytery** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Enforce *BCO* 46-2" (See 19-67, p. 157)
- OVERTURE 3 From the Presbytery of the Southwest** (to MNA)  
"Divide the Presbytery of the Southwest" (See 19-55, p. 115)
- OVERTURE 4 From the Presbytery of New River** (to CE&P)  
"Disclaimer on CE&P Bookstore Materials" (See 19-27, p. 73)
- OVERTURE 5 From the Presbytery of New River** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Amend *BCO* 15-4 to Permit General Assembly to Adjudicate" (See 19-67, p. 161)
- OVERTURE 6 From the Presbytery of New River** (to B&O)  
"Instruct GA Committees Not to Initiate Changes in Governing Documents" (See 19-67, p. 155)
- OVERTURE 7 From James River Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Do Not Include Grounds for *BCO* Amendments" (See 19-61, p. 128)
- OVERTURE 8 From Westminster Presbytery** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Amend *BCO* to Provide More Direct Election by Presbyteries" (See 19-67, p. 161)
- OVERTURE 9 From Westminster Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Have CCB Report on Committees Re: *BCO* 14-1 (7)" (See 19-67, p. 163)
- OVERTURE 10 From Westminster Presbytery** (to CCB)  
"Amend *BCO* Preface II, 1 to Avoid Pluralistic Interpretation" (See 19-67, p. 164)
- OVERTURE 11 From Westminster Presbytery** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Amend *BCO* 15-4 to Permit General Assembly to Adjudicate" (See 19-67, p. 164)
- OVERTURE 12 From the Ascension Presbytery** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Amend *BCO* 34-1 so Neighboring Presbytery May Adjudicate Case" (See 19-67, p. 165)
- OVERTURE 13 From the Presbytery of the Ascension** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Amend *BCO* 15-5 Requiring GA Ratification before Executing Verdict" (See 19-67, p. 166)

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- OVERTURE 14 From the Presbytery of the Ascension** (to B&O)  
"Instruct Clerk re: Constitutionality of Appeals" (See 19-67, p. 167)
- OVERTURE 15 From the Presbytery of the Ascension** (to MNA)  
"Divide Ascension Presbytery" (See 19-55, p. 115)
- OVERTURE 16 VACATED**
- OVERTURE 17 From the Presbytery of Evangel** (to IAR)  
"Instruct IAR to Find Appropriate Coverage for Therapy" (See 19-65, p. 153)
- OVERTURE 18 From the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama** (to MNA)  
"Transfer Escambia County, AL, from Gulf Coast" (See 19-55, p. 119)
- OVERTURE 19 From the New River Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Amend RAO 18 Re: Amendment or Suspension" (See 19-61, p. 128)
- OVERTURE 20 From New River Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Instruct Committees and Agencies to Furnish Minutes" (See 19-67, p. 167)
- OVERTURE 21 From the New River Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Provide Methods for Presbyteries and Churches to Send Missionaries Apart  
from MTW" (See 19-46, p. 92)
- OVERTURE 22 From the New River Presbytery** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Amend 24-5 to Permit Session to Ordain Elders and Deacons"  
(See 19-67, p. 167)
- OVERTURE 23 From the Presbytery of the Ascension** (to MNA)  
"Annex Counties from Great Lakes and New River Presbyteries"  
(See 19-55, p. 116)
- OVERTURE 24 From the Presbytery of the Ascension** (to MTW and B&O)  
"Mission Money for Missions" (See 19-46, p. 93)
- OVERTURE 25 From the Presbytery of the Ascension** (to MTW and B&O)  
"Administrative Fees for Missionaries" (See 19-46, p. 94)
- OVERTURE 26 From the Presbytery of Eastern Canada** (to MNA)  
"Redraw Boundaries of Eastern Canada Presbytery" (See 19-55, p. 118)
- OVERTURE 27 From the Presbytery of New River** (to CCB and B&O)  
"Amend BCO 15-4 So as to Limit Membership on SJC" (See 19-67, p. 168)
- OVERTURE 28 From the Presbytery of Central Georgia** (to B&O)  
"Reaffirm Position on Homosexuality" (See 19-67, p. 169)

## JOURNAL

- OVERTURE 29 From the Louisiana Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Amend RAO (or *BCO* 14-1) to Limit Membership on Administrative Committee"  
(See 19-61, p. 129)
- OVERTURE 30 From the Presbytery of Westminster** (to B&O)  
"Amend RAO V to Limit Membership on Administrative Committee"  
(See 19-61, p. 130)
- OVERTURE 31 From the Presbytery of Westminster** (to B&O)  
"Allow no Grounds to Be Included When *BCO* Amendments are Sent Down"  
(See 19-61, p. 128)
- OVERTURE 32 From the Presbytery of Westminster** (to B&O)  
"Amend RAO 4-11 RE. Adoption of Budgets"  
(See 19-61, p. 132)
- OVERTURE 33 From the Presbytery of Westminster** (to B&O)  
"Loving Rebuke of Stated Clerk"  
(See 19-61, p. 126)
- OVERTURE 34 From the South Texas Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Appoint Study Committee on Christian School Development"  
(See 19-27, p. 73)
- OVERTURE 35 From Central Carolina Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Instruct CE&P re. Advertisements in *The Messenger*"  
(See 19-27, p. 74)
- OVERTURE 36 From Central Carolina Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Instruct AC to Review Investment Portfolio of PCA Agencies"  
(See 19-61, p. 130)
- OVERTURE 37 From Central Carolina Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Appoint AC to Review Effectiveness of IAR"  
(See 19-61, p. 131)
- OVERTURE 38 From Eastern Carolina Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Appoint Study Committee: 'Are Drama and Liturgical Dance Consistent with  
Doctrine of Worship?'"  
(See 19-67, p. 169)
- OVERTURE 39 From Northeast Presbytery** (to B&O)  
"Establish Ad Interim Committee to Plan 350th Anniversary of *WCF*"  
(See 19-67, p. 170)
- OVERTURE 40 From TE Herbert Shipman** (to B&O)  
"Declare Ordination of Deaconesses to Be In Violation of *BCO*"  
(See 19-67, p. 171)
- OVERTURE 41 From Heritage Presbytery** (Substitute for Overture 16 now  
Vacated) (to B&O)  
"Calling a Day of Thanksgiving for War Victory"  
(See 19-67, p. 172)

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**OVERTURE 42 From Presbytery of the Ascension** (to MNA)  
"Add Western NY to Boundaries of Ascension Presbytery" (See 19-55, p. 115)

**OVERTURE 43 From Presbytery of the Ascension** (to B&O)  
"Amend RAO 4-9 to Limit Coordinators and Stated Clerk to two Four-Year  
Terms" (See 19-61, p. 134)

COMMUNICATIONS

**COMMUNICATION 1: From Warrior Presbytery** (FYI)  
"Resolution Honoring Teaching Elder Thomas G. Kay"

Communication 1, a resolution honoring TE Thomas G. Kay, Sr., was received as information as follows:

**Whereas**, the Lord's calling brought Tom Kay into the pastoral ministry in 1956 and he has served our Lord faithfully in this calling for 34 years, and;

**Whereas**, a shepherd's care was administered to God's people in three churches in Warrior Presbytery through the ministry of Tom Kay, and;

**Whereas**, through his involvement in this Presbytery, particularly in the area of World Missions, Christ and His kingdom have been honored and glorified, and;

**Whereas**, through Tom Kay's nomination by this court and subsequent election by the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America to the Board of Trustees of Covenant college, Warrior Presbytery has made known with greater intensity its concern and care for our college students, and;

**Whereas**, this court has long respected the wisdom and counsel of Tom Kay;

**Therefore be it resolved** that Warrior Presbytery expresses its thanksgiving unto the Lord through the means of this instrument for the ministry and work of Thomas G. Kay, and;

**Be it further resolved** in accordance with the action of the court in its Sixty-Ninth Stated Meeting at Palmer Home for Children in Columbus, Mississippi, on July 17, 1990, this court does hereby declare that Tom Kay is an Honorably Retired Minister of the Presbyterian Church in America and is granted all the privileges afforded such a minister by the *Book of Church Order*, and;

**Be it further resolved** that this resolution be spread upon the Minutes of Warrior Presbytery, sent unto the Sessions of First Presbyterian Church in Centreville, AL, the First Presbyterian Church of Aliceville, AL, and the Pleasant Ridge Presbyterian Church of Eutaw, AL. A copy shall also be sent to the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America, and

**Finally**, be it further resolved that a copy of this resolution shall be sent unto Mrs. Thomas G. Kay in recognition of her support and work alongside her husband over the past 34 years of his formal ministry.

Adopted at the Stated meeting of Warrior Presbytery on 16 October 1990.

Attested by /s/ R. Dennis Nolen, Jr.  
Stated Clerk

JOURNAL

**COMMUNICATION 2 From the New River Presbytery** (to MNA)  
"Does Not Concur With Ascension New Presbytery Boundaries"  
(See 19-55, p. 116)

**COMMUNICATION 3 From the General Synod of the Associate Reformed  
Presbyterian Church** (to IRC)  
"Fraternal Greetings"  
(See 19-18, p. 64)

**COMMUNICATION 4 From Gulf Coast Presbytery** (to MNA)  
"Consent to Transfer Escambia County to SE Alabama Presbytery"  
(See 19-55, p. 119)

**COMMUNICATION 5 From the Orthodox Presbyterian Church** (to IRC)  
"Reconsider Organic Union Process"

ORTHODOX  
PRESBYTERIAN  
CHURCH

---

OFFICE OF  
THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

---

Richard A. Barker, Stated Clerk  
639 Shadowlawn Drive, Westfield, NJ 07090

---

June 10, 1991

General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America  
The Rev. Paul R. Gilchrist, Stated Clerk  
1852 Century Place, Suite 190  
Atlanta, GA 30345

Fathers and Brethren:

The recently concluded (June 6, 1991) 58th General Assembly of the Orthodox Presbyterian Church was informed, via the report of its Committee on Ecumenicity and Interchurch Relations, of the decision of your 1990 General Assembly "(to inform) the OPC that the best way that the PCA can understand the desire of the OPC for union is for the OPC to take their necessary constitutional steps requesting to be received into the PCA, and that the Interchurch Relations Committee continue to be available to the OPC Committee on Ecumenicity and Interchurch Relations for discussion of matters relating to the joining and receiving process."

It surely is no secret that many in the OPC, including some who have favored and some who have not favored the joining and receiving proposals that came before our General Assembly in 1981 and 1986, believe that the joining and receiving process itself has engendered difficulties in the OPC. For some, the joining and receiving process is an obstacle to the eventual joining of our churches on a biblical basis.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

During discussion of this topic at our General Assembly it was moved and carried that "the 58th General Assembly reaffirm to the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America our desire for closer union with the PCA, and plead with our brethren to reconsider their rejection of organic union by any process except J & R." This motion received a strong majority, and we trust that you will give it your prayerful consideration.

May the Lord of the church deliver all of us from all thoughts and stands that can not be substantiated from His Word, as we seek to reflect more perfectly His desire for one church.

Yours in Christ's service,  
/s/ Richard A. Barker, Stated Clerk

CLERK'S NOTE: This was received too late to be acted on by Interchurch Relations Committee.

### **19-11 Theological Examining Committee**

There being no one on hand to present or speak to the report of the Committee on motion the Assembly voted to accept the report as submitted as follows:

The Committee met for the purpose of examining Dr. James R. Poteet, Director-appointee of Ridge Haven, and The Reverend Paul G. Settle, Director of Ministries-appointee of Ridge Haven.

The examination of each was sustained.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ RE Bruce G. Kitchen, Chairman

### **19-12 Committee of Commissioners on Bills and Overtures Partial Report**

TE Henry Johnson, chairman, led in prayer and presented a partial report of the Committee. The Committee's recommendation, that Overture 6 be answered in the affirmative as amended, was defeated. (See 19-67, III, 1, p. 155 for text.)

### **19-13 Recess**

The time for recess having come and the moderator having announced his intention not to reconvene the Assembly following the evening inspirational service, the Assembly on motion voted to recess and was led in closing prayer by TE Kennedy Smartt at 5:25 p.m.



JOURNAL

MINUTES - TUESDAY MORNING

June 18, 1991

Second Session

**19-14 Assembly Reconvened**

The Assembly gathered for worship at 8:00 a.m. under the direction of Illiana Presbytery.

*Give ear to my words, O LORD, consider my sighing.  
Listen to my cry for help, my King and my God,  
for to you I pray.  
In the morning, O LORD, you hear my voice:  
in the morning I lay my requests before you  
and wait in expectation.  
Psalm 5:1-3*

Prelude: "Be Thou My Vision"

Callahan

Call to Worship: Isaiah 62:6-7

Hymn 353: "I Love Thy Kingdom, Lord"

ST THOMAS

Scripture Lesson: II Chronicles 7:11-22

Praise in Song and Prayers of the Saints

"Humble Thyself in the Sight of the Lord"

"The Steadfast Love of the Lord"

"More Precious than Silver"

Scripture Lesson: Luke 10:1-20

Hymn 305: "Arise, My Soul, Arise"

LENOX

Benediction

Postlude: "O God, Beyond All Praising"

Holst

**19-15 Reconvening for Business**

Following a brief recess Moderator Belz reconvened the Assembly at 8:30 a.m. RE Clark Breeding led in prayer.

**19-16 Ad Interim Committee on Divorce and Remarriage**

TE Paul Fowler, chairman, led in prayer and introduced the members of the Committee. He then led the Assembly through the printed report (Appendix P, pp. 604). Before any recommendations were presented, a procedural motion was adopted: "That the Report of the Ad Interim Committee on Divorce and Remarriage, excepting **Recommendation 7**, be sent to the presbyteries, and that presbyteries respond to the Committee with comments, the Committee taking into consideration these comments for report to the 20th General Assembly."

**Recommendation 7** was then adopted, the final amended text reading as follows:

"In light of the current focus on sexuality and the public confusion generated through the recent controversy on that subject within the Presbyterian Church (USA), the Presbyterian Church in America (PCA), a distinctly different denomination, strongly reaffirms its commitment to the Bible's teaching on sex and marriage.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

"The PCA reaffirms that sex is a gift from God which should be expressed only in marriage between a man and a woman. Therefore all sexual intercourse outside marriage, including homosexuality and lesbianism, is contrary to God's Word (the Bible), and is sin. We acknowledge that the Bible declares that those who continuously and unrepentantly sin shall not inherit the kingdom of God, and we sorrow for their plight. Yet we also joyfully acknowledge that God in the gospel of Jesus Christ forgives repentant sinners and welcomes such forgiven, cleansed and changed sinners into the Church of Jesus Christ (1 Corinthians 6:9-11)."

Finally, the Assembly adopted a motion to set a special order for the report of this Committee at the 20th General Assembly, at 8:30 a.m. on the second morning of the Assembly.

### 19-17 Minutes of Previous Sessions

On motion the Assembly approved the minutes of Monday's session as distributed, subject to corrections to be submitted to the recording clerks.

### 19-18 Fraternal Delegates

TE Henry Smith, chairman of the Interchurch Relations Committee, led in prayer and presented the Committee's report (Appendix H, pp. 341). Fraternal delegates were introduced and brought greetings as follows:

Christian Reformed Church	TE Chris DeVos
Orthodox Presbyterian Church	TE Thomas Champness
Reformed Presbyterian Church of North America	TE James Wright
Evangelical Presbyterian Church	TE Robert Norris
Presbyterian Church of Japan	TE Yuzo Kurokawa

The Rev. Mr. Yoshiyata Yanagi, also from the General Assembly in Japan, was present.

The following communication of fraternal greetings was received:

### COMMUNICATION 3 From the General Synod of the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church

Dr. Paul R. Gilchrist  
Office of the Stated Clerk  
Presbyterian Church in America  
1852 Century Place, Suite 190  
Atlanta, GA 30345

Dear Dr. Gilchrist:

On the occasion of the 1991 meeting of your highest church court, the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church takes this opportunity to reaffirm our highest regard for you as Christian brothers and recommits itself to our fraternal relationship with your church.

## JOURNAL

As we share with you our joint dedication to the reformed tradition, so we also share our prayers that God will continue to bless and use both your church and ours to do His Will and answer His Call in the world today.

May this year be a milestone for our God in your Church. Our prayers are with you as you meet to plan and do His Will.

Sincerely,  
/s/ C. Ronald Beard, Principal Clerk  
Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church

### **19-19 Committee of Commissioners on Interchurch Relations**

TE Lewis Ruff, chairman, presented the Committee's report:

#### **I. Business Referred to the Committee**

Report of the Permanent Committee consisting of five recommendations with Appendices A and B.

Minutes of stated meeting November 7-8, 1990

Minutes of stated meeting January 17, 1991, conference call

Minutes of stated meeting April 4, 1991, conference call

#### **II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed**

The Committee discussed:

1. Progress on Discussions with the OPC relating to the joining and receiving process.
2. The Committee proposal that fellowship meetings be initiated through the WEF.
3. The coordination of MTW and ICR relating to the selection of fraternal and ecclesiastical delegates which address Assembly.
4. Actions relating to the discussion at the Christian Reformed Church to open offices of Elder to women.
5. The reaction of the EPC to the actions of the 18th General Assembly relating to the establishment of fraternal relations.

#### **III. Recommendations:**

1. That the 19th General Assembly affirm its desire that this committee continue to be available to the OPC Ecumenicity committee for discussion of matters relating to the joining and receiving process; that we rejoice in the reported progress of these discussions, and support them with our prayers. *Adopted*
2. That the paper entitled "Report on Defining the Nature of Relations With Other Churches, including recommendations 1, 2, and 3, of that paper, be adopted as amended. See Appendix A below. *Adopted*

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### APPENDIX A

#### REPORT ON DEFINING THE NATURE OF RELATIONS WITH OTHER CHURCHES

The purpose of this report is to define the levels and manner of the relationships the Presbyterian Church in America has or should have with other Church bodies, as assigned to the Interchurch Relations Committee by the Eighteenth General Assembly.

It is important to the interests of the Presbyterian Church in America that we have a clear understanding of the types of relationships that the PCA enjoys with other Church bodies, and how those relationships are conducted.

We see three basic needs which must be addressed. First, there are those churches with whom we share a mutual commitment to the Reformed faith and Presbyterian polity who are located along with us in North America. The churches which compose the North American Presbyterian and Reformed Council (NAPARC) are of course primarily in view here, although there may be any number of churches beyond NAPARC who share our basic commitments, while differing in details of application in faith or practice, with whom we may wish to establish formal relations.

Second, the PCA is part of the world church and we possess a deep concern for the welfare of fellow believers wherever they may be found. Many of these churches share the same beliefs and standards as do the NAPARC churches. Distance limits the amount of contact we can have as church bodies. Nevertheless we ought to cherish a closer fellowship whenever that is possible. That will necessarily be something less than formal relations, church to church.

Third, we are but one part of the church of the Lord Jesus Christ within the United States. Many of the other churches hold to the essentials of the Biblical faith and exhibit a warm evangelical spirit. They may not however, be specifically reformed in doctrine or practice. We nevertheless share many mutual concerns, enjoy fellowship at various points, and can edify each other through the ministry of encouragement.

Therefore, the Interchurch Relations Committee proposes three levels of relationships with other church bodies to be carried out consistently with the needs stated above.

1. **Churches in Ecclesiastical Fellowship.** These relationships are established with Reformed churches in North America by an act of the General Assembly. With these churches the PCA will exchange **Fraternal Delegates**. The PCA can receive as Fraternal Delegates from these churches men who subscribe to the classic Reformed confessions and whose office in their communion is on a parity with the offices of Ruling and Teaching Elder in the PCA. This means:
  - a. Exchange of fraternal delegates at major assemblies;
  - b. Occasional pulpit fellowship;
  - c. Intercommunion (i.e., fellowship at the Table of the Lord);
  - d. Joint action in areas of common responsibility;
  - e. Communication on major issues of joint concern;
  - f. Exercise of mutual concern and admonition with a view to promoting the fundamentals of Christian unity.

## JOURNAL

2. **Churches in Fraternal Correspondence.** The PCA will establish relationship with churches across the world who, through their national Associations, are members of the World Evangelical Fellowship. (The PCA is a member of the WEF by its membership in the National Association of Evangelicals and an Associate Member of the WEF through Mission to the World.)

The relationship with these bodies will be conducted by:

- a. Exchanges of correspondence;
- b. Fellowship meeting in conjunction with the General Assembly of the WEF held every six years, and
- c. Exchange of delegates at church courts if agreeable to those courts.

A PCA delegate would be authorized by the Interchurch Relations Committee if he happened to be in the area when another church's court was meeting. He would attend at no expense to the PCA or its agencies.

Similar delegates to the PCA General Assembly would present written greetings of three hundred words to be distributed to the assembly and would be introduced by the Interchurch Relations Committee Chairman.

3. **Churches in Ecclesiastical Correspondence.** The Interchurch Relations Committee will be authorized to exchange greetings and letters of encouragement with other evangelical churches in North America with whom we have not entered into Fraternal Relations, for the purpose of wishing them well in the Lord.

/s/ K. Eric Perrin

/s/ Michael Frey

/s/ Carl Wilhelm

3. That the paper entitled "Proposal to the World Evangelical Fellowship Regarding a World Wide Presbyterian and Reformed Fellowship" be adopted as amended. See Appendix B below. *Adopted*

### APPENDIX B

#### PROPOSAL TO THE WORLD EVANGELICAL FELLOWSHIP REGARDING A WORLD WIDE PRESBYTERIAN AND REFORMED FELLOWSHIP

From the Interchurch Relations Committee of the  
Presbyterian Church in America

The Presbyterian Church in America wishes to propose to the WEF the formation of a fellowship of Reformed and Presbyterian churches to be established under the auspices of the WEF.

The purpose of this fellowship would be to provide contact and fellowship between like-minded churches from various countries around the world at a relatively informal level. We would propose that WEF associated churches from the Reformed branch of Christ's Church be identified as such, for the purpose of this fellowship and that a meeting of representatives of these churches be held in conjunction with the June, 1992, WEF General Assembly in Indonesia. At that

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

meeting, plans for further or ongoing contact could be drawn up as seemed good to the churches.

This fellowship would remain informal. One of the reasons we desire it is to avoid political or cultural entanglements easily blundered into when formal relations are attempted with churches not already on intimate terms.

The sole criteria for membership in this proposed fellowship of recognized Reformed and Presbyterian churches would be membership in the WEF through the national Association in a particular country or through Associate member status in the WEF. In this way the proposed fellowship does not need to take on the sometimes sticky responsibility of enforcing standards of reformed theology and practice which has plagued other organizations such as the Reformed Ecumenical Council and others. It is not that these standards do not matter to us, but rather, it is our desire that the enforcement of Biblical standards be the responsibility of the various national Associations who are close enough to deal effectively with it.

In addition, the proposed fellowship will encourage a greater sense of being part of the world Church. Those of us who are already connected to the WEF would encourage churches who wish to have ties to us to do so through the WEF. Thus, they would need to face their role as a part of their national church. We hope this would foster a real spirit of oneness among evangelical churches in their respective countries.

4. That a special welcome to the 19th General Assembly be given to the representatives of the Presbyterian Church in Japan by granting them up to three minutes to address the Assembly. *Adopted*
5. That this communication be sent to the Christian Reformed Church:

The Presbyterian Church in America praises God for the vigorous and vital witness to our Lord Jesus Christ through the Reformed faith that the Christian Reformed Church has long maintained. We are grateful that many who have been nurtured and matured in your fellowship have come to us and been used to strengthen our church in faith and witness.

It is then, with respect, humility and gratitude toward you, and with deep concern for the retention and propagation of the Reformed faith that we entreat you to reverse the 1990 action opening the offices of minister and ruling elder to women.

We believe this to be contrary to the clear teaching of Scripture (1 Timothy 2, 3) and the Belgic Confession (Article XXX).

*Adopted*

### Commissioners Present:

**Presbytery**  
Central Georgia  
Evangel  
Grace  
Great Lakes  
Gulf Coast

**Commissioner**  
TE Robert Ackley  
TE Mike Williams  
RE Dewitt Smylie  
TE William Shell  
TE Robert Hayes

## JOURNAL

Heritage	TE Laird Harris
Louisiana	TE Steve Wilkins
Mississippi Valley	TE Paul Zetterholm
New River	RE George Alder
North Georgia	RE Les Brooks
Northern California	TE Lewis Ruff, Chairman
Northern Illinois	RE Robert Rathburn
Palmetto	TE Bill Walsh
Philadelphia	TE John Clark, Sr.
Potomac	TE Timothy Habbershon
Southeast Alabama	TE Curt McDaniel
Southern Florida	TE Eric Hausler
Southwest	RE William Montgomery
Susquehanna Valley	RE Harrison Brown
Tennessee Valley	TE Len Hendrix
Westminster	RE Joe Reynolds

### Guests

TE Thomas Champness	OPC Fraternal Delegate
TE Henry Smith	Chairman, Interchurch Relations Committee
RE Dwight Dunn	
RE Bill Smith	

The report as a whole was adopted.

### 19-20 Committee of Commissioners on Administration Partial Report

TE Palmer Robertson, chairman, led in prayer and presented a partial report of the Committee. **Recommendations 1-3** were adopted as presented, and TE Robertson concluded the partial report with prayer (see 19-61, p. 122 for disposition).

### 19-21 Personal Resolution #1 from TE James Richwine

TE James Richwine presented a personal resolution which was received and referred to the Committee of Commissioners on Administration (19-61, III, 46, p. 135).

### 19-22 Recess

The Assembly recessed for the lunch break at 11:45 a.m.

## MINUTES - TUESDAY AFTERNOON

June 18, 1991

### Third Session

### 19-23 Assembly Reconvened

The Assembly reconvened at 1:30 p.m. with the singing of "Amazing Grace" and prayer led by TE Stephen Bostrom.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 19-24 Committee on Thanks

Moderator Belz appointed the Assembly Committee on Thanks as follows: TE Charles Garriott, TE Michael Preg, RE Jule Robbe, and RE Dale Peacock.

### 19-25 Committee of Commissioners on Covenant Theological Seminary

RE Marvin Padgett, chairman, led in prayer and presented the Committee's report:

#### I. Business Referred to the Committee

##### A. Report

B. Minutes: May 18-19, 1990; September 28-29, 1990

January 25-26, 1991;

Executive Committee, December 14, 1990

C. Audit, June 30, 1990

#### II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed

A. Finances of Covenant Theological Seminary

B. Need for recruiting of Covenant Theological Seminary students by churches.

C. Proposed New Programs:

1. Counselling

2. Church Planting

#### III. Recommendations:

1. That the minutes of May 18-19, 1990 be approved. *Adopted*
2. That the minutes of September 28-29, 1990 be approved. *Adopted*
3. That the minutes of January 25-26, 1990 be approved. *Adopted*
4. That the minutes of the Executive Committee of December 14, 1990 be approved *Adopted*
5. That recognizing that training for the pastoral ministry is vital to the future of our denomination, we ask that churches be urged to participate at the level of the ASKINGS. *Adopted*
6. That, in light of the additional understanding and encouragement the Committee of Commissioners received from Dr. Kooistra's oral report to the Committee supplementing his written report to the Nineteenth General Assembly (Appendix F, p. 329), the Board of Covenant Theological Seminary insure that future reports to the General Assembly and the record of their Board minutes be more descriptive and comprehensive. *Adopted*
7. That, in accordance with the practice of other agencies, the 19th General Assembly direct the Board of Trustees of Covenant Theological Seminary to make its written report to future General Assemblies through the chairman of the Board of Trustees. *Adopted*
8. The report as a whole was adopted.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ RE Marvin Padgett



# JOURNAL

## COMMISSIONERS PRESENT:

### Presbytery

Ascension  
Calvary  
Central Carolina  
Central Georgia  
Covenant  
Evangel  
Heartland  
Illiana  
Mississippi Valley  
New River  
North Texas  
Northeast  
Northern California  
Pacific Northwest  
Palmetto  
Philadelphia  
Potomac  
South Texas  
SE Alabama  
Southern Florida  
Southwest  
SW Florida  
Susquehanna Valley  
Tennessee Valley  
Warrior  
Westminster

### Commissioners

TE E. Scott Johnson  
RE John Mitchell  
TE Tom Henry  
RE CHARles Davis  
TE Mack Plunket  
RE George H. Haskew  
TE Phillip Kayser  
TE Daniel Dermyer, Secretary  
RE Jim Moore  
TE Samuel Gibb  
TE Ron Dunton  
TE John L. Vance  
TE Marcus Serven  
TE Kevin Skogen  
RE David Koon  
RE John Clark, Jr.  
RE Charles Suter  
TE Larry Allen  
RE Harold Wiggins  
RE Charles Rozzelle  
TE Richard R. Smith  
TE Bruce Lax  
TE John MacRae  
RE Marvin Padgett, Chairman  
TE Chuck Phillips  
TE Carl Howell, Jr.

### 19-26 Procedural Motion

On motion the Assembly voted that all recommendations in the reports of the committees of commissioners that have been approved unanimously in committee be adopted automatically and without discussion, unless a commissioner requests discussion on a particular item, in which case it will be open for debate.

### 19-27 Committee of Commissioners on Christian Education and Publications

TE Archie Moore, chairman, led in prayer and introduced the chairman of the permanent committee, TE Ronald Shaw, who spoke briefly to the Assembly. The Assembly then turned to the report:

#### I. Business Referred to the Committee

- A. Minutes of September 20-21, 1990, February 20-21, 1991
- B. The Report of the Permanent Committee
- C. The Audit Report
- D. Overtures #4, #24, #35, #43 (referred by B & O for input)

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### II. Major Issues Discussed

- A. The PCA Messenger
- B. The 1992 Love Gift designated for CE&P and allotted to the WIC
- C. The terms of service of the PCA Coordinators
- D. Dr. Stan Well's letter to the permanent committee

### III. Recommendations

1. That the minutes of September 20-21, 1990, and February 21-22, 1991 be approved with the following exceptions pending the approval of the minutes by the permanent committee:

#### September 20-21, 1990

Exception: no response to GA exceptions to previous minutes. M18GA, p.97, 18-34 III 1A-J

Exception: no record of a motion by the committee to approve organization into sub-committees.

#### February 21-22, 1991

Exception: no record of approval of minutes of meeting of September 20-21, 1990.

*Adopted*

### MINORITY REPORT

Amend Recommendation #1 to include as an exception to the Permanent Committee minutes of September 20, 21, 1990 on bottom of page 2, regarding Communications Subcommittee recommendation #1: MSP that each CE&P member commit himself to being a *Messenger* advocate.

Exception: This action binds the conscience of members and, therefore, conflicts with BCO 11-2 and WCF XX. II.

/s/ TE Robert H. Miller, New River

/s/ RE Stewart Miller, Westminster

/s/ RE James Bruder, Ascension

*Defeated*

TE Rodney King and TE Frank J. Smith requested their affirmative vote recorded.

2. That the Assembly join with the committee in expressing its thanks to the CE/P staff and regional trainers for their assistance to local churches and presbyteries in their training, education, and communication roles. *Adopted*
3. That Dr. Charles Dunahoo be continued as coordinator of CE/P for another year with gratitude to God for his faithful and wise leadership in the past and because of the need for his continued leadership for CE/P and the PCA in the future. *Adopted*
4. That the PCA WIC be commended for their 1990 Love Gift of \$103,000 to Mission to the World. *Adopted*
5. That the Assembly at this time give thanks to God for the WIC's work of promoting the ministry and mission of the PCA, particularly giving thanks for

## JOURNAL

- the first 100% participation of presbyteries at the annual PresWIC President's meeting in March 1991. *Adopted*
6. That the 1992 Love Gift, according to the WIC rotation schedule, be designated to CE/P and its Women in the Church ministry. *Adopted*
  7. That the Assembly receive as information and be advised that the Ad Hoc Communication Committee for the PCA, authorized by the 1990 Assembly, has met by one conference call with the intention to continue the study as funds become available. *Adopted*
  8. That the General Assembly approve the 1992 budget of CE/P as presented by the Administration Committee. *Adopted*
  9. That the General Assembly designate the first full week in May, 1992, as the annual PCA week of Prayer. *Adopted*
  10. That the audit report of CE/P prepared by Ernst and Young be found in order. *Adopted*
  11. That Overture 4 be **answered in the negative**. *Adopted*  
Grounds: CE/P has already taken steps to correct this oversight and has included a disclaimer in its most recent catalogue.

### **OVERTURE 4 From the Presbytery of New River**

"Disclaimer on CE&P Bookstore Materials"

**Whereas**, the PCA is a confessional church seeking to uphold the truths found in the Constitutional documents of the church; and

**Whereas**, the CE&P Committee exists to serve the church and has a responsibility to uphold the Standards of the church;

**Therefore be it resolved** that we, the New River Presbytery, do overture the 19th General Assembly to adopt a resolution instructing the Permanent CE&P Committee to put a disclaimer into its sales materials, informing the buying public that not all of the materials advertised through CE&P are reflective of the views of the Reformed Faith or of the Standards of the PCA. The Language of the disclaimer is left in good faith to the discretion of the CE&P Committee or those empowered on its behalf.

Adopted at the fall Stated Meeting of New River Presbytery on November 10, 1990.

Attested by: /s/ Virgil B. Roberts  
Stated Clerk

12. That Overture 34 be **answered in the negative**. *Adopted*  
Grounds: CE/P has already initiated this process. (See minutes of Permanent Committee, Feb. 21-22, 1991).

### **OVERTURE 34 From the South Texas Presbytery**

"Appoint Study Committee on Christian School Development"

On April 27, 1991, the Presbytery of South Texas approved the following overture to be presented at the 1991 General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**Whereas**, our Presbyterian heritage calls forth a powerful world and life view which acknowledges that every area of life is under the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ.

**Whereas**, our Presbyterian theology sets forth a Covenantal view of the believing family which sees the children as bearing the mark of God's ownership in baptism.

**Whereas**, our Presbyterian heritage has always set forth a fundamental commitment to the learning of God's Revelation of Himself, both General and Special.

**Whereas**, our Public Educational System in North America is fundamentally and essentially devoid of the acknowledgment of the Authority or Person of our Infinite Triune God.

**Whereas**, many of our Presbyterian Churches in America desire to establish and maintain quality Christian Day Schools.

**Whereas**, there is little organized help to provide assistance to Churches committed to developing and maintaining quality Christian Schools.

**We Therefore**, humbly and respectfully overture the 1991 General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America to appoint a study committee with the responsibility of making recommendation to the 1992 General Assembly regarding a Christian School Development and its necessary support being established within the Christian Education & Publications Committee of General Assembly.

In Our Lord's Service,  
/s/ Irvin M. May, Jr.  
Stated Clerk

13. That Overture # 35 be answered in the affirmative

*Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 35 From Central Carolina Presbytery**

"Instruct CE&P re. Advertisements in *The Messenger*"

**Whereas**, the PCA was begun with the stated intention of being a church that is true to the scriptures and to the Reformed Faith; and

**Whereas**, we have an obligation to the members of that denomination to feed them nothing but the inspired Word of God; and

**Whereas**, the *Messenger* is a periodical which is read by many members of the denomination; and

**Whereas**, in the issue of February, 1991, there was an advertisement on the back cover for a Commentary series written by William Barclay; and

**Whereas**, on page 12 of the commentary on Luke, Mr. Barclay states, "The church does not insist that we believe in this doctrine ... Now let us look at the things which may make us wonder if the story of the Virgin Birth is to be taken as literally as all that," and

**Whereas**, this viewpoint would be seen a rank heresy by all the Reformed Standards upon which the PCA was established;

**Therefore**, the Session of Grace Presbyterian Church, Harrisburg, North Carolina, respectfully overtures the 19th General Assembly of the PCA to

## JOURNAL

direct the Christian Education Committee, publishers of the *Messenger*, to recommit themselves to the position of guardian of the flock against the savage wolves (Acts 20:28-29), and to review and to reject any advertisements for materials which run directly contrary to the stated doctrine of the PCA.

Attested by: /s/ Stephen O. Stout  
Stated Clerk

14. That the report as a whole be approved.

*Adopted*

### Commissioners Present:

#### Presbytery

Ascension  
Central Georgia  
Evangel  
Grace  
Gulf Coast  
Heartland  
Heritage  
Louisiana  
Mississippi Valley  
New River  
North Georgia  
Northern Illinois  
Palmetto  
Philadelphia  
SE Alabama  
SW Florida  
Tennessee Valley  
Warrior  
Western Carolina  
Westminster

#### Commissioner

RE James Bruder  
TE J. Archie Moore, Chairman  
TE William Cooper  
RE Samuel J. Duncan  
TE Josiah Bancroft  
RE Jack Carran  
TE Stan Gale  
TE Don Locke  
TE Bob Schwanebeck, Secretary  
RE Robert Miller  
RE John Osborne  
RE Donald Murray  
TE Jim Hope  
TE Donald Stone  
TE William Mason  
RE Henry Darden  
TE Everett Gossett  
RE Charles Miller  
RE Jack Sullivan  
RE Stewart Miller

### 19-28 Committee of Commissioners on Covenant College

RE Frederick Neikirk, chairman, led in prayer and presented the Committee's report. Spokesmen of the college and its Board having indicated no pressing need to speak to the Assembly in addition to the written report, the Assembly proceeded directly to the report.

#### I. Business Referred to the Committee

- A. The minutes of the executive committee of the Board of Trustees of September 28, 1990, and February 1, 1991, and the minutes of the Board of Trustees of October 25-26, 1990 and March 21, 1991.
- B. The report of the Board of Trustees to the 19th General Assembly.
- C. The audit report of Covenant College from June 30, 1990.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed

Discussed with members of the Board and Administration issues of academics, finance, personnel, marketing, and facilities as they were raised in the Board minutes and report.

Received as information the College's "Facilities Master Plan" and were encouraged by the prudent manner in which the College is moving to implement these large steps of faith, including the planning of the 4.3 million dollar science facility.

### III. Recommendations

1. That the General Assembly approve the 1991-92 operating budget of the College. *Adopted*
2. That the General Assembly approve October 20, 1991, as Covenant College Sunday and encourage local churches to allow students on Fall Break an opportunity to speak on behalf of the College. *Adopted*
3. VACATED
4. That the College seek to improve cultural diversity in our enrollment. We request assistance from the church in recommending that all students consider the advantages of receiving a Covenant College education, with special encouragement to those of different ethnic backgrounds. *Adopted*
5. That churches support the mission of the College by using bulletin inserts provided by the college to inform the membership of the advantages of Covenant College. *Adopted*
6. That the attached pastoral letter from the 19th General Assembly be addressed, before September, to all the sessions of the PCA, noting the poor response of the churches to the ASKINGS and urging that the sessions adopt the full ASKINGS of the General Assembly for Covenant College as a basic commitment of their budget. *Adopted*

### ATTACHMENT A

You are perhaps aware of the General Assembly's concern that the congregations of the Presbyterian Church in America do not in greater numbers support our yearly ASKINGS. The work of the church suffers for this lack of financial support. The 19th General Assembly took special note of this fact with regard to Covenant College.

Only 159 churches out of a total of 1055 support the College at or beyond the level of the ASKINGS in spite of generous offers of tuition reduction extended by the College to student members of such churches. It is particularly frustrating to contemplate this situation in light of the indisputable fact that, even at the modest level of \$7.15 per member, per year, widespread support from the church would enable the College both dramatically to enrich the education it offers and to make that education affordable to many more prospective students.

The 19th General Assembly recorded its conviction that the church should have the highest interest in its College. The future wellbeing of the Presbyterian Church in America is not without immediate connection to its

## JOURNAL

rising generations being thoroughly educated in, and won to, our principles. These principles are profoundly important for every area of thought and life. But this cultivation and training of a Christian mind, devoted to the use of a Christian servant's heart, is precisely the sum and substance of a Covenant College education. Surely it cannot be wise for us to fail adequately to fund our own institution established to, and eminently capable of, providing the church with ever larger numbers of young adults equipped and inspired to adorn and practice the truth of God and to foster the interests of Christ's kingdom in every part of this world of sophisticated unbelief.

The 19th General Assembly, therefore, urges every congregation of the Presbyterian Church in America to seriously and prayerfully consider supporting Covenant College at least at the level of the ASKINGS.

/s/ Committee of Commissioners  
Covenant College  
19th General Assembly

7. That the 19th General Assembly join with the Board of Trustees of Covenant College in giving thanks to God for the contributions to the College and to the welfare of Christ's kingdom through the work of his servant, J. Gary Aitken.

*Adopted*

### Memorial to James Gary Aitken

A disciple of the Lord Jesus, whose life of prayer and study of God's Word made "piety" a quality to be sought after rather than scorned.

A student of history, whose exhaustive reading produced an awareness of his Christian heritage and deepened his zeal for godliness.

A presbyter in church, whose enthusiasm for an accurate understanding of the historic standards put him always on the cutting edge.

A pastor, whose love for the flock -- and whose yearning for their growth in grace -- never left question of his devotion.

An educator, regularly excited to see the distinctives of the Reformed faith translated into the practical expression of the College's curriculum and program.

A husband and father, whose oneness rarely let him attend our meetings alone.

In all, we remember our brother much as John Calvin's secretary recalled that great man soon after his death: "When I look back upon his frankness and integrity, his affectionate benevolence toward me, and the familiar intimacy which I enjoyed, I cannot but grieve for my separation from such a friend or, I say, such a father. What labors, watchings, and anxieties did he endure! With what wisdom and perspicacity did he foresee all dangers and how skillfully did he go out to meet them! No words of mine can declare the fidelity and prudence with which he gave counsel, the kindness with which he received all who came to him, the clearness and promptitude with which he replied to those who asked for his opinion on the most important questions,

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

and the ability with which he disentangled the difficulties and problems which were laid before him." [Nicholas des Gallars]

He set an example for us all.

8. That General Assembly accept the audit of June 30, 1990, for the school. *Adopted*
9. That the 19th General Assembly commend the faculty, staff, administration, and Board of Covenant College for their faithful service in the past year and that we urge renewed commitment to prayer for the College as it labors to assist students in developing a Christ-centered world-view. *Adopted*
10. That the minutes of the executive committee of the Board of Trustees of September 28, 1990, and February 1, 1991, and the minutes of the Board of Trustees of October 25-26, 1990 and March 21, 1991 be approved without exception. *Adopted*

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ RE Frederick Neikirk, Chairman  
/s/ TE James Simoneau, Secretary

Recommendation 1 was deferred until adoption of all the budgets. The report was then adopted as a whole.

### COMMISSIONERS PRESENT:

#### Presbytery

Ascension  
Calvary  
Central Georgia  
Evangel  
Grace  
Great Lakes  
Gulf Coast  
Heritage  
Heritage  
MS Valley  
N. Illinois  
New Jersey  
New River  
North Georgia  
Pacific  
Palmetto  
Potomac  
SE Alabama  
Tennessee Valley  
Warrior

#### Commissioner

RE Frederick Neikirk, Chairman  
TE David Rountree  
TE Scott Reiber  
TE Mike Forester  
RE Charles Brueck  
TE Dennis Slack  
TE Mark Rowden  
RE Richard Olson  
TE James Brown  
TE Robert Jackson  
RE G. Craig Burdett  
TE Stephen Clark  
RE Jim Harrell  
RE Doug Russ  
TE Donald Aven  
TE Jim Simoneau, Secretary  
TE David Coffin  
TE Paul Hahn  
TE Jim Bachmann  
RE Richard Owens



## JOURNAL

### 19-29 Committee of Commissioners on PCA Foundation

TE Peter Doyle, chairman, led in prayer and presented the Committee's report.

#### I. Business Referred to the Committee

- A. Report of the PCA Foundation
- B. Minutes of the Board of Directors of the PCA Foundation
- C. Audit of the PCA Foundation

#### II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed

- A. The Report of the Foundation was presented and the Director, John W. S. Hudson, gave a brief overview of the purpose of the Foundation emphasizing its ministry to the local church. A useful discussion followed of ways to better inform churches of the ministry of the Foundation.
- B. The minutes of the Board of Directors of the Foundation were discussed.
- C. The financial audit of the Foundation, prepared by Ernst & Young was discussed.

#### III. Recommendations

- A. That the report of the PCA Foundation be recommended to the GA for their approval and that the following recommendations in that report be approved:
  1. The two regular vacancies on the Board be filled with quality men gifted to lead our ministry.
  2. Approval of our Proposed 1992 Budget
  3. Each local church be encouraged to consider the various ways the Foundation can serve them. Seminars and literature are available to be used to better inform the people regarding more effective management of God's assets.
  4. Each church be encouraged to take full advantage of the Memorial Gift Program offered by the Foundation. *Adopted*
- B. That the minutes of September 8, 1990, be approved. *Adopted*
- C. That the minutes of February 9, 1991, be approved. *Adopted*
- D. That the audit of the Foundation by Ernst & Young, August 22, 1990, be recommended to the General Assembly for their approval. *Adopted*
- E. That the General Assembly instruct the Board of Directors of the PCA Foundation to record in their minutes more specific details on all matters, including financial distributions, whenever possible, the wishes of individual donors permitting. *Adopted*

#### Commissioners Present:

##### Presbytery

Calvary  
Central Carolina  
Central Georgia  
Evangel  
Grace  
Heritage  
Mississippi Valley

##### Commissioner

TE Gaynor Phillips  
RE Bennett Richardson  
TE Sam Cappel  
TE Burt Boykin  
RE Howard Stringer  
TE Jonathan Seda  
TE Daniel Gilchrist, IV

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

New Jersey	TE James A. Smith
North Georgia	RE James White
Northern Illinois	RE Thurmond Hall
Palmetto	RE Bill Powis
Philadelphia	TE Frank D. Moser
Potomac	TE Michael L. Coleman
SE Alabama	TE Peter Doyle, Chairman
Tennessee Valley	TE J. Arch Warren
Warrior	RE John Graham
Westminster	RE Robert E. Lane

The report was as a whole. RE John W. S. Hudson, Director of the Foundation, spoke briefly to the Assembly on the Foundation's work.

### 19-30 Personal Resolutions

Personal resolutions were presented, received, and referred as follows.

**Personal Resolution 2** from RE Robert H. Miller. See 19-67, III, 20, p. 172 for disposition.

*Received and referred to CoC on Bills and Overtures.*

**Personal Resolution 3** from TE Timothy Diehl

Request clarification for future General Assemblies: (1) a statement as to whether the worship and/or inspirational evening services are a part of the Assembly, and (2) if it is determined that they are a part of the Assembly, that no committee meetings be scheduled/held during the service(s) and that the AC report back to the 20th General Assembly.

*Received and referred to Administrative Committee.*

**Personal Resolution 4** from TE C. Michael Chastain. See 19-67, III, 21, p. 173 for disposition

*Received and referred to CoC on Bills and Overtures.*

There being no business ready for the floor, the moderator declared a fifteen minute recess at 3:10 p.m.

### 19-31 Assembly Reconvened

The Assembly reconvened with the singing of "Praise to the Lord, the Almighty" and prayer led by TE Lee Lovett.

### 19-32 Special Order Set

At the moderator's suggestion, the Assembly declared a special order for the continuation of the report of the Committee of Commissioners on Administration at 8:30 Wednesday morning.

**19-33 Standing Judicial Commission Partial Report**

RE Jack Williamson, chairman, led in prayer and presented the partial report.

1. That the judgment in the **Case 90-3** of Grace Covenant Church, Blacksburg, VA vs. New River Presbytery be approved. (See Exhibit "A" of Appendix O, p. 479.)

*Adopted*

**II. A Statement of the Issues:**

In considering whether or not to sustain the specification/s of Complaint the Panel considered three issues:

- a. Did the New River Presbytery err in procedure in considering the original complaint?
- b. Did the New River Presbytery err in its application of our standards in this particular case? and
- c. Did the New River Presbytery err in its disposition of the case?

**III. Judgment of the Case:**

The Panel found that the New River Presbytery did not err in procedures when it considered the original complaint.

The Panel found that the New River Presbytery did not err in its application of our standards in this particular case. (Vote 3-0)

The Panel did not sustain the Presbytery's disposition of this particular case and made the following disposition of the case:

- a) that the case not be referred back to the Church for reconsideration with instructions;
  - b) that Grace covenant Presbyterian Church be advised that the teacher who is the subject of the original complaint should not be granted the authority to teach in the Church while he holds exceptions to our doctrinal standards which could reasonably be expected to result in him having to teach in a manner which would be out of accord with the fundamentals of our system of doctrine;
  - c) that Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church be commended for developing a process used in the selection of teachers as a result of this case;
  - d) that the New River Presbytery through its Commission and Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church should not have left uncorrected the intemperate accusations made by the original complainant against the Session of Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church (pages 36 and 37 of the Record of the Case), and the disruptive and disrespectful tone of written letters which do not appear to promote the peace of the Church (*BCO* 57-5). See pages 44, 57 and 58 of the Record.
2. That the judgment in the **Case 90-4** of R.E. Charles E. Chappell vs. Eastern Carolina Presbytery be approved. (See Exhibit "B" of Appendix O, p. 488)

*Adopted*

**II. A Statement of the Issues:**

1. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery, at its meeting of January 20, 1990, properly rule "out of order" the Complaint of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding?

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

2. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery have the authority and power to suspend the members of the Session of Fuller Memorial Church, either temporarily or permanently, without consent of the congregation and without due process?
3. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery or its Commission, have authority and power to constitute itself as a "Session Pro Tem" for Fuller Church and make all decisions therefor?
4. Were the resignations of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding properly approved under *BCO* §24-6 so as to dissolve the official relationship between them and Fuller Church?

### II. Judgment of the Case:

After consideration of the Complaint, it is the judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission that the Complaint should be sustained.

It is the judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission, as follows:

1. Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred at its meeting of January 20, 1990 in ruling the Complaint of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding "out of order".
  2. The *Book of Church Order* does not give a presbytery the authority and power to suspend members of a Session without the consent of the congregation and without due process. The Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred in so doing.
  3. While the Commission may have believed its replacing the Fuller Session was undertaken with consent (there was no formal vote on the issue), its action had the effect of removing and replacing the Session with one that had not been elected by the Fuller congregation, which action of the Commission exceeded the jurisdiction given by the *Book of Church Order*.
  4. Since there is no provision for a "Session Pro Tem" in the *BCO* of the Presbyterian Church in America (*BCO* 11-4) or for officers to be placed in authority over a congregation without its consent, Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Fuller Commission did not have authority to accept the resignations of elders or to act as a Session on other matters; hence RE Chappell and RE Spaulding are still Ruling Elders of that congregation.
3. That the judgment in the Case 90-4a of T.E. Wallace W. Marshall, Jr. vs. Eastern Carolina Presbytery be approved. (See Exhibit "C" of Appendix O, p. 509)

*Adopted*

### II. A Statement of the Issues:

1. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery, at its meeting of January 20, 1990, properly rule "out of order" the Complaint of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding?
2. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery have the authority and power to suspend the members of the Session of Fuller Memorial Church, either temporarily or permanently, without consent of the congregation and without due process?

## JOURNAL

3. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery or its Commission, have authority and power to constitute itself as a "Session Pro Tem" for Fuller Church and make all decisions therefor?

### III. Judgment of the Case:

After consideration of the Complaint, it is the judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission that the Complaint should be sustained.

It is the judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission, as follows:

1. Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred at its meeting of January 20, 1990 in ruling the Complaint of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding "out of order".
  2. The *Book of Church Order* does not give a presbytery the authority and power to suspend members of a Session without the consent of the congregation and without due process. The Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred in so doing.
  3. While the Commission may have believed its replacing the Fuller Session was undertaken with consent (there was no formal vote on the issue), its action had the effect of removing and replacing the Session with one that had not been elected by the Fuller congregation, which action of the Commission exceeded the jurisdiction given by the *Book of Church Order*.
4. That the judgment in the Case 90-5 of M/M Bryan Melton, et al vs. Tennessee Valley Presbytery be approved. (See Exhibit "D" of Appendix O, p. 528) *Adopted*

### II. Statement of the Issues:

The issues raised in the 2/23/90 complaint are three: (1) that the TVP commission erred in ruling that the WPC session was correct in disallowing proxy voting at the 12/10/89 congregational meeting; (2) that if the proxy votes had been counted at the 12/10/89 meeting, the minutes and the vote count of the 11/19/89 meeting would have been changed, reversing the outcome of the 11/19 vote; and (3) that the Tennessee Valley Presbytery commission erred in ruling that a secret ballot was not required at the 12/10/89 meeting under *BCO* 24-4.

Issues (1) and (2) of the complaint are related, being wholly dependent upon the issue of proxy voting, and will be considered as one issue.

### III. Judgment of the Case:

It is the judgment of the court that Issues (1), (2) and (3) of the complaint be denied.

5. That the judgment in the Case 90-7 of T.E. Randy C. Stringer vs. Mississippi Valley Presbytery be approved. (See Exhibit "E" of Appendix O, p. 533) *Adopted*

### II. Statement of the Issue:

The basic issue raised in this appeal is this: did Mississippi Valley Presbytery follow the proper procedures of the *Book of Church Order* in excommunicating Mr. Stringer?

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### III. Judgment of the Case:

It is the judgment of this court that Mississippi Valley Presbytery did not follow the proper procedures of the *Book of Church Order*. This court, therefore, sets aside the decision of Mississippi Valley Presbytery to excommunicate Mr. Stringer and remands the case to Mississippi Valley Presbytery for proper action according to *BCO* 46-8.

6. That the judgment in the **Case 90-8** of T.E. David Bowen vs. Eastern Carolina Presbytery be approved. (See Exhibit "F" of Appendix O, p. 537) *Adopted*

### II. Statement of the Issues:

- A. Does Book Of Church Order 43-10 give a higher court the right to annul the election, ordination and installation of officers after they have assumed and have functioned in their office?
- B. Is Infant Baptism properly considered a 'fundamental of the system of doctrine' of the Presbyterian Church in America (*BCO* 21-5-2 and 24-5-2)?
- C. Is Limited Atonement properly considered a 'fundamental of the system of doctrine' of the Presbyterian Church in America (*BCO* 21-5-2 and 24-5-2)?

### III. Judgment of the Case:

- A. The Commission sustains the complaint that Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred in its actions of January 20, 1990 (ROC p.31-32) and of April 21, 1990 (ROC p. 50) wherein the Presbytery acted to rescind its action of April 16, 1988. This April 16, 1988 action of Presbytery denied a complaint from local church members against the Session for approving nominees for elder and deacon. The January 20, 1990 and April 21, 1990 actions of Presbytery sought to rescind this former action of Presbytery, to sustain the Complaint of the local church members, and to annul the election, ordination and installation of these church officers.
  - B. The Commission affirms the judgment of Eastern Carolina Presbytery in that Infant Baptism (WCF 28-4) and Limited Atonement (WCF 3-3, 8-5 and 11-4) are to be considered fundamentals of the system of doctrine and that there can be no exceptions given in the case of officers in the church.
7. That the judgment in the **Case 90-9** of T.E. Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr. vs. Grace Presbytery be approved. (See Exhibit "G" of Appendix O, p. 565) *Adopted*

### II. A Statement of the Issues:

1. Did the Presbytery err in finding that the failure of the Clerk of Session to send the record of the case forward in accordance with *BCO* 43-6 fail to result in prejudice to the Complainant?
2. Did the Presbytery err in failing to find that the Court had been circularized contrary to *BCO* 43-2?
3. Did the Commission err in this application of the procedure prescribed by *BCO* 46-5?

## JOURNAL

4. Did the Presbytery err in approving the conclusion of the Commission and in application of the provision of *BCO* 32-20?
5. Specification 5, as stated by Complainant, fails to constitute a specific grounds for complaint only advances arguments to support the Complainant's position.

### III. Judgment of the Case:

It is the judgment of the Judicial Panel that:

1. Specification 1 of the Complaint, although technically sound, resulted in no prejudice to the Complainant since the record reflects that full opportunity to present the Complaint were afforded him at all times.
  2. Specification 2 of the Complaint is denied. It appears from the record that the fact that copies of the Commission's record before the Presbytery, reasonably were to be considered as part of the record.
  3. Specification 3 of the Complaint is denied.
  4. Specification 4 of the Complaint is denied.
  5. Specification 5 consists of assertions of the Complainant and his conclusions as to the correct interpretation of the Constitution of the PCA and not a matter of substance.
8. That the judgment in the **Case 90-10** of TE Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr. vs. Grace Presbytery be approved. (See Exhibit "H" of Appendix O, p. 578) *Adopted*

### II. A Statement of the Issues:

There is only one relevant issue:

1. Did Grace Presbytery err in denying the Complaint against the Session for failing to furnish the Complainant with a copy of the financial reports as authorized by the action of the Session on October 6, 1989?

### III. Judgment of the Case:

1. As in Judicial Case 90-9, Complaint is made of the alleged failure of the Clerk of the Session to forward in a timely manner a record of the case as required by *BCO* 43-6 and against the alleged circularization of the Court contrary to *BCO* 43-2. The rationale for denying these aspects of the case is set forth in this Panel's Judgment in Judicial Case 90-9.
2. Specification 3 of the Complaint is denied.
3. Specification 4 of the Complaint is denied.
4. Specification 5 of the Complaint is denied.
5. Specification 6 is sustained but has become moot by virtue of the termination of Complainant's relation with the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church.

In connection with item 6, Case 90-8, a case of conscience was raised by one commissioner, namely what implications this had on officers who do not hold to the doctrine of baptism of infants. The chairman and others responded and prayer was offered for the brother raising the question.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 19-34 Procedural Motion re. Judicial Cases

On motion the Assembly adopted the following:

"That the statement of the issue and the judgment of the case be placed in the minutes, and that the full statement of the case, the briefs, and the reasonings, be placed in the Appendix of the minutes".

### 19-35 Committee of Commissioners on Investors' Fund

TE James Barnes, chairman, led in prayer and presented the report, also introducing the director of the Fund, TE Cecil Brooks.

#### I. Items of business referred to the Committee

1. Review of minutes of the Investor's Fund Trustee meetings dated May 15, 1990; August 29, 1990; October 12, 1990; November 27, 1990; December 19, 1990; January 31, 1991; March 14, 1991; March 25, 1991; and April 16, 1991.
2. Review of 1992 IFBD budget.
3. Review of audit dated December 31, 1990.
4. Review of report of the permanent committee.
5. Review of recommendations of the permanent committee.

#### II. Statement of major issues discussed:

Teaching Elders Cecil Brooks and Jack Ottinger presented an overview of the work of IFBD and of the Lord's continued blessing on its growth and usefulness to the denomination. Teaching Elder Bob Wilcox, president of the Board of Trustees of IFBD, confirmed the increasing value of the Fund for using God's money for God's Kingdom. All three men were available for questions and explanations as the Committee worked through the items of business before it.

#### III. Recommendations:

1. That the minutes of May 15, 1990; August 29, 1990; October 12, 1990; November 27, 1990; December 19, 1990; January 31, 1991; March 14, 1991; March 25, 1991; and April 16, 1991 be approved without exception. *Adopted*
2. That the General Assembly express its gratitude to God for continued growth of IFBD and its ministries to churches, as well as encourage churches, presbyteries, individuals, and Committees of the Assembly to participate in IFBD programs. *Adopted*
3. That the General Assembly give thanks to the Father for the work of the staff of IFBD, TE Cecil A. Brooks, Coordinator; TE John T. Ottinger, Associate Coordinator; Shirley S. Covington, Virginia Harris, John Underwood. *Adopted*
4. That the General Assembly approve the audit of the year ending December 31, 1990. *Adopted*
5. That the General Assembly approve the continued employment of the firm of Timothy Mersereau, C.P.A., as auditors for the year ending December 31, 1991. *Adopted*



## JOURNAL

6. WHEREAS, the importance of an adequate dedicated building to facilitate church growth cannot be underestimated; and  
WHEREAS, due to the increasing expense and complexity of building programs, there is growing need for the demand upon the various denominational agencies involved in providing building assistance (to wit the MNA Building Department and the Investor's Fund); and  
WHEREAS, These two agencies, having separate existence but some shared staff, have grown to a point that their structure is unwieldy and cumbersome; and  
WHEREAS, the primary focus of MNA is church extension and the primary focus of the Investor's Fund is church building and financing;  
THEREFORE, it is requested that the 19th General Assembly agree to the transferring of files and other assets, and the Five Million Fund, to IFBD for administration and development. *Adopted*
7. That the General Assembly adopt the budget for the year ending December 31, 1992. *Adopted*
8. That the General Assembly request the Board of Trustees of IAR to consider allowing participants to specify that all or part of their retirement contributions be invested in IFBD and report to the 20th General Assembly with appropriate recommendations. *Adopted*
9. That the General Assembly request the Trustees of IFBD to research, develop and implement ways and means that will allow PCA people to invest, at their discretion, God's money in God's Kingdom. *Adopted*
10. That the report be approved as a whole. *Adopted*

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE James Barnes, Chairman  
/s/ TE Wallace Tinsley, Secretary

### COMMISSIONERS PRESENT:

#### Presbytery

Calvary  
Central Carolina  
Central Georgia  
Evangel  
Great Lakes  
Gulf Coast  
Heritage  
Louisiana  
Mississippi Valley  
Palmetto  
Potomac  
Southeast Alabama  
Tennessee Valley  
Warrior

#### Commissioner

TE Wallace Tinsley  
RE George Robinson  
TE Tommie Knowles  
TE Woody Markert  
TE Max Forsythe  
TE Keith Lorick  
TE Dal Stanton  
TE Ron Davis  
TE Jim Barnes  
TE Joe Beale  
TE Stephen Dawson  
TE Henry Bishop  
TE Vernon Holstad  
RE Henry Ware

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 19-36 Personal Resolutions

Receiving and referring of personal resolutions continued as follows.

#### **Personal Resolution 5** from TE Vaughn Hathaway, Jr.

**Whereas**, the Presbyterian Church in America has amended the *BCO* to erect a Standing Judicial Commission [SJC] for the General Assembly; and

**Whereas**, the PCA has sought always to limit membership to one committee, board, or agency of the Assembly, except in special circumstances as provided in the *BCO* and Bylaws; and

**Whereas**, the SJC in form the same as another permanent committee of the General Assembly; and

**Whereas**, membership on the SJC should affect an individual in the same manner as membership on another committee, board, or agency of the General Assembly;

**Therefore, be it resolved** that Grace Presbytery overture the 19th General Assembly of the PCA to amend Article IV, Section 4-6 of the Bylaws by striking the word "or" before the word "agency" and by adding the words "or standing commission" after the word "agency" so that Section 4-6 will read:

"No individual shall serve on more than one Assembly committee, agency, or standing commission at one time except those who serve as permanent committee representatives on the Administrative Committee of General Assembly and those who serve on the Nominating Committee, Committee on Review of Presbytery Records, and Ad Interim Committees."

This resolution, originally an overture from Grace Presbytery, was ruled out of order on the grounds that it required amendment of the Bylaws. The decision of the chair was appealed, and the chair was sustained. TE Vaughn Hathaway requested that his negative vote on sustaining the chair be recorded.

*Ruled out of order*

#### **Personal Resolution 6** from TE Vaughn Hathaway, Jr.

"Memorial to Jack S. Ross"

At its Sixty-sixth (66th) Stated Meeting, August 11, 1990, Grace Presbytery adopted the following memorial resolution:

**WHEREAS**, God in His gracious providence did bring into the world on the 17th day of September, 1934, in Leesville, LA, Jack Stephen Ross; and

**WHEREAS**, God set apart Jack Stephen Ross in His eternal purpose to glorify the name of the Lord, through both saving faith in the Lord Jesus Christ and faithful service as a minister of the Word; and

**WHEREAS**, God used Jack Stephen Ross as a shepherd of His sheep in Philadelphia, MS; Hazelhurst, MS; Brookhaven, MS; and Bainbridge, GA; and

**WHEREAS**, God especially used the faith and pastoral guidance of Jack Stephen Ross to bring about the development of the congregation now known as the Faith Presbyterian Church of Brookhaven, MS, a church unusually blessed of the Lord, and the denomination now known as the Presbyterian Church in America, a faithful witness to the Gospel; and

## JOURNAL

**Whereas**, God used the vision and heart of Jack Stephen Ross to develop the brief, but influential, ministry of Whitworth Bible College in Brookhaven, MS; and

**Whereas**, God also placed in Jack Stephen Ross the heart of our Heavenly Father, that the entire Ross family -- Joanie, Cydney, and Susan -- might see in their home the same Gospel they heard proclaimed in the pulpit; and

**Whereas**, God enlarged the faith of Jack Stephen Ross, so that a faithful witness to Christ and the hope of the resurrection always remained firm, in spite of great pain and suffering; and

**Whereas**, God, by His same gracious providence, called Jack Stephen Ross home to glory and eternal rest on the 30th day of July, 1990, and thereby gave to His servant complete healing;

**Therefore, Be It Resolved** that Grace Presbytery formally express their thanks to Almighty God for the life and ministry of Jack Stephen Ross, and particularly for his ministry in Grace Presbytery.

**BE IT FURTHER RESOLVED**, that Grace Presbytery formally express their love to, and prayers for, the Ross family in their time of loss and adjustment; and

**BE IT FURTHER RESOLVED**, that copies of this document be sent to the family of Jack Stephen Ross, and to the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America.

*Received as information.*

### **Personal Resolution 7** from TE Albert Moginot, Jr.

**Whereas** the Rules of Assembly Operation (RAO) is about 25 pages long and is printed for every commissioner every year, resulting in large printing costs and a waste of paper,

**Therefore** be it resolved that the General Assembly print the RAO on paper that will fit into the looseleaf *BCO*, so they can be saved and used every year and updated as necessary in the same manner that the *BCO* is updated.

*Received and referred to Administrative Committee.*

### **Personal Resolution 8** from TE Grover E. Gunn. See 19-67, III, 22, p. 173.

*Received and referred to CoC on Bills and Overtures and the Committee on Constitutional Business.*

### **19-37 Committee on Constitutional Business Partial Report**

TE David Dively, chairman, led in prayer and presented a partial report of the Committee (Appendix A, p. 230) relating to assignments from 18th General Assembly. See 19-56 for complete action.

### **19-38 Assembly Recessed**

Moderator Belz having again announced that the Assembly would not be reconvened for business following the evening service, and other announcements having been made, the Assembly was recessed at 5:25 p.m. with prayer by the moderator.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MINUTES - WEDNESDAY MORNING

June 19, 1991

Fourth Session

**19-39 Assembly Reconvened**

The Assembly gathered for worship at 8:00 a.m. under the direction of Korean Southwest Presbytery.

*One thing I ask of the LORD, this is what I see:  
that I may dwell in the house of the LORD  
all the days of my life,  
to gaze upon the beauty of the LORD  
and to seek him in his temple.  
My heart says of you, "Seek his face!"  
Your face, LORD, I will seek.  
Psalm 27:4, 8*

Prelude: "Lift High the Cross"

Busarow

Call to Worship: Rev. Cheong Ki Shin

Hymn 12 "Exalt the Lord, His Praise Proclaim"

CREATION

Scripture: John 21:15-17

Prayer

Hymn 444: "O Zion, Haste, Your Mission High Fulfilling"

TIDINGS

Benediction

Postlude: "Praise to the Lord, the Almighty"

Bish

**19-40 Reconvening for Business**

Following a brief recess Moderator Belz reconvened the Assembly at 8:30 a.m. TE Morton Smith led in prayer.

**19-41 Committee of Commissioners on Administration Partial Report**

TE Palmer Robertson, chairman, led in prayer and presented the report.

**Recommendations 4 through 8** were presented and acted on at this time. See 19-61 (p. 123ff) for disposition.

**19-42 Special Order Docketed**

On motion the Assembly docketed the remainder of the Committee of Commissioners on Administration's report for 8:30 a.m. Thursday.

**19-43 Committee of Commissioners on Mission to the World**

RE Ralph Mittendorff, chairman, led in prayer and yielded the floor to the chairman of the permanent Committee on Mission to the World, RE Jack Williamson, who presented the permanent Committee's report. He in turn introduced TE John Kyle, coordinator for MTW, who presented missionaries TE Timothy McKeown, Bogota, Colombia, and TE Daniel Iverson, Japan. Both reported briefly to the Assembly. TE Kyle asked all MTW missionaries present to stand, and the Assembly expressed their appreciation.

# JOURNAL

Chairman Mittendorff then presented the report. Recommendation 1 was acted upon at this time. The entire report is found at 19-46 below.

## 19-44 Recess

The Assembly recessed for the lunch break at 11:45 a.m.

## MINUTES - WEDNESDAY AFTERNOON

June 19, 1991

### Fifth Session

## 19-45 Assembly Reconvened

The Assembly reconvened at 1:30 p.m. with the singing of "All Creatures of Our God and King" and prayer led by TE James Boice.

## 19-46 Committee of Commissioners on Mission to the World

TE Ralph Mittendorff, chairman, continued the Committee's report.

### I. Business referred to the Committee:

1. The report of the Permanent Committee on Mission to the World to the Nineteenth GA.
2. The Mission to the World and SIMA budgets, as presented to the Administrative Committee of the General Assembly (*Commissioners Handbook*, pp 419-431).
3. The Minutes of the Permanent Committee Meetings, October 4-5, 1990 and February 14-15, 1991 and May 16-17, 1991 (supplied by the office of the Stated Clerk).
4. Overtures # 24 and 25 both from the Presbytery of the Ascension (*Commissioners Handbook*, pp. 57-58).

### II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed:

1. Considerable discussion was held regarding the \$750,000 gift and the \$750,000 loan in regard to the PCA office building. It was the opinion of the committee that CMTW had operated in a "grey area" in the giving and receiving of these funds.
2. Considerable discussion was held regarding the approval and/or recommendation of the "Concert of Prayer" concept.
3. Considerable discussion was held regarding the Cooperative agreements. Although the agreements were approved, the wording of one was amended and included in the recommendation of the committee.

### III. Recommendations:

1. That the Minutes of the meeting of October 4-5, 1990 be approved with exceptions and notations. *Adopted*
2. That the Minutes of the meeting of February 14-15, 1991 be approved with exceptions and notations. *Adopted*

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

3. That the Minutes of the meeting of May 16-17, 1991 be approved with exceptions and notations. *Adopted*
4. That the General Assembly express its appreciation to God for the staff, the missionaries and candidates of Mission to the World and that we continue to ask Him to supply their physical, spiritual and emotional needs. *Adopted*
5. That the General Assembly express its appreciation to the members, churches, and presbyteries of the PCA for their faithful prayers and financial support for the work and ministry of Mission to the World. *Adopted*
6. That the General Assembly express its gratitude to Teaching Elder, John E. Kyle, for his excellent service as coordinator of Mission to the World and that he be re-elected to the office of coordinator. *Adopted*
7. That the General Assembly express its appreciation for the senior staff of Mission to the World and their dedicated service to our church and the cause of missions around the world. *Adopted*
8. That May 17, 1992 be set as the Day of Prayer for World Evangelization and that the General Assembly unite in prayer and the God would send many more laborers to His harvest field. *Adopted*
9. That the seminaries and colleges involved in training PCA candidates for ministries and PCA churches be urged to promote an awareness of the need for both teaching and ruling elders to serve on Mission to the World church-planting teams. *Adopted*
10. That the proposed budgets of MTW and SIMA, as presented through the Administrative Committee be approved. *Adopted*
11. That the cooperative agreement with the Black Forest Academy be approved. *Adopted*
12. That the cooperative agreement with the Christian Literature Crusade be approved. (Based on information provided by CLC, the manager of the bookstore has full discretion to stock whatever books he desires). *Adopted*
13. That the cooperative agreement with Church Resource Ministries be approved. *Adopted*
14. That the cooperative agreement with Project Nehemiah, Inc., be approved. *Adopted*
15. That Overture 21 be **answered in the negative** with the following grounds:  
The mechanism is already available to send missionaries out through presbyteries and churches. *Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 21 From the New River Presbytery**

"Provide Methods for Presbyteries and Churches to Send Missionaries Apart from MTW"

**Whereas**, the Great Commission is the duty of Presbyteries and churches as well as the Assembly, and

**Whereas**, the Committee on Mission to the World is an enabling and serving committee to assist the Presbyteries and churches, and

**Whereas**, the Committee on Mission to the World must impose service charges to enable it to assist the lower courts and

## JOURNAL

**Whereas**, many Presbyteries and churches have persons of competence willing to serve on a voluntary basis to provide the support network necessary to send foreign missionaries and

**Whereas**, the utilization of such volunteers would reduce the work load on the Committee on Mission to the World and its staff and lower the support necessary for missionaries to go to the field;

**Therefore**, we, the Presbytery of New River, hereby overture the Nineteenth General Assembly to provide a method whereby a missionary may be sent by a Presbytery or church using volunteer local help without the help of the Assembly committee and without any service charge by the Assembly committee.

Adopted at the Stated Winter Meeting of New River Presbytery on March 9, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Virgil B. Roberts  
Stated Clerk

16. That Overture 24 be **answered in the negative** with the following grounds:  
The matter of the monies from Japan has previously been approved by the 18th General Assembly. The Assembly directs all of its committees and agencies to carefully observe the following directives in future matters:
1. All financial transactions involving the sale of properties and all gifts and/or loans among committees shall be public.
  2. All such inter-committee transactions must be approved by the Assembly prior to their completion. *Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 24 From the Presbytery of the Ascension** "Mission Money for Missions"

**Whereas**, the PCA has appropriately maintained an aggressive foreign mission priority as part and parcel to its obedience to the Great Commission of Jesus Christ (Matt. 28-18-20), and

**Whereas**, the PCA teaches a stewardship that would be more concerned with financing the Great Commission in foreign lands than in funding mortgage debts at home, and

**Whereas**, there is considerable concern on the part of many over huge sums of money from the Japan Mission being used to fund a PCA office building in Atlanta, a concern that has sharply divided the church, and

**Whereas**, such a transfer of funds from foreign missions to a mortgage on a building in the United States sets an ominous precedent for our future commitment to world missions, and

**Whereas**, it is obviously a greater mission priority to fund the spread of the Gospel in Japan than to have the CMTW loan or give money to a building in the United States, a diversion of mission giving that would not have been envisioned by the original donors,

**Therefore**, be it resolved that the Presbytery of the Ascension overtures the 19th General Assembly to reimburse all of the funds given or loaned from the Japan Mission (and any other foreign mission) to that mission(s), and that the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Assembly be informed of the execution of this before the close of this Assembly.

Adopted at the March 9, 1991, stated meeting of the Presbytery of the Ascension.

Attested by: /s/ Frederick R. Neikirk  
Stated Clerk

17. That Overture 25 be **answered in the negative** with the following grounds:  
Mission to the World is working diligently to reduce the Administrative costs which have fallen from 19% to 10.2%. These costs are lower than other mission agencies. *Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 25 From the Presbytery of the Ascension** **"Administrative Fees for Missionaries"**

**Whereas**, each PCA/MTW missionary family is presently assessed an administrative fee of \$7,080 per year (singles @ \$4,800 per year) yielding hundreds of thousands of dollars annually for Atlanta's MTW administrative costs, and

**Whereas**, this approximately \$7,080 to fund MTW administration must be raised by MTW missionaries each year in addition to their full salaries, work budgets, and other expenses related to their work before they may move onto the field or return to the field after home ministry assignments, and

**Whereas**, these funds represent the single largest expense item other than salary, and

**Whereas**, this administrative fee is an oppressive burden to itinerating missionary families, frequently deterring or delaying our missionaries from fulfilling the Great Commission, and

**Whereas**, the entire staff of MTW, those involved in MTW administration, are not responsible for the raising of their own support or salaries, travel, work budgets, or \$7,080 for administration, but are the beneficiaries of this disproportionate fund raising demanded of the missionaries, and

**Whereas**, the church has concurred in the call of these men and women to the mission field, judging their call to be to foreign missions and not to fund raising, and

**Whereas**, it would be both good stewardship and obedient recognition of the urgency of the Kingdom work to expedite the placement of these whom we have called to their respective fields of service,

**Therefore**, be it resolved that the Presbytery of the Ascension overtures the 19th General Assembly to:

1. Limit the amount of funds each missionary must raise for MTW administrative costs to no more than 5% of the actual salary of the missionary (excluding benefits, work budgets, travel, etc.), an amount that should adequately cover MTW's direct services to the missionaries. Further, that the actual percentage of administrative fees be reported to this and subsequent General Assemblies.



## JOURNAL

2. Require the CMTW, in conformity with all other committees and agencies, to raise its own support as needed, independent of the missionaries and without penalty to missionary personal accounts and services.

Adopted at the March 9, 1991, stated meeting of the Presbytery of the Ascension.

Attested by: /s/ Frederick R. Neikirk  
Stated Clerk

18. That the CMTW be instructed to provide its Committee of Commissioners with all written documents to which reference is made in their minutes, which shall include the reports of the Coordinator and all Directors.

*The ballot count was 422 yea, 396 nay, 17 abstentions. Adopted*

#### IV. Exceptions and Notations:

1. Sub-committee on Minutes recommendations. It was moved that the minutes of **October 4-5, 1990**, be approved with the following exceptions and notations.
  - a. Exception was taken to page 8, Item MS-10/90-3 promoting the "Concert of Prayer" and MTW appendix A- 1-5 year plan projecting the promotion of "Concerts of Prayer"
  - b. Page 8, MS-10/90-1 W. Jack Williamson identified as Dr. rather than RE.
  - c. Opening paragraphs did not give name of Chairman RAO 13-13, c. 4
  - d. Names of alternates to the committee not indicated RAO 13-13, c. 6

*Adopted*
2. It was moved that the minutes of **February 14-15, 1991**, be approved with exceptions and notations as follows:
  - a. Opening paragraphs did not give name of Chairman RAO 13-13, c. 4
  - b. Names of alternates to committees not indicated RAO 13-13, c. 6
  - c. - Exception: RE M. C. Culbertson was appointed a voting member replacing a RE who was absent even when a quorum was present (*BCO* 14-1-11 p. 2)

*Adopted*
3. It was moved that the minutes of **May 16-17, 1991**, be approved with the following exceptions and notations:
  - Exception: These minutes were presented to the C/C without having been approved by CMTW RAO 13-13 h
  - Exception: The committee did not designate its member to the Administrative Committee of General Assembly (5-1, paragraph 3)

*Adopted*

Respectfully submitted,

/s/ Ralph Mittendorf, Chairman

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### COMMISSIONERS PRESENT:

#### Presbytery

Ascension  
Calvary  
Central Carolina  
Evangel  
Grace  
Heritage  
James River  
Louisiana  
Mississippi Valley  
New River  
North Georgia  
North Texas  
N. Illinois  
Pacific NW  
Potomac  
Siouxlands  
South Texas  
Southern Florida  
Southwest  
Southwest Florida  
Tennessee Valley  
Warrior  
Western Carolina  
Westminster

#### Commisisoner

TE Gil Odendaal  
RE Wilbur Livingston  
RE John Leigh  
RE Bruce Bailey  
TE Norman Bagby  
RE George Pauley  
TE Howard Griffith  
RE Dale Peacock  
RE Henry Russell  
TE Rodney King  
TE Warren Gardner  
TE Don Darling  
TE Charles Holliday  
TE William Willisford  
RE Dick Larson  
TE Stan Sundberg  
TE Bill Fitzhenry  
RE Ralph Mittendorf, Chairman  
TE Arthur Ames  
TE Al Bennett  
RE David Cleveland  
TE Edward Spencer  
TE Frank Hamilton  
TE Joseph Wolfe

Approval of the report as a whole was moved and seconded. An amendment was adopted that the exception to the minutes of the MTWC noted in IV.1.a. (p.755) not be interpreted to mean opposition to meetings for prayer or concerts of prayer in the Reformed tradition of Jonathan Edwards et al. The report was then adopted as a whole excepting #10 on budget. TE Daniel Iverson led in prayer.

#### 19-47 Amendment of Docket

On motion the Assembly voted to amend the docket so that the Wednesday evening seminars would be scheduled to begin at 7:00 p.m. and the Assembly would be scheduled to reconvene at 8:30 p.m.

A brief recess was taken and the Assembly resumed business with the singing of "We Rest on Thee" and prayer led by TE Joseph Pipa.

#### 19-48 Standing Judicial Commission

RE Jack Williamson led in prayer and continued the report of the SJC. A motion was made and seconded to refer **Recommendations 1-4** to the Committee on Constitutional Business for report back to this Assembly. The motion was **Defeated**, but the requested count revealed that there were not enough votes to suspend the RAO

## JOURNAL

in order to consider these recommendations. The moderator therefore ruled that they must be referred to the CCB and directed that a response be made to this Assembly.

Chairman Williamson turned to the matter of the John M. Warren, Jr. Memorial.

### REPLY TO GENERAL ASSEMBLY ON JOHN M. WARREN, JR. MEMORIAL

#### I. STATEMENT OF THE ISSUES

The Standing Judicial Commission files this Report and Recommendation with the 19th General Assembly on the Memorial from TE John M. Warren, Jr. seeking clarification of the effects of the action of the 17th G.A. as it affects the action of the 16th G.A. relating to the Carl Fox matter.

The 18th General Assembly referred this Memorial "together with all other matters related to the issue" to this Standing Judicial Commission without specific instructions. Your Commission notes that this referral is not a judicial case although previous actions relating to the Carl Fox matter were taken as in judicial cases. This Commission considers that in this referral it is acting as a Committee and thus makes this Report and Recommendation to the 19th General Assembly.

We believe the Memorial seeks clarification of 2 major issues, to-wit:

- (1) What was the effect of the 17th General Assembly's action in adopting its Commission's recommendation that "the pastoral complexity of the case and the passage of time warrants all further proceedings in this case be stayed." (M17GA pp. 173-174)
- (2) What is the status of the membership of Carl Fox in Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church?

In resolving these 2 issues we do not believe it is necessary to review the entire voluminous record in detail. We suggest that a review of the following facts will be sufficient to resolve these issues, to-wit:

#### 1. MINUTES OF PEAR ORCHARD PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH:

- (a) November 1986 reflecting several meetings with Carl and Cindy Fox over marital difficulties.
- (b) November 25, 1986 contains an admonition (administrative not judicial) to Carl Fox for his refusal to abide by Sessional instructions with note that members of Session continued to seek opportunities to discuss this matter with him.
- (c) Letter from Carl Fox to Pear Orchard, dated December 27, 1986 in which he requested:  
"Please strike my name from your role of members."
- (d) Letter dated January 22, 1987, from Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church's Clerk of Session stating that Carl Fox could not be removed because he was under censure.
- (e) January and February 1987 reflecting the Session continued "to offer periodic counsel to Mr. Fox regarding this whole matter."
- (f) February 16, 1987 reflects the following action:

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

"Motion made, seconded and passed to assent to Carl Fox's request to remove his name from the rolls of Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church."

- (g) In letter dated July 20, 1987 Mr. Fox sought affiliation with Pear Orchard.
  - (h) August 24, 1987 reflects action which set 7 conditions with which Mr. Fox must concur before considering his request for membership.
  - (i) By letter dated September 11, 1987 Mr. Fox refused to concur with these requests of the Session.
  - (j) No further action has been taken by the Pear Orchard Session regarding reinstating his membership, although there have been numerous pastoral discussions with him relating to all these matters.
2. MINUTES OF MISSISSIPPI VALLEY PRESBYTERY:
- (a) Following the action of the 16th General Assembly (1988), the Presbytery appointed a Special Committee "to investigate and report on the findings of General Assembly relating to the Complaint of Carl Fox."
  - (b) This Special Committee reported its finding and recommendations to Presbytery on January 17, 1989. Presbytery adopted and approved this report.
  - (c) Following the action of the 17th General Assembly, the Presbytery minutes of February 20, 1990 reflect the following:

### CARL FOX REQUEST

M/S/P that, in view of the request for Review and Control, the Sessional Records Committee appoint three men from its Committee to give special attention to the minutes of the Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church to see if there are any irregularities, especially since the 17th General Assembly and to see if all proper procedures have been followed.

TE Chuck Frost, representing Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church, spoke from 10:25 - 10:45 a.m.

Mr. Carl Fox spoke from 10:45 - 11:04 a.m.

Mr. Frost spoke from 11:04 - 11:10 a.m.

Mr. Fox spoke from 11:10 - 11:15 a.m.

(These four conversations were tape recorded by the Stated Clerk and are available from his office, along with Pear Orchard's written statement and supporting documents, to any member of the Court wishing to see them.)

There were questions and general discussion from the floor until 11:35 a.m.

M/S/P that Mississippi Valley Presbytery receive the reports from Mr. Carl Fox and the Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church as information;

and that Mississippi Valley Presbytery extended to Mr. Fox its deepest sympathy in his adverse personal circumstances over the past several years, its sorrow over the termination of his marriage, and its concern for Mr. Fox's emotional, spiritual, and physical welfare;

and that Mississippi Valley Presbytery commend the Session of Pear Orchard Church for its diligence in seeking to promote the purity and peace of the church during this trying time, for its diligence in keeping Presbytery abreast of the

## JOURNAL

situation, and its willingness to seek Presbytery's direction and follow Presbytery's advice;

and that Mississippi Valley Presbytery affirm its stand with the Session of the Pear Orchard Church in that it believes the Session, though not without error, has sought to resolve this matter from a sincere heart, truly seeking the good of Pear Orchard Church, the best for Carl and Cindy Fox, and the glory of Christ;

and that Mississippi Valley Presbytery agrees with the Session of Pear Orchard Church and acknowledges the fact that Mr. Carl Fox is no longer a member of the Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church;

and that Mississippi Valley Presbytery recognizes that the 17th General Assembly, by a special judicial commission, did affirm that though the Pear Orchard Church and the Mississippi Valley Presbytery had made mistakes, they had earnestly tried to rectify the situation and that it now best be laid aside;

and that Mississippi Valley Presbytery urges both parties to cease legal action and proceed to serve Christ and honor Him by letting this matter rest.

Motion passed unanimously.

### SESSIONAL RECORDS COMMITTEE

M/P that in accordance with Presbytery's instructions earlier in the day, the committee notes that the minutes of Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church were approved without exception and that nothing unbiblical or unconstitutional was found in the minutes dating from the 17th General Assembly.

### 3. MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- (a) The 16th General Assembly (1988) adopted the Judicial Commission's Report and Judgment (*16MGA* p. 220-22).
- (b) The 17th General Assembly (1989) adopted its Judicial Commission's Report and Recommendations (*17MGA* pp. 173-174), which concluded with these words:  
". . . the pastoral complexity of the case and the passages of time warrants all further proceedings in the case be stayed."
- (c) The 18th General Assembly (1990) took two (2) actions related to this matter, to-wit:
  - (1) Approved without exceptions the Mississippi Valley Presbytery minutes of February 20 (21) 1990 (above quoted) (*18MGA* p. 182).
  - (2) Referred the Memorial of John M. Warren, Jr., together with all other matters related to the issue, to this Standing Judicial Commission (*18MGA* p.81).

## II. OPINION

1. That the actions of the 17th and 18th General Assemblies clearly indicate an intention to conclude, terminate and close all matters relating to the Carl Fox case; but that the use of the language ". . . all further proceedings in this case be stayed" did not accomplish that desired purpose.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

2. That Carl Fox has not been a member of Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church since the action of the Session of that church on February 16, 1987 when it accepted his resignation and removed his name from its rolls; and that the action of the 16th General Assembly's specifications 1 and 3 be declared in error.

### III. REASONING

#### Issue 1:

The crux of this issue relates to the language used by the 17th General Assembly that "all further proceedings in this case be stayed . cf. *BCO* 40-5." Acting under this § *BCO* 40-5, the 17th General Assembly adopted the recommendation of its Committee of Commissioners for Review and Control (1) to cite Mississippi Valley Presbytery "to appear by representative .. to show what it had done or failed to do in the case in question;" and (2) appointed a Commission "for disposition" of the matter. (*17MGA* p. 203). Later in the Assembly, the 17th General Assembly heard and adopted its Commission's recommendation which concluded with the language noted, namely:

"The pastoral complexity of the case and the passage of time warrants all further proceedings in the case be stayed. cf. *BCO* 40-5" (*17MGA* p. 174).

Since the Assembly's stated purpose for appointing the Commission was "for disposition" of the matter, it is our opinion that in adopting the above quoted language the 17th General Assembly clearly intended to dispose of the matter. A careful reading of the entire Report and Recommendation of the Commission, as adopted by the General Assembly, clearly points to an effort to finally and conclusively end, conclude and terminate this matter. We believe this conclusion of the General Assembly that this matter be ended is further verified by the action of the 18th General Assembly approving without exception, the minutes of Mississippi Valley Presbytery dealing with this matter, as above set out.

Certainly all would agree that General Assembly has the authority to end, conclude and terminate a matter, even though there is no such specific language in the *BCO*. Wisdom would dictate that there must be a method for a church court to finally conclude and terminate a matter.

We believe that the words in *BCO* § 40-5 - "may stay all further proceedings" - technically mean to hold in abeyance further proceeding until such time as the court decides to lift "the stay" and reopen the matter.

However, we do not believe this was the intention of the 17th or 18th General Assemblies. We believe it was their clear intention to end, conclude and terminate the matter. As we have pointed out, we believe it would be wise to clarify this matter, once and for all, and that the following actions be considered, to-wit:

- (1) That the 19th General Assembly adopt our recommended action to end, conclude and terminate all matters now or previously pending, in the Carl Fox matter.
- (2) That some court initiate (for we do not consider this our prerogative) language to amend *BCO* § 40-5 to explicitly say that the court may "end, conclude and terminate" the matter.

#### Issue 2:

We agree with the above quoted conclusion of Mississippi Valley Presbytery that "Mr. Carl Fox is no longer a member of the Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church."

Even though the language of the 16th General Assembly action in the Carl Fox case includes such language as "improperly and unconstitutional", "remanded back to the Mississippi Valley Presbytery with instructions", and other language of this type, it must be recognized the authority of the General Assembly "is in all respects moral or spiritual" (*BCO* § 11-1). It must be further recognized that the power of the General Assembly to force compliance with this action "is only ministerial and declarative" (*BCO*, Preface II (7)).

In dealing with the membership of Carl Fox in Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church, the Session properly exercised the power with which it was vested in accepting Carl Fox's letter of resignation of December 27, 1986 and removing his name from the roll by its action of February 16, 1987. Since that date there has been no proper action which returned Carl Fox to that roll (*BCO* § 12-5(a)).

We believe that the Standing Judicial Commission is the only body at General Assembly level that has had available all the records of the local church, the presbytery and the General Assembly relating to this matter. This has enabled us to get a total picture which was not available to the Commissions of the 16th and 17th General Assemblies nor to the Committee of Commissioners on Review of Presbytery Records.

Pastor John M. Warren, Jr. the author of the Memorial before us and the Chairman of the 16th General Assembly Judicial Commission, has been most helpful in sharing certain facts with us. Pastor Warren informs us that the 16th General Assembly Commission did not have before it the Pear Orchard Session Minutes or the Mississippi Valley Presbytery Minutes (although the 16th General Assembly Minutes pages 234-235 indicate the proper Mississippi Valley Presbytery Minutes were produced and examined by the Committee of Commissioners on Review of Presbytery Records). This 16th General Assembly Commission sought to develop a Record of the Case from a great multitude of documents furnished by Mr. Carl Fox. The representatives of the parties did agree on the authenticity of the documents; but the 16th General Assembly Commission obviously had an inadequate and incomplete Record of the Case. This 16th General Assembly Commission was forced to make a decision on what was available to it. It is obvious that the 16th General Assembly Commission found that the Pear Orchard Session "improperly and unconstitutionally accepted the resignation of Carl Fox from membership in the Church" because they thought that Mr. Fox was, at that time, under "church censure". This was based on the letter from the Clerk of Session of Pear Orchard, dated January 22, 1987. After looking at all the records we believe this conclusion was in error. The *BCO* in its Preface II -- Preliminary Principle (7) - acknowledges that "all church courts may err through human frailty." We have concluded that on February 16, 1987 when the Session officially accepted Mr. Fox's resignation and removed his name from the church roll, Mr. Fox was not under any "church censure" as defined in *BCO* Chapter 30. We make certain observations in this regard:

- (1) Chapter 27 of the *BCO* states that the term - "discipline" - has two senses:
  - a. Administrative or pastoral
  - b. Judicial
- (2) *BCO* § 27-5 uses the words "admonish" and "admonition" in both these senses. 27-5 (a), (b) and (c) used these words in the administrative or pastoral sense. 27-5(d) uses "admonition" in its judicial sense.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- (3) The dictionary defines "admonish" as "to warn or notify of a fault, to reprove gently or kindly but seriously, to exhort" and defines "admonition" as "a counseling against a fault, error or warning".
- (4) The *BCO* prescribes no particular procedure for such administrative or pastoral admonition other than the principles set forth in § 27-5 (a), (b) and (c). It leaves such procedures to the individual or court.
- (5) The *BCO* prescribes specific procedures for judicial discipline in Chapters 29 through 38.
- (6) "Church Censures" as defined in *BCO* Chapter 30 are an exercise of discipline in a judicial sense. § 30-1 states:  
"The censures which may be inflicted are admonition. . . The censures of admonition . . . shall be administered to an accused who, upon conviction. . . such censure concludes the judicial process. . ."
- (7) *BCO* Chapters 31 and following provide specific procedures for initiating, hearing and determining such a "church censure" under judicial process.
- (8) No such judicial process was initiated or conducted by the Pear Orchard Session in the Carl Fox matter. Although Mr. Fox was "admonished" by the Session, it was not in a judicial process but in the administrative or pastoral sense of discipline.
- (9) Thus, Mr. Fox was not under any "church censure" as defined in the *BCO* when the Pear Orchard Session accepted his resignation and removed his name from the roll.

We now move to an evaluation of the basis given by the 16th General Assembly for its judgment. We note that the Commission's Report that was adopted by the 16th General Assembly (16MGA pp 220-22) cited *BCO* § 46-5, § 27-5 and § 32-2 through 32-20 as the basis for its judgment "that the Session of Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church improperly and unconstitutionally accepted the resignation from membership in the church." We believe this conclusion is the result of a misinterpretation of *BCO* § 46-5 in view of the clarification of *BCO* §46-5 in the revision thereof finally adopted by the 18th General Assembly (1990) (18MGA pp 42-43).

On February 16, 1987 when Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church assented to the voluntary request of Carl Fox and removed his name from the roll, *BCO* § 46-5 reads as follows:

46-5: When a member of a particular church has willfully neglected the church for a period of one year, or has made it known that he or she has no intention of fulfilling the church vows, then the Session should exercise proper discipline by deleting such names from the church roll, but only after the procedure described in 27-5 has been followed. (Underlining indicates former language now deleted or changed.)

The 18th General Assembly clarified this language to read as follows:

46-5: When a member of a particular church has willfully neglected the church for a period of one year, or has made it known that he or she has no intention of fulfilling the church vows, then the Session should delete such names from the church roll, but only after the Session has followed scriptural procedures (Matthew 18). The Session shall always notify the person whose name has been deleted.

This clarifying language was needed because confusion had arisen in many sessions and presbyteries over the interpretation of *BCO* § 46-5 as it relates to an



individual's voluntary resignation from membership in a particular church. Many had concluded that in such a case *BCO* § 46-5 was not applicable but that the session had authority to accept the resignation and remove the person's name from the roll under the general power given to a session under *BCO* § 12-5(a), such as:

". . . to receive members into the communion of the church; to remove them for just cause; to grant letters of dismissal to other churches. . ."

It was under this power that the Pear Orchard Session acted.

Others had interpreted *BCO* § 46-5 to apply when a member voluntarily resigned as they concluded that such a resignation placed the member within the *BCO* § 46-5 language - ". . . made it known that he or she has no intention of fulfilling the church vows". Others thought that language only applied to a member who showed "willful neglect" or a contumacious spirit, and not to a member who voluntarily asked the session to "please strike my name from your roll of members", as did Carl Fox. Hence a general confusion arose across the PCA as to the application of *BCO* § 46-5 in voluntary resignation cases. There was a need for clarification of this issue, and we feel the action of the 18th General Assembly did clarify the proper interpretation of this *BCO* § 46-5. We believe it is helpful to follow the history of this process of clarifying this confusion and conflicting interpretations of *BCO* § 46-5:

- (1) An overture from the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama was received by the 16th General Assembly (Overture 5 - *16MGA* pp. 45-46). This overture outlined the confusion and suggested clarifying language for *BCO* § 46-5.
- (2) The 16th General Assembly adopted the recommendation of its Committee of Commissioners on Judicial Business and answered the overture in the negative because of certain language therein. But, obviously recognizing the confusion the Assembly referred the matter to the Permanent Committee on Judicial Business to "report back to the 17th G.A. for consideration of amendments to the *BCO* for the non-judicial removal of members from the roll of a local church." (*16MGA* p. 173).
- (3) In its report to the 17th General Assembly, the Permanent Committee on Judicial Business recommended clarifying language for *BCO* § 46-5, which is the language adopted by the 18th General Assembly and presently in the *BCO*. (*17MGA* p. 330)
- (4) At the 17th General Assembly, the Committee of Commissioners on Judicial Business recommended that this clarifying language for *BCO* § 46-5 be adopted; and the General Assembly "adopted and sent down to the presbyteries for advice and consent" (*17MGA* p. 150)
- (5) To the 18th General Assembly the Stated Clerk reported that the presbyteries had by a vote of 35 "for" and 8 "against" concurred in this clarifying language. (*18MGA* pp. 42-43).
- (6) The 18th General Assembly then adopted this clarifying language and it became a part of the *BCO*. (*18MGA* p. 43)

This process was a clear expression of the PCA as to the proper interpretation of the language in *BCO* § 46-5, which had caused confusion and been interpreted in different ways by sessions and presbyteries. It made clear that it was the intention of this denomination that a simple voluntary resignation of a local church member could be handled by the session under its general powers. It further made clear that even when a member "has willfully neglected the church for a period of one year, or has made it known that he or she has no intention of fulfilling the church vows", such

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

member's name may be deleted from the roll under *BCO's* § 46-5 without judicial process. It does not negate the possibility that judicial process may be brought against a member under *BCO* § 27-5 et. seq. when the Rules of Discipline are properly instituted.

PCA is a voluntary association of people committed to a common faith and order. The *BCO* § 25-11 explicitly expresses this voluntary principle as it applies to the association of a local church with the denomination:

25-11: ". . . Particular churches need to remain in association with any court of this body only so long as they themselves so desire. The relationship is voluntary, based upon mutual love and confidence, and is in no sense to be maintained by the exercise of any force or coercion whatsoever. A particular church may withdraw from any court of this body at any time for reason which seem to it sufficient."

We believe this same voluntary principle applies to an individual's association with a local PCA congregation.

Finally, we note *BCO* § 38-3 which enunciates another principle that has implications for this case. This section provides for the situation where a member leaves a church without resigning and provides that in such a case "the irregularity shall be recorded and the name erased." Although the facts in the Carl Fox case do not bring it precisely within the factual situation explicitly mentioned in *BCO* § 38-3, we believe the principle is applicable, i.e. there are situations where a member resigns from a local church and "the irregularity shall be recorded and the name erased". We have already noted above that the power of the Presbytery and General Assembly in matters of this type, admitting and dismissing members from a local congregation, is purely ministerial and declarative, moral and spiritual. If it is conceded that the action of the 16th General Assembly was proper, that action was ministerial and declarative, moral and spiritual advice to Mississippi Valley Presbytery. It must be remembered that the power to take action, to receive and dismiss members of a local congregation, is invested in the Session of the local church. It seems to us that when Mississippi Valley Presbytery and Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church failed to heed that advice and disagreed with the General Assembly, the 17th General Assembly in response thereto accepted this action of Pear Orchard Session in accepting Carl Fox's resignation request as such an "irregularity" and decided to take no further action thereon.

### IV. CONCLUSION

In the light of these circumstances, we recommend that the 19th General Assembly take the following actions, to-wit:

1. Adopt and approve this Committee Report without necessarily concurring with all of the reasons which justify the conclusions *Adopted*
2. Join Mississippi Valley Presbytery in extending to Mr. Carl Fox its deepest sympathy in his adverse personal circumstances over the past several years, its sorrow over the termination of his marriage, and its concern for Mr. Fox's emotional, spiritual and physical welfare. *Adopted*
3. Declare that all matters relating to Carl Fox, now or previously pending before the General Assembly, are ended, concluded and terminated. *Adopted*
4. Join Mississippi Valley Presbytery in concluding that Mr. Carl Fox is no longer a member of the Pear Orchard Presbyterian Church and has not been a

## JOURNAL

member since that Session accepted his resignation and removed his name from its roll on February 16, 1987. *Adopted*

### V. VOTING ON REPORT AND RECOMMENDATIONS

At the meeting of March 1991, the members of the Standing Judicial Commission acted as a Committee in relationship to this matter. All of the 20 members present at this meeting concurred in the above Report and recommendations. There were 4 members absent from said meeting. One member, Rev. Dewey Roberts, was in Saudi Arabia serving as a chaplain in the armed forces. The other 3 absent members were mailed copies of the proposed report and recommendation. No response in opposition was received from any of them. Members Donald A. Codling and M. Dale Peacock concurred and filed this concurring opinion, to-wit:

We concur with the recommendations herein, but disagree with the interpretation given to *BCO* Preface II(7). The report's statement that "the power of the General Assembly to force compliance with this action is only ministerial and declarative' (*BCO*, Preface II(7)) is a misinterpretation both of the traditional and confessional use of the terms, and of the contextual meaning of the phrase in *BCO*. This phrase has always referred to the power of the courts of the church to legislate, rather than to their power to "force compliance." Our church specifically grants courts the power to enforce compliance by admonition, suspension from the sacraments, suspension from office, excommunication, deposition, and the removal of a local church or presbytery from membership in the denomination. Not one of these actions is merely "ministerial and declarative," though they must properly be based on our "ministerial and declarative" application of the teaching of God's word. "Ministerial" and "declarative" are terms which forbid us to add to Scripture in our legislation. Rather, we are to act as ministers of Christ with authority only to execute his rules; we are to declare what the Scripture teaches for guidance of God's people. When a member is excommunicated, that person's vote is not counted at congregational meetings and he or she is refused access to the sacraments. We do not merely say they cannot vote or take part in the sacraments. We enforce compliance in areas under our jurisdiction, without any need to go to the civil court for this purpose.

Therefore, the position that our church courts are without power to demand compliance with God's laws from those members under their jurisdiction is foreign to historic presbyterianism. As fallible as we are, we still must "enforce the law of Christ revealed in the Scriptures" *BCO* 3-3. Our constitution clearly recognizes the right of the church courts "to require obedience to the laws of Christ" *BCO* 11-2. We do not effectuate this authority by timidly tendering advice. To imply that the lower courts may rightly simply ignore the judgment of the higher courts is an erroneous view of Scripture and our constitution.

Donald A. Codling  
M. Dale Peacock

**Recommendation 1 through 4** were adopted as noted above. TE David Coffin requested his abstention be recorded. TE Michael Chastain requested his abstention on the preceding four recommendations due to lack of sufficient information be recorded.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

On motion the report of the SJC was adopted as a whole, excepting the *BCO* matters referred to the CCB. RE David Lachman requested his negative vote be recorded and announced his intention to file a protest. (See 19-66, p. 154)

### 19-49 Protest by TE John McKnight Warren, Jr.

During the discussion TE John Warren was afforded personal privilege to express the following protest, which was found to be couched in temperate and respectful language and ordered spread upon the record.

#### Protest by TE John McKnight Warren, Jr., Concerning Warren Memorial

1. That Nineteenth General Assembly not approve the recommendations of the SJC regarding my Memorial for the reasons stated below:
  - A. To approve the SJC's recommendations is in fact going against the action of the Twelfth General Assembly which requires a new trial to overturn the action of a previous General Assembly. Their recommendation is unconstitutional; and, in fact, tends to do the same thing the Seventeenth General Assembly appeared to do -- i.e., make the action of the Sixteenth General Assembly ineffectual by "staying" any further action regarding the case (and, in effect, make it appear, as some have incorrectly surmised, that the Seventeenth General Assembly overturned the action of the Sixteenth General Assembly).
  - B. To approve the SJC's recommendations is making it appear that the issue is whether or not the Session of a local church is the court of original jurisdiction in matters concerning who is on the membership roll of the church. **In fact, however, the real issue is whether or not a member of the PCA loses "due process" benefits should he be removed from the roll of the church -- i.e., so that he cannot appeal or complain concerning the Session's action removing him.**
  - C. Actions of any appellate court (presbytery or general assembly, including Commissions and/or Commission acting as a committee) recommending actions to another court concerning a previously adjudicated case without input by the member and/or nonmember filing appeal or complaint is unconscionable -- against all guarantees of due process in the Presbyterian Church on America.
  - D. To approve the SJC's recommendations is to submit to the notion proposed in their recommendations that discipline is divided into "**Pastoral, Advisory and/or Administrative**" AND "**Judicial**" categories; and, if a person is not under "**judicial**" discipline, he can then be removed from the roll of the church. That must be an arbitrary interpretation on the part of the SJC, since Discipline in the PCA, **regardless of category or type**, is for the purpose of restoring a member to good standing -- as a "mother restoring her wayward child to herself." We are the "Church of the One Hundred;" and not the "**Church of the Ninety-Nine**" -- i.e., removing at will "**the ONE SHEEP under any type of discipline, without hope of seeking reconciliation**" (as if he were an infidel, without worthiness of our time, patience and forbearance in seeking to restore him to good standing in the church). And, too, even excommunication is the ultimate act of discipline -- seeking to restore the **true child of God**.
  - E. To approve the SJC's recommendations is to submit to their contention that they had more of the record than the Sixteenth General Assembly. The issue of the record was dealt with by the Sixteenth General Assembly Commission, reported to the whole Assembly, and overwhelmingly ratified by the Sixteenth General Assembly. In essence, then, there is no argument that the case before the Sixteenth General Assembly was a complex case (in fact, more than a hundred complaints were brought by Mr. Carl Fox against Mississippi Valley Presbytery and/or the Session of the Pear Orchard PCA of Ridgeland, Mississippi); however, with the Session refusing to submit their records and Mississippi Valley Presbytery

## JOURNAL

- submitting only an administrative committee report as its **only record of the case** (which made the Sixteenth General Assembly Commission to believe it had all of the record and reported such -- only for this Teaching Elder to find records at civil court trials in January of 1990 proving that Mississippi Valley Presbytery withheld its records from the Sixteenth General Assembly, while leading it to believe otherwise), Mr. Fox produced sufficient and corroborated copies of enough of the record of both the Session and Presbytery for the Sixteenth General Assembly to adjudicate the **FOUR (Only) COMPLAINTS** that they did -- all of this reported to and ratified by the Sixteenth General Assembly. In essence, then, the SJC contending that you should vote for their recommendations because they had more of the record is contrary to the facts. The Sixteenth General Assembly record applied only to those four complaints actually adjudicated and reported to the General Assembly as a whole, which ratified same.
- F. Finally, and most important, to approve the recommendations of the SJC, is to continue the worse case of abuse upon a single member's due process rights according to the PCA. No one who professes faith in our Lord Jesus Christ should be treated as an infidel and ignored and abused as to his rights of the due process in the PCA. **HOWEVER, SUCH IS THE CASE WITH PCA DEACON AND STILL MEMBER** (as adjudicated by the Sixteenth General Assembly in sustaining his complaints against Mississippi Valley Presbytery and, in fact, the Session of the Pear Orchard PCA of Ridgeland, Mississippi), **MR. CARL FOX**. A mere expression of sorrow over Mr. Fox's problems arising both within and without the specifics of this case is small consolation for the treatment he has been afforded within the confines of this denomination; and, too, trying to explain away the PCA's treatment of him with "differences of opinion" held within our denomination concerning what our denomination does with members requesting to be removed from the roll of a local church shows little, if any, compassion and understanding for the complexities of this case -- to which no one has argument.
- II. **SECONDLY**, I appeal to members of the Nineteenth General Assembly who have taken and/or made no effort to study the actions of the 16th, 17th, 18th and now requested actions before the 19th General Assemblies regarding these issues, that you abstain from voting on these SJC recommendations; or, at least, have the integrity to vote down the recommendations unless so moved by the Holy Spirit to do otherwise. I especially appeal to the members of Mississippi Valley Presbytery to either abstain from voting or to follow even more closely the appeal to the Assembly as a whole, above. Special appeal is made to delegates from the Pear Orchard PCA Session attending this Nineteenth General Assembly to carefully consider these appeals to the Assembly as a whole and to members of Mississippi Valley Presbytery. Votes should not be cast based on the integrity or appearance of any delegates and/or parties submitting their views; but, rather, on the facts that have been submitted to you.
- III. **THIRDLY**, I appeal to members of the Nineteenth General Assembly that this **APPEAL** be spread upon the **MINUTES OF THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY**, regardless of the final action of the Nineteenth General Assembly, for the record.

Prepared 06/18/91

**APPEAL RESPECTFULLY SUBMITTED BY TE JOHN M. WARREN, JR.**

RE D. M. Campbell requested his name be added to the protest.

### **19-50 Recess**

The Assembly recessed for dinner at 5:36 p.m. and TE Roland Barnes led in prayer.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MINUTES - WEDNESDAY EVENING

June 19, 1991

Sixth Session

**19-51 Assembly Reconvened**

The Assembly reconvened at 8:36 p.m. with the singing of "Blessed Assurance" and prayer led by TE Gerry Gutierrez.

**19-52 Committee on Nominations**

RE Daniel Domin, chairman, led in prayer and presented the Committee's report (Appendix L, pp. 443). The results of the elections were as follows:

**Administrative Committee**

Class of 1995

TE L. Roy Taylor, Grace RE Harold E. Whitlock, Heritage  
RE William Bonner, New Jersey

Alternate

TE Robert Hornick, Gulf Coast RE William (Bingy) Moore, Potomac

**Committee for Christian Education and Publications**

Class of 1995

TE J. Alan Carter, Evangel RE Gary Flye, Rocky Mountain  
RE Ralph Mittendorff, S. Florida

Alternate

TE Dave Bowen, E. Carolina RE Rodney A. Andrews, SE Alabama

**Committee on Mission to North America**

Class of 1992

RE John Jardine, Jr., Heritage

Class of 1995

TE Kenneth A. Smith, New Jersey RE Eugene Betts, Philadelphia

TE Lewis Ruff, N. California

Alternate

TE Andrew Silman, Louisiana RE James Hanemaayer, Pacific

**Committee on Mission to the World**

Class of 1995

TE Shelton Sanford, Calvary RE L. B. (Pete) Austin, III, TN Valley  
RE James Banks, W. Carolina

Alternate

TE Sanders Willson, TN Valley RE Charles Burns, Heritage

**Board of Trustees of Covenant College**

Class of 1992

TE Robert W. Bowman, C. Georgia RE James Roberts, Southwest Florida

Class of 1995

TE Arthur C. Broadwick, Ascension RE Hugh O. Maclellan, Sr., TN Valley

TE Robert S. Rayburn, Pacific NW RE Robert G. Avis, Missouri

JOURNAL

Covenant College, Class of 1995 - continued

TE William S. Barker, Philadelphia                      RE Robert Arthur Watts, Northeast  
RE Dwight L. Allen, N. Georgia

**Board of Trustees of Covenant Theological Seminary**

Class of 1995

TE Hudson T. Armerding, Susq. Valley                      RE Robert Burrows, Ascension  
TE David Alexander, Calvary                      RE Robert E. Morrison, Potomac  
RE Art Stoll, N. Illinois  
RE John J. Reed, Missouri

**Board of Trustees of the Insurance, Annuity, & Relief Funds**

Class of 1995

RE Denny Carew, Rocky Mountain  
RE Ronald W. Horgan, Mid-America  
RE John Mardirosian, New Jersey

**Board of Trustees for the  
Investor's Fund for Building & Development**

Class of 1995

TE Taylor McGown, Evangel                      RE Colin B. Coombs, Pacific

**Board of Trustees for the  
Presbyterian Church in America Foundation**

Class of 1995

RE John N. Albritton, SE Alabama  
RE Jean Owens, SW Florida

**Board of Trustees of Ridge Haven**

Class of 1996

TE Robert F. Brunson, Grace                      RE Charles Parks, Sr., C. Carolina

**Assembly Theological Examining Committee**

Class of 1994

TE D. Clair Davis, Philadelphia                      RE Roy Gamble, SE Alabama  
Alternate  
TE R. Laird Harris, Heritage                      RE David Miner, New Jersey

**Committee on Constitutional Business**

Class of 1995

TE Craig D. Childs, Sr., Evangel                      RE Daniel Domin, S. Florida  
Alternate  
TE Danny Levi, Grace                      RE S. A. Miller, Westminster

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### Committee on Interchurch Relations

Class of 1994

TE Henry Lewis Smith, SE Alabama RE George Gulley, Jr., Grace

Alternate

TE Timothy Fortner, Covenant RE Wilson J. Barbee, C. Carolina

### Standing Judicial Commission

Class of 1992

TE John Montgomery, C. Florida

Class of 1995

TE Michael D. Bolus, C. Georgia

RE Mark Belz, Missouri

TE Paul Kooistra, Warrior

RE Gerald Sovereign, Gulf Coast

TE John Sartell, Covenant

RE Jack Williamson, SE Alabama

On motion the report as a whole was *Adopted*.

### 19-53 Standing Judicial Commission

RE Jack Williamson, chairman, led in prayer and presented the portion of the report referred to the CCB on Wednesday afternoon. TE David Dively, chairman of the CCB, reported that the CCB had reviewed the proposed amendments to the *BCO* and had no complications with them.

## PROPOSED *BCO* AMENDMENTS

*BCO* § 15-4 provides that "The General Assembly shall elect a Standing Judicial Commission (SJC) to which it shall commit all judicial cases within its jurisdiction." We understand this role of the SJC to be limited to interpreting the Constitution of the PCA as it applies to specific judicial cases. We do not see our role as suggesting changes to our Constitution except in very rare cases where we find conflicting provisions or confusing or unclear language which relates to judicial procedures. These *BCO* provisions creating the SJC (*BCO* § 15-4 and 15-5) were first submitted to the 15th General Assembly (1987) and finally adopted at the 16th General Assembly (1988). The SJC was first constituted by election of its members at the 17th General Assembly (1989). At said 15th General Assembly when said *BCO* changes were first adopted by the General Assembly and sent down to the presbyteries for their advice and consent, certain proposed amendments to the Rules of Assembly Operation were placed in the minutes with the notation that they were to be enacted after such *BCO* changes were adopted by a sufficient number of presbyteries and a subsequent General Assembly (*15MGA* p. 487). It was further noted that "If a Standing Judicial Commission is created, it may recommend to the General Assembly such other changes in the RAO as it deems advisable." It is in this spirit that we report to the General Assembly certain recommended changes in the *BCO* that would eliminate certain contradictions and confusions we have discovered in our 1-1/2 years experience in dealing with judicial cases. For instance, *BCO* § 42-11 (appeals) and *BCO* 43-7 (complaints) both provide that the appellant-complainant appear when cited "by the second day of the General Assembly next following the date of notice." This is now not



## JOURNAL

applicable, for the cases are heard by the Standing Judicial Commission and not the General Assembly.

Because of such problems, we recommend certain changes to the *BCO* as they relate to procedure in Chapter 42 (Appeals) and Chapter 43 (Complaints). We state that this is a beginning procedure for the Standing Judicial Commission which is of a non-precedential nature.

1. Amend § 42-11 to read as follows:

An appellant shall be considered to have abandoned his appeal if he fails to appear before the higher court, in person or by counsel, for a hearing thereof, after he has been properly notified; but an appellant may waive, in writing, his right to appear with permission of the court and not be considered to have abandoned his case. In case of such failure to appear, the judgment of the lower court will stand unless the appellant gives to the court a prompt and satisfactory explanation.

*Adopted and send down to presbyteries for advice and consent.*

**Reason:**

This eliminates the present language - "On the day Presbytery meets or by the second day of the meeting of General Assembly next following the date of his notice of appeal." This language above takes into consideration the formation of the SJC as these cases will not be heard by the General Assembly. It also provides an opportunity for an appellant to waive his right to appear provided he does so in writing and with the permission of the court. Such a waiver will not constitute an abandonment of his case. Many times because of distance, health, conflicts and otherwise, an appellant may decide it is not necessary or advisable for him to appear and this gives an opportunity for his appearance to be waived and still the court would decide the case.

2. Delete the last sentence of *BCO* § 42-5 and substitute therefor the following:  
Should new evidence come to light while the case is pending, the higher court (a) would ordinarily remand the case to the lower court for rehearing, or (b) may consider, admit or refuse the new evidence, or (c) shall receive the new evidence if all parties stipulate, in writing, agreeing to the new evidence. (See *BCO* 35-14)  
*Adopted and sent down to presbyteries for advice and consent.*

**Reason:**

The present language in the *BCO* simply provides that should new evidence be discovered, the case must be remanded back to the lower court. This gives three options for us to not delay unnecessarily the appeal. It continues the option of remanding back to the lower court as the ordinary option. But it also allows the court the option to consider, admit or refuse the new evidence under its rules so as to continue with the case. Also if all parties stipulate, in writing, agreeing to the new evidence, it is mandatory that the court receive it and continue with the case.

3. Amend *BCO* § 43-7 to read as follows:  
The complainant shall be considered to have abandoned his complaint if he fails to appear before the higher court, in person or by counsel, for a hearing thereof, after he has been properly notified; but a complainant may waive, in writing, his right to appear with permission of the court and not be considered to have abandoned his case. In case of such failure to appear, the judgment of the lower court will stand

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

unless the complainant gives to the court a prompt and satisfactory explanation.

*Adopted and sent down to presbyteries for advice and consent.*

**Reason:**

The same reasoning applies here as to the recommended changes above to BCO 42-11.

4. Amend § 43-3 by deleting from the first sentence the words "or fails to act on the complaint" and add as the second sentence the following:  
If the court fails to consider the complaint by or at its next stated meeting, the complainant may make complaint to the next higher court.

*Adopted and sent down to presbyteries for advice and consent.*

**Reason:**

We have found a great deal of confusion to what the words "fails to act on the complaint" in § 43-3 actually mean. The above proposed amendment would tie to the language of § 43-2 making it mandatory that the court consider the complaint at its next stated meeting or at a called meeting prior to its next stated meeting. This would set a time frame under which the complainant would have a right to complain to a higher court if the lower court failed to consider the complaint within this time frame.

The report of SJC as a whole was *Adopted*.

### 19-54 Committee of Commissioners on Ridge Haven

TE Frank E. Smith, chairman, led in prayer and presented the Committee's report.

#### I. Business Referred to the Committee

- A. Report and recommendations of the Board of Directors of Ridge Haven, Inc.
- B. Minutes of the Board of Directors of Ridge Haven, Inc.
- C. Budget of Ridge Haven, Inc.
- D. Audit of Ridge Haven, Inc. for the period ending June 30, 1990, and including 1989.

#### II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed

- A. The committee heard the oral report of Dr. James Poteet, Acting Administrator of Ridge Haven.
- B. The Budget and Audit of Ridge Haven were discussed.
- C. A review and discussion of the minutes of the Ridge Haven Board raised questions concerning the hiring of Dr. James Poteet. Board members were called in several times to answer questions concerning the minutes and Board actions related to the hiring of Dr. Poteet.
- D. The review of the minutes produced two exceptions and several notations.

#### III. Recommendations

- 1. That the minutes of Ridge Haven Board of Directors be approved with the following exceptions:
  - a. On minutes of 7/26/90, 8/24/90, 11/8/90, 1/22/91, 4/18/91, 4/29/91, and 5/20/91 - Failure to approve minutes of previous meeting (RAO 13-13, c. 5)
  - b. On minutes of 8/24/90, 11/8/90, 4/29/91 and 5/20/91 - Failure to state purpose of the called meeting (RAO 13-13, d. 2) *Adopted*

## JOURNAL

2. That the audit report of Ridge Haven, Inc. as of June 30, 1990, and 1989 be approved. *Adopted*
3. That the following recommendations of the Ridge Haven Board of Directors be approved:
  - a. That churches and individuals be requested to support the Conference Center of the PCA both with their fervent prayers and funds.
  - b. That Ridge Haven's 1992 budget be approved as submitted through the Administrative Committee.
  - c. That all members of the PCA be encouraged to take advantage of the Christian educational opportunities for youth and adults at Ridge Haven. *Adopted*
4. That the General Assembly express its appreciation to the Ridge Haven Board of Directors for their work, and encourage them to a still stronger role of leadership in the exercise of their duty. *Adopted*
5. That the General Assembly reject the Ridge Haven Board of Directors' Recommendation 4 (see Appendix N, p. 472) and adopt the following substitute:

"Believing that it is premature to consummate the relationship between the Board of Directors and Dr. James Poteet as permanent Administrator because of the Board's failure to address sufficiently the issues surrounding the oversight and hiring of a new administrator, and Dr. Poteet's adjustment to his role as servant of the Board and Administrator of Ridge Haven, the relationship between them be continued as is until the 20th General Assembly." *Adopted*

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE Frank E. Smith, Chairman  
/s/ TE Dan King, Secretary pro tem

### COMMISSIONERS PRESENT:

#### Presbytery

Ascension  
Calvary  
Central Carolina  
Covenant  
Heritage  
James River  
Louisiana  
North Georgia  
Northeast  
Southern Florida  
SW Florida  
Tennessee Valley  
Warrior  
Western Carolina  
Westminster

#### Commissioner

TE LeRoy S. Capper  
RE John Armstrong  
TE Dan King, Secretary  
TE Tim J. Reed  
RE Donald Korb  
TE Ira Staley  
RE Dean Moore  
TE Grady Love  
TE Frank E. Smith, Chairman  
RE Al Bunker  
TE Bruce Fiol  
RE Fred Schumpert  
TE William Joseph  
TE John Neville  
TE David Longacre

**Recommendation 5** was *Adopted* in executive session. The report as a whole was then *Adopted*, and Chairman Smith concluded with prayer.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 19-55 Committee of Commissioners on Mission to North America

TE Mark Cushman, chairman, led in prayer and introduced the Committee's report. He presented the chairman of the permanent committee, TE Charles McGowan, who then spoke briefly and introduced MNA Coordinator TE Terry Gyger. TE Gyger spoke of the work of the Committee, with particular reference to issues, instead of particular works or people. Chairman Cushman then presented the report:

#### I. Business referred to the Committee

- A. The report of the Committee on MNA (See Appendix J, p. 352).
- B. The minutes of the Committee on MNA meetings of September 13, 1990, November 15, 1990, February 28, 1991, and May 7, 1991.
- C. Overtures 3, 15, 18, 23, 26, and 42.
- D. MNA audit report.

#### II. Statement of major issues discussed

The committee reviewed the procedures and status of Committee on Mission to North America. Areas of particular discussion were changes in the boundaries of the Ascension Presbytery, the transfer of the work of the MNA Building Department to the Investor's Fund for Building and Development, the desire of the MNA committee to plant more churches in the US and the need for prayer warriors to undergird church planting in the PCA. The Committee of Commissioners was grateful to the MNA staff and Permanent Committee for its excellent spirit and valuable input during the time of open discussion.

#### III. Recommendations

1. That the following minutes of the meetings of the Committee on MNA be approved without exceptions: September 13, 1990, November 15, 1990, February 28, 1991, and May 7, 1991. *Adopted*
2. That the General Assembly commend TE Terry Gyger for the quality of leadership he has provided as Coordinator and reelect him for another year. *Adopted*
3. That the General Assembly express its gratitude to God for the staff and personnel of Mission to North America. *Adopted*
4. That the General Assembly offer thanks to God for the MNA organizing pastors, MICAHA and Mercy missionaries, campus ministers, staff and interns, and for chaplains whether active duty or reserve status. *Adopted*
5. That the General Assembly approve an offering for PCA Mercy Ministry to be taken preferably during the Thanksgiving season. *Adopted*
6. That the General Assembly encourage congregations to consider providing financial support in their benevolence budgets as they are able for specific church planters. *Adopted*
7. That, recognizing the absolute necessity of a foundation of prayer to see Vision 2000 accomplished, the General Assembly urge congregations to participate wholeheartedly in the "Army of Intercessors" Prayer Project. *Adopted*
8. That the General Assembly express praise to God for the ministry of Bethany Christian Services and its staff, encourage involvement in and support of it, and invite its representative to speak to the Assembly for ten minutes at this, or a more appropriate time. (See Report from Bethany Christian Services, (Appendix J, Attachment 6, p. 381) *Adopted*

9. That Overture 3 be answered in the affirmative.

*Adopted*

**OVERTURE 3 From the Presbytery of the Southwest**

"To Divide the Presbytery of the Southwest"

**Whereas**, Southwest Presbytery is extensive geographically, creating much hardship and expense in travel and time, and

**Whereas**, the work load of our Presbytery prevents adequate and timely attention to all of Presbytery business, and

**Whereas**, an easy natural division could be drawn along the state line of Colorado and New Mexico, creating two states to the north and two to the south which are nearly equal in geographical size, and

**Whereas**, the churches and ministers are fairly evenly distributed between the two areas:

Northern area: 8 churches, 2 missions and 19 ministers;

Southern area: 11 churches, 4 missions and 21 ministers;

Out of bounds: i.e. foreign missionaries, chaplains, etc. who would choose their area: 9, and

**Whereas**, recent divisions of Presbyteries in the western areas were encouraged for the benefits gained in striving for what was intended in the early recommendation of the PCA, "that (geographical) size be limited . . . in order to maintain (Ruling) Elder participation, and that numbers be limited . . . so that genuine fellowship may be had . . . by ministers and churches." [M2GA, 2-74, p. 62.]

**Therefore**, the Southwest Presbytery overtures the 19th General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America to allow Southwest Presbytery to be divided and be constituted a Presbytery of the Southwest including the states of Arizona and New Mexico and El Paso and Hudspeth, Culbertson, Jeff Davis, and Presidio, counties of Texas; and the Rocky Mountain Presbytery including the states of Colorado and Wyoming. (See Appendix, J, Attachment 7, p. 384)

**Further**, that this be effective in the Stated meeting of "The Presbyteries" in the Fall of 1991.

**Further**, that Southwest Presbytery takes steps beginning at its September 1990 meeting to prepare for a smooth and orderly division.

10. That Overture 15 from Ascension Presbytery be answered in the affirmative and that Overtures 23 and 42 be answered in the negative. (NOTE: This recommendation omits the following part of the MNA Committee's motion: "that a new request come before the 20th GA in 1992; that in the interim GA MNA sponsor a meeting in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania to be attended by representatives from the Great Lakes, Ascension and New River Presbyteries and GA MNA with the purpose of developing a plan for the development of presbytery boundaries and to consider how to develop the region for the Gospel and the PCA.")

On motion, the question was divided to vote on each overture separately. A motion to substitute the above with the Permanent Committee's recommendation 9

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

on Overture 15 was passed on a vote of 237 yea and 177 nay. The following then was adopted as the main motion:

That Overture 15 from Ascension Presbytery be **answered in the negative** and that a new request come before the 20th GA in 1992; that in the interim GA MNA sponsor a meeting in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania to be attended by representatives from the Great Lakes, Ascension and New River Presbyteries and GA MNA with the purpose of developing a plan for the development of presbytery boundaries and to consider how to develop the region for the Gospel and the PCA.

*Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 15 From the Presbytery of the Ascension**

"Divide Ascension Presbytery"

The Presbytery of Ascension overtures the 19th General Assembly to divide the Presbytery of the Ascension into two presbyteries. The boundary to be along the northern border of the following counties: in Ohio - Tuscarawas, Carroll, and Columbiana; and in Pennsylvania - Washington, Allegheny, Westmoreland, Indiana, Cambria, and Blair. This division is to be effective January 1, 1992.

Adopted at the January 1991 Stated Meeting of the Presbytery of the Ascension, on January 12, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Frederick R. Niekirk  
Stated Clerk

### **OVERTURE 23 From the Presbytery of the Ascension**

"Annex Counties from Great Lakes and New River Presbyteries"

The Presbytery of the Ascension proposes to the General Assembly and the Presbyteries of Great Lakes and New River the following annexations and asks that their approval be sought for the 19th General Assembly.

That the new Northern Ascension Presbytery annex from Great Lakes the following counties in Ohio: Lorain, Medina, and Wayne.

That the new Southern Ascension Presbytery annex from Great Lakes the following counties in Ohio: Holmes, Coshocton, Muskingum, and Morgan; and that it annex from New River the following counties in West Virginia: Hancock, Brooke, Ohio, Marshall, Wetzel, Marion, Monongalia, Preston, and Mineral.

Adopted at the January 12, 1991, stated meeting of the Presbytery of the Ascension.

Attested by: /s/ Frederick R. Neikirk  
Stated Clerk

### **COMMUNICATION 2 From the New River Presbytery**

"Does Not Concur With Ascension's New Presbytery Boundaries"

FYI

## JOURNAL

Mr. Jay Neikirk, Stated Clerk  
Ascension Presbytery  
P.O. Box 239  
Volant, PA 16156

Dear Mr. Neikirk,

At the Stated Winter Meeting of New River Presbytery March 8-9, 1991, "Motion was made, seconded, adopted that we do not concur with the Overture of the Presbytery of the Ascension as it affects the boundary of the New River Presbytery and that we direct the Stated Clerk of New River Presbytery to inform the Stated Clerk of Ascension Presbytery and the Nineteenth General Assembly of this action".

Furthermore, I noted that the number of communicant members in Ascension Presbytery was 4,086 as stated in the 1990 Yearbook of the Presbyterian Church in America. Consider that the same source states that New River Presbytery has 1,158 communicant members.

In Christ's Service,  
/s/ Virgil B. Roberts, Stated Clerk  
New River Presbytery

A motion was made and seconded to answer Overture 42 in the negative. A substitute motion was accepted as the main motion that Overture 42 be answered in the affirmative. *Declared Moot*

### **OVERTURE 42 From Presbytery of the Ascension**

"Add Western NY to Boundaries of Ascension Presbytery"

**Whereas**, Western New York state is currently out of bounds of any PCA Presbytery; and

**Whereas**, two PCA churches - Church of the Savior of Buffalo, NY, and The Presbyterian Church of Wellsville - are in Western New York, are considered part of Ascension Presbytery, and are supporters of Ascension Presbytery; and

**Whereas**, it would be of mutual benefit of these churches and the presbytery that they should share a more biblical connection; and

**Whereas**, both these churches have stated purposes of starting daughter churches in Western New York and presbytery wisdom and assistance would greatly aid in planting such churches; and

**Whereas**, presbyteries are to be concerned about evangelism and outreach in areas within and adjacent to their borders;

**Therefore, Be It Resolved** that the Presbytery of the Ascension overtures the 19th General Assembly to add the counties of Niagara, Orleans, Monroe, Erie, Genesee, Wyoming, Livingston, Chautauqua, Cattaraugus, and Allegany, in Western New York to the northern Ascension Presbytery for the further advancement of the gospel and growth of the PCA.

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Adopted at the May 1991 Stated Meeting of the Presbytery of the Ascension on May 4, 1991.

Attested by: Frederick R. Neikirk  
Stated Clerk

*Adopted*

11. That the following resolution be approved:  
**WHEREAS**, the importance of an adequate dedicated building to facilitate church growth cannot be underestimated; and  
**WHEREAS**, due to the increasing expense and complexity of building programs, there is growing need for the demand upon the various denominational agencies involved in providing building assistance to wit the MNA Building Department and the Investor's Fund; and  
**WHEREAS**, these two agencies, having separate existence but some shared staff, have grown to a point that their structure is unwieldy and cumbersome; and  
**WHEREAS**, the primary focus of MNA is church extension and the primary focus of the Investor's Fund is church building and financing; and  
**THEREFORE**, it is requested that the 19th General Assembly agree to the transfer of the work of the MNA Building Department (including the Five Million Fund) to the Investor's Fund for Building and Development for the PCA for administration and development. *Adopted*
12. That the General Assembly respond in principle in the affirmative to the request of the Presbytery of Eastern Canada (Overture 26 ) that its boundaries be revised, but for clarification that the boundaries be defined as follows: that part of Ontario south of the 45th parallel and west of the 77th meridian and the Provinces of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick. *Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 26 From the Presbytery of Eastern Canada** "Redraw Boundaries of Eastern Canada Presbytery"

The Presbytery of Eastern Canada, at its stated meeting on February 21-23, 1991, agreed that we petition General Assembly asking that the Presbytery of Eastern Canada's boundaries be revised to include the Provinces of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, and that part of Ontario south and west of a line from Gananoque, north on Highway 32 and 15 to Smith's Falls; west on Highway 7 to Peterborough including the city of Peterborough, north on Highway 38 to Burleigh Falls, west on Highway 36 to Bobcaygeon, west on County Road 8 to Fenelon Falls, west on Highway 35a to Highway 35, north on Highway 35 to Highway 48, west on Highway 48 to Highway 12, north on Highway 12 to the junction of Highway 400 and Highway 69, north on Highway 69 to Waubaushene.

Certified a true extract from the records of the Presbytery of Eastern Canada.

Attested by: /s/ D. A. Codling  
Stated Clerk



JOURNAL

13. That the General Assembly respond in the affirmative to the request of the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama (Overture 18) for transfer of Escambia County, Alabama, originally assigned to Gulf Coast Presbytery, to become a part of the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama. Gulf Coast Presbytery concurs in this request.

*Adopted*

**OVERTURE 18 From the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama**

"Transfer Escambia County, AL, from Gulf Coast"

The Presbytery of Southeast Alabama respectfully overtures the General Assembly to take action to transfer Escambia County, Alabama, originally assigned to Gulf Coast Presbytery, to become a part of the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama.

Prior to February 28, 1991, there was no PCA congregation in this county. On this date, the congregation of the First Presbyterian Church of Brewton, Alabama, specifically requested to be received into Southeast Alabama, and was so received. We ask the concurrence of the General Assembly in this action.

Adopted by the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama on March 14, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Henry Lewis Smith  
Stated Clerk

**COMMUNICATION 4 From Gulf Coast Presbytery**

"Consent to Transfer Escambia County to SE Alabama Presbytery"

**Whereas**, when the presbytery lines were originally drawn there were no Presbyterian Church in America congregations within the bounds of Escambia County, Alabama; and

**Whereas**, on February 28, 1991, First Presbyterian Church of Brewton, Escambia County, Alabama, did withdraw from the Presbyterian Church USA with emotional and geographic ties to the state of Alabama;

**Therefore Be It Resolved**, that Gulf Coast Presbytery respectfully overtures the nineteenth General Assembly to take such action as to transfer Escambia County, Alabama, to the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama.

Adopted at the Spring Meeting of Gulf Coast Presbytery, May 14, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Robert S. Hornick  
Stated Clerk

14. That the General Assembly adopt the budget of MNA for 1992 and commit itself to its support.

*Adopted*

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE Mark Cushman, Chairman  
/s/ TE Jim Sutton, Secretary

**Commissioners present**

**Presbytery**  
Ascension  
Calvary

**Commissioner**  
RE Bill Hurgest  
TE Jerry Crick

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Central Carolina	RE Jim Sutton
Central Georgia	TE Richard Burguet
Evangel	TE Jeffrey Meyers
Great Lakes	TE David McKay
Gulf Coast	TE Robert Herrmann
Heritage	TE Mike Chastain
Illiana	RE James R. Moore
Mississippi Valley	TE Bob West
New Jersey	TE Elwin Jewell
North Georgia	RE Herman Miller
North Texas	RE Don Cole
Pacific	TE David Crenshaw
Pacific Northwest	TE Craig Wilkes
Palmetto	RE Timothy Skrivan
South Texas	TE Lee White
Southeast Alabama	TE Steve Jakes
Southern Florida	TE Jim Richwine
Tennessee Valley	TE Mark Cushman, Chairman
Westminster	RE Denver Bush

On motion the report as a whole was adopted and the report was closed with prayer particularly remembering Reformed University Fellowship.

### 19-56 Committee on Constitutional Business

TE David Dively, chairman, led in prayer and presented the last portion of the Committee's report (Appendix A, Attachment 1, p. 230; 19-37, p. 89).

The Assembly on motion referred Part I #2 back to the Committee for report next year.

The Assembly on motion received Items 1 and 2 as information to be attached to the stated clerk's report (see Appendix A, Attachment 1, p. 230).

Part I, item 3. CCB was assigned to draft amendments to *BCO* 10-3 to clarify whether the last two sentences of *BCO* 10-3 apply to presbyteries, or only to General Assembly.

The Committee recommends that *BCO* 10-3 be amended to read as follows:

"The Pastor is, for prudential reasons, moderator of the Session. The moderator of the Presbytery may be elected at each stated meeting of the court, or for a period of time up to one year. The Moderator of the General Assembly shall be chosen at each stated meeting; he, or in the case of his absence....."

*Adopted and sent down to presbyteries for advice and consent.*

On motion **Personal Resolution 8** from TE Grover Gunn (19-36, p. 89) was found in order and referred to the Committee of commissioners on Bills and Overtures. (See 19-67, III, 22, p. 173)

The report as a whole was *adopted*.

# JOURNAL

## 19-57 Recess

The Assembly recessed for rest at 11:21 p.m. and closed with the singing of two verses of "God, that Madest Heaven and Earth".

## MINUTES - THURSDAY MORNING

June 20, 1991

### Seventh Session

## 19-58 Assembly Reconvened

The Assembly gathered for worship at 8:00 a.m. under the direction of New Jersey Presbytery.

*I will extol the LORD at all times:  
his praise will always be on my lips.  
My soul will boast in the LORD;  
let the afflicted hear and rejoice.  
Glorify the LORD with me;  
let us exalt his name forever.  
Psalm 34:1-3*

Prelude: "Turn Your Eyes Upon Jesus" Jones  
Call to Worship: Hab. 2:20; Ps. 95:1-3  
Hymn 455: "And Can It Be" [Stanzas 1, 3, 5] SAGINA  
Scripture: Hebrews 6:9-12  
Meditation: Hebrews 6:10  
Prayer: Praise and Thanksgiving  
Hymn 44: "How Great Thou Art: [Stanzas 1, 2, 4] O STORE GUD  
Benediction: Numbers 6:24-26  
Postlude: "All Hail the Power of Jesus' Name" Whitney

## 19-59 Reconvening for Business

Following a brief recess the Assembly reconvened for business at 8:20 a.m. TE Paul Gilchrist led in prayer.

## 19-60 Bethany Christian Services

TE Fred Marsh, Southeast Regional Director of Bethany Christian Services, made a brief presentation carried over from the MNA report Wednesday evening.

## 19-61 Committee of Commissioners on Administration

TE Palmer Robertson, chairman, led in prayer and presented the report.

### I. Business Referred to Committee

- A. Review of minutes of permanent committee of 6/90, 10/90 and 3/91 and Board of Directors meeting of Directors meeting of 6/90, 10/90 and 3/91
- B. Review of budgets for committees and agencies
- C. Review of the report of the permanent committees

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- D. Overtures which dealt with Administrative Committee matters as referred by Bills & Overtures.
- E. Also some related correspondence.

### II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed

Extensive discussion and careful review of above business

### III. Recommendations:

1. That recommendation #1 of the AC (Appendix C. p. 259) regarding the amending of article II of Section 2-3 of Rules for Assembly Operations (RAO) to enroll and seat as a commissioner to the General Assembly any former Moderator of the General Assembly) be answered by reference to the statement of *The Book of Church Order (BCO)* 14-2 that the General Assembly consists of teaching elders as commissioners of presbyteries and ruling elders as commissioners of sessions, but makes no provision for members commissioned by the General Assembly to the General Assembly. *Adopted*

#### Grounds:

1. Former moderators were given the privilege of the floor through amendment of RAO at the 7th GA, but were not seated as commissioners with the right to vote.
  2. The RAO cannot go beyond provisions of the *Book of Church Order* concerning membership in the various church courts.
  3. In no other court of the church does a court designate membership to itself.
  4. Former moderators of sessions or presbyteries cannot be seated as voting members of those courts by the actions of the courts themselves.
2. That in response to recommendation #4 (Appendix C, pp. 260), it is recommended that the AC is encouraged to consider providing to commissioners one of the printed guides to parliamentary procedure, such as the pamphlet entitled "Basic Parliamentary Information" and prepared by the National Association of Parliamentarians (3706 Broadway, Suite 300, Kansas City, MO 64111). *Adopted*
- #### Grounds:
1. An explanation of selected rules as proposed in the recommendation of the AC could be misleading, but a summary guide could be helpful.
  2. Attachment of selected rules could lead to the understanding that these selections would supersede Robert's Rules, in light of RAO 17-1: "Except as otherwise provided in these Rules, Robert's Rules of Order, Newly Revised, shall be the standard in parliamentary procedure.
  3. New data for the guidance of commissioners involving selections from Robert's Rules would be subject to recommendations for constant revision and amendment.
3. That in response to recommendation #5 (Appendix C, p. 260) to amend the Rules of Assembly Operation XVIII regarding the number of votes required for amending or suspending the rules, the Committee of Commissioners recommends the following:  
That the 19th General Assembly declare its opposition to any amendment to RAO that would make it possible for anything less than a majority of the

## JOURNAL

enrolled membership of any General Assembly to change the rules by which the Assembly would operate. *Adopted*

### Rationale:

The 18th General Assembly interpreted the present language of the RAO as guaranteeing that at least a majority of the commissioners to any General Assembly must approve a change of the rules by which the Assembly operates (cf. *Minutes of the 18th General Assembly*, p. 71, section 18-20). This decision is consistent with the pattern of previous GA actions.

4. That Recommendation 2 of the Administrative Committee (Appendix C, p. 259) be approved, namely: Amend by substitution for RAO 7-2, paragraph 2 the following:  
The Committee on Constitutional Business shall, between the General Assembly meetings:

- (1) Function as advisor to the Stated Clerk when requested by him. Such advice shall be for information only and without binding authority and shall not be reported to the General Assembly.
- (2) Receive from the Stated Clerk all non-judicial references submitted by presbyteries under BCO 41-1 and 41-4, and if it accedes to the request, give its advice to the presbytery sending the non-judicial reference. Such advice shall be for information only and without binding authority or precedent but shall be included as a part of the annual report of the Stated Clerk to the General Assembly.

The Committee on Constitutional Business shall, during the General Assembly meetings:

- (1) Advise the General Assembly of the effect of any proposed amendment to the Constitution (including but not limited to overtures requesting amendment submitted under RAO 10-5 and 10-6). Such advice to the General Assembly shall be given at the time the proposed amendment is submitted for action.
  - (2) Report directly to the General Assembly on all constitutional inquiries submitted to it by the General Assembly. *Adopted*
5. That Recommendation 3 of the Administrative Committee be approved as follows: Delete RAO 11-2 as this information is contained in the amendment in recommendations 4 above. *Adopted*

6. That Recommendation 8 of the Administrative Committee to amend section 17-2 of the RAO regarding the method of presentation of recommendations to the General Assembly be answered by reference to the following materials governing the operations of the General Assembly:

BCO 14-1(7): "The Assembly's [permanent] committees are to serve and not to direct any church judicatories. They are not to establish policy, but rather execute policy established by the General Assembly." (Underlining added)

RAO 13-6(c): [The report of the Committee of Commissioners ... shall include the following:]. . .

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

"(If any of the recommendations [of an agency or committee] contained in a report were not approved, this shall be reported with reasons. New recommendations may be added, with words of explanation. Amendments to original recommendations shall be reported and explained." (Underlining added).

RAO 17-2, p 2: "When a minority of a Committee wishes to present a minority report, the member reporting for the minority shall have the privilege of presenting the minority report and moving it as a substitute for the portion of the majority report affected."

*Robert's Rules of Order* (1990 Revised, page 520): "Reception of a Minority Report . . . As soon as the chair has stated the appropriate question on the committee report, he should call for the minority presentation unless someone objects, in which case he should put the question on the report's being received." (Underlining added).

*Adopted*

### **Rationale:**

The recommendation of the permanent committee proposes a basic change in the source of direction for the General Assembly, contrary to the principles in operation from the inception of the PCA, which also have been even more gracious to minorities than the general practice ordered for assemblies by *Robert's Rules of Order*.

*Adopted*

7. That item 6 of the Administrative Committee report be approved as amended:  
"New business must be presented to the Assembly before noon of the second day. All new business presented by members of the Court must be in written form, and if received shall be referred to the proper Committee of Commissioners as appropriate (cf. RAO 11-4 and 12-5).

*Defeated*

A motion to substitute Recommendation 6 of the AC Report was also defeated by a vote of 431 yea, 467 nay and 6 abstentions.

8. That recommendation 7 of the Administrative Committee re. Article XIII on Committee of Commissioners (see Appendix C, p. 262) be answered in the negative. *Ruled Adopted*
9. That the Corporate Bylaws be amended by adding to Article VI, Section 2 and Section 3 regarding Covenant College and Covenant Theological Seminary:  
"Furthermore, the Board may recommend one nominee per class from another NAPARC member denomination for consideration by the Assembly Nominating Committee, with a maximum of two such members permitted on the Board at one time." *Adopted*
10. That the 20th GA begin on Monday, June 15th, 1992, and conclude Friday afternoon.

## JOURNAL

### Grounds:

- (1) Would allow time for Committee of Commissioners to complete their work prior to opening of Assembly
- (2) Would allow for obtaining lower airfares
- (3) Would continue the blessing of being together for many commissioners on the Lord's Day. *Adopted*
11. That June 6-10, 1994, be set as the dates for the 22nd General Assembly to be held in Atlanta, Georgia. *Adopted*
12. That the Assembly continue the project of a new translation of the *BCO* into Korean in accord *MI8GA*, 18-40, III, 34, p.112 *Adopted*
13. Express its gratitude to God for progress made thus far in translating *BCO* chapters 1-14, and express appreciation for the following men who are serving on the translation subcommittee: Dr. Dan Kim, Rev. Sam D. Park, Rev. Hywan Song, Rev. Hosea H. J. Kim and Dr. Dwight Linton. *Adopted*
14. That the Stated Clerk be instructed to correct minutes of the 18th GA and all subsequent commissioners handbooks in which in RAO 17-4, b should read:  
"The chairman of the committee shall have an opportunity to make the final statement in debate."

**Grounds:** This wording corresponds to the Minutes of the Seventeenth General Assembly, and no amendment has been made for this section of RAO since that time. *Adopted*

15. That Dr. Paul R. Gilchrist be commended for his good work during the past year and be elected to Office of Stated Clerk for another year. *Adopted*
16. That expenses of committees of GA be funded as follows:
  - A. Presbytery Records Committee be reimbursed as necessary for food and lodging for the two or three days prior to GA from GA registration fees. Further, that members of Presbytery Records Committee who are not commissioners, be reimbursed for travel, food and lodging for only as long as they are needed to complete the work. (NOTE: This policy to be reviewed after 3 years). *Adopted*
  - B. Standing Judicial Commission shall be subsidized from any surplus from GA registration fees after GA expenses. *Defeated*
17. Approve the total Compensation Range for coordinators for 1992 as follows:

	<b>Low</b>	<b>Median</b>	<b>High</b>
AC	\$58,842	\$66,866	\$74,890
CE&P	59,148	67,214	75,280
MNA	61,321	69,683	78,045
MTW	75,386	85,666	95,946
CC	68,469	77,806	87,143
CTS	60,151	68,353	76,555
RH	51,032	61,809	72,586
IAR	63,840	72,546	81,252
IFBD	55,553	63,906	72,259
PCAF	56,189	63,851	71,513

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

And that the range for coordinators be adjusted every three years from this year, since there is a 24% variance within the range. *Adopted*

18. Approve: (1) Robins, Eskew and Farmer, PC as auditors for the Administrative Committee, Christian Education & Publications, and Mission to North America for the fiscal year ending December 31, 1991; (2) Ernst and Young as auditors for Mission to the World for the fiscal year ending December 31, 1991 *Adopted*
19. Set GA registration fee for 1992 and 1993 at \$100. *Adopted*
20. Approve Covenant Seminary FY 91-92 Budget of \$2,965,950 and ASKINGS of \$1,385,000. *Adopted*
21. Approve Ridge Haven 1992 Budget of \$491,358 and ASKINGS of \$396,358. *Adopted*
22. Approve PCA Foundation 1992 Budget of \$350,168. *Adopted*
23. Approve IAR 1992 Budget of \$785,000. *Adopted*
24. Approve IFBD 1992 Budget of \$366,585 with an additional growth budget of \$85,000. *Adopted*
25. Approve Covenant College FY 91-92 Budget of \$8,729,339 and ASKINGS of \$1,348,000. *Adopted*
26. Approve the CE&P budget of \$1,947,252 and ASKINGS of \$1,232,252 and that the CE&P Permanent Committee is required to re-evaluate the need for addition office space prior to signing any leases. *Adopted*
27. Approve AC 1992 operational budget of \$1,061,981 and ASKINGS of \$1,038,981. Office Building revenue of \$717,750 and expenses of \$539,400 for 1992 and that at least 75% of the net surplus from the building fund is to be used to make accelerated payments to the first mortgage. *Adopted*
28. Approve MNA 1992 Budget: Revenue \$3,562,000 and Expenses \$3,561,772 with a growth budget of an additional \$1,394,000 and ASKINGS of \$3,430,000. *Adopted*
29. Approve MTW 1992 Budget: Revenue \$15,001,200 and expenses \$14,953,000 and ASKINGS of \$14,600,000. *Adopted*
30. Approve the SIMA 1992 Budget: Revenue \$2,917,664 and expenses \$2,878,798. *Adopted*
31. That the AC be instructed to develop a policy and procedure manual with cooperation of all the committees to implement RAO 4-11 in order to independently evaluate the proposed budgets of the Permanent Committees and agencies and report this to the 20th GA. *Adopted*
32. The Overture 24 be answered by response to item 16 of MTW report (see 19-46, III, 16, p. 93) *Adopted*
33. That the General Assembly answer Overture 33 ("Loving Rebuke to the Stated Clerk) be **answered in the negative.** *Adopted*

### **Grounds:**

1. Wording of Overture could be understood as a Judicial Action, but is done without due process.
2. See remarks of the Stated Clerk on page 228 (Appendix A) where he offers an apology.

### **OVERTURE 33 From the Presbytery of Westminster "Loving Rebuke of Stated Clerk"**



## JOURNAL

**Whereas**, the duties of the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly are contained within specific parameters set forth in the Rules for General Assembly Operations, 3-2, a. through t. (*M18GA*, pages 532-533); and

**Whereas**, said duties indicate that while the Stated Clerk is to be the correspondent with the lower courts of the church (RAO, 3-2, s.) and to make statements for and on behalf of the denomination in so far as warranted by specific actions of the General Assembly (RAO 3-2, b.); and

**Whereas**, Paul R. Gilchrist, present Stated Clerk of the General Assembly, has circularized the denomination with a "Stated Clerk's Pastoral Letter" dated April 3, 1991; and

**Whereas**, said circular letter contained the following statements regarding the proposed amendments to the *Book of Church Order* which are currently before this Assembly, to wit: "Presbyteries have been voting overwhelmingly in favor of the *BCO* amendments sent down by the 18th General Assembly. There does not seem to be any reason why the 19th General Assembly would turn them down"; and

**Whereas**, these words are clearly prejudicial in that the Stated Clerk obviously wants these *BCO* changes to pass; and

**Whereas**, this letter was sent out just prior to the remaining presbyteries' votes on these matters; and

**Whereas**, in a phone call to the Stated Clerk on April 16, 1991, Mr. Gilchrist stated that only two of the six *BCO* changes had actually passed the required two-thirds of the presbyteries; and

**Whereas**, all four of the changes that were still left could have failed if enough presbyteries were made aware of the fact that their vote still did count and that they could block (or pass) these changes; and

**Whereas**, this pastoral letter may have had the effect of causing presbyteries to think, "What's the use of fighting? These amendments are certain to pass, so let's just rubber-stamp them and get on with our other business"; and

**Whereas**, Mr. Gilchrist's advocacy of the radical changes proposed for the *BCO* and the RAO was evident at last year's Assembly when, at the Committee of Commissioners' briefing he urged the commissioners to just pass those RAO changes and put them into effect then; and

**Whereas**, such actions, speeches, and letters by the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly circumvent our Presbyterian system.

**Therefore**, Westminster Presbytery hereby overtures the Nineteenth General Assembly meeting in Birmingham, Alabama, to lovingly rebuke Mr. Paul R. Gilchrist, Stated Clerk of the General Assembly, for expressing personal opinion in official communications regarding proposed *BCO* amendments and other matters before the lower courts, and for addressing the church "pastorally" contrary to RAO 3-2, and to instruct the Stated Clerk to carefully adhere to the parameters of his office as set forth by the General Assembly (RAO 3) in the future.

Adopted at the Spring Meeting of Westminster Presbytery on April 20, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Larry E. Ball  
Stated Clerk

34. That Overture 19 (re: RAO changes) be answered by reference to action on recommendation 3. *Adopted*

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**OVERTURE 19 From the New River Presbytery**  
**"Amend RAO 18 Re: Amendment or Suspension"**

**Whereas**, there seems to be confusion about the meaning and intent of RAO Article XVIII, Amendment or Suspension of Rules, and

**Whereas**, at various times in past General Assemblies the wrong interpretation has been applied to Article XVIII, and

**Whereas**, a clarification needs to be made

**Therefore**, New River Presbytery does overture the Nineteenth General Assembly to substitute the following for Article XVIII: "The Rules of Assembly Operation may be amended by a two-thirds (2/3) affirmative vote of those voting. This two-thirds (2/3) affirmative vote must also be a majority of the total enrollment of Commissioners. A motion to amend is debatable. A motion to suspend is not debatable."

Adopted at the Stated Winter Meeting of New River Presbytery on March 9, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Virgil B. Roberts  
Stated Clerk

35. That Overture 7 be answered in the affirmative. *Adopted*

**OVERTURE 7 From James River Presbytery**  
**"Do Not Include Grounds for BCO Amendments"**

**Whereas**, three of the five 1990-1991 proposed changes to the BCO sent to Presbyteries were accompanied by "grounds" supporting the proposed changes, and

**Whereas**, the "grounds" are not a part of changes being voted upon, and

**Whereas**, the giving of such "grounds" could be prejudicial to the court's consideration of such proposed changes,

**Therefore**, the James River Presbytery overtures the 19th General Assembly to direct the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly to omit "grounds" in sending down any further proposed changes to the Presbyteries.

Adopted at the Winter Stated Meeting of James River Presbytery, on January 12, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Eugene Friedline  
Stated Clerk

The Moderator ruled that the "Whereas" clauses may be included since they were part of the overtures.

36. That Overture 31 be answered by reference to action on Overture 7, recommendation 35, above. *Adopted*

**OVERTURE 31 From the Presbytery of Westminster**  
**"Allow no Grounds to Be Included When BCO Amendments are Sent Down"**

**Whereas**, proposed amendments to the *Book of Church Order* are of great importance because they are, by definition, proposed changes to the secondary standards of the Church; and

**Whereas**, there is generally vigorous debate during which many views are offered and concerns expressed; and

**Whereas**, a proposed change to the *Book of Church Order* is not usually approved by a General Assembly unanimously; and

**Whereas**, 3/4 of the presbyteries must approve amendments to the *BCO* proposed by the General Assembly; and

**Whereas**, it is the responsibility of the presbyteries to debate proposed amendments on the basis of their own merits; and

**Whereas**, recent proposed amendments have been sent down to the presbyteries accompanied by "grounds" in support of the proposed amendments which have not been approved by the General Assembly; and

**Whereas**, the arguments offered by the minority at the General Assembly are not sent down along with the proposed amendments as grounds for opposition;

**Therefore**, Westminster Presbytery overtures the General Assembly to instruct the Stated Clerk that no grounds or arguments are to be included with proposed amendments to the standards unless instruction be given by the General Assembly to the contrary.

**Furthermore**, should instruction to include "grounds" supporting proposed amendments be given by the General Assembly, "grounds" submitted by those opposing the amendments must also be sent down.

Approved by the Spring Stated Meeting of Westminster Presbytery on April 20, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Larry E. Ball  
Stated Clerk

37. That Overture 29 be answered by reference to 19-9, item 1, page 49, which adopted the *BCO* 14-1 (12) amendment. *Adopted*

#### **OVERTURE 29 From the Louisiana Presbytery**

"Amend RAO (or *BCO* 14-1) to Limit Membership on Administrative Committee"

**Whereas**, the history of the world, the United States and Presbyterianism have repeatedly demonstrated the dangers of centralized government; and

**Whereas**, the PCA was conceived and built upon a "grass roots", decentralized Presbyterian form of government; and

**Whereas**, there is concern among some that the Administrative Committee is too large and inefficient;

**Therefore, Be It Resolved** that we overture the nineteenth General Assembly to amend RAO 5-1 (or, should the amendment pass which seeks to define the Administrative Committee in the *BCO*, the appropriate *BCO* section), to limit total membership of the Administrative Committee to 14 and to limit automatic membership of the Administrative Committee to one representative from each of the program committees (MTW, MNA, and CEP).

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Adopted at the Spring Stated Meeting of the Louisiana Presbytery on April 23, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Robert B. Vincent, Sr.  
Stated Clerk

38 **OVERTURE 30 From the Presbytery of Westminster**  
"Amend RAO V to Limit Membership on Administrative Committee"

**Whereas**, the PCA has historically affirmed its commitment to being a grass-roots church, in conformity with the Biblical model; and

**Whereas**, the present Constituency of the Administrative Committee was hastily conceived and adopted under the pressure of having no provision for an Administrative Committee at all; and

**Whereas**, the PCA has consistently defeated measures that would constitute the Administrative Committee in such a way as to be dominated by permanent committees, agencies, and staff; and

**Whereas**, the constituency of the Administrative Committee as set forth in RAO V was not ratified by the presbyteries, and therefore does not reflect the thinking of the grass-roots church; and

**Whereas**, the present constituency of the Administrative Committee as set forth in RAO 5-1 requires that 10 of the 20 seats be filled by members of the permanent committees and agencies; and

**Whereas**, the provision in the RAO for the chief administrative officer of each of the program committees and agencies to attend meetings with the privilege of the floor provides an avenue of communication from the committees and agencies;

**Therefore, be it resolved**, that should the proposed amendment to BCO 14 by adopting the language of RAO V fail to be ratified, that the first paragraph of RAO 5-1 be amended as follows:

5-1 The Administrative Committee of General Assembly shall consist of 14 members: (a) Eleven members in classes elected through the standard nomination/election procedure, (b) one member from each of the following program committees: (1) Christian Education & Publications; (2) Mission to North America; (3) Mission to the World.

Adopted at the Spring Stated Meeting of Westminster Presbytery on April 20, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Larry E. Ball  
Stated Clerk

**NOTE:** This overture is to be acted upon should the proposed amendment to BCO 14 to adopt the language of RAO V fail to be ratified.

*Not considered since BCO 14-1 (11) was amended.*

39. That Overture 36 be **answered in the negative**.

*Adopted*

**OVERTURE 36 From Central Carolina Presbytery**  
"Instruct AC to Review Investment Portfolio of PCA Agencies"

## JOURNAL

**Whereas**, it is the responsibility of God's people to maintain godly stewardship of the resources entrusted to us by the Father (Matthew 25:14-30); and

**Whereas**, it is the duty of God's people to "have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather expose them" (Eph. 5:11); and

**Whereas**, the December 31, 1990, published report of the Insurance, Annuities and Relief agency of the Presbyterian Church in America lists holdings of the PCA-Equity Fund in these companies:

Paramount Communications, Inc.  
United Artists Entertainment  
CBS Incorporated  
Viacom Incorporated  
Time Warner Incorporated (Playboy Videos)  
K-Mart Corporation (Walden Books)

**Whereas**, these corporations are known to disseminate pornographic and/or anti-Christian propaganda; and

**Whereas**, many Christians are boycotting products from these companies in protest;

**Therefore**, the Session of the Prosperity Presbyterian Church, Charlotte, NC, humbly requests the 45th Stated Meeting of the Central Carolina Presbytery to overturn the 19th General Assembly to instruct the Administrative Committee of the PCA to do the following:

1. investigate into the propriety of all invested funds of the PCA;
2. divest holdings from any corporations which peddle in pornography or spread anti-Christian propaganda; and
3. insure the Assembly that all future investments of the PCA shall be secured only in corporations whose marketing is compatible with Biblical morality as understood by our Standards.

Sincerely submitted in Christ  
Session of the Prosperity Presbyterian Church  
/s/ Charles M. Lemmons, Clerk  
Attested by: /s/ Stephen O. Stout  
Stated Clerk

40. That Overture 37 be **answered in the negative**.

*Adopted*

**Grounds:**

1. There are several mis-statements of fact in "Whereas" clauses.
2. Actual percentage of administrative costs of relief fund have decreased contrary to allegations in "Whereas" clause.

### **OVERTURE 37 From Central Carolina Presbytery**

"Appoint AC to Review Effectiveness of IAR"

**Whereas**, the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America created the Insurance, Annuities and Relief Agency for the purpose of providing services to the other PCA Agencies, committee staffs and employees of local churches in areas of medical insurance; retirement options and relief for teaching elders, their families and other church employees, and

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**Whereas**, the attitude of the Agency appears to have moved from service of need to that of demanding the constituency to adhere to its own rules or leave the plan and/or plans, and

**Whereas**, the cost of the medical insurance plan has escalated to such a degree that more than 50% of those insured over the last two years have left the plan and sought assistance elsewhere, and

**Whereas**, the budget of Insurance, Annuities and Relief has risen from \$776,854\* in 1988 to \$777,405 in 1991, with a proposed budget of \$785,000 in the year 1992, while at the same time the Director's salary has increased from \$58,076\* in 1988 to \$74,550 in 1991, with a proposed budget for this item in 1992 of \$77,350, and yet, at the same time the major management of the retirement accounts and the medical insurance plans has been given over to outside companies to operate and the earnings on investments have dropped beyond a reasonable amount, and

**Whereas**, the relief arm of Insurance, Annuities and Relief has charged 53%\* of funds raised in 1988, 64% of funds raised in 1989, and 67%\* of funds estimated raised in 1990 for administration, while at the same time it is reported that some applicants for relief have been denied assistance;

**Therefore**, the Presbytery of Central Carolina hereby overtures the 19th General Assembly to appoint the Administrative Committee of the PCA to thoroughly investigate and report back to the 20th General Assembly the propriety of the amount of the following:

1. Amount charged to the Relief Department of Insurance, Annuities and Relief for overhead and administration.
2. Evaluation and effectiveness of the staff of Insurance, Annuities and Relief against the results of the performance of the medical insurance plan, the retirement fund and the relief department.
3. Evaluate stewardship of the Agency in regards to expense vs. budget for the years 1988 and 1991.
4. Evaluate the responsiveness of the staff of Insurance, Annuities and Relief to the needs of its constituency.

\* Taken from *General Assembly Minutes*

Attested by: Stephen O. Stout  
Stated Clerk

41. That Overture 32 be **answered in the negative**.

*Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 32 From the Presbytery of Westminster** "Amend RAO 4-11 RE. Adoption of Budgets"

**Whereas**, General Assembly's committees and agencies are funded by the giving of local congregations; and

**Whereas**, the budget proposals of many of the GA committees and agencies in the past have been unrealistic and inaccurate in their projections; and

**Whereas**, proposed budgets of the committees and agencies continue to expand in spite of the failure to meet those budgets; and

**Whereas**, this process is accompanied by committees and agencies proliferating programs and projects which then result in the necessity of cutting back other established activities, or abandoning plans for new ones; and

## JOURNAL

**Whereas**, this procedure violates the principle of counting the cost as it is set forth in Luke 14:28 ff; and

**Whereas**, the grass roots church is better equipped to determine what it is able and willing to support; and

**Whereas**, the General Assembly committees and agencies are the instruments of the church at large and exist only insofar as to assist the church in fulfilling her ministry; and

**Whereas**, the words of the present RAO 4-11 "special care shall be taken that changes not be made in such a way as to threaten the continuity of effectiveness of the committee's or agency's ministry" seem to affirm that the ministries of the committees and agencies of the General Assembly have identities and agendas that exist independently from the will of the churches that constitute the General Assembly, and to deny that the General Assembly has the authority to govern those committees, which notions are contrary to *BCO* 14-1-7 and 14-1-8; and

**Whereas**, RAO 4-11 states that "budgets of permanent committees and agencies that are agreed upon by the Administrative Committee may be changed only by a two-thirds vote of General Assembly commissioners present and voting ..."; and

**Whereas**, this provision runs contrary to the grass roots nature of the church by unfairly favoring the recommendations of the Permanent Committees over the review powers of the General Assembly; and

**Whereas**, it is the normal procedure for reviewing bodies to amend by a simple majority; and

**Whereas**, the Committee of Commissioners on the Administrative Committee recommended the deletion of the two-thirds language in their report (cf. Minutes of the Eighteenth General Assembly, recommendation 13-b, p. 107);

**Therefore**, Westminster Presbytery overtures the Nineteenth General Assembly to amend RAO 4-11, second paragraph as follows:

Delete the first sentence which begins, "Should modifications in the budgets be deemed necessary ..."

Delete the last two sentences, which begin "The requirement of a two-thirds vote of the General Assembly applies only ..."

Amend the rest of the paragraph to read, "Budgets of permanent committees and agencies that are agreed upon by the Administrative Committee may be changed by a majority vote of the Assembly of Commissioners present and voting at the time the budget is submitted for adoption. In the event the Administrative Committee disagrees with the budget submitted by one of the committees or boards, in whole or any item thereof, the General Assembly may adopt either the committee's or board's budget, or the Administrative Committee's recommended budget as presented or amended."

Adopted at the Spring Stated Meeting of Westminster Presbytery on April 20, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Larry E. Ball  
Stated Clerk

42. That Overture 43 be **answered in the negative**.

*Adopted*

**OVERTURE 43 From Presbytery of the Ascension**

"Amend RAO 4-9 to Limit Coordinators and Stated Clerk to two Four-Year Terms"

**Whereas**, the coordinators and stated clerk of the PCA are to be servants of the church, combining skills necessary for their job with a sensitive awareness of the full range of pastoral life within the local churches, and

**Whereas**, the nominating committee of the General Assembly has seen the importance of avoiding both the appearance and the reality of a bureaucratic elite to the exclusion of many other able and qualified men throughout the PCA, and

**Whereas**, we are not limited to a small pool of talent for these coordinating and serving offices of the General Assembly, and

**Whereas**, procedures for the election of these officers could enhance the openness of the election process and avoid the danger of a bureaucratic elite, and

**Whereas**, the PCA now needs to assure both the continuity of these offices as well as the serious participation of the whole Assembly in calling forth those who will so serve,

**Therefore, Be It Resolved** that the Presbytery of the Ascension overtures the 19th General Assembly to amend the RAO 4-9 by substituting the following for the first two sentences:

"The Stated Clerk and the Coordinators of the three program committees shall be elected by the General Assembly for a term of four years with provision that no person can serve as Stated Clerk or Coordinator for more than two consecutive four year terms. He may be considered again for election only after having served on the session of a particular church for an intervening term. At each of these elections the Nominating Committee of the General Assembly shall submit at least two candidates for each position. The voting shall be by secret ballot."

Adopted at the May 1991 stated meeting of the Presbytery of the Ascension on May 4, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Frederick R. Neikirk  
Stated Clerk

43. That the minutes of the Board of Directors of 6/6/90 be approved with notation and exception as follows: 3/91-3 should insert "Recommend to GA" after "that".

**Rationale:** Board of Directors does not have authority to amend the Corporate Bylaws of the PCA.

And that the Board of Directors minutes of 10/90 and 3/91 be approved without exception.

*Adopted*

44. That the minutes of 6/6/90 be approved; and the minutes of 10/12-13/90 be approved with notations and exception as follows:

1. CD 10/90-1 (2) Responsibilities assumed by this sub-committee appear to be properly the duties of the Committee on Constitutional Business; and that the minutes of 3/15-16/91 be approved with notations and the following exceptions:



## JOURNAL

BF 3/91-13: This motion, passed by the AC approved \$1,055,856 but recommendation #27 indicates a different amount of \$1,061,981.

### GENERAL EXCEPTIONS:

1. The AC changed the date of the close of the 19th General Assembly to Thursday without authorization. The 18th General Assembly set the end of Assembly as Friday. (See Minutes, p. 103, 18-40, III, A, 1).
2. The "Church Administration Manual" is an assignment carried over for many years without completion.
3. No report or recommendation on the assignment of the 1st, 14th, 17th and 18th General Assembly regarding the PCA Logo which was given a priority (17-81, rec. 38, p. 138).
4. FY 89-90 actual totals on p. 404 of Commissioners *Handbooks* do not agree with the audited statement provided to committee as appendix to minutes of AC. Deficit of (\$48,110) should be (\$50,368).

*Adopted*

45. That recommendations 32-41 of permanent committee of AC (Appendix C, p. 268) be answered by the actions taken by this Assembly on recommendations of various Committees of Commissioners to which these items were properly referred, noting that these matters were not proper references for the AC (RAO 11-4, 10-5)

*Adopted*

46. That the Assembly adopt Personal Resolution #1 from TE James Richwine as follows:

**Whereas**, the primary purpose and function of the church of Jesus Christ is the propagation of the Gospel,

**Whereas**, the other functions of the church of Jesus Christ are to be focused on ministry to both the people of God and to the society in which the church exists, and

**Whereas**, many hours of each GA are spent in debate over matters pertaining to BCO changes and/or RAO changes, and

**Whereas**, these changes frequently have little bearing upon the ongoing ministry of our Lord's church, and

**Whereas** the GA could better use the time encouraging one another, planning for our ministry to our 200,000 members, and for evangelizing the millions of unevangelized within our Presbyteries, and

**Whereas**, the GA would benefit from the experience of at least one GA meeting which focuses on ministry and not organizational structure.

**Therefore, Be It Resolved**, that the 19th General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America urge a one year moratorium, commencing with the adjournment of the 19th GA, and concluding with the adjournment of the 20th GA, on all new BCO and RAO changes, particularly from the Administrative and program committees.

*Adopted*

47. That the report as a whole be approved including the following items. *Adopted*

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

48. From the floor as follows: "That the Assembly take note of the newly-printed *BCO*, and express appreciation for the new format, which makes it easier to use. In the event that any differences of content should be discovered, that have not been finally adopted by the regular process, the old *BCO* shall be viewed as binding until the regular process can take place. If no differences of content are discovered by the 1994 GA, the new book will be viewed as binding." *Adopted*
49. From the floor as follows: "That all committee and agency budgets and askings be adjusted as necessary to accommodate previously unanticipated increases approved in other General Assembly actions." *Adopted*
50. The following was offered as an added resolution and was defeated: "Until such time as there is greater unanimity within the PCA re. the subject of worship, local arrangements committees are encouraged to include in their Assembly worship services only those elements outlined in the Directory of Worship." *Defeated*  
The vote was 308 yea and 384 nay. Requesting of their affirmative votes be recorded were: TE Lawrence B. Oldaker, TE James A. Jones, Jr., TE Kenneth L. Gentry, Jr., TE T. Mark Duncan, RE Richard R. Larson, TE David A. Sherwood, RE Stephen C. Magee, RE Philip Famara, Jr., TE Philip E. MacRae, TE Keith Lorick, TE Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr., TE King Courts, TE G. Brent Bradley, TE Ross Lindley, TE Steve Wilkins, TE John O. Butler, TE Carl G. Russell, RE J. W. Smith, RE Frederick Neikirk, TE Charles Winkler, RE M. Dale Peacock, TE Daren L. Russell, TE Philip G. Keyser, RE Joe L. Reynolds, TE Carl C. Howell, Jr., TE Henry E. Johnson, RE Robert H. Cato, TE Byron Snapp, TE Bill Rose, TE Rick Brannon, TE Bud Moginot, Jr., TE Robert Peterson, TE Jerry I. Maguire, RE Gary L. Campbell, TE Paul Ferrie, TE T. David Gordon, RE J. B. Ducker, Jr., TE Ronald C. Rowe, TE Grover Gunn, RE Michael L. Akin, TE George G. Felton, Jr., TE David B. McWilliams, TE George A. Crocker, RE Robert H. Miller, TE Thomas T. Ellis, TE Frank J. Smith, TE Mike Chastain, RE George Pauley, TE J. D. Dusenberg, TE Christopher M. Olson, TE Frank E. Smith, TE John Jerguson, TE John M. Warren, Jr., TE Dale L. Smith, and TE Donald S. Stone.
51. Amend the report as a whole by recording the 19th General Assembly's appreciation for the gracious and good labors of (1) the members of the Committee of commissioners on Administration, (2) the chairman, TE Palmer Robertson, and the secretary, TE Bruce Howes, of the Committee of commissioners, and (3) the stated clerk and the staff of his office.

*Adopted*

Chairman Robertson concluded the report with prayer.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE O. Palmer Robertson, Chairman  
/s/ TE Bruce Howes, Secretary

# JOURNAL

## COMMISSIONERS PRESENT:

### Presbytery

Ascension  
Central Carolina  
Central Florida  
Central Georgia  
Covenant  
Eastern Carolina  
Evangel  
Grace  
Heartland  
Heritage  
Louisiana  
Mid-America  
Mississippi Valley  
New Jersey  
New River  
North Georgia  
Northeast  
Northern Illinois  
Pacific  
Pacific Northwest  
Palmetto  
Philadelphia  
Potomac  
SE Alabama  
SW Florida  
Tennessee Valley

### Commissioners

RE George Caler  
RE Bernie Lawrence  
TE Tom Ellis  
TE John Kinser  
RE Jack Brown  
RE James Robeson  
TE Carl Russell  
RE Charles Probst  
RE Lyle Nilson  
TE Bruce Howes, Secretary  
TE Mark Duncan  
TE Michael Obel  
TE Robert Hays  
RE Alan Storey  
RE Jim Williams  
RE Earl Witmer  
RE Stephen Magee  
RE James Dalton  
RE Robert Taylor  
RE Mike Pfefferie  
TE John Ropp  
TE Erwin Morrison  
TE O. Palmer Robertson, Chairman  
TE Hal McNeely  
RE Charles Dunlap  
TE David Hall

CLERK'S NOTE: Recommendations 1 through 8 were acted upon previously (see 19-20 and 19-41) but recorded here for convenience.

### 19-62 Adjournment Time Extended

A procedural motion was *Adopted* at 11:25 a.m. extending the docketed time for adjournment to 1:00 p.m.

### 19-63 Objection to Decision in Regard to Case 90-9

The following objection by TE Vaughn Hathaway was deemed to be couched in temperate language and respectful to the court and admitted to the record.

In accordance with the privilege and right provided a member of the court who did not have the right to vote on a complaint (*BCO* 45-4), I rise to object to the decision of this court in regard to Case 90-9.

In support of the objection, the following reasons are attached:

1. First, in general, present procedures of adjudication have weaknesses or flaws among which are:
  - a. the GA is forced to act upon the adjudication without access to the proceedings of the SJC;

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- b. though RAO 15-4 seems to require a hearing by the full commission when a request for review is requested, such is not the case; and
  - c. the effect of the ambiguity of RAO 15-4 is that only three men may make a decision of the Church, subjecting the Church to a rule of a minority of judges contrary to the wisdom of Scripture (Proverbs 11:14); and
2. Secondly, with specific reference to Case 90-9,
- a. the SJC did not follow its own procedure in the adjudication of the case, specifically,
    - 1) the active members of the panel appointed to hear the case were not "...members...who [were] geographically nearest to the case" (RAO 15-3); and
    - 2) rule 12.6 of the SJC Manual was not followed when
      - a) the report of the panel was mailed to the SJC before the complainant was informed of the panel's decision;
      - b) the SJC was informed incorrectly that there was no request for review;
      - c) the complainant was not informed of the panel's decision until six days after the commission had already been polled by mail; and
      - d) the recorded vote of the SJC on the panel's report was prejudiced by the prior vote taken wrongfully; and
    - 3) a decision detrimental to truth has been rendered by the panel and sustained by the commission in that adjudication based on some other standard than the law of the Church as set forth in the Word of God and the Constitution of the PCA has been endorsed.

TE George Felton, TE G. Brent Bradley, TE John O. Butler, TE Carl G. Russell, TE Frank J. Smith, and TE David Coffin requested their names be added to this objection.

### 19-64 Personal Privilege

TE David Coffin rose to a question of privilege, and it was ruled out of order by the moderator. The ruling of the chair was appealed and not sustained, so the personal privilege was then allowed.

### 19-65 Committee of Commissioners on Insurance, Annuities, and Relief

RE F. F. Patterson, chairman, led in prayer and began the report by introducing RE James Hughes, Director of IAR, who spoke on the situation being faced in regard to the health and retirement plans.

#### I. Business Referred to the Committee

The Minutes of IAR for August 17, 1990, November 2, 1990, and March 1, 1991  
Overture 17

#### II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed

- The Health Insurance program.
- The Retirement Plan.
- The Relief Fund.
- Presentation by Ms. Cody Hole of Grotenhuis Insurance Underwriters regarding complaints by policy holders against Blue Cross/Blue Shield and steps being taken to expedite coverage of claims.
- Church Retirement Benefits Simplification Act: HR 1570 and SR 747 These identical bills warrant our support since they would simplify church pension fund provisions in the tax code, would eliminate questions which are time

consuming and costly for churches to answer, and thus, would benefit churches.

- Discussed Overtures 36 and 37. After consultation with Bills and Overtures, the Committee of Commissioners took no action.

### III. Recommendations

1. That the Minutes of Board Meetings of August 17, 1990, November 2, 1990 and March 1, 1991 be approved. *Adopted*
2. That the audit report dated December 31, 1990 by Arthur Andersen & Company be received. *Adopted*
3. That the General Assembly approve the use of Arthur Andersen & Company to conduct the 1991 audit. *Adopted*
4. That the 1992 budget be received with the understanding that this budget is a spending plan and that adjustments will be made during the year, if necessary, by the Trustees. *Adopted*
5. That the General Assembly approve the Eighth Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Money Purchase Pension Plan and the Tenth Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Voluntary Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan. Further, that the Resolution related thereto be adopted and included in the Minutes of the General Assembly. *Adopted*

#### EIGHTH AMENDMENT TO THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA MONEY PURCHASE PENSION PLAN

THIS AMENDMENT to the Presbyterian Church in America Money Purchase Pension Plan, made this 2nd day of November, 1990 by Presbyterian Church in America (hereinafter referred to as the "Employer"), to be effective as of the date of execution hereof;

#### W I T N E S S E T H:

WHEREAS, the Employer has previously adopted the Presbyterian Church in America Money Purchase Pension Plan; and

WHEREAS, Section 11.01 of the Plan reserves to the Trustees the right to alter or amend the Plan subject to approval of the General Assembly;

WHEREAS, the Trustees have determined it is appropriate to authorize valuations and allocations of earnings and losses on a more frequent than annual basis;

NOW THEREFORE, the Plan is hereby amended in the following particulars, effective as of the date of execution of this Amendment;

1.

Section 1.16 of the Plan is hereby amended by adding to the end thereto the following:

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

In addition to the December 31 Valuation Date, the Trustees are authorized to designate periodic Valuation Dates which may occur on a more frequent than annual basis, such as semi-annual, quarterly or monthly Valuation Dates. The Trustees may change the designation of interim Valuation Dates from time to time as they deem appropriate. Notwithstanding any other provision in this Plan, the Trustees may require all plan-to-plan transfer and demand withdrawals from the Trust fund to be made and valued on the first Valuation Date subsequent to the date on which the Participant who desires a transfer or withdrawal makes written request therefor to the Trustees.

2.

All other provisions of the Plan not inconsistent herewith are hereby ratified and confirmed.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, the Trustees have caused this Eighth Amendment to be executed on the dates indicated below.

TRUSTEES:

BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE  
INSURANCE, ANNUITY AND  
RELIEF FUNDS OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN  
AMERICA

Date: \_\_\_\_\_  
Date: \_\_\_\_\_  
Date: \_\_\_\_\_  
Date: \_\_\_\_\_  
Date: \_\_\_\_\_

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

TENTH AMENDMENT  
TO THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
TAX-SHELTERED ANNUITY PLAN

THIS AMENDMENT to the Presbyterian Church in America Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan, made this 2nd day of November, 1990 by Presbyterian Church in America (hereinafter referred to as the "Employer"), to be effective as of the date of execution thereof;

WITNESSETH:

WHEREAS, the Employer has previously adopted the Presbyterian Church in America Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan; and

## JOURNAL

WHEREAS, Section 11.01 of the Plan reserves to the Trustees the right to alter or amend the Plan subject to the approval of the General Assembly;

WHEREAS, the Trustees have determined that it is appropriate to authorize valuations and allocations of earnings and losses on a more frequent than annual basis;

NOW THEREFORE, the Plan is hereby amended in the following particulars, effective as of the date of execution of this Amendment;

1.

Section 1.21 of the Plan is hereby amended by adding to the end thereof the following:

In addition to the December 31 Valuation Date, the Trustees are authorized to designate periodic Valuation Dates which may occur on a more frequent than annual basis, such as semi-annual, quarterly or monthly Valuation Dates. The Trustees may change the designation of interim Valuation Dates from time to time as they deem appropriate. Notwithstanding any other provision in this Plan, the Trustees may require all plan-to-plan transfer and demand withdrawals from the Trust fund to be made and valued on the first Valuation Date subsequent to the date on which the Participant who desires a transfer or withdrawal makes written request therefor to the Trustees.

2.

Section 4.01 of the Plan is hereby amended by deleting said section and substituting therefor the following:

4.01 Salary Reduction Contributions.

(a) General Rule. A Participant's Account shall be credited with the amount of all contributions withheld by an Employer under a Salary Reduction Agreement and transferred by the Employer to the Trustees. Each Employer may, in its option, contribute from time to time additional amounts to a Participant's Account, subject to the limitations of Article V. Employers shall forward to the Trustees amounts withheld under a Salary Reduction Agreement and any additional contribution made by the Employer on a monthly or quarterly basis or on the basis of payroll periods for which the Participant is paid. Each Employer shall certify to the Trustees with each contribution the amount of each contribution properly allocable to the Account of each Participant employed by the Employer and the Trustees shall conclusively rely on this designation provided by the Employer.

(b) Special Rule for Certain Disabled Individuals. In the event that an individual who is a participant in the long-term disability plan maintained by the Presbyterian Church in America (hereinafter in this

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

subsection referred to as the "Disability Plan") becomes disabled and qualifies for benefits under the Disability Plan, the Disability Plan, as agent for the Employer that employed the Participant at the time his Disability occurred, shall contribute to the Account of the Participant an amount equal to nine percent (9%) of Applicable Compensation of the Participant. For purposes of the immediately preceding sentence "Applicable Compensation" shall mean the Compensation earned by the Participant from the Employer for the twelve-month period immediately preceding the date on which the Participant becomes disabled. Such payment shall be made with respect to the period commencing three (3) months after the Participant became disabled and shall continue until the earliest of: (1) the date on which the Participant recovers from his Disability, (2) the date on which the Participant ceases to be eligible to receive disability income payments under the Disability Plan, or (3) the date of the Participant's death. For the purpose for this Section, the term "Disability" shall mean an injury, illness or condition that qualifies the Participant for benefits under the Disability Plan.

### 3.

Section 6.09 is hereby amended by deleting said section and substituting thereof the following:

#### 6.09 Loan of Benefit Funds to Participants.

(a) Upon the written application of any Participant filed with the Trustees, the Trustees may, in their sole discretion and in accordance with a uniform and nondiscriminatory policy established by it, make a loan or loans to said Participant. The Trustees may, in their sole discretion determine that no new loans to Participants will be permitted subsequent to a date determined by the Trustees. Any loans made pursuant to this Section shall satisfy the following conditions:

- (i) such loans shall be available to all Participants on a reasonably equivalent basis;
- (ii) each such loan shall bear a reasonable rate of interest as determined by the Trustees;
- (iii) each such loan shall be adequately secured, with the security to consist of the balance of the Participant's Account;
- (iv) the amount of any such loan, when added to the outstanding balance of all other loans from the Plan to the Participant, shall not exceed the lesser of:

- (A) \$50,000, or



- (B) the greater of (1) one-half (1/2) of the value of the balance in the Participant's Account or (2) 75% of the total balance in the Participant's Account up to \$10,000. The \$50,000 referred to in clause (A) above shall be reduced by the excess (if any) of (I) the highest outstanding balance of loans from the Plan during the twelve-month period ending on the day before the date on which the Participant loan is made, over (II) the outstanding balance of loans from the Plan to the Participant on the date on which such new Participant loan is made.
- (v) Each such loan, by its terms, shall be repaid in substantially equal installments made monthly within five years of the making of such loan. The five-year period referred to in the preceding sentence may be increased to a longer period of time in the case of a loan which is used to acquire or construct a dwelling unit which in a reasonable period of time is to be used (determined at the time the loan is made) as the principal residence of the Participant.
- (b) Each such loan shall be evidenced by a promissory note executed by the Participant and payable to the Trustees. Such promissory note shall evidence such terms as are required by this Section and by procedures established by the Trustees.
- (c) Each such loan shall be adequately secured by a pledge of all or a portion of the Participant's Account, so that, in the event the Participant does not repay such loan in the time set forth in the promissory note, the Trustees may deduct the total amount of such loan or any portion thereof from the balance of the Participant's Account or from any distribution from the Trust Fund to which such Participant or his Beneficiary(ies) may be entitled, and that portion of the Participant's Account which is equivalent in value to the amount so deducted shall be cancelled.
- (d) Each such loan shall be an "earmarked" investment of the borrowing Participant's Account. All payments of interest and principal on a Participant loan shall be allocated solely to the borrowing Participant's Account. The Trustees will deduct from the Participant's account the administrative costs associated with the Participant's loan. The portion of a Participant's Account that consists of a Participant loan shall not share in the income, gains and losses of the Trust Fund.
- (e) In the event that a Participant does not timely repay any principal or interest due on a Participant loan, the Trustees may, in accordance with procedures established by the Trustees, treat the entire amount of principal balance due plus accrued interest as being distributed to the Participant (together with any income tax required to be withheld).

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

4.

All other provisions of the Plan not inconsistent herewith are hereby ratified and confirmed.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, the Trustees have caused this Tenth Amendment to be executed on the dates indicated below.

TRUSTEES:  
BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE  
INSURANCE, ANNUITY AND  
RELIEF FUNDS OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN  
AMERICA

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

6. That the General Assembly approve the Eleventh Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Voluntary Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan. Further, that the Resolution related thereto be adopted and include in the Minutes of the General Assembly. *Adopted*

ELEVENTH AMENDMENT TO  
THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
TAX-SHELTERED ANNUITY PLAN

THIS AMENDMENT to the Presbyterian Church in America Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan (hereinafter referred to as the "Plan"), made this 1st day of March, 1991 by Presbyterian Church in America (hereinafter referred to as the "Employer"), to be effective as of the date of execution thereof;

WITNESSETH:

WHEREAS, the Employer has previously adopted the Plan; and

WHEREAS, Section 11.01 of the Plan reserves to the Trustees the right to alter or amend the Plan subject to the approval of the General Assembly; and

WHEREAS, the Trustees wish to amend the Plan at this time for compliance with Section 1123(c)(1) of the Tax Reform Act of 1986 relating to restrictions on withdrawals of salary reduction contributions; and

## JOURNAL

WHEREAS, the Trustees wish to change the method for allowing in-service withdrawals prior to retirement or termination of employment except in the case of hardship while continuing to allow terminated participants the opportunity of receiving a lump sum distribution; and

WHEREAS, the Trustees wish to allow in-service transfers of a participant's interest in accordance with Revenue Ruling 90-24, 1990-1 C.B. 97;

NOW THEREFORE, the Plan is hereby amended in the following particulars, effective as noted below;

### I.

Section 6.07 of the Plan is amended effective as of January 1, 1989 to read as follows:

6.07 Withdrawals. A Participant may, upon ninety (90) days prior to notice to the Trustees, elect to receive a distribution of all or any portion of his Account excluding the portion of his Account consisting of Salary Reduction Contributions and earnings thereon. A Participant may not make more than one election under this Section in any calendar year unless the Trustees adopt a rule under which more frequent withdrawals are permitted.

### II.

Section 6.07 of the Plan is amended effective as of March 1, 1991 to read as follows:

#### 6.07 Withdrawals and Transfers of Interest in Plan.

(a) Demand Withdrawals. A Participant may elect to receive a distribution of all or any portion of his Account, excluding the portion of his Account consisting of Salary Reduction Contributions and earnings thereon, following any plan valuation, provided that request for such withdrawal has been received by the Trustees no later than the date established by the Trustees for the receipt of such withdrawal requests. A Participant may not make more than one election under this Section in any calendar year unless the Trustees adopt a rule under which more frequent withdrawals are permitted.

#### (b) Hardship Withdrawals.

(i) A Participant shall be entitled to apply to the Trustees for a hardship distribution of up to 80% of such Participant's Account balance, excluding all earnings allocated to any Salary Reduction Contributions to such account, if any, valued as of the Valuation Date immediately preceding such date. A hardship distribution

will be made to the Participant only if the Trustees determine that the Participant has an immediate and heavy financial need under paragraph (ii) below and only to the extent the distribution is necessary to satisfy such need under paragraph (iii) below.

(ii) Immediate and Heavy Financial Need. A distribution will be deemed to be made on account of an immediate and heavy financial need of a participant if the distribution is on account of:

(A) Medical expenses described in Code Section 213(d) incurred by the Participant, the Participant's spouse, or any dependents of the Participant (as defined in Code Section 152);

(B) Purchase (excluding mortgage payments) of a principal residence for the Participant;

(C) Payment of tuition for the next semester or quarter of post-secondary education for the Participant, his or her spouse, children or dependents; or

(D) The need to prevent the eviction of the Participant from his or her principal residence or foreclosure on the mortgage of the Participant's principal residence.

In determining the existence of an immediate and heavy financial need, rules similar to the provisions of Treas. Reg. Section 1.401(k)-1(d) (2) (ii) (B) shall govern.

(iii) Distribution Necessary to Satisfy Need. A distribution will be deemed to be necessary to satisfy an immediate and heavy financial need of a Participant if all of the following requirements are satisfied:

(A) The distribution is not in excess of the amount of the immediate and heavy financial need of the Participant;

(B) The Participant has obtained all distributions (other than hardship distributions) and all nontaxable loans

## JOURNAL

available under this Plan and all other plans maintained by his or her Employer;

(C) After receiving the hardship distribution, the Participant shall be prohibited from making Salary Reduction Contributions under this Plan and elective contributions and employee contributions under any other plan of his or her Employer (including all qualified and nonqualified deferred compensation, stock option and stock purchase plans maintained by such Employer, but not including health or welfare benefit plans or the mandatory employee contribution portion of any defined benefit plan) for at least 12 months following receipt of the hardship distribution; and

(D) The maximum Salary Reduction Contributions pursuant to Code Section 402(g) which may be otherwise made by the Participant for the taxable year of the Participant following the taxable year in which the Participant receives the hardship distribution shall be reduced by the amount of the Participant's Salary Reduction Contributions for the taxable year in which the Participant received the hardship distribution.

In determining the extent of a distribution necessary to satisfy an immediate and heavy financial need, rules similar to the provisions of Treas. Reg. Section 1.401(k)-1(d)(2)(iii)(B) shall govern.

(iv) Taxes. The Participant shall be responsible for any excise taxes and/or any income taxes due on a hardship distribution under this subsection(a).

(c) Transfers of Interest in Plan. A Participant may elect to have all or a portion of his Account transferred to another annuity contract meeting the requirements of Code Section 403(b)(1) or to a custodial account meeting the requirements of Code Section 403(b)(7) following any plan valuation, provided that request for such transfer has been received by the Trustees no later than the date established by the Trustees for the receipt of such transfer requests; provided, however, any funds so transferred which were subject to the distribution restrictions of Code Section 403(b)(11) must remain subject to such distribution

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

restrictions after the transfer. The Trustees shall have complete and absolute discretion to determine whether the proposed transferee contract or custodial account selected by the Participant satisfies the applicable requirements of the preceding sentence.

III.

Section 6.05 of the Plan is amended effective as of January 1, 1992 to read as follows:

6.05 Cash-Out of Accounts. Notwithstanding any other provision of this Plan, the Trustees may, in their sole discretion, require payment in a lump sum of the value of the Account of any Participant who separates from Service with the Church if the balance in his Account, as of the date of his separation from Service, is less than \$2,500.00. Furthermore, a Participant who has separated from Service with the Church may elect to receive a lump sum distribution of his Account following any plan valuation, provided that request for such withdrawal has been received by the Trustees no later than the date established by the Trustees for the receipt of such distribution requests. Any such payments will extinguish all rights of the cashed-out Participant to benefits under this Plan. Separation from service shall mean termination of employment for lay employees and termination of membership in a Presbyterian Church in America presbytery for ordained ministers.

IV.

All other provisions of the Plan not inconsistent herewith are hereby ratified and confirmed.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, the Trustees have caused this Eleventh Amendment to be executed this 1st day of March, 1991.

TRUSTEES:  
BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE  
INSURANCE, ANNUITY AND  
RELIEF FUNDS OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN  
AMERICA

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

## JOURNAL

7. That the General Assembly approve the amendments to the Annuity Fund for Ministers, the Employees' Annuity Fund and the Pension Fund Plan of the Reformed Presbyterian Church, Evangelical Synod allowing the Trustees to purchase group commercial annuities to fund future benefits for retirees and surviving spouses under these plans. Further, that the Resolution related thereto be adopted and include in the Minutes of the General Assembly. *Adopted*

### AMENDMENT TO THE OFFICIAL PLAN OF THE ANNUITY FUND FOR MINISTERS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

WHEREAS, Section 10.1 of the Plan provides that the Trustees, subject to the approval of the General Assembly, have the right to alter or amend the official Plan of the Annuity Fund for Ministers of the Presbyterian Church in America, as Amended (the "Plan"); and

WHEREAS, the Trustees desire to amend the Plan to provide for the purchase of commercial annuities to pay benefits under the Plan;

NOW, THEREFORE, the Trustees hereby amend the Plan effective as of the date of approval of this Amendment by the General Assembly noted below as follows:

#### I.

Section 9.2 of the Plan is amended to read as follows:

#### **Section 9.2 Payment of Annuities and Rental Allowance**

All annuities and rental allowances shall be paid in advance in monthly installments. Also, notwithstanding any provisions of this Plan to the contrary, any benefit to be paid from this Plan in the form of an annuity may, in the sole discretion of the Trustees, be accomplished by the purchase of an annuity contract for the benefit of the Member or beneficiary from a properly licensed insurance company. The purchase of such an annuity contract by the Trustees shall operate as a complete discharge of the applicable benefit obligation of the Plan and the Trustees.

#### II.

All other provisions of the Plan not inconsistent herewith are hereby ratified and confirmed.

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, the Trustees of the Insurance, Annuity and Relief Funds of the Presbyterian Church in America have caused this Amendment to be executed this 1st day of March, 1991.

TRUSTEES:  
BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE  
INSURANCE, ANNUITY AND  
RELIEF FUNDS OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN  
AMERICA

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

APPROVED by the General Assembly this \_\_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_, 1991.

AMENDMENT TO THE  
OFFICIAL PLAN OF THE  
EMPLOYEES' ANNUITY FUND OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

WHEREAS, Section 10.1 of the Official Plan of the Employees' Annuity Fund of the Presbyterian Church in America (the "Plan") grants to the Trustees, subject to the approval of the General Assembly, the right to alter or amend the provisions of the Plan; and

WHEREAS, the Trustees desire to amend the Plan to allow the purchase of commercial annuities to pay benefits from the Plan;

NOW, THEREFORE, the Trustees hereby amend the Plan effective as of the date of approval of this Amendment by the General Assembly noted below as follows:

I.

A new Section 7.4 is added to Section 7 of the Plan to read as follows:

7.4 Notwithstanding any provisions of this Plan to the contrary, any benefit to be paid from this Plan in the form of an Annuity may, in the sole discretion of the Trustees, be accomplished by the purchase of an annuity contract for the benefit of the Member or beneficiary from a properly licensed insurance company. The purchase of such an annuity contract by the Trustees shall operate as a complete discharge of the applicable benefit obligation of the Plan and the Trustees.



JOURNAL

II.

All other provisions of the Plan not inconsistent herewith are hereby ratified and confirmed.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, the Trustees of the Insurance, Annuity and Relief Funds of the Presbyterian Church in America have caused this Amendment to be executed this 1st day of March, 1991.

TRUSTEES:  
BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE  
INSURANCE, ANNUITY AND  
RELIEF FUNDS OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN  
AMERICA

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

APPROVED by the General Assembly this \_\_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_, 1991.

AMENDMENT TO THE  
PENSION FUND PLAN OF THE  
REFORMED PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, EVANGELICAL SYNOD

WHEREAS, Section 10, Article VI and Article XII of the Pension Fund Plan of the Reformed Presbyterian Church, Evangelical Synod (the "Plan") reserves the right to the Synod or to its successor to amend the Plan from time to time; and

WHEREAS, the General Assembly, as successor to the Synod and pursuant to the authority contained in the Plan wishes to amend the Plan to allow the purchase of commercial annuities for the provision of benefits thereunder;

NOW, THEREFORE, the General Assembly hereby amends the Plan to be effective on the date of execution of this Amendment as follows:

I.

A new Article XV is added to the Plan to read as follows:

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

ARTICLE XV

Commercial Annuities for Benefits

Notwithstanding any provisions of this Plan to the contrary, any benefit to be paid from this Plan in the form of an annuity may be accomplished by the purchase of an annuity contract for the benefit of the Participant or Beneficiary from a properly licensed insurance company. The Committee may direct the Trustee to purchase such an annuity contract whenever the Committee, in its sole discretion, deems it appropriate. The purchase of such an annuity contract by the Trustee shall operate as a complete discharge of the applicable benefit obligation of the Plan and the Trustee.

II.

All other provisions of the Plan not inconsistent herewith are hereby ratified and confirmed.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, the Trustees of the Insurance, Annuity and Relief Funds of the Presbyterian Church in America have caused this Amendment to be executed this 1st day of March, 1991.

TRUSTEES:  
BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE  
INSURANCE, ANNUITY AND  
RELIEF FUNDS OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN  
AMERICA

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_  
By: \_\_\_\_\_

APPROVED by the General Assembly this \_\_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_, 1991.

8. That the General Assembly urge its member churches to receive an annual offering or budget regular benevolent giving to support relief activities through the Ministerial Relief Fund. *Adopted*

9. That the General Assembly approve the revised wording in the Trustees' Bylaws, Article I, Statement of Purpose (see Appendix G, p, 330) *Adopted*

The purpose of the Board of Trustees of the Insurance, Annuity and Relief Funds of the Presbyterian Church in America is to glorify God through serving His servants who minister in the Church. Insurance and Annuities acts as a service organization to support and assist PCA churches and related organizations by offering employee benefits. The Ministerial Relief Fund assists PCA retired and disabled ministers, lay

## JOURNAL

workers, their surviving spouses and dependent children on a needs basis.

10. That Overture 17 **be answered in the negative** and that the IAR Board of Trustees pursue the matter to determine the availability and the additional costs of such coverage. *Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 17 From the Presbytery of Evangel**

**"Instruct IAR to Find Appropriate Coverage for Therapy"**

**Whereas**, the medical community overwhelmingly prescribes Physical Therapy and Speech Therapy as the most basic and necessary care for Downs Syndrome patients; and

**Whereas**, it was originally understood that all the pre-existing conditions would be covered by Blue Cross and Blue Shield (thereafter called BCBS); and

**Whereas**, the previous PCA self-funded plan paid for physical therapy for downs Syndrome patients; and

**Whereas**, other BCBS Companies do in fact cover such claims; and

**Whereas**, for Downs Syndrome patients Physical Therapy and Speech Therapy claims are being rejected under our present BCBS plan; and

**Whereas**, it is questionable whether physical therapy and speech therapy claims would be covered for other conditions such as Cystic Fibrosis, Muscular Dystrophy, Multiple Sclerosis, Cerebral Palsy, etc., and

**Whereas**, Rev. Burt Boykin of Community Presbyterian Church of Evangel Presbytery is being significantly, financially, and adversely burdened and there may be other members of our insurance group similarly affected; and

**Whereas**, the future development of our Covenant children with special needs demands some form of solution to these need;

**Therefore be it resolved** that Evangel Presbytery overtures the Nineteenth General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America to instruct IAR to find appropriate coverage or solutions for those who have physical therapy or speech therapy needs that are being denied coverage under BCBS of Michigan.

Adopted at the Fall Stated Meeting of Evangel Presbytery on September 25, 1990.

Attested by: /s/ Hubert C. Stewart

Stated Clerk

11. That IAR study the present philosophy and structure of the Ministerial Relief Fund and make the necessary changes to the fund that will reduce administrative costs within three years to 20% or less, and report back to the 20th General Assembly. *Adopted*

12. That IAR investigate providing low cost, high deductible coverage for its basic package of health insurance, with options of further coverage at additional cost to those who qualify, and to report to the 20th General Assembly. *Adopted*

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ RE F. F. Patterson, Chairman  
/s/ TE Curtis Young, Secretary

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### COMMISSIONERS PRESENT

#### Presbytery

Ascension  
Covenant  
Evangel  
Heritage  
New River  
North Georgia  
North Texas  
Northern Illinois  
Pacific Northwest  
Palmetto  
Potomac  
Siouxlands  
Southeast Alabama  
Southern Florida  
Southwest Florida  
Tennessee Valley  
Warrior  
Western Carolina  
Westminster

#### Commissioner

TE Larry Oldaker  
TE James Hayes  
RE William Whorton  
RE Wim Scheffers  
TE Michael Hall  
TE John Batusic  
TE Ron Brady  
TE Bruce Stanek  
TE Curtis Young  
RE Bob Yount  
RE John Strain  
TE Dennis Eide  
RE Armistead Harper  
RE F. F. Patterson, Chairman  
TE George Crocker  
RE Lewis Kinnard  
TE William Gleason  
TE Dan Sulc  
TE G. Brent Bradley

The report was adopted as a whole and closed with prayer by the chairman.

### 19-66 Protest to Approval of the Reply to Warren Memorial

The following protest from RE David C. Lachman was received and admitted to the record.

We the undersigned do enter a solemn protest to the action of the GA in approving the reply to the memorial from TE John Warren, Jr.

The GA has approved the report of the SJC thus declaring "all matters relating to Carl Fox, now or previously pending before the GA, are ended, concluded and terminated."

The GA has joined Mississippi Valley Presbytery in extending to Mr. Carl Fox its deepest sympathy in his adverse personal circumstances over the past several years, its sorrow over the termination of his marriage, and its concern for Mr. Fox's emotional, spiritual and physical welfare. But it has not taken any action to remedy Mr. Fox's welfare, either in regard to criminal trespass charges brought against Mr. Fox by the Session of Pear Orchard Church for attending morning worship there, which charges are still pending before the civil courts, or in regard to the absolute separation from his children which has resulted from Pear Orchard's failure to discipline Mrs. Cindy Fox in her successful pursuit of an unbiblical divorce. In doing so, the GA has contravened Scripture (James 2:14-16) by giving comfort in word and not in deed, thus displaying that faith which without works is dead.

The GA has joined "MVP in concluding that Mr. Carl Fox is no longer a member of the Pear Orchard P.C. and has not been a member since that Session accepted his resignation and removed his name from its roll on February 16, 1987." In so doing it has tacitly endorsed both constitutional and factual error. In reversing the decision of the 16th GA, it has defied the decision of the 12th GA, which ruled that, in judicial cases "...the decision cannot be reversed, but a judgment can be set aside and a new trial ordered if there is 'highly important new evidence' or 'such palpable error as would manifestly tend to interfere with the substantial administration of justice' (*Baird's Digest of the Assembly Actions*, p.111)."

In such defiance, the 19th GA has acted unconstitutionally and is wholly out of accord with historic Presbyterian Church polity.

Furthermore, it has declared "that all matters relating to Carl Fox, now or previously pending before the GA, are ended, concluded and terminated." But, as it has demonstrated, one Assembly can not bind another. To declare a matter ended while deciding a matter contrary to the decision of a previous Assembly is a manifest absurdity and one that can not possibly be held to bind a future court.

The GA's action has allowed error of fact in the committee's (SJC) report to stand unchallenged, contrary to the 9th Commandment. The report asserts that "the 16th GA Commission obviously had an inadequate and incomplete record of the case" and then says "after looking at all the records we believe this conclusion was in error" (p.2010, line 10) when the SJC had before it fewer records and documents than did the 16th GA's Commission.

Finally, the GA has failed to seek justice in accord with the purpose and end of the coming of our Saviour, in accord with the words of Isaiah "...A bruised reed He will not break, and smoking flax He will not quench; He will bring forth justice for truth. He will not fail nor be discouraged, till He has established justice in the earth...." (Isa.42:3-4), even though the Church may be wronged or defrauded (1 Cor. 6:7-8).

Also signing the protest were TE Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr., TE Tom Wenger, RE Arch Vandevender, RE Stanley Wells, TE Rodney King, RE M. Dale Peacock, TE Frank E. Smith, RE Philip W. Hufnell, RE Robert H. Miller, TE John M. Warren, Jr., TE John O. Butler, RE Michael Poehart, TE Carlos Salabarría, RE Gary L. Campbell, TE Dale L. Smith, TE Donald J. Stone, RE J. George Pauley, TE Mike Chastain, TE John Kinser, RE Lawrence O. Henry, RE J. W. Smith, TE George G. Felton, Sr., TE Charles H. Morrison III, TE George A. Crocker, RE Michael L. Akin, TE Steve Wilkins, TE Ross Lindley, TE James A. Jones, Jr., and TE J. Robert Thompson.

## **19-67 Committee of Commissioners on Bills and Overtures**

TE Henry Johnson, chairman, led in prayer and presented the Committee's report.

### **I. Business Initially Referred to the Committee**

Overtures #1, 2, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 19, 20, 21, 22, 24, 25, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, and 43.

Personal Resolutions 2,4, and 9

### **II. Statement of Major Issues Discussed**

1. Which overtures were properly before this committee?
2. The committee referred these overtures to other committees of commissioners, as follows:
  - AC: 7, 19, 29-33, 43
  - Either AC or AC and IAR: 36-37
  - CE/P: 34-35
  - MTW: 21, 24-25
3. A variety of issues contained in the several overtures.

### **III. Recommendations:**

1. That the General Assembly answer Overture 6 in the affirmative as amended:

*Defeated*

#### **OVERTURE 6 From the Presbytery of New River**

"Instruct GA Committees Not to Initiate Changes in Governing Documents"

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**Whereas**, the Committees of the General Assembly are to serve and not direct any Church judicatories (*BCO* 14-1-7); and

**Whereas**, the initiative for carrying out the Great Commission belongs to the Church (*BCO* 14-1-2); and

**Whereas**, the whole work and organization of the church is to the end that the Great Commission might be carried out to the Glory of God; and

**Whereas**, *BCO* 14-1-8 states "the committees serve the Church through the duties assigned by the General Assembly"; and

**Whereas**, the permanent committees have not been assigned

the duty of initiating, generating, or recommending changes to the *BCO* or the RAO;

**Whereas**, in recent years some committees have initiated changes in the church's structure relating to their own power and size; and

**Whereas**, these changes have had the effect of centralization of power in the committees and their staff, taking this power from the church itself; and

**Whereas**, many hours of the Assembly's time have been spent debating these changes;

**Therefore** we, the New River Presbytery, overture the General Assembly to direct all its committees, commissions, officials, and agencies to initiate no changes in the Constitution or Rules of Assembly Operations or Bylaws; and to determine rather that any changes must be initiated by request of the lower courts and at the direction of the Assembly.

2. That the Assembly answer Overture 1 in the affirmative, as amended:

GENERAL NOTE: In this and following overtures, proposed deletions are in brackets, and proposed additions are underlined.

### **OVERTURE 1 From Evangel Presbytery**

"Restatement of *BCO* 38-2"

**Whereas**, the *Book of Church Order* is silent concerning the process by which a minister who has been divested without censure at his own request (in accordance with *BCO* 38-2), may seek reinstatement,

**Whereas**, the *Book of Church Order* does make provision for reinstatement of a minister who has been deposed (see *BCO* 37-4) without having to go through the candidacy and licensure process all over again.

**Whereas**, the 1989 General Assembly cited Evangel Presbytery's policy of dealing with reinstatement of ministers who have been divested without censure as a substantive *BCO* error.

**THEREFORE**, be it resolved that the 19th General Assembly amend the *Book of Church Order* as follows:

Add a second paragraph to *Book of Church Order* 38-2:

"If a minister who has been divested without censure approaches the Presbytery which divested him (or another Presbytery with the consent of the original Presbytery) requesting that his ordination be reinstated, the Presbytery [should] shall proceed carefully. The Presbytery shall examine

## JOURNAL

him diligently[ on] with respect to his revitalized sense of call by God to the Gospel ministry and [make a determination on whether there has been a change in his doctrinal views since his original examination by the Presbytery] in the areas delineated by BCO 13-6 If, after careful examination, the Presbytery is convinced that the man's call is valid, the Presbytery may choose one of two alternatives to pursue reinstatement:

- (1) The Presbytery may treat him as a man without call and without credentials and require him to follow the normal process leading to ordination which includes candidacy, licensure, internship, examination, etc. (BCO chapters 18, 19,20,21).
- (2) The Presbytery may follow a reinstatement [ceremony] service and receive him as a member of the Presbytery. The [ceremony] service is as follows:

The moderator shall announce to him in the following form:

**Whereas**, you, \_\_\_\_\_ formerly a Teaching Elder of this Presbytery have been divested without censure, but have now expressed evidence of a revitalized call which has satisfied the church, in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by His authority, we, the Presbytery of \_\_\_\_\_ do declare you restored to your ordination and to the exercise of all the functions of your office, whenever you may be orderly called thereto."

*Referred to CCB and deferred to the 20th GA*

3. That the Assembly answer Overture 2 from Northeast Presbytery **in the negative**, with the following recommendations:
  - 1) That the General Assembly direct the Stated Clerk to remind sessions, to the best of their ability, to follow BCO 46-2 as written.
  - 2) And to urge members who move to join local PCA churches or other Reformed Churches.
  - 3) This Assembly declares its solidarity with its members who labor under difficult circumstances in spiritually barren areas of North America, and we declare our intent to pray for our brethren in such places, that our Lord will strengthen and encourage them, and that he might be pleased to use their efforts for the extension of his Church.

*Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 2 From Northeast Presbytery**

"Enforce BCO 46-2"

#### **I. PREAMBLE: EXPRESSION OF CONCERN**

In generations past, the minutes of higher courts would be filled with reports of lower courts on the progress of religion within their bounds. Although the PCA Constitution no longer requires such an historical accounting, we felt compelled this year to tell of our blessings and struggles.

By the addition of one historic congregation, Presbytery's communicant strength increased about 50%. A new work has been started in addition to the other four missions. At least two of our churches have experienced significant growth. One church will soon be moving into its new building,

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

and another has recently added to its physical plant. For these blessings we give thanks.

However, a dark and dreary side of the picture haunts us. A hostile world sometimes seems as if it would swallow the little flocks of our Presbytery. Worse, internal dissension has wracked us -- in the past couple of years, this Presbytery of fifteen congregations had had to erect at least six commissions to deal with church problems. Two ministers of the gospel have been deposed since June 1988. The denominational representative for our area has remarked at how evident is Satanic opposition in this section of the country.

Like the psalmist of old, our complaint ascends to God that He has cast us off, puts us to shame, and no longer accompanies our armies as we go out to battle. Although we may not be as innocent as ancient Israel in its profession of bewilderment at national defeat, our cry is still,

"Turn us again, O God, and cause Thy face to shine; and we shall be saved. O LORD God of hosts, how long wilt Thou be angry against the prayer of Thy people? Thou feedest them with the bread of tears; and givest them tears to drink in great measure. Thou makest us a strife unto our neighbors: and our enemies laugh among themselves . . . Why hast Thou . . . broken down [the vine's] hedges, so that all they which pass by the way do pluck her? The boar out of the wood doth waste it, and the wild beast out of the field doth devour it. Return, we beseech Thee, O God of hosts: look down from heaven, and behold, and visit this vine. ."

We truly are on a widespread domestic mission field, laboring under great handicaps and in great need of assistance. First of all, we would covet your prayers -- that we would be faithful, courageous, and effective in our ministries, with a conscious desire for the glory of Christ.

But your help can take more tangible direction as well. Our crying need in many of our churches is for people and especially for leaders -- mature, godly leadership which is so hard to find in the Northeast.

The problem has been that when members of our beloved denomination move into our area, they often do not find their way into PCA churches. At least one of our struggling congregations has had the heart-breaking experience of having over a dozen PCA family units come into its locale and have only one join the church. Included among those families were ruling elders and a ministerial candidate who preferred Christian and Missionary Alliance, Baptist, United Church of Christ, and Presbyterian Church (USA) churches to the local PCA congregation.

We acknowledge that members of our churches moving to other sections of the country have not always had an exemplary track record regarding ecclesiastical affiliation. Furthermore, the horror stories we can tell have been replicated throughout the United States and Canada. Nevertheless, the peculiarly difficult nature of our area makes these defections especially hurtful.

We believe the denomination as a whole to be at fault in this matter of referring members who have moved to other PCA or other Reformed churches. Sometimes this neglect has been due to lack of genuine, caring pastoral oversight -- a deficiency we have trouble understanding. Sometimes



it has been because of geographical ignorance ("Oh, no, of course we don't have any PCA churches up there!"). In almost every case, there has been an ignorance of the requirements of the PCA Constitution.

*Book of Church Order 46-2* is quite clear in laying out responsibility when a member moves. The "home" church's elders must inform the member of his duty to join the PCA church into whose bounds he has moved and must also inform the elders of that church that a member of the denomination has come within their bounds. The "receiving" church's elders are responsible to take pastoral oversight with a view towards taking the person into membership.

But despite the perspicacity of the requirements, we have met with a virtual lack of knowledge regarding them, and often with outright hostility when we have tried to call attention to them.

We believe that this constitutional provision is not meant as a means of maintaining a prideful denominational hegemony. We do believe that it is reflective of our Presbyterian commitment to the whole counsel of God, including the doctrines of grace, the covenant and infant baptism, *sola Scriptura* and the regulative principle of worship, and a graduated system of church courts. We maintain that evangelical is not enough, and that fidelity to the Second and Third Commandments mandates proper concern for the doctrines and practices that are distinctively Reformed. In accord with this, the Constitution reminds parents upon the baptism of a child that they are to "instruct him in the principles of our holy religion, as contained in the Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments, an excellent summary of which we have in the *Confession of Faith*, and in the *Larger* and *Shorter Catechisms* of the Westminster Assembly . . ." (*BCO* 56-4).

Indeed, the polemical position of many of our churches is undercut if evangelical is enough. To what purpose does an organizing pastor labor sacrificially if a merely evangelical option that is thriving in the community is sufficient to please the Savior? If, on the other hand, theological precision is desirable; if we are, by His grace, presenting a theological position that is significantly different from that of other true churches and is essentially correct in its distinctiveness, then we have just ground to be in existence and to call others to the same measure of obedience. Without that understanding, not only does *BCO* 46-2 look foolish and lack meaning, but the theoretical foundation of much of our PCA work in the Northeast (and elsewhere) collapses.

Our concern is not simply for the PCA *per se*. Our goal is the full expression of Christ's kingdom and His glory. To that end and in accord with previous sentiments of affection for our like-minded brethren in other genuinely Reformed denominations, we believe that the scope of *BCO* 46-2 needs to be broadened to include other Reformed bodies.

## II. FORMAL OVERTURE

**Whereas**, Northeast Presbytery has a concern regarding the application of *BCO* 46-2; and

**Whereas**, the Presbytery has experienced an almost total disregard for the provisions of *BCO* 46-2;

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**Therefore, be it resolved** that the Northeast Presbytery respectfully overture the 18th General Assembly to do the following:

1. send a pastoral letter to all the ministers and churches of the PCA, expressing the concerns we have raised with regard to *BCO 46-2* and request that it be read to all PCA congregations and mission churches.
2. recommend that prospective members of our denomination be instructed as to their duties should they move away from their "home" church.
3. remind the elders of our church of their solemn duty to abide by the provisions of the Constitution and that failure to do so is a disciplinable offense.
4. declare that *BCO 46-2* as presently written refers only to PCA congregations.
5. instruct the Constitutional Business Committee to prepare appropriate language to amend *BCO 46-2* so that it can better reflect the theoretical basis for these duties and also encompass other churches that subscribe to Standard Reformed Creeds.
6. inform the elders of our church that they should assist members who are moving away by availing themselves of such aids as maps and atlases, the *PCA Yearbook*, *Directory of Selected Reformed Churches*, as well as the good offices of Presbytery Stated Clerks.

Adopted by Northeast Presbytery at the January 12-13, 1990 Stated Meeting.  
(Received too late for 18th General Assembly.)

Attested by: /s/ Philip J. Adams  
Stated Clerk

### MINORITY REPORT

That General Assembly answer Overture 2 in the negative, and instead take the following action:

Be it resolved that the Stated Clerk send a pastoral letter to all PCA congregations and mission churches in North America, in the name of the General Assembly, expressing the following sentiments of the Assembly:

1. The Assembly understands *BCO 46-2* to describe PCA sessions' duty as part of their pastoral oversight to encourage members who move, to unite with a nearby congregation of Reformed convictions (so long as that is practical).
2. The Assembly is grieved and dismayed to hear that there are PCA sessions that ignore their duty spelled out in *BCO 46-2*.
3. The Assembly interprets our ordination vows to obligate us to teach the flocks under our care why the Reformed and Presbyterian teaching held by the PCA are true and important, and worth making personal sacrifices to support by their labors and money.
4. This Assembly declares its solidarity with its members who labor under difficult circumstances in spiritually barren areas of North America, and we declare our intent to pray for our brethren in such places, that our Lord will

## JOURNAL

strengthen and encourage them, and that he might be pleased to use their efforts for the extension of his church.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE C. John Collins, Pacific NW  
/s/ TE Frank J. Smith, Northeast  
/s/ TE David Brown, N. California

A procedural motion was adopted that the time for adjournment be extended until all the business has been completed.

4. That the Assembly answer Overture 5 affirmatively as amended:....  
**Whereas**, ecclesiastical jurisdiction is to be exercised by presbyteries in courts (*BCO* 1-5); and

### **OVERTURE 5 From the Presbytery of New River**

"Amend *BCO* 15-4 to Permit General Assembly to Adjudicate"

**Whereas**, the power to receive and issue all appeals, references, and complaints belongs to the General Assembly (*BCO* 14-46); and

**Whereas**, the actions taken in judicial decisions are to be the actions of the General Assembly (*BCO* 14-7); and

**Whereas**, it is better that each court discharge the duty assigned it under the law of the Church (*BCO* 41-5); and

**Whereas**, the Eighteenth General Assembly determined that *BCO* 15 requires that judicial cases first be tried by the Permanent Judicial Commission and that the Assembly cannot hear a case first itself, nor erect a special commission, under any circumstances; and

**Whereas**, it is improper [to] irretrievably to commit the duties or powers of a court to any other body;

**Therefore** be it resolved that the Nineteenth General Assembly [begin the process of amendment of] vote to amend *BCO* 15-4 by the insertion of the word "ordinarily" following the second "shall" in the first sentence. [and adding a new final sentence to that paragraph as follows: "The General Assembly may, by a majority vote, commit to a special judicial commission any case before it not yet adjudicated by the Standing Judicial Commission, or it may try the cast itself."]

[*BCO* 15-4 would then read: "The General Assembly shall elect a SJC to which it shall ordinarily commit all judicial cases within its jurisdiction."]

*Referred to CCB and deferred to the 20th GA*

5. That the Assembly answer Overture 8 in the affirmative as amended:

### **OVERTURE 8 From Westminster Presbytery**

"Amend *BCO* to Provide More Direct Election by Presbyteries"

**Whereas** the PCA has been blessed with many wise and gifted elders, and

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**Whereas** the PCA eagerly desires to have the broadest possible representation on its permanent committees, boards, and agencies, and

**Whereas** the Presbyteries are the most competent courts of the church to ascertain the needs of the committees as well as to assess those who serve well, and

**Whereas** some committees (for example, Review and Control, Nominating Committee) already operate, based on each Presbytery electing their own representative to be on that committee, and

**Whereas** small and/or distant Presbyteries are often unable to have their representatives elected, thus impoverishing the whole, and

**Whereas** some already are dissatisfied with floor nominations which may arise without Presbyteries' own nominations, and

**Whereas** more men can gain experience and learn much as well as give of themselves for the betterment of the body if this proposal is adopted, and

**Whereas** there could be greater interest in the work of the PCA at the Presbytery level as more Presbyteries are closely involved, and

**Whereas** this proposal could eliminate both the expense of the General Assembly Nominating Committee as a whole (estimated at \$20,000 per year), as well as much of the time for poorly attended elections at the General Assembly meeting, as well as simplify the procedure giving greater access to all Presbyteries.

[Therefore Westminster Presbytery overtures the Nineteenth General Assembly to have its Committee on Constitutional Business prepare a *Book of Church Order* amendment to present to that Assembly in which each Presbytery would be assigned a number (based on the date of its entrance into the PCA with the oldest Presbytery being numbered 1, etc.) as a rotating basis for representation on General Assembly Committees, Boards, and Agencies, and that each committee, board, or agency be alphabetized and matched with a number for the Presbyter which shall elect one of its members for such committees on a simple rotating basis as seats become available. (For example, if the Committee on Administration comes first alphabetically and has 3 at large members and 2 alternates to be elected, such members would be elected by the 5 Presbyteries of longest standing in the PCA.) Provision shall always be made for two alternates (one TE and one RE for each committee).]

**Therefore be it Resolved** that the Nineteenth General Assembly instructs the Committee on Constitutional Business to prepare a *Book of Church Order* amendment to provide more direct election by the presbyteries and report a plan of implementation at the 20th General Assembly.

### MINORITY REPORT

Recommend that Overture 8 be answered **in the negative**.

*Adopted*

#### Grounds:

1. It is most proper for the court which sets up and provides oversight to a committee, board, or agency to elect the membership to serve the court.
2. Examples given in statement of majority report (e.g. Review and Control and Nominating Committee) are not analogous with permanent committee, boards, and agencies.

## JOURNAL

- a. Review and Control is most similar to a standing committee of commissioners.
- b. Nominating is a special situation wherein presbyteries are given strong powers to influence the nominating process.
3. Any dissatisfaction with floor nominations could be better protected by allowing only those men who had previously been nominated by their presbyteries to be eligible for floor nominations.
4. The nominating Committee is constantly working to improve its methods of operation, control costs and to improve the representations from Presbyteries (see Appendix L, p. 443)
5. Interest in the work of the PCA as well as motivation to attend elections on the floor of the General Assembly are more a function of individual dedication of each commissioner rather than of any particular system.
6. The current system provides the best balance between protection of Presbytery rights and the responsibility of the General Assembly to elect its own committees, boards, and agencies.
  - /s/ TE Don K. Clements, New River
  - /s/ TE Timothy Diehl, Heartland
  - /s/ RE Collie Lehn, Calvary
  - /s/ RE Gene McRoberts, MS Valley

6. That the General Assembly answer Overture 9 **in the negative.** *Adopted*  
Grounds:
  - 1) The CCB already reports on constitutional items.
  - 2) The proposed procedure is impractical.
  - 3) There already exist procedures for reconsideration, rescension, and correction by presbytery overture.

### **OVERTURE 9 From Westminster Presbytery**

"Have CCB Report on Committees Re: *BCO* 14-1 (7)"

**Whereas** the PCA is governed by church courts from which basic business arises, and

**Whereas** *BCO* 14-1 (7) states: "The Assembly's committees are to serve and not to direct any Church judicatories. They are not to establish policy, but rather execute policy established by the General Assembly."

**Whereas** recent General Assemblies have seen major policy proposals which appear to have come from committees, and not from lower courts, (compare the instructions of the 17th General Assembly to the Administrative Committee p. 148 of the *Minutes* with the proposed changes brought to the floor of the 18th General Assembly by the Administrative Committee),

**Therefore** Westminster Presbytery overtures the 19th General Assembly that in order to be mindful of *BCO* 14-1 (7) in its business proceedings (and to likewise remind its Committees of *BCO* 14-1 (7) that the General Assembly direct its Committee on Constitutional Business to meet during the Assembly and to report to the Assembly, just prior to the Assembly's adjournment, regarding whether or not the Assembly has followed *BCO* 14-1 (7). On actions in which *BCO* 14-1 (7)

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

has not been followed, that Assembly shall have the opportunity to reconsider the actions taken.

Adopted at the January Stated Meeting of Westminster Presbytery on January 19, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Larry E. Ball  
Stated Clerk

7. That the Assembly answer Overture 10 in the affirmative, as amended:

**OVERTURE 10 From Westminster Presbytery**

"Amend *BCO* Preface II, 1 to Avoid Pluralistic Interpretation"

**Whereas** God has placed enmity between His seed and the seed of the serpent (Gen. 3:15) and

**Whereas** no one can come to the Father except through Jesus, thus there is only one true religion, and

**Whereas** Christians regularly and rightly appeal to God's Word for instruction in the midst of major political issues of today such as abortion, homosexuality, and pornography and,

**Whereas** state and church must remain separate but the state and a moral basis for law can never be separate, and

**Whereas** the current reading of the Preface of the *BCO* II (1) seems to support pluralism by equating all religious constitutions,

**Therefore** be it resolved that the 19th General Assembly vote to amend the Preface of the *Book of Church Order* II (1) as follows: (change the last sentence to read)

"We believe the Bible, God's infallible word, provide proper commands for conduct of society even in civil affairs[, yet.] However, we [do not believe] deny that the constitution of a particular Christian [denomination] Church should be supported by the civil power, further than may be necessary for protection and security equal and common to all others ...."

*Referred to CCB and deferred to the 20th GA*

8. That the Assembly answer Overture 11 by reference to the Assembly's action on Overture 5. (See recommendation 4, p. 161) *Adopted*

**OVERTURE 11 From Westminster Presbytery**

"Amend *BCO* 15-4 to Permit General Assembly to Adjudicate"

**Whereas** the Lord requires His people "to act justly and to love mercy" (Micah 6:8), and

**Whereas** disputes are to be settled orderly and as speedily as possible (Mt. 18:15-20; Eph. 4:26, 27), and

**Whereas** in our current judicial process a judicial case can take over a year to be adjudicated once it reaches the level of the General Assembly,

**Therefore** Westminster Presbytery overtures the 19th General Assembly to amend *BCO* 15 by adding a new 15-6 to read as follows:

"When the standing Judicial Commission has not adjudicated a pending case by June 1 of a given year and thus will be unable to report a decision to the General Assembly that year, either party involved in the case pending, by a communication to the Stated Clerk, may request the General Assembly to appoint a judicial commission made up of 24 commissioners divided equally among teaching elders and ruling elders to adjudicate the case and make its report to the General Assembly. These judicial commissions will be nominated by the Committee of Commissioners on Administration."

Subsequent sections of *BCO* 15 are to be renumbered.

Adopted at the January Stated Meeting of Westminster Presbytery on January 19, 1991.

Attested by: /s/ Larry E. Ball  
Stated Clerk

9. That the Assembly answer Overture 12 in the affirmative, as amended:

**OVERTURE 12 From the Ascension Presbytery**

"Amend *BCO* 34-1 so Neighboring Presbytery May Adjudicate Case"

**Whereas**, our present form of church government permits de novo trials (i.e., trials as a court of original jurisdiction) by the judicial commission of General Assembly from which there is no appeal (*BCO* 15-1); and

**Whereas**, such a situation insinuates either that:

- 1) Our judicial commissions are infallible or,
- 2) That the rights of the accused are of secondary importance to the need for expediency in dealing with an overloaded court docket, both of which are fallacious; and

**Whereas**, *BCO* 34-1 clearly states that "process against a minister shall be entered before the Presbytery of which he is a member; and

**Whereas**, presbyteries should not be permitted to ["cop out" of] abdicate their judicial responsibilities. *BCO* 31-2 states, "It is the duty of all Church Sessions and Presbyteries to exercise care over those subject to their authority", (see also *BCO* 11-4). If presbyteries are to learn, and grow and be[come] effective, they must [learn to deal with] be willing to address cases at their own level. If our Church is to function properly all our courts must function fully at their own levels; and

**Whereas**, our General Assembly Judicial Commission is intended to be a court of review and appeal and not a court of default (see *BCO* 14-6. 40-5);

**Therefore**, be it resolved that the 19th General Assembly [seeking the following change in the *Book of Church Order*: That] vote to amend *BCO* 34-1 be changed to read "Process against a minister shall be entered before the presbytery of which he is a member. However, if the presbytery refuses to act in doctrinal cases or cases of public scandal the General Assembly, through its Standing Judicial Commission, at the request of two other presbyteries, shall assign the case to a neighboring presbytery for adjudication. In no instance shall such cases be tried de novo by a judicial commission of General Assembly."

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

(NOTE: numerous parts of this Overture that were originally underlined had the underlining taken out.) *Referred to CCB and deferred to the 20th GA*

10. That the Assembly answer Overture 13 in the negative: *Adopted*

**Grounds:**

- 1) That *BCO* 15-4, 5 answers sufficiently
- 2) The procedure for the SJC has built-in safeguards. (NOTE: It takes only 1/4 of the commission members to bring a matter to the GA: cf. 12:2 of the Manual of the SJC - "Judgments of the SJC are binding on the parties until approval or disapproval by the GA, unless 1/4 or more of the qualified commission members, eligible and voting, consent to delay until action of the GA.")

**OVERTURE 13 From the Presbytery of the Ascension**

"Amend *BCO* 15-5 Requiring GA Ratification before Executing Verdict"

**Whereas**, there continues to be a conflict between paragraphs in our *BCO*: *BCO* 15-1 stating that "a commission is authorized to deliberate upon and conclude the business referred to it: and *BCO* 15-5 stating "The Standing Judicial Commission shall make a full report of each case directly to the General Assembly, which report shall consist of a summary of the facts, a statement of the issues, the written briefs of the parties, and RECOMMEND judgment of the judicial panel, the reasoning of the Standing Judicial Commission, and its judgment. No such judgment shall be considered by the General Assembly unless the full report of the Standing Judicial Commission has been mailed to the Clerk of Session of each church at least thirty (30) days prior to the meeting of the General Assembly. The GENERAL ASSEMBLY SHALL, without question or debate or discussion, APPROVE OR DISAPPROVE the judgment, OR MAY REFER (a debatable motion), any strictly constitutional issue(s) to a study committee. In the case of a referral, General Assembly shall either dismiss some of all of the specific charges raised in the case or decide the case only after the report of the study committee has been heard and discussed. IF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY APPROVES THE JUDGMENT, IT SHALL BE THE ACTION OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY and printed on the minutes". and,

**Whereas**, *BCO* refers to an unratified judgment as a RECOMMENDED judgment, until such time as it is ratified by the General Assembly, we believe that the words of *BCO* 15-1 must be subordinated to 15-5;

**Therefore**, we overture the 19th General Assembly to amend the *Book of Church Order* by adding to the end of *BCO* 15-5 "No sentence attached to a verdict by a judicial commission of General Assembly shall be executed until the General Assembly has approved both the verdict and the recommended sentence".

Adopted at the May 1990 Stated Meeting of the Presbytery of the Ascension, on May 5, 1990 (with editorial corrections approved on September 10, 1990).

Attested by: /s/ Frederick R. Neikirk  
Stated Clerk



## JOURNAL

11. That the Assembly answer Overture 14 in the affirmative, as amended:  
Now be it resolved that the 19th General Assembly, instruct the Clerk of the General Assembly that the constitutionality of all judicial appeals and complaints to the General Assembly shall be adjudged only by the Standing Judicial Commission.  
**Grounds:** See *BCO* 42-8. *Adopted*
12. That the Assembly answer Overture 20 in the affirmative, as amended: *Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 20 From New River Presbytery**

"Instruct Committees and Agencies to Furnish Minutes"

**Whereas**, the Apostle Paul took great care in the administration of the church (and its funds) to take "precaution that no one should discredit us in our administration of this generous gift; for we have regard for what is honorable, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men" (2 Corinthians 8:20-21), and

**Whereas**, the Presbyterian Church in America declared itself to be a "Sunshine Denomination", and

**Whereas**, the Third General Assembly declared that "all Permanent Committee meeting may be attended by any member of the PCA and that such members shall be afforded a place on the Committee's docket when a request to do so is received by the Committee at least ten days before the Committee meeting, and that the dates of stated Committee meetings must be published at least 30 days prior to the meeting" (Minutes, p. 90, 3-77,15), and

**Whereas**, the meetings are thereby public meetings and their records are public records, and

**Whereas**, this past year a member of the PCA has been denied copies of the Permanent Committees' minutes prior to the Annual meeting of the General Assembly, and

**Whereas**, such denial violates the purpose of being a "Sunshine Denomination" by withholding information for months on matters of interest to the members of the PCA;

**Therefore** be it resolved that the Nineteenth General Assembly instruct its committees and agencies [to] promptly to furnish their committee-approved minutes (other than executive session) to any member of the PCA in good standing who so requests, at his expense.

13. That the Assembly answer Overture 22 in the affirmative, as amended:

### **OVERTURE 22 From the New River Presbytery**

"Amend 24-5 to Permit Session to Ordain Elders and Deacons"

**Whereas**, "Elders being of one class of office, ruling elders possess the same authority and eligibility to office in the courts of the church as teaching elders" *BCO* 8-9; and

**Whereas**, "To the office of deacon, which is spiritual in nature, shall be chosen men of spiritual character, honest repute, exemplary lives, brotherly spirit, warm sympathies, and sound judgment." *BCO* 9-3; and

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**Whereas**, it may be desirable in some instances to have greater participation of ruling elders [and deacons] in the ordination and installation of ruling elders and deacons; and

**Whereas**, there are many capable, knowledgeable, and articulate persons on the Sessions [and Diaconates] of local churches;

**Therefore**, be it resolved that the Nineteenth General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America initiate the following changes in the *Book of Church Order*:

1. Amend the first sentence in the third paragraph of *BCO* 24-5 by deleting the words "the minister shall proceed to set apart the candidate, with prayer" and inserting [there] the words "the candidate shall then be set apart, with prayer by the minister or any other Session member"; so that it reads as follows: "The members of the church having answered this question in the affirmative, by holding up their right hands, the candidate shall then be set apart, with prayer by the minister or any other Session member and the laying on of hands of the Session, to the office of ruling elder (or deacon)",
2. Amend the last paragraph sentence by deleting the words "he" and inserting in its place the words "the minister or any other member of the Session [(or a member of either the Session or Diaconate in the ordination and/or installation of a deacon)]"; the paragraph sentence shall then read "after which the minister or any other member of the Session [(or a member of either the Session or Diaconate in the ordination and/or installation of a deacon)] shall give to the ruling elder (or deacon) and to the church an exhortation suited to the occasion."

*Referred to CCB and deferred to the 20th GA*

14. That the Assembly answer Overture 27 in the affirmative as amended:

### **OVERTURE 27 From the Presbytery of New River**

"Amend *BCO* 15-4 So as to Limit Membership on SJC"

**Whereas**, all men, even Christian men, are weak and sinful creatures; and,

**Whereas**, the light of nature and observation of history makes it clear that it is unwise for too few men to hold too much authority; and,

**Whereas**, as Presbyterians we believe in parity of all elders in the government and discipline of the Presbyterian Church in America; and

**Whereas**, Providence has indicated the value of the separation of the powers of government in these United States;

**Therefore be it resolved**, that the 19th General Assembly vote to amend the *Book of Church Order*[ 15-4 by adding at the end of the paragraph the following:]

[No person may serve concurrently on the General Assembly's Standing Judicial Commission and any of the General Assembly's permanent committee.]

14-1 (12) so that it read as follows:

Persons who have served for a full term, or for at least two years of a partial term on one of the Assembly's permanent committees or agencies or a standing commission shall not be eligible for re-election to an Assembly committee or

## JOURNAL

standing commission until one year has elapsed. (Exceptions may be permitted in agency Bylaws approved by the Assembly.)

And also amend RAO 4-6 as follows: "No individual shall serve on more than one Assembly committee, standing commission, or agency at one time. . . ."

*Referred to CCB and deferred to the 20th GA*

15. That the Assembly answer Overture 28 by reference to the Assembly's action of adopting the press release under 19-16, recommendation 7 (see page 63). *Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 28 From the Presbytery of Central Georgia** "Reaffirm Position on Homosexuality"

**Whereas**, the Presbyterian Church in America has declared as follows:

- "1. The act of homosexuality is a sin according to God's Word;
2. Churches should actively seek to lead the homosexual person to sanctification in Jesus Christ, according to I Corinthians 6:11; and
3. In the light of the Biblical view of its sinfulness, a practicing homosexual continuing in his sin would not be a fit candidate for ordination or membership in the Presbyterian Church in America." (Minutes, Fifth General Assembly, p. 69) and

**Whereas**, the Presbyterian Church [in the] (United States of America) [(PCUSA)] at its [next] 1991 General Assembly [will be considering] considered a highly publicized report of a special committee declaring that there should be no automatic condemnation of "any sexual relations in which there is genuine equality and mutual respect" and that "gays and lesbians be received and accepted as full participant members in the life of the church" and that "ordination to church office be open to all members . . . regardless of their sexual orientation ..." and

**Whereas**, many people do not understand that there are different Presbyterian denominations, and that the Presbyterian Church in America is not related to the Presbyterian Church [in the] (United States of America), **Therefore Be It Resolved** that the Nineteenth General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America meeting in Birmingham, Alabama, reaffirm the position of the Fifth General Assembly and that the General Assembly make known the reaffirmation of this position to the public news media.

16. That the Assembly answer Overture 38 in the affirmative as amended:

### **OVERTURE 38 From Eastern Carolina Presbytery**

"Appoint Study Committee: 'Are Drama and Liturgical Dance Consistent with Doctrine of Worship?'"

[That Eastern Carolina Presbytery overture the 19th General Assembly: (1) to appoint a Committee to look into the use of drama and liturgical dance in the public worship of God, specifically whether such a practice is consistent with the doctrine of Worship taught in the Confession of Faith and Catechisms, and (2) That \$5,000 be appropriated for support of this Committee, the amount to be prorated from the four permanent Committees of the Assembly.]

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### **Regarding the practices of dance and drama in worship:**

Whereas, the use of these practices, especially drama, has spread throughout the denomination; and

Whereas, these worship practices have caused great controversy and much consternation in many places in the PCA; and

Whereas, some mission churches sponsored by the MNA Committee of the General Assembly have regularly used drama as a part of worship; and

Whereas, at the 17th General Assembly, a dramatic play was made an integral part of the Sabbath morning worship service, which action was vigorously protested,

Now Therefore Be It Resolved that the 19th General Assembly instruct the Nominating Committee to recommend seven names for an ad interim committee to look into the use of drama and liturgical dance in the public worship of God, specifically whether such practices are consistent with the Scriptures and with the doctrine of worship taught in the Confession of Faith and Catechisms, that this committee be funded by designated gifts up to \$5,000 and that this committee report to the 20th General Assembly.

**Notation:** We believe this to be an issue of such significance and potential divisiveness that the Assembly should address this issue now. Particular attention should be paid to the regulative principle of worship as described in the confessional standards.

A procedural motion was *Adopted* to postpone to the 20th General Assembly to be docketed by the Assembly to be considered directly by the Assembly in a timely manner so that the Nominating Committee will have time if the overture passes.

*Adopted*

17. That the Assembly answer Overture 39 in the affirmative as amended:

### **OVERTURE 39 From Northeast Presbytery**

"Establish Ad Interim Committee to Plan 350th Anniversary of  
WCF"

**Whereas,** the year 1993 will mark the 350th anniversary of the convening of the Westminster Assembly and of the Solemn League and Covenant; and

**Whereas,** the Southern Presbyterian Church in 1897 marked the 250th anniversary of the completion of the Westminster Standards with special addresses at the General Assembly and the printing of those speeches in a volume; and

**Whereas,** we should praise God for His mighty acts in history;

**Now Therefore Be It Resolved** that the 19th PCA General Assembly does the following:

1. Provide for [two or three] plenary addresses at [the] each General Assembly starting in 1993 and continuing until 1997, on topics such as these:
  - a. Historical Background of the Westminster Assembly
  - b. The Solemn League and Covenant
  - c. The Westminster Assembly Itself
  - d. The Catechisms of the Westminster Assembly

## JOURNAL

- e. The Doctrinal Contents of the Westminster Confession of Faith
  - f. The Doctrine of Worship in the Westminster Standards
  - g. The Westminster Standards and Missions
  - h. The Westminster Standards in Relation to Family and Social Life
  - i. The Westminster Standards and Civil Government
  - j. The Westminster Standards in Relation to Current Theological Issues
2. [Appoint a special ad-hoc committee of two teaching elders and two ruling elders to co-ordinate the planning for these events, the budget for said committee for planning purposes to be \$200 annually and to be funded from the Christian Education & Publications budget.]
- Instruct the Nominating Committee to recommend members for a special AC sub-committee of two teaching elders and two ruling elders to be elected by this General Assembly, to work with the 1993-1997 Assembly Arrangements Committees to coordinate the planning for these event.
3. Establish the following guidelines:
- a. Speakers shall be paid for their services, with funds for such coming from fees for General Assembly arrangements.
  - b. Consideration will be given to scheduling joint meetings with the highest judicatories of other conservative Reformed denominations to join us in these celebrations.
  - c. Consideration will be given to gathering the essays into a book to be published by CE/P.

*Procedural motion Adopted to refer directly to 20th GA*

18. That the General Assembly, in accordance with RAO 10-10, **take no action** on Overture 40 from TE Herbert Shipman.

**Grounds:** Northeast Presbytery has not had ample opportunity to consider this overture and has not yet acted.

*Adopted*

### **OVERTURE 40 From TE Herbert Shipman**

"Declare Ordination of Deaconesses to Be In Violation of *BCO*"

**Whereas**, we must guard the flock against ungodly movements of the world; and  
**Whereas**, we must protect the church against attempts to subvert the constitution; and

**Whereas**, there have been reports of attempts to subvert the Constitution with regard to the role of women in the church;

**Now Therefore Be It Resolved**, that the Northeast Presbytery hereby overtures the 19th Presbyterian Church in America General Assembly to declare the congregational election of deaconesses, (see *BCO* 9-7) Deaconesses sitting in a Board of Deaconesses and voting with Deacons, (see *BCO* 9-4) and any other than Elders and Deacons being set apart by prayer and the laying on of hands, (see *BCO* 17-2) are in violation of the *Book of Church Order*.

The above Overture to the 19th General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America was presented in a timely fashion to the May 10 and 11, 1991, meeting of the Northeast Presbytery, yet it was not acted upon. Therefore, it is being submitted for most urgent consideration.

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

It is my hope that if the reports we have heard be true, a clear declaration by the General Assembly at this time will provide correction and avoid division within the churches in the near future.

God's blessing on you,  
/s/ TE Herbert Shipman

19. That the Assembly answer Overture 41 in the affirmative as amended. *Adopted*

**OVERTURE 41 From Heritage Presbytery** (Substitute for Overture 16 now Vacated) "Calling a Day of Thanksgiving for War Victory"

[**Whereas**, Almighty God has graciously granted the United States and Allied forces a swift and decisive victory over the forces of Iraq; and

**Whereas**, in the providence of God the casualties on the Allied side were kept to a minimum; and

**Whereas**, the President of the United States has called for a special day of celebration to be held July 4, 1991, in honor of this victory;

**Therefore, Be It Resolved** that the 19th General Assembly of the PCA, in accord with Scriptural example, Historic precedent from Colonial America, and also in accord with its Book of Church Order, Chapter 62, calls for a general Day of Thanksgiving to God for July 4, 1991; and

**Further** that the General Assembly instructs its Stated Clerk to send copies of the above Resolution to the President of the United States and all members of Congress as well as the leading members of the Military command.

And Further Resolved that the General Assembly commits itself afresh to the evangelization of the Muslim world and hereby so instructs its Mission to the World Committee to make this a priority for future new works.

**Furthermore**, the Stated Clerk of General Assembly is instructed to send a copy of this resolution to each Church of the PCA via First Class mail within one week of the close of the Assembly.]

**Whereas**, Almighty God has graciously granted a swift end to the war in the Persian Gulf, and

**Whereas**, in the providence of God the casualties of this war were kept to a minimum;

**Therefore, Be it resolved** that the 19th General Assembly of the PCA, in accord with Scriptural example and BCO Chapter 62, calls for a general day of thanksgiving to God on July 7, 1991; and

That thanksgiving specifically focus on the graciousness of God for answering the prayers of his people for peace; and

That thanksgiving be tempered with intercessory prayer on behalf of the many individuals and families who suffered loss during the war, as well as for restoration from devastation caused to the environment in that region.

**Be it further resolved** that the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly be instructed to communicate this resolution to the churches by the most expedient as well as economical means.

20. That we answer Personal Resolution 2 (19-30, p. 80) in the negative. *Adopted*

## JOURNAL

### **Grounds:**

- 1) Each committee of commissioners has a manual
- 2) The RAO gives specific guidelines as to what is to be provided
- 3) A summary of the General Assembly actions is found in the minutes

### **Personal Resolution 2** from RE Robert H. Miller

I move that the stated clerk be instructed to furnish to each member of each committee of commissioners a copy of the charter or statement of mission of the corresponding permanent committee or agency, together with a summary of GA actions touching the assigned work of the committee or agency; this action to be effective starting with the 20th General Assembly.

TE Mike Chastain, RE Rick Olson, and RE George Pauley requesting their negative votes be recorded.

21. That we answer Personal Resolution 4 (19-30, p. 80) **in the negative.** *Adopted*  
Grounds: The General Assembly believes its permanent committees, commissions, and agencies are sensitive to this issue.

### **Personal Resolution 4** from TE C. Michael Chastain.

**Whereas** there are many competing truth claims of salvation, but only one truth of salvation; and

**Whereas** there are many competing groups promoting their claims offering salvation through one medium or another; and

**Whereas** the distinction of the gospel of Jesus Christ is the only truth of salvation and must be proclaimed in an arena with great competition; and

**Whereas** to support through our patronage those who proclaim a competing gospel increases the strength of falsehood and Satan;

**Be it resolved that** the permanent committees be instructed by the General Assembly not to patronize the facilities of known cult groups as they are in direct competition with the historic Christian faith for the glory of God and the salvation of men.

TE Mike Chastain, RE Rick Olson, and RE George Pauley requesting their negative votes be recorded.

22. That we answer Personal Resolution 8 (19-36, p. 89) in the affirmative as follows:

### **Personal Resolution 8** from TE Grover E. Gunn.

[Whereas, the PCA has always desired for the committee of commissioners to provide a grassroots check and balance for General Assembly's permanent committees; and

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Whereas, the ability of the committees of commissioners to be an effective check and balance will be lessened if their role is changed from evaluation and recommendation to advice; and

Whereas, the PCA must not so centralize power in the permanent committees in the name of practical efficiency has to tempt the permanent committees with elitism and hegemony; and

Whereas, the PCA has historically agreed with the Thornwellian position that the work of the Church is to be done by the Church through committees under the direct oversight of the Church and not through semi-autonomous boards;

Therefore,] **Now Be It Resolved** that the Nineteenth General Assembly begin the process to amend the *Book of Church Order* by adding the following paragraph:

**14-1-15** All business shall ordinarily come to the floor of the Assembly for final action through committees of commissioners, except reports of the Standing Judicial Commission, the Committee on Constitutional Business, the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records, the Nominating Committee, and ad interim committees, which shall report directly to the Assembly.

*Referred to CCB and deferred to the 20th GA*

Respectfully submitted,

/s/ TE Henry E. Johnson, Chairman

/s/ TE Frank J. Smith, Secretary

### COMMISSIONERS PRESENT:

#### **Presbytery**

Ascension  
Calvary  
Central Carolina  
Covenant  
Evangel  
Grace  
Heartland  
James River  
Louisiana  
Mississippi Valley  
New River  
North Georgia  
North Texas  
Northeast  
Northern California  
Northern Illinois  
Pacific Northwest  
Palmetto  
Philadelphia  
Potomac  
South Texas

#### **Commissioner**

TE Jerry Maguire  
RE Collie Lehn  
TE Joe Sullivan  
TE Mike Biggs  
RE Michael Russell  
TE E. C. Case  
TE Timothy Diehl  
TE Kerry Hurst  
RE Sterling Harrell  
RE Gene McRoberts  
TE Don Clements  
TE John Jerguson  
TE Dave Sherwood  
TE Frank J. Smith, Secretary  
TE David Brown  
TE Bruce Dunn  
TE Jack Collins  
RE Mac Cash  
RE George Harris  
RE Russell Doig  
TE Ron Rowe



## JOURNAL

Southeast Alabama  
Southern Florida  
Warrior  
Westminster

RE Mac Gardner  
RE Blair Littlejohn  
TE Fredric Mau  
TE Henry E. Johnson, Chairman

(Tennessee Valley was represented by RE Bruce Finney, who was not a commissioner.)

The moderator ruled that **Recommendations 2, 4, 7, 9, 13, 14, and 22** be referred to the Constitutional Business Committee for advice on the constitutionality of the proposed amendments to the 20th General Assembly. The ruling of the moderator was appealed and was sustained. TE Frank J. Smith requested his negative vote be recorded.

The report as a whole was *Adopted*, with an amendment that the Assembly express thanks to God for the devoted work of TE Henry Johnson as chairman and TE Frank J. Smith as secretary of the Committee of Commissioners on Bills and Overtures and our warmest appreciation and brotherly love in Christ for their service to the Committee and Assembly.

### **19-68 Report on PCA Communications**

This report, to be given by TE Paul Settle, was by consent deferred until the 20th General Assembly.

### **19-69 Committee on Thanks**

The report of the Committee was received and ordered spread on the minutes.

We the commissioners of the Nineteenth General Assembly, gratefully rejoice that our Faithful, Omniscient, Sovereign Lord has said,

"But when you do a charitable deed, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, that your charitable deed may be in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will Himself reward you openly." Matthew 6:34.

It would be futile for us to attempt to thank each of our worthy brothers and sisters for their selfless sacrifices given to make this General Assembly possible. In directing our thanks to some highly visible workers, we run the risk of not honoring many others who are equally deserving of public thanks. We deem it appropriate to direct our thanks to Almighty God, Who alone is worthy of all praise for His goodness in raising up workers for His Kingdom.

We are especially thankful to our Sovereign Lord for providing this General Assembly these most adequate and pleasing facilities at Briarwood Presbyterian Church. Truly, He alone knows the countless charitable deeds offered by His local servants in making this event an unqualified success. We ask you to stand with us in applauding the good work of these faithful servants.

Presbyters in the permanent committees and in the committees of commissioners have given exceedingly of themselves as they have sought the smile of their Creator and not the praise of men. We are thankful for the spirit of unity we are commanded to have even as we disagree. This diversity is surely a means for us to be to one another as "iron sharpens iron". Proverbs 27:17. We rejoice that the Sustainer of the Universe has given us the diversity of gifts and insights we have in the PCA. The Apostle Paul reminds us of the blessing of this diversity:

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

"There are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. There are differences of ministries, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of activities, but it is the same God who works all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to each one for the profit of all . . ." 1 Corinthians 12:4-7.

Our staff members have been tireless, obliging and courteous without end. Our leaders have led us and served us with compassion and with fairness. A host of other faithful saints have quietly and willingly given service to the children of the King.

These give us cause to join the Apostle Paul who wrote,

"We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers, remembering without ceasing your work of faith, labor of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ in the sight of our God and Father . . ." 1 Thessalonians 1:2-3.

We close this humble tribute by properly directing it solely to the King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

"The works of His hands are verity and justice; all His precepts are sure. They stand fast forever and ever, and are done in truth and uprightness. He has sent redemption to His people; He has commanded His covenant forever: holy and awesome is His name." Psalm 111:7-9.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE Michael Preg  
/s/ RE Jule Robbe  
/s/ RE M. Dale Peacock, Chairman

### **19-70 Committee on Review of Presbytery Records**

TE Robert Peterson, chairman, led in prayer and presented the Committee's report.

#### **I. A list of the Presbytery Minutes received by the Committee**

(See IV below)

#### **II. A list of the Presbyteries which have not submitted Minutes**

Korean Central, Korean Eastern, Korean Southeastern, Korean Southern, Korean Southwest, Grace (See note under IV)

#### **III. Recommendations regarding the Korean Language Presbyteries**

In that the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records has had little success in receiving translated minutes from the five (5) Korean Language Presbyteries, and in that General Assembly will evaluate its relationship with these Presbyteries in 1992, it is recommended that General Assembly ask its MNA Committee to add these concerns of the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records to its evaluation and to consider among other possibilities those of allowing the five (5) Korean Language Presbyteries to review their minutes at General Assembly among themselves in their own language and placing higher priority on translating the *BCO* and *RAO* into the Korean language; and that the GA encourage the Korean Language Presbyteries that they send observers to attend the work of the Committee of Review. *Adopted*

**IV. A Report concerning the Minutes of each Presbytery**

Commendation:

We commend the following Presbyteries for Minutes approved without exceptions of substance or form:

Central Carolina, Central Georgia, Eastern Canada, Mississippi Valley, New River, North Georgia, South Texas and Westminster.

1. That the Minutes of **Ascension** Presbytery:

a. Be approved without exceptions for - **May 4-5, 1990; July 14, 1990; March 9, 1991.**

b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:

**November 10, 1990**

**September 14-15, 1990:**

1) Page 13, Presbytery appointed a moderator of Session without consent of Session *BCO* 12-3

**January 11-12, 1991:**

2) Page 5, 91-5 No mention of candidate for licensure actually preaching before presbytery or committee.

*Adopted*

2. That the Minutes of **Calvary** Presbytery:

a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**

b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:

**April 26, 1990:**

1) p. 7 Not clear if examinations are for ordination, licensure, or transfer at time of examination.

**July 28, 1990:**

2) p. 7 (#1) No record *BCO* 19-8, 9,10 were fulfilled in approving man for internship

#2 Not enough information on candidate to know if all of *BCO* 18-7 has been fulfilled. Not enough information given for men taken under care to know if *BCO* 18-2 has been fulfilled.

3) p. 8 For ordination: No record of exegetical and theological papers having been done or that sermon was preached. *BCO* 21-4 b.c.d. 19-2d.

4) p. 11 Licentiates not addressed by moderator, nor is authorized form used to record action in minutes. *BCO* 19-4

5) p. 12 1,2,3,4 Appendix D1 gives no details - when the Committee met as a commission. No record when they met, where they met, who attended, whether there is a quorum. No standing rules to determine if committee can act as a commission.

**September 8, 1990:**

6) p. 1 No record of the purpose of a called meeting. *RAO* 14-10 d 2.

**October 25, 1990:**

7) p. 4 Not enough information to know if *BCO* 18-2 was fulfilled.

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- 8) p. 10 #8 Presbytery ordained a man, but not all elements of *BCO* 21-4 were done. Also do not know to what ministry he is called.
- 9) p. 11 No indication that candidates were addressed according to *BCO* 19-4.

**January 26, 1991:**

- 10) p. 122 Not clear if examinations are for ordination, licensure or transfer at time of examination.
- 11) p. 3 Commission report not adopted by presbytery, 15-1, not dismissed.
- 12) p. 5 Proper form for licensure not given 19:4
- 13) p. 6 A candidate for ordination not examined here or earlier on church history. *BCO* 21-4a7
- 14) p. 6 Commission's report not adopted, Appendix lacks proper information.
- 15) p. 7 No quorum listed for commission *BCO* 15-1
- 16) p. 8 Presbytery violated *BCO* 34-10 in not following up on absent TE for 7 years. Used wrong provision of *BCO* to remove him from office. *BCO* 34-10 applies not 38-2

**GENERAL:**

- 17) p. 13 No listing of exceptions taken to sessional records.
- 18) RAO 14-10 h No directory, roll, or standing rules.

*Adopted*

3. That the Minutes of **Central Carolina** Presbytery:
  - a. Be approved without exceptions for - **July 21, 1990; October 27, 1990; January 26, 1991; April 27, 1991.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **NONE**

*Adopted*

4. That the Minutes of **Central Florida** Presbytery:
  - a. Be approved without exceptions for - **October 20, 1990.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**April 15, 1989; July 18, 1989**  
**October 20, 1989:**
    - 1) Page 6 48-8.F 7) 9) No record on candidates completing exegesis and theology papers or having completed internship for ordination. *BCO* 21-4  
**January 16, 1990:**
    - 2) 49-9.2 No record of candidate for ordination completing exegesis and theology papers or having completed internship *BCO* 21-4  
**April 21, 1990:**
    - 3) 50-10 B.3;4.a No mention of theology or exegetical papers for those being ordained and no mention of written sermon for licentiates *BCO* 21-4; 19-2d

## JOURNAL

### **July 17, 1990:**

- 4) 51-10.c 3) Commission consisting of 3 TE and 1 RE contrary to *BCO* 15-2

### **January 15, 1991:**

- 5) Page 2 53-12.A.4 *BCO* 45-5 Protest was not recorded, no explanation given.

### **GENERAL:**

- 6) *RAO* 14-10 h. No directory, roll, list of candidates or licentiates, no standing rules.
- 7) No report on interns *BCO* 19-12 in any minutes

*Adopted*

### 5. That the Minutes of **Central Georgia** Presbytery:

- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **April 10, 1990; June 13, 1990; July 21, 1990; October 9, 1990; January 19, 1991**
- b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: None

*Adopted*

### 6. That the Minutes of **Covenant** Presbytery:

- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **May 22, 1990; July 7, 1990;**
- b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:

#### **October 2, 1990:**

- 1) *BCO* 43-1-p. 92 Presbytery improperly ruled the complaint of Grace Presbyterian Church out of order. Rationale: The complaint was against the action of Presbytery in receiving a protest rather than the protest itself. It is proper to register a complaint against an action of presbytery. The phrase "Here the matter shall end..." (*BCO* 45-4) cited by presbytery in support of its action refers to the subject matter of a protest and not the act of receiving the protest.

*Adopted*

### 7. That the Minutes of **Eastern Canada** Presbytery:

- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **February 22-23, 1990; September 27-29, 1990.**
- b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **NONE**

*Adopted*

### 8. That the Minutes of **Eastern Carolina** Presbytery:

- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
- b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:

#### **April 21, 1990; July 21, 1990; October 20, 1990**

#### **May 19, 1990:**

- 1) Page 7, 70-76 & 79. Actions of Presbytery contradictory and unclear.

*Adopted*

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

9. That the Minutes of **Evangel** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **August 24, 1990; October 25, 1990; January 22, 1991.**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**May 8, 1990**
- Adopted*
10. That the Minutes of **Grace** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **NONE - 1989** Minutes were inadvertently sent for review a second time. Correct minutes arrived too late to be reviewed.
- Adopted*
11. That the Minutes of **Great Lakes** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **September 8-9, 1989; December 1-2, 1989; March 9-10, 1990; June 14, 1990; December 7-8, 1990.**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**March 10-11, 1989; September 14-15, 1990**
- Adopted*
12. That the Minutes of **Gulf Coast** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for: **May 5, 1990; August 14, 1990; October 9, 1990.**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**February 13, 1990:**
    - 90-11 Unclear if Presbytery licensed stated supply as required in *BCO* 19-1. There is no record of the examination parts being done. *BCO* 19-2. There is no record of a minister from another denomination answering the questions of *BCO* 19-3.**June 5, 1990:**
    - 90-40J The Presbytery cannot delegate the task of examining a person for licensure to a commission. There is no record of such commission having voted as a commission. *BCO* 19-2
- Adopted*
13. That the Minutes of **Heartland** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **August 17-18, 1990; March 15, 16, 1991.**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**November 9-10, 1990:**  
**GENERAL:** No attachments to minutes included. *BCO* 13-10.
- Adopted*

## JOURNAL

14. That the Minutes of **Heritage** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**.
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**November 17, 1990; February 9, 1991**  
**May 12, 1990:**
    - 1) Page 12, 10.2 A candidate for licensure's exception to the standards (it is not necessary to observe the whole day as holy unto the Lord) compromises a fundamental of our system of doctrine. WCF 21-8, LC 115-120, SC 57-62, *BCO* 48-1-7.**September 8, 1990:**
    - 2) Page 18, 9.2 Exception taken by a teaching elder from another denomination to standards compromises a fundamental of our system of doctrine. WCF 21-8, LC 115-120, SH 57-62, *BCO* 48-1-7.
    - 3) Page 18, 9.3 No mention of academic qualifications or examination in original languages. *BCO* 21-4.

*Adopted*
15. That the Minutes of **Illiana** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **April 7, 1990; July 2, 1990; August 24, 1990; November 26, 1990; January 12, 1991.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**October 13, 1990:**
    - 1) p. 264, P 1 Presbytery divided itself into 3 parts to examine two ordinands and one licentiate. This is contrary to *BCO* 15-2 and *BCO* 21-4.

*Adopted*
16. That the Minutes of **James River** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **July 14, 1990; August 25, 1990; November 2-3, 1990.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**April 7, 1990; January 12, 1991**  
**GENERAL:**
    - 1) No report of interns at each stated meeting.
    - 2) No yearly report from interns.
    - 3) No yearly report on candidates under care. *BCO* 21-6.

*Adopted*
17. That the Minutes of **Korean Central** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**GENERAL:** No minutes received.

*Adopted*

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

18. That the Minutes of **Korean Eastern** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**GENERAL:** No minutes received. *Adopted*
19. That the Minutes of **Korean Southeastern** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**GENERAL:** No minutes received. *Adopted*
20. That the Minutes of **Korean Southern** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**GENERAL:** No minutes received. *Adopted*
21. That the Minutes of **Korean Southwest** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**GENERAL;** No minutes received. *Adopted*
22. That the Minutes of **Louisiana Presbytery:**
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **January 27, 1990; April 28, 1990; October 27, 1990.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**July 28, 1990:**
    - 1) Page 5, Report of the Commission to Ordain and Install. *BCO-15-1* requires approval of commission's report to become action of the court and be entered into minutes. No such approval is mentioned. Also no motion to dissolve commission. *Adopted*
23. That the Minutes of **Mid-America** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **October 12, 1990.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**April 14, 1990** (Commission Report dated 3-8-90) p. 18
    - 1) Commission dismissed RE from service as an elder. The commission has authority to act as the session, only if this has been agreed to by the congregation. These minutes do not show whether or not this is the case. *BCO 15-2, 13-9.* *Adopted*



JOURNAL

24. That the Minutes of **Mississippi Valley** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **June 5, 1990; October 16, 1990; February 19, 1991.**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **NONE** *Adopted*
25. That the Minutes of **Missouri** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **July 20-21, 1990; October 20, 1990; January 19, 1991; April 20, 1990.**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**April 20, 1990:**
    - 1) First reading of Standing Rules change with no vote recorded. SR p.2 *Adopted*
26. That the Minutes of **New Jersey** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **November 17, 1990**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **May 19, 1990; September 18, 1990** *Adopted*
27. That the Minutes of **New River** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **March 9-10, 1990; July 13-14, 1990; November 9-10, 1990; January 19, 1991**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **NONE** *Adopted*
28. That the Minutes of **North Georgia** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **July 21, 1990; October 16, 1990; January 19, 1991; March 16, 1991; April 16, 1991.**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **None** *Adopted*
29. That the Minutes of **North Texas** Presbytery:
- Be approved without exceptions for - **July 27-28, 1990; October 26-27, 1990.**
  - Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **April 28-29, 1989; July 28-29, 1989; October 27-28, 1989; January 26-27, 1990; April 27-28, 1990. June 15, 1989:**
    - 1) p. 1 Minutes stated they are not official until approved by next stated meeting. No record of approval at next stated meeting found. *Adopted*

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

30. That the Minutes of **Northeast** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **May 11-12, 1990; July 7, 1990; January 11-12, 1991; April 6, 1991.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**August 11, 1990; January 11-12, 1991**  
**January 12, 13, 1990:**
    - 1) p. 30, 33-D Failure to cite Session for admitting children to communion without profession of faith. (BCO 6-2, -4 & 58-4)**September 14,15, 1990:**
    - 2) p. 25 (20.1) Ordination exam should not be in views, but knowledge. Other than theology, no other areas examined (BCO 21-4 a-d)**GENERAL:**
    - 1) No roll, directory, list of candidates or Standing Rules included.  
*Adopted*
31. That the Minutes of **Northern California** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**March 2-3, 1990; October 5-6, 1990**  
**GENERAL:**
    - 1) No Directory, Roll, or Standing Rules included during year.  
*Adopted*
32. That the Minutes of **Northern Illinois** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **November 2-3 1990**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**April 27-28, 1990**  
*Adopted*
33. That the Minutes of **Pacific** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **April 27-28, 1990; October 26, 1990; February 2, 1991.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**July 27-28, 1990:**
    - 1) No minutes submitted**March 16, 1991:**
    - 1) There is no record of those present at the meeting, nor is there a record that a quorum was present. RAO 14-10.C.6**General:**
    - 1) Directory was incomplete - lacked listing of committees. Roll was incomplete - lacked addresses of clerks of Session. No up-to-date copy of Standing rules was included.  
*Adopted*

JOURNAL

34. That the Minutes of **Pacific Northwest** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - April 28,29, 1989; September 8, 1989;
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**January 13-14, 1989; September 22-23, 1989; January 12-13, 1990; April 27-28, 1990; September 28-19, 1990**
    - 1) p. 19 #2 Commission erected to examine for licensure. *BCO* 19-2  
*Adopted*
35. That the Minutes of **Palmetto** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**January 25, 1990, April 26, 1990, July 26, 1990, October 25, 1990, November 15, 1990, December 6, 1990**  
**General:**
    - 1) *BCO* 19-12 No record of progress of interns included in the minutes.
    - 2) *BCO* 15-1 No reports of commissions or actions approving those reports appear.  
*Adopted*
36. That the Minutes of **Philadelphia** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**.
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the Presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **July 27, 1990; May 12, 1990:**
    - 1) par. 8 Commission did not declare a quorum present, did not elect chair and clerk and did not record who closed in prayer. No record of service of installation or who fulfilled various responsibilities.
    - 2) par. 15 No call approved or declaration that a TE will be free to teach the reformed faith *BCO* 8-7**September 8, 1990:**
    - 3) par. 11 No record that committee or presbytery heard and approved sermon *BCO* 19-2
    - 4) par. 16 Attachment 93A No record of congregational concurrence in dissolving call. *BCO* 23-1 Because cited for this last year.
    - 5) par. 19 Attachment 11 Presbytery minutes do not reflect that organizing congregation submitted petition to presbytery or that commission examined officer candidates. Commission minutes fail to list declaration of quorum, charter members taking vows, election of elders. *BCO* 5-8,9**November 10, 1990:**
    - 6) par. 6 Terms of call not listed. Nor is the record of his acceptance of call. Cited for similar infraction last year.**January 12, 1991:**
    - 7) par. 5 No record of roll. Unacceptable excuse in minutes. Cited for this last year. This is clerk's responsibility.

MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- 8) par. 7 Attachment #1 Improper commission report on a letter reporting is not minutes of commission.
- 9) par. 20 Various parts of exam not listed. No record of acceptance of call; No record of commission to install.

**March 9, 1991:**

- 10) par. 12 Various parts of an examination not listed. No declaration that out of bounds TE be allowed to teach Reformed Faith *BCO* 8-7

**GENERAL:**

- 1) No quorum declared. Applicable to all minutes.

*Adopted*

37. That the Minutes of **Potomac** Presbytery:

- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
- b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **September 14-15, 1990; February 9, 1991.**

**May 8, 1990:**

- 1) Section 19f No record that sermon preached or approved. No record of completed internship. No record of theological and exegetical papers being approved. *BCO* 21-4

**November 13, 1990**

- 1) Section 17 c and d No record of theological and exegetical papers. No record of internship. No record of completed education requirements for two of the ordinands. *BCO* 21-4

*Adopted*

38. That the Minutes of **Siouxlands** Presbytery:

- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
- b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **January 24-25, 1991**

**April 25-26, 1991:**

- 1) top of last page 1, 2nd paragraph. Minutes should be specific that Session consented to Presbytery's appointment of Sessional Moderator.

*Adopted*

39. That the Minutes of **South Coast** Presbytery:

- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**
- b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **April 27-28, 1990; December 22, 1990; February 1, 1991**

*Adopted*

40. That the Minutes of **South Texas** Presbytery:

- a. Be approved without exceptions for - June 30, 1990; **July 27-28, 1990; October 26-27, 1990; January 25-26, 1991; April 26-27, 1991.**
- b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **NONE**

*Adopted*

## JOURNAL

41. That the Minutes of **Southeast Alabama** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **June 11, 1990; October 23, 1990; January 22, 1991; March 14, 1991.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **April 24, 1990 July 10, 1990:**
    - 1) Enrollment has no mention of excused and unexcused absent churches.
- Adopted*
42. That the Minutes of **Southern Florida** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **January 15, 1991. July 17, 1990**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**April 1990:**
    - 1) p. 4 h. and i. (See page 10.20.a & b) Text of complaints omitted.**October 16, 1990:**
    - 1) p. 6. o-s. *BCO* 19-1 states that a minister from another denomination who is a stated supply must be examined for licensure. His examination did not include Bible content and *BCO*.
- Adopted*
43. That the Minutes of **Southwest Florida** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for - **September 18, 1990; November 10, 1990; February 11, 1991.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **January 8, 1991**
- Adopted*
44. That the Minutes of **Southwest** Presbytery:
- a. Be approved without exceptions for **NONE.**
  - b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**April 26-27, 1990:**
    - 1) Page 6 #17-4 Not in accord with *BCO* 20 to require a congregation to consult with Presbytery committee before calling a pastor. Preliminary principle #6, *BCO* 3-1, 11-3, and 13-9.
    - 2) Page 6 #16c No record of petition to be organized *BCO* 5-8-1.**September 26-27, 1990:**
    - 3) Page 7 #30 No record of petition to be organized *BCO* 5-81.
    - 4) Page 8 #35 *BCO* 31:1,2; 16-1,2 suspended elders without cause and took jurisdiction without consent of congregation.**January 31-February 1, 1991:**
    - 5) Page 4 #10g.2,a,c,f No record of commissions keeping a record of their proceedings or of them submitting them to the court.
    - 6) Page 5 No record of Presbytery authorization to dismiss TE's to other Presbyteries. *BCO* 20-9

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- 7) Page 13 #20 a.c. No complete record of dissolutions of pastoral relationships.

### **GENERAL:**

- 8) RAO 14.10 h.5. No up-to-date copy of standing rules of the Presbytery.  
9) No record of report of candidates under care.

*Adopted*

45. That the Minutes of **Susquehanna Valley** Presbytery:  
a. Be approved without exceptions for - **May 19, 1990; September 15, 1990; November 17, 1990.**  
b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **February 17, 1990**

*Adopted*

46. That the Minutes of **Tennessee Valley** Presbytery:  
a. Be approved without exceptions for - **January 13, 1990; February 10, 1990; July 10, 1990; August 21, 1990.**  
b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below:  
**April 7, 1990; October 9, 1990**

*Adopted*

47. That the Minutes of **Warrior** Presbytery:  
a. Be approved without exceptions for - **August 30, 1990; October 16, 1990; January 15, 1991.**  
b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **April 17, 1990 and July 17, 1990**

*Adopted*

48. That the Minutes of **Western Carolina** Presbytery:  
a. Be approved without exceptions for - **NONE**  
b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **March 12, 1991; July 21, 1990; November 10, 1990**

*Adopted*

49. That the Minutes of **Westminster** Presbytery:  
a. Be approved without exceptions for - **July 21, 1990; October 4, 1990; October 20, 1990; December 6, 1990; January 19, 1991.**  
b. Be approved with exceptions of form reported to the presbytery and exceptions of substance stated below: **NONE**

*Adopted*

## **V. Recommendations Concerning Responses**

1. Recommend that the 19th GA approve the following Presbyteries' responses to the exceptions taken by the 18th GA. On motion, the Stated Clerk was instructed to include the responses.

*Adopted*

## JOURNAL

### Ascension:

At its September, 1990, stated meeting, the Presbytery of the Ascension took the following actions with regard to the exceptions cited in our minutes by the 18th General Assembly.

a. Regarding May 5-6, 1989 - page 6, 89-45: "No record of commission to install."

The Presbytery respectfully disagrees with this exception and notes that the commission was erected at the next meeting (see July 8, 1989, p. 12, 89-72).

b. Regarding March 10, 1990 - page 15, 90-36: "Presbytery examined candidate for licensure on his views by a commission rather than from the floor (*BCO* 19-2.c, 15-2)."

Presbytery apologizes for its error which resulted from our apparent misunderstanding of *BCO* 15-2; and assures the Assembly that we will not repeat the error. Our understanding is that this exception did not require us to have Mr. Kistler repeat his licensure examinations before Presbytery as a whole. We will not omit any sections of his ordination examinations on the basis of his licensure examinations."

### Eastern Canada:

On Thursday, September 27, 1990, the Presbytery of Eastern Canada considered the report of exceptions to our minutes, and took the following actions:

"MSC that Presbytery respond to the 18th General Assembly's exception to our minutes of May 13, 1989, p. 254 "Commission to ordain -- quorum by Presbytery listed as one TE and one RE. *BCO* 15-2 requires two TEs and two REs as follows 'that Presbytery acknowledges its error, and will seek to avoid similar faults in future, and that we understand that a procedural error done in good faith does not invalidate the ordination.'"

### Grace:

Sixty-sixth (66th) Stated Meeting, August 11, 1990: Directed the Stated Clerk to respond to the General Assembly concerning exceptions and notations to the minutes of Grace Presbytery:

"The exceptions of substance taken by the 18th General Assembly and the responses of Grace Presbytery are:

Exception: '1) Page 39, 17.3.3 (sic): No record that TE being received from another denomination was asked the questions of *BCO* 21-5.'

Response: The citation should be to section 17.13.3. Paragraph 18 of this section reads: 'Appropriate constitutional questions for receiving a minister from another denomination were put to Mr. Shields. He answered all in the affirmative.'

While the minutes do not cite the *BCO* address, Grace presbytery would respectfully note that it did comply with the appropriate paragraphs of the *BCO* in receiving a minister from another denomination.

Exception: '2) Pages 68-69, 17.30.2: Moderator did not follow *BCO* 19-4 and 19-10 for applicant for licensure and internship.'

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Response: Grace Presbytery received information at its 62nd Stated meeting from its Probationary Candidates Committee that the applicant involved was applying for internship pending the Presbytery's approval of a call from a church session to serve his internship as a student supply (see 17.27.2 PROBATIONARY CANDIDATES COMMITTEE). While the Presbytery proceeded to receive the applicant as a candidate and approve him as a licentiate (see 17.30.2), he was not enrolled as an intern because the call had not been received from the church.

The Presbytery did follow *BCO* 19-4 (see 17.30.2, recommendation 2, paragraph 12. The minutes show that the questions of 19-3 were posed and answered and that the Moderator offered prayer as required in 19-4. Grace Presbytery acknowledges that the minutes fail to show that the Moderator addressed the applicants in the words of licensure (19-4). This was done.

Grace Presbytery would assert that it understands the portion of *BCO* 19-4 beginning with the words, "Record shall be made . . ." to be satisfied by the issuance to the licentiate of a certificate of licensure.

Is it the Assembly's position that the minutes should be encumbered with the statement of this and similar records whenever a man is taken under care, licensed, enrolled as a intern, or ordained?

At the 63rd Stated Meeting of Grace Presbytery, the call of the church was presented and approved (see 17.44.2). The applicant was enrolled as an intern in accordance with *BCO* 19-10 at the 63rd meeting effective the 62nd meeting. The Presbytery would take note with embarrassment that 17.44.2 also fails to show that this was done.

Grace Presbytery will attempt to avoid such omissions in the minutes in the future."

### **Great Lakes:**

Responses to the 18th General Assembly's Committee on Review and Control of Presbyteries (Document L).

(1) Special Called Meeting of May 22, 1989: Purpose of the meeting not given (p. 1), a list of unexcused members not given (p. 1), item discussed that is not on the docket (p.2), and no final action on a motion (p. 3). ANSWER: The acting clerk omitted these items while the Stated Clerk was overseas for eight months; it will not happen again.

(2) Special Called Meeting of July 17, 1989: Purpose of the meeting not given (p. 1) and a list of unexcused members not given (p. 1). ANSWER: The acting clerk omitted these items while the Stated Clerk was overseas for eight months; it will not happen again.

(3) General: The Minutes of the 1989 Stated Meetings (Spring, Fall, Winter) are to be resubmitted in 1991. ANSWER: This will be done before the next General Assembly.

On motion it was determined to make the above three answers the answers of Presbytery to the 19th General Assembly.



**Illiana:**

The Stated Meeting of Illiana of October 13, 1990: The clerk read to Presbytery the exceptions of substance as found in GA's section IV, part 16. which noted that Illiana had not included its directory, roll, or a list of candidates under care and licentiates. MSC - That the clerk correspond to GA explaining that Illiana Presbytery, due to relocations, has had three clerks in the six month period which included the time of sending required information to GA and in the confusion failed to submit the above, and will endeavor to take steps to see that the oversight is not repeated.

**James River:**

As to the exceptions of substance to the minutes of the James River Presbytery by the 18th General Assembly the following recommendations are made and were adopted by the Presbytery on November 2-3, 1990:

(1) Minutes of April 7-8, 1989:

- A. Examination not specified as to content. (*BCO* 13-6). The Presbytery respectfully agrees with the exception and promises to be more careful in the future.
- B. Motion to divest needs a 2/3 vote (*BCO* 34-10). The Presbytery agrees with the exception and promises to be more careful in the future.

(2) Minutes of October 14, 1989:

- A. No annual report of candidates under care (*BCO* 21-6). The Presbytery respectfully agrees with the exception and promises to be more careful in the future.
- B. Up-to-date copy of the Standing Rules of Presbytery not included in the minutes. The Presbytery respectfully agrees with the exception and promises to be more careful in the future.

**New Jersey:**

Response to Exceptions of GA (R & C) to Presbytery's minutes 1990:

Exception - September 16, 1989: (1) Page 125: No record of the membership and Assistance Committee being appointed a Commission. Page 133 says it was the direction of Presbytery, but no record of when, nor was quorum established.

Response: Presbytery acknowledges the failure to make sure its minutes adequately explained what took place here. The job description of the Membership and Assistance Committee, which was adopted by Presbytery (a copy of which was sent to the General Assembly's clerk's office for the Review and Control Committee), empowers the Membership and Assistance Committee to act for the Presbytery in between Presbytery meetings in dismissing ministers and other members of Presbytery. This job description appears in the minutes of Presbytery in Book #1 on page 39, number 32.8. It reads as follows:

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The committee has the authority to act as a commission of Presbytery in dissolving pastoral relationships in cases where the pastor and congregation formally concur or where no congregations are concerned, and to dismiss ministers, licentiates, or candidates to other presbyteries. The committee shall inform the stated clerk of this action and the clerk may then accomplish the appropriate letters."

Further, the job description failed to define the quorum. This oversight has now been corrected by action of Presbytery.

Exception - November 18, 1989: (2) Page 137: Report of Commission dated 9/25/89 is missing.

Response: This is an oversight of the clerk's office. This commission was originally authorized on May 21, 1988 (pg. 12 of minutes book #2). Its authorization was to organize the Mt. Carmel Church. The report dated 9/25/89 is the portion of the minutes of that commission that record the meeting at which the elders of the church were examined and approved for ordination. A copy of these minutes is in the Clerk's permanent files and will appear as an addendum to the present minutes. The rest of that commission's report appeared as an addendum to the 11/18/89 minutes as a commission report dated 11/19/89 (pg. 145).

Proposed Motion: That the job description of the M & A Committee as it appears on page 39 of Book #1 of the Presbytery's minutes, number 32.8., be amended by the addition of the following sentence, "The quorum for such commission functions shall always be at least two ruling and two teaching elders." (BCO 15-2).

Attest: The above two responses and motion were adopted by the Presbytery of New Jersey at the November 7, 1990 meeting.

### North Georgia:

I enclose copies of Presbytery's two answers to the exceptions of substance taken by the General Assembly to North Georgia Presbytery's minutes. These may be found in the minutes of July 21, 1990, and October 16, 1990, but I am presenting them at this time that you might have them together.

In addition I will comment on the exceptions of form as follows:

July 15, 1989: "No copy of complaint included in the record." - The complaint was ten legal pages and on page 5 of minutes you will find that at request of John White who made the complaint, it was postponed indefinitely after the subsequent action of Presbytery in the matter. Because of its length and because it was acted upon, I did not enter it in the minutes. A copy is filed with the minutes in my office for posterity.

October 17, 1989: (1) "Page 4: Bylaws amended contrary to section VIII of Presbytery Bylaws." The minutes state that this was to be a first reading and they were adopted later by the second reading. This is according to the Bylaws. (2) "Page 5: No copy of treasurer's report that was received." The same could be said of all the minutes for I never include the copy in the minutes. The statement: "The report was received and a copy filed with the minutes" is found in every case.

January 20, 1990: (1) "Page 3:5 "Examined for transfer": No indication of status to which persons are being transferred." Page 4 of the minutes indicates the calls of these men and the work to which they were called.

ALL: (1) "Copy of docket not included in the minutes." I never have included a copy of the docket and don't intend to. It is reflected in the minutes which follow and printing it would only add another page to the minutes and increase the cost of printing and mailing. (I mail enough copies to every church for every elder.) The notation concerning listing the details of a man's call is well taken and I have begun the practice suggested.

Exceptions to July 15, 1989 minutes: In response to the exception of substance which reads: "*BCO* 13-9 dissolution of pastoral relationship should be carried out under guidelines of Rules of Discipline, Part II, Chapters 27-46." to the July 15, 1989 minutes, adopted by the 18th General Assembly, North Georgia Presbytery would make the following report.

(1) North Georgia Presbytery would refer the Committee on Review of its action on April 18, 1989, which placed the Bethel Church on a mission status since there was no longer a Session in place and oversight of the mission was given to the MNA Committee of NGP. At that time, it was the sense of the Presbytery that the TE in question was considered an organizing pastor. As such, the TE serves at the call of the Presbytery which may terminate the call without the request of the mission church.

(2) *The Book of Church Order* provides for at least four ways for a pastoral relationship to be dissolved: at the request of the TE, at the request of the church, at the request of both, and/or by the action of a Presbytery where the interest of religion imperatively demands it (*BCO* 13-9). In the case of mission work, the congregation has not called the organizing pastor, the presbytery has. Thus, even if the interest of religion does not demand it, a presbytery, for reasons it believes are sufficient, could dissolve the relationship it has established by its call to a TE. While it has not been done even in this situation, NGP believes the *BCO* provides for a dissolution of the pastoral relationship between a teaching and the calling body, even without the request of one or both parties, if the interest of religion imperatively demands it.

(3) North Georgia Presbytery believes that the 18th General Assembly erred in approving the exception on the grounds that judicial process has to be accomplished for the dissolution to be effected. It appears to NGP that the 18th General Assembly believes that it the "interest of religion imperatively demands" the dissolution of the pastoral relationship, then there must be the need for judicial proceedings against the teaching elder. Such reasoning implies that the Assembly views dissolution as a censure of the church court. However, there are only four censures to be inflicted by the church courts and dissolution is not one of them (*BCO* 30-1). NGP grants that on occasion, a censure of an officer is followed by the dissolution of the relationship but that is never considered as an act of discipline (*BCO* 31-10).

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

(4) North Georgia Presbytery was extremely careful in the entire proceedings of this situation to follow the *Book of Church Order* and even cited the proper references in its Minutes of July 15, 1989. It is clear from those minutes that proper procedure was followed.

Therefore, North Georgia Presbytery respectfully requests that the Committee on Review of the 19th General Assembly find this response in order and that it request the 19th General Assembly to rescind the action of the 18th General Assembly in approving this exception to the minutes of July 15th, 1878 and that the exception be expunged from the Minutes of the 18th General Assembly.

In response to the Exception of substance taken by the 18th General Assembly "Presbytery accepted a committee's examination in lieu of an examination on the floor of Presbytery (BCO 13-6)" to the April 17, 1990, minutes, North Georgia Presbytery respectfully answers that exception with the following.

(1) The minutes of April 17, 1990, do not reflect accurately the actions taken by the Presbytery prior to the motion in question. As is the practice of the Presbytery, the Chairman of the Membership Committee had previously recommended that TE Jon Adams (PCA), Rev. Cho, and TE Thomas Waldecker (PCA) be examined by the Presbytery for transfer into NGP. Such recommendation was adopted without objection. Technically, NGP was examining the three men for transfer into the Presbytery at that point. Before the examination continued it was reported to NGP that the Membership Committee had sustained the three men's committee examinations in the areas of Christian experience, and their views in theology, the Sacraments, and church government by a vote of 4-0-0. Rev. Cho was examined by the Presbytery first and his examination was sustained. Rev. Adams and Rev. Waldecker were examined by the Presbytery beginning with their Christian experience. The examination was interrupted by a motion from the floor as recorded in the April 17, 1990, minutes. Since the examination was in process on the floor of the Presbytery, and since the motion came from the Presbytery itself, NGP does not believe it was remiss in its action to receive the two PCA Teaching Elders into NGP. While it might have been more precise to have the motion read "It was moved to sustain the examination and receive them into the Presbytery" NGP believes it was more correct to reflect that an examination had taken place rather than have a properly worded motion which implies that questions and answers were given when in fact that was not the case.

(2) Further, NGP believes that the *Book of Church Order* 13-6 does not contain any express provisions mandating that transfer examinations be conducted by the Presbytery or even on the floor of presbytery as is the case for licentiates and ordinands.

*BCO* 13-6 reads: "Ministers seeking admission to a Presbytery shall be examined on Christian experience, and also touching their views in theology, the Sacraments, and church government. If applicants come from other denominations, the Presbytery shall also require them to answer in the affirmative the questions put to candidates at their

## JOURNAL

ordination. Ordained ministers from other denominations being considered by presbyteries for reception may come under the extraordinary provisions set forth in *BCO* 21-4.

This language is quite different from that of *BCO* 19-2 which appears to demand that licensure examinations must be conducted before the Presbytery (see especially 19-2, A.B.C.D.) and from that of *BCO* 21-4 which appears to demand that portions of the ordination examination must be conducted before the Presbytery (see especially D.)

The 16th General Assembly provided the precedent for making strict interpretations of the *BCO* on the basis of the express provisions of that part of our Constitution. When asked whether the sentence, "He shall further be required to preach a sermon before Presbytery." allowed presbyteries to divide into committees to hear ordination sermons, the Assembly responded: "*BCO* 21-4 does not permit presbyteries simply to divide into committees or parts in order to hear the sermons of candidates for ordination. It would not be contrary to the express provisions of the *BCO* to divide a presbytery into commissions." [Minutes of the 16th General Assembly, 16-9, V, 6, p. 165]

By this ruling the Assembly has provided the precedent for using the express provisions of the *BCO* in order to interpret what is found or even not found in the *BCO*. North Georgia Presbytery would call upon the Committee on Review to take the same principle of interpretation and apply it to *BCO* 13-6. No express provision such as "by the Presbytery" or "on the floor of Presbytery" or "before the Presbytery" is found to govern the transfer examinations. Since *BCO* 13-6 is imprecise, presbyteries should have the ability to conduct the examinations in ways which they believe best serve their particular circumstances. While many in the PCA might wish the express provisions to be in 13-6, they are not. Until they are, NGP believes it was proper in its action of April 17, 1990.

(3) However, NGP recognizes that it will be a full year before this response is received by the 19th General Assembly and wishes to handle the matter in a way which is fair to all but especially to TEs Adams and Waldecker. Therefore, without admitting that its interpretation of *BCO* 13-6 is in error, NGP at its July 21, 1990 meeting took the following actions in regard to the exception:

- a. Voted to adopt this response and send it to the Stated Clerk of the PCA.
- b. Voted to rescind the action to accept the Membership Committee's examination in lieu of examination on the floor.
- c. Voted to correct the Minutes of April 17, 1990 to reflect that Adams and Waldecker were being examined by the Presbytery at the Membership Committee's recommendation.
- d. Voted to receive TEs Adams and Waldecker into the Presbytery based upon the examination conducted on April 17, 1990.

North Georgia Presbytery respectfully requests that the Committee on Review of the 19th General Assembly find this response in order, agree with its interpretation of *BCO* 13-6, and request that the 19th

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

General Assembly rescind the action of the 18th General Assembly in approving this exception to the Minutes of April 17, 1990.

### **Northeast:**

The following responses were adopted at the September 14-15, 1990 Stated Meeting to the exceptions taken by the 18th General Assembly and are hereby submitted for your consideration.

Recommend that Northeast Presbytery respond to the exceptions of substance taken by the 18th General Assembly as follows:

July 29, 1989: (1) Page 6 (3): No listing of TE's exception to *WCF*.  
Context: examination of Rev. Michael Alford for reception.

Response: Presbytery agrees with the exception and promised to be more careful in the future. Presbytery carefully reviewed Rev. Alford's exceptions. The exceptions are listed here for the record.

1. *WCF* 21:5, which reads in part, "singing of psalms with grace in the heart," if this excludes the signing of hymns and spiritual songs.
2. *WCF* 21:8, which reads in part, "but also taken up the whole time in public and private exercises of his worship." Mr. Alford objects to the strict Sabbatarian interpretation of the words 'the whole time in worship,' in that other activities such as recreational reading are acceptable.
3. *WCF* 28:7, which reads, "the sacrament of baptism is but once to be administered to any person." Mr Alford believes that people who were baptized into non-evangelical churches, such as the Bahai Faith or in certain cases the Roman Catholic Church, may be baptized. Adopted.

(2) Page 7 (7) (8) and page (10): Business acted upon that was not set forth in the call (*BCO* 23-1).

Context: Item (7) - Report of Representatives to bear Complaint to General Assembly; Item (8) - New Business, erasure of Rev. Stanley Kwong; Item (10) - Report of Fraternal Delegate.

Response: Presbytery agrees with this exception and promises to be more careful in the future. The root of this problem is that Presbytery was unable to call an Adjourned meeting at its May 1989 meeting, because it could not determine a meeting place. Presbytery then determined to have a Called Meeting to deal with various items of business, once a meeting place was found. Items (7) and (10) were listed as 7. and 8. of the Docket published in the Call. Item (10) was directed at the May 1989 Stated Meeting Minutes Item (37). Only Item (8) was not set forth in the Call. This item was considered as a matter of convenience. Since all the work on that item directed at the May 12-13, 1989, meeting had been completed (Minutes page 17, Item 32), it was considered so as to relieve the docket for the next Stated Meeting. The rights of the minister in question were not violated in that he had requested to be dismissed from the PCA. Refer Minutes May 12-13, 1989, page 8, Correspondence Item 11. Presbytery would have been better served if it had called an Adjourned Meeting. Adopted.

## JOURNAL

September 29-30, 1989: (3) Page 29 (41)1: *BCO* 32-2 requires full concurrence of Presbytery within whose bounds a TE is laboring out of bounds.

Context: trying to determine the status of Rev. Douglas Culver.

Response: Presbytery respectfully disagrees with the exception on the following grounds. Item 41(1) is a report given as information only as part of an effort to comply with *BCO* 13-2. The man in question had been reported to be ministering within the bounds of Northeast Presbytery without the Presbytery's knowledge or concurrence. Presbytery was in the process of trying to correct this irregularity, but was unsuccessful. Presbytery was not able to obtain definite information from the man or his Presbytery in order to frame a complaint. Item 41 (1) is listed as information only. Presbytery agrees that *BCO* 13-2 requires full concurrence of Presbytery within whose bounds a TE is laboring out of bounds. Presbytery also agrees that the situation was irregular, but respectfully disagrees that its actions in this regard were out of accord with *BCO* 13-2. The intent of the information recorded in the Minutes is to indicate the status of the investigation. It does not indicate Presbytery's ignorance of the requirement of *BCO* 13-2 or unwillingness to comply with it. Since this has been a recurring problem, Presbytery would appreciate the Assembly's guidance as to how to proceed in this situation. Adopted.

(4) Page 31 (44) 3. p.4: Insufficient grounds for omitting oral sermon (*BCO* 19-2).

Context: Licensure of David Wong. Presbytery waived the requirement for an oral sermon on the grounds that David has been preaching regularly for some time and Presbytery had sufficient testimonials as to his effectiveness, including a Call to Ministry from Covenant Church.

Response: Presbytery agrees with this exception and promises to be more careful in the future. The testimonials referred to were from members of Presbytery who had heard Mr. Wong preach. Adopted.

(5) Page 32 (49) 3: No mention of vote of congregation to release pastor. (*BCO* 23-1).

Context: Dissolution of the call of Westminster PCA to Rev. John L. Vance as Pastor.

Response: Presbytery agrees with this exception and promises to be more careful in the future. Correspondence Item 13 is a letter from the Clerk of Session stating that matter had been acted on at a congregational meeting May 4, 1989. Presbytery neglected to record this fact in its Minutes. Adopted.

### **Northern California:**

Following is the response approved by the Northern California Presbytery at their meeting of October 6, 1990, to your letter dated July 20, 1990, giving exceptions and notations on our October 27-28, 1989, Presbytery Minutes.

1. Exception of Substance to Par. 15b (2): "No examination on Sacraments (*BCO* 19-2)"

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Corrective Action: No corrective action taken, or necessary, as the fifth sentence repeated below, already stated that John Routzahn was examined in the area of the Sacraments at the October 1989 Presbytery meeting: "He was examined in the areas of Christian Experience . . . and the Sacraments" - page 5.

2. Exception of Substance to Par. 16.2: "Presbytery instructed CE Committee to issue a call to TE David Brown to labor in a work apparently outside of Presbytery's jurisdiction."

Corrective Action: to the October 1989 Minutes

A. Delete par. 16.2 which states "TE David Brown will be issued another call as a Teacher at Christian Heritage Academy at the next Presbytery meeting"; and substitute: "(2) TE David Brown is currently serving as a Teacher/Administrator at Christian Heritage Academy of Fremont, CA."

B. Delete the first motion in the last paragraph on page 5 of Par. 16 which states: "It was moved, seconded and passed to request the Christian Education Committee to present a call to TE David Brown at the March 1990 Presbytery meeting in accordance with the Commission Report"; and substitute the following motion: "It was moved, seconded and passed to process a call from the Christian Heritage Academy of Fremont, CA, to call TE David Brown as a Teacher/Administrator for approval by Presbytery at the next Presbytery meeting."

Corrective actions A & B above were approved by Presbytery at the October 6, 1990, Northern California Presbytery meeting, and these corrections will be included in the Minutes of this meeting.

Enclosed are the approved Minutes of the 3/2-3/90 No. California Presbytery meeting. Please note the action taken in paragraphs 13D(3) (4). The improper call to TE Brown, Appendix I, was replaced with call, Appendix J, in the proper form. TE Brown was approved to labor outside the bounds of the Presbytery in accordance with the terms of his call, Appendix J, and the requirements of *BCO* 8-7.

### **Northern Illinois:**

Here is our Presbytery's response to the exceptions to Minutes as adopted at our November 2, 1990, meeting and entered in the minutes for the same meeting.

Exceptions of Substance - July 22, 1989: (1) P. 34,35, 88-82.1 *BCO* 5-3 states 3 ways to form a "Temporary Government". Presbytery used none of the three but a mixture of two. (2) P. 36. 89-83. No indication that organizing commission examined prospective ruling elders according to *BCO* 3-8.

January 27, 1990: (3) 90-14. No approval of theological thesis and exegetical paper. 90-14. No oral examination on Bible content.

Exceptions of Substance: (1) Presbytery respectfully questions the Committee's interpretation of the *Book of Church Order*. The Organizing Pastor is a member of Presbytery and is therefore eligible to be appointed to a Presbytery Commission. The Presbytery believes it is



wise to have the Organizing Pastor serve on such a Commission. We have used option 3 in *BCO* 5-3 to provide a temporary government for our Mission churches. (2) Presbytery respectfully disagrees with the exception. Minutes show the Commission did interview elders on April 29, 1989, but they are not identified as "prospective" elders because they were previously ordained by this independent church prior to its petition to be received by Presbytery. (3) Candidates & Credentials Committee records show that the Committee did approve the ordinand's thesis and exegetical paper, but simply failed to mention the fact on the floor of Presbytery. (4) The minutes are incomplete. The examination on English Bible was actually part of the exam on Theology."

**Pacific Northwest:**

The Minutes of Pacific NW were submitted this year. See above 19-70, IV, 34.

**Southeast Alabama:**

The Presbytery of Southeast Alabama acknowledges receipt of this specification of error of substance in our 1989-90 minutes: GENERAL: The minutes do not record that the Session minutes of the member churches were examined during one year period (*BCO* 12-7, 40-1).

Presbytery further acknowledges its error in this matter, and has taken steps to correct its procedure to record in the minutes the names of churches whose Sessional minutes have been examined.

**Southwest:**

The Presbytery's response on September 26-27, 1990, to GA's Review of Presbytery Records of the 18th General Assembly:

January 25-26, 1990: (1) Page 90-6, par. 18-b - "Exception to WCF noted but not listed". "Mr. Tiley's exception noted to the WCF was in the area of Sabbath recreations".

**Susquehanna Valley:**

At September 15, 1990, Stated Meeting, the Clerk reported on the exceptions of substance taken by the 18th General Assembly: TE John MacRae moved that in answer to the exception to page 82, Minutes of September 16, 1989, ["No record of TE Graybill's educational qualifications (*BCO* 13-6, 21-4)"], the Presbytery respond by noting that Teaching Elder William Graybill has met all the educational requirements of the PCA, and apologizing to the General Assembly for failing to record that fact in its minutes. The motion carried.

TE MacRae also moved that in answer to the exception to the reception of Teaching Elder Hudson Armerding recorded on page 91, Minutes of November 18, 1989, ["No record of TE Armerding's educational qualifications (*BCO* 13-6,21-4)"], that "the Presbytery acknowledges its failure to consider the educational requirements of Dr. Armerding. Therefore, it is moved that the Presbytery make an exception to the seminary education requirements for Hudson Armerding

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

in view of the fact that he has given a lifetime of outstanding service to Christ and His church and was received with status of Honorably Retired (*BCO* 21-4)." The motion which requires a 3/4 vote, carried unanimously.

In response to the exception on page 91, Minutes of November 18, 1989, that the "Commission to install TE Kelley [was] not established, or quorum named (*BCO* 15-2)", Presbytery on motion rescinded its decision to appoint a Commission to install TE Kelley. (TE Kelley was given powers of an Evangelist at that meeting, and therefore an installation was not necessary).

### **Warrior:**

This is in response to the exception which was taken to our Minutes. The exception stated: "17.238: *BCO* 19-7 through 19-16 requires an internship. Presbytery has not mentioned its completion or equivalency for ordained at the time of his trials for ordination."

After checking our Minutes, in the paragraph immediately preceding the one stated in the exception, we found 17.237 stated: "As permitted in *BCO* 19-16, the court unanimously approved Mr. Phillips' previous experience as being equivalent to an internship and that no further testing of gifts be required."

Therefore, at our regular Stated meeting on July 17, 1990, Warrior Presbytery unanimously and respectfully disagreed with the exception taken to our Minutes in this matter.

2. Recommend that the 19th GA approve the following Presbyteries' responses to the exceptions taken by the 18th GA other than those listed below. Proper responses should be made to the 20th GA as follows:

### **Evangel Presbytery:**

#### **January 30, 1990**

Page 8, #12 a candidate for ordination preached a sermon, but no record of written sermon (*BCO* 19-2-D)

NOTE: Presbytery needs to confirm clerk's response

### **Response from Evangel:**

Evangel Presbytery wishes to respond to the exception to our Minutes as follows:

#### May 9, 1989:

- 1) We do not see from the Guidelines for keeping Presbytery minutes that a copy of the docket is mentioned, but we will include it from now on.
- 2) It was a unanimous vote so we just failed to note that it was a 2/3 vote or unanimous. We will seek to be more careful.
- 3) We apologize for failing to add "and adopted".
- 4) We are seeking to find the report from our committee on this and admit that they should have been in the minutes and were not there.
- 5) I am not sure that we had any interns at this time. We are sorry that we had not noticed that requirement in the *BCO* and proper

## JOURNAL

committees have been notified about this and we will seek to have that report from now on.

### September 26, 1989:

- 1) Same reply as (1) above.
- 2) (Should be 11: B-1) Again this was a unanimous vote and we just failed to note that it was a 2/3 and we will seek to be more careful in the future.
- 3) Do not see what is noted. This is what we have been putting in our minutes as the terms of the call for years. Surely they are not saying that we put in all the wording of a call every time.
- 4) We have assumed that a preached sermon which is not required for licensing is accepted as well as a written sermon. Please tell us if we are wrong.
- 5) They were all reviewed without any major exceptions.
- 6) I followed a committee report and failed to check their references. It should have been par. 38:2 and 38:3.
- 7) Again, I am not sure that we had any interns at this particular time, but we just had not had this item in the *BCO* brought to our attention before. We will seek to have that report from now on.

### January 30, 1990:

- 1) Same reply as the first item under May 9, 1989.
- 2) I don't think your report meant *BCO* 3-2. We think you must have meant par. 38-2. We do not believe that it fulfills the intent of par. 38-2.
- 3) John Weed is a member of Briarwood Presbyterian Church and in all of the discussion of the motion to receive him without his being present, I as the Stated Clerk failed to catch that we did not have the Sessional Endorsement presented to Presbytery, although the committee did have it. I will seek to be more alert.
- 4) (It should have been Page 10, par. 14-j). When the meeting was properly called the purpose was made clear. This only set the date and time for a called meeting that was anticipated.
- 5) I know that we had at least one intern at this time, but as we have said previously, we did not have this requirement drawn to our attention and we failed to see it, but will see that it is included from now on.
- 6) This requirement also slipped our attention and all we know to do is to apologize to you and promise to see that this requirement is followed from now on.

Please tell us what is meant by your comment under ALL that our "Minutes do not appear to be copies of corrected minutes." We do not know how to respond when these are copies of the actual minutes that I mail out and put in the files of Evangel Presbytery.

In another communication which was received there was an exception to the September 26, 1989, Minutes, Page 14: Item I-10. We can't see why you said there was no reason given as it is stated "due to recent changes of his views which he believes are contrary to the Confession of Faith, basically dealing with charismatic gifts, etc." This

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

letter had previously been given to the Committee on Ministers and Candidates and they had been in touch with Mr. Murphy and the church and he had joined a body there in Anniston which was not a body to which he could be dismissed to, and this was the request that he made and Presbytery granted it.

There was another exception given to the March 6, 1989 Called Meeting to Item 5 concerning the appointment of a Commission to install. This commission was appointed at the May 8, 1990, Stated Meeting: see page 11, par. F-5.

Adopted this 14th Day of May, 1991 at the 62nd Stated Meeting of Evangel Presbytery.

### Heartland Presbytery

#### General:

Attachments listed in Index, but actual attachments are not available for review (e.g., minutes of commissions, committee reports, resolutions, overtures).

**NOTE:** This is at least third year in a row same citation noted, GA has stated on previous occasions that Heartland must make attachments available for review.

**RECOMMEND** that 20th GA not seat commissioners from Heartland Presbytery until the Committee on Constitutional Business certifies to the stated clerk that compliance to repeated citations is met.

### South Texas Presbytery

#### January 26, 1990:

Page 8: No indication man was examined in Greek and Hebrew or that appropriate seminary studies were substituted.

Page 8: No indication 3 men were asked whether their views regarding the WCF had changed.

**NOTE:** Responses do not address the issues.

#### Response from South Texas:

On April 26, 1991, the Presbytery of South Texas approved the following responses of exceptions of substance stated below:

July 28-29, 1989 - page 3: The Presbytery of South Texas approved the action of the commission but failed to note this action in the minutes. South Texas Presbytery agreed with the exception noted by the committee and will be more careful in the future.

January 26, 1990: South Texas Presbytery respectfully disagreed with the exception because our interpretation of the issue noted on line one was that Stelzig had previously fulfilled *BCO* 19-2.

January 26, 1990: South Texas Presbytery examined Row, Stahl and Misner in accord with *BCO* 13-6 and (as it applied) *BCO* 21-4.

January 26, 1990: South Texas Presbytery agreed with the exception. South Texas Presbytery late noted this omission and clarified it in the minutes of July 27-28, 1991, pages 2-3.

General: The report of the Sessional Records Committee simply stated the objectives of the Sessional Records Committee. The South Texas Presbytery received and approved session minutes within the year as revealed in the minutes of South Texas Presbytery.

South Texas Presbytery appreciates the good, hard work of the committee and prays that these responses will be accepted.

*Adopted*

3. Recommend that the 19th GA not approve the response to the exception taken by the 18th GA to the minutes of Heartland Presbytery and that the 20th GA not seat commissioners from Heartland Presbytery until the Committee on Constitutional Business certifies to the stated clerk that compliance to repeated citation is met.

*Adopted*

**Response from Heartland:**

Heartland Presbytery Minutes of 8/17-18/1990.

90-60. Response to Committee on Review of Presbytery Records. The stated clerk distributed copies of a letter from GA Stated Clerk containing excerpts from 18th GA Minutes relating the Report of Committee on Review of Presbytery Records; he also distributed excerpts from 8/18-19/89 Minutes of Presbytery consisting of the Response to 17th General Assembly Review and Control and Presbytery's Policy on Distribution of Presbytery Minutes adopted at the same meeting. It is here noted that 18th GA approved the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records action rejecting our response to last year's exceptions concerning our not submitting copies of the calls to ministers for scrutiny by the committee. It was moved and seconded that we reaffirm our Policy on Distribution of Presbytery Minutes and that we respond to 18th General Assembly Review of Presbytery Records with the same answer as last year respectfully asking that the committee reconsider it. ADOPTED.

90-61. Response to 18th GA Committee on Review of Presbytery Records re: Exceptions of Substance, 8/18-19/89 and 3/16-17/90 Minutes. It is noted that "General: 2, 3, 4, 5" deal with annual inclusions required by RAO 9-14-8 (i.e. Directory, Roll of Presbytery, list of men under care and licentiates, and standing rules. Some of these items were sent to Atlanta but, apparently, not received by the review committee. Care will be taken to see that they are included and referenced in the minutes in the future. The standing rules are to be reviewed by presbytery for amendments at the November 1990 meeting and will be included as soon as revised. It was moved and seconded that the above statement be approved as our answer to 18th GA Committee on Review of Presbytery Records concerning "Exceptions of Substance, General" #2-5". ADOPTED

90-62. Response to 18th GA Committee on Review of Presbytery Records re: "Exceptions of Substance: General #1. It is noted that this exception deals with failure to make "actual attachments . . . available for review." It was moved and seconded that we answer this exception

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

by reference to our answer to last year's exception and our action above (90-60). ADOPTED.

4. Recommend that the 19th GA cite the following Presbyteries for failing to submit responses to the exceptions taken by the 18th GA and direct them to do so at their next stated meeting:  
Calvary, Central Florida, Eastern Carolina, Heritage, Korean Central, Korean Eastern, Korean Southern, Korean Southeast, Korean Southwest, Pacific, Philadelphia, Siouxlands, Tennessee Valley, Western Carolina.  
*Adopted*
5. Recommend that the 20th GA not seat commissioners from Philadelphia Presbytery unless the Committee on Constitutional Business certifies to the stated clerk that they comply with repeated citations. *Adopted*
6. Recommend that the 19th GA approve the following Presbytery response to the exceptions taken by the 17th GA:  
Missouri  
*Adopted*

### **Response from Missouri:**

Reconvened Meeting of Missouri Presbytery of 19 July, 11 August 1990: Response to Review and control taken from the Table. This was done by unanimous consent.

Exceptions of substance taken by Review and control of General Assembly:

April 16, 128, 19, 1988 - 227 # 15 SR were not met (no 2/3 vote)

October 21-22, 1988

January 20-21, 1989 - p. 14 Committee acted for the court without prior commission (BCO 15-1)"

34. A motion was adopted to send this response to GA: "On page 227 the S.R. were suspended in re to the membership of the CE/P Committee of Presbytery. The S. R. Were upheld in that there was a 2/3 vote, but, since there was no opposition, the Clerk did not indicate the need for, or the amount. There were 34 RE and 30 TE present. The Clerk shall be careful to indicate the need for and the amount of the 2/3 votes."

35. A motion was adopted to send this response to GA: "The Care of the Churches Committee/Commission acted for the court with prior commission status (see Motions \$7 and #8, pp. 2, 3 Minutes 21-22 October 1988).

Our Record shows in regard to this latter Response: (1) 21-22 October 1988, p. 2, Motion #7 a Committee is invited to conclude the matter of Walter Lorenz's uncontested resignation with Commission status. (2) 21-22 October 1988, p. 3 Motion #8 says that the Care of the Churches Committee shall be the Committee with Commission status "to consult with the Franklin Reformed Presbyterian Church, and any other Member of Presbytery may assist as the Presbytery through its Moderator may

## JOURNAL

designate." (3) 20-21 January 1989, p. 14 the Care of the Churches Committee/Commission reports the conclusion of the matter.

7. Recommend that the 19th GA cite the following Presbyteries for failing to submit responses to the exceptions taken by the 17th GA and direct them to respond at their next stated meeting:

Calvary, Central Florida, Evangel, Siouxslands

*Adopted*

8. Recommend that the 19th GA cite the following Presbytery for failing to submit responses to the exceptions taken by the 16th GA and direct them to respond at their next stated meeting:

Western Carolina

*Adopted*

9. Recommend that the 19th GA cite the following Presbytery for failing to submit response to the exceptions taken by the 15th GA and that the 20th GA not seat commissioners from the Presbytery until the Committee on Constitutional Business certifies to the stated clerk that it complies with repeated citations:

Pacific

### **Response from Pacific:**

Response to exceptions by Review and Control (15th GA) - dated March 9, 1990:

April 25-26, 1986: 1. p. 3, #16, a) no record of either theological thesis or exegesis paper being approved or omitted in trial for ordination (BCO 21-4). The Presbytery respectfully disagrees with the exception, intending that all the required papers be included in the words "written testimonials."

September 26-27, 1986: 1. p. 4, #12, B, (5) waiver granted to candidate for care of two month filing requirement of his application with clerk of presbytery (BCO 18-2). The Presbytery respectfully disagrees with this exception since it was stated that this is "due to extraordinary circumstances".

2. p. 4, #12, B, (6) same as above. The Presbytery respectfully disagrees as above.

3. p. 5, #12, B, (7) no record of licentiate possessing necessary academic degrees for ordination and/or being examined in the original languages nor a record of presbytery approving or omitting required theological thesis and exegesis paper for ordination trials (BCO 21-4). The Presbytery respectfully disagrees with the exception, intending that all the required papers be included in the words, "written testimonials".

*Adopted*

## VI. GENERAL RECOMMENDATIONS

1. That the Assembly provide (through the Stated Clerk's Office) services of a computer operator and computer in, (a) entering the reports of the review of

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

presbyteries prior to Assembly, and (b) meeting with the committee at the Assembly to provide continuous processing. *Adopted*

### 2. Time of Meeting

The Committee on Review of Presbytery Minutes shall meet at least two full working days before the Assembly convenes (including nights). Thus if the Assembly convenes 1 P.M. on Monday, the Committee shall convene Friday morning at the Chairman's discretion. If the Assembly convenes Tuesday night, the Committee shall convene Saturday at the Chairman's discretion.

*Adopted*

### 3. Reimbursement:

The Administrative Committee shall reimburse members of Committee on Review of Presbytery Records for food and lodging for the two or three days they meet prior to the 20th G.A. Members who are not commissioners are to be reimbursed for travel, food and lodging until the Committee reports to the Assembly. Further that members whose means are inadequate and cannot afford travel be reimbursed for that travel. And further, the Committee encourages Presbyteries to cover travel expenses for their representatives to this Committee. (1 Tim. 5:18)

*Moot due to previous action (see 19-61, III, 16 A, p. 125)*

**NOTE:** The Committee would note that it had a very good turn out with a large number of ruling elders under the provisions adopted by the 18th Assembly.

## VII. MISCELLANEOUS INFORMATION

The officers elected to serve next year are as follows:

Chairman: RE Donald Comer (Central Georgia)

Vice-Chairman: TE Larry Hoop (Heartland)

Secretary: TE Robert B. Vincent (Louisiana)

## MEMBERS PRESENT:

### Presbytery

Ascension  
Calvary  
Central Georgia  
Covenant  
Eastern Carolina  
Evangel  
Grace  
Heartland  
Heritage  
James River  
Louisiana  
Missouri  
New Jersey  
New River  
North Georgia  
North Texas  
Northern California

### Commissioner

TE Robert C. Peterson, Chairman  
RE William D. Springs  
RE Donald D. Comer  
TE Grover Gunn  
TE David Bowen  
RE Robert A. Dietz  
RE Richard F. Mayfield  
TE Larry C. Hoop  
TE Edd Cathey  
RE Eugene H. Friedline  
TE Robert Benn Vincent, Sr.  
TE Roger Hunt  
TE Gary Englestad  
RE Virgil B. Roberts  
RE Guy H. Beckman  
RE Richard Bacon  
RE Earl C. Bengel



## JOURNAL

Pacific Northwest	TE John Hoogstrate
Palmetto	TE James M. Hope
Potomac	TE J.D. Dusenbury
South Coast	TE Joseph A. Pipa, Jr.
Southeast Alabama	TE Ted Aven
Southern Florida	TE Franklin Knowles
Southwest	TE Richard Fite
Southwest Florida	TE Robert Burridge
Susquehanna Valley	RE Fred Gaston
Tennessee Valley	RE Donald V. Goodin
Western Carolina	TE Morton H. Smith
Westminster	TE Byron Snapp

The following reported but were not able to attend:

Pacific	TE Robert Hopper
Great Lakes	RE William Grier
Mid America	RE Lyle Fogle

The following were not represented:

Central Carolina	Korean Southern
Central Florida	Korean Southwest
Eastern Canada	Mississippi Valley
Gulf Coast	Northeast
Illiana	Northern Illinois
Korean Central	Philadelphia
Korean Eastern	South Texas
Korean Southeastern	Warrior

The report was approved as a whole.

*Adopted*

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE Robert Peterson, Chairman  
/s/ RE Fred Gaston

### 19-71 Approval of Minutes

On motion the minutes of previous sessions were approved, subject to editorial corrections, and the final minutes were consigned to the stated clerk for his final approval.

### 19-72 Protest on Drama and Pledge of Allegiance in Worship

TE Frank J. Smith presented the following protest which was read by TE John Jerguson and admitted to the record.

We the undersigned do protest the patriotic service, which included a pledge of allegiance which was made to a particular nation; that that pledge of allegiance was improper for the Church to make; that there are members of the Assembly and denomination who are not citizens of the United States of America; and that "The Battle Hymn of the Republic" was sung (which is not a Christian song and which was written in support of what many feel was an unjust war against a sovereign nation).

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Also signing the protest were TE Rodney King, RE Stanley D. Wells, TE George G. Felton, Sr., RE Richard Bacon, TE John P. Jerguson, and RE Donald Campbell.

### 19-73 Excuses from Part of the Assembly

The following commissioners requested excuse from attendance at portions of the Assembly:

RE Robert Ashbaugh	Ascension
RE Guy H. Beckmann	North Georgia
TE Michael Bolus	Central Georgia
TE Cal Boroughs	Tennessee Valley
TE Bob Bruhn	Pacific NW
TE Robert Brunson	Grace
RE Mac Burchfield	Tennessee Valley
TE John O. Butler	Mid America
RE Gary L. Campbell	North Texas
TE C. John Collins	Pacific NW
RE Larry Crigger	Westminster
TE Davie Dively	Great Lakes
TE George G. Felton, Jr.	Grace
TE Max Forsythe	Great Lakes
TE David Gilleran	SE Alabama
RE Bob Harbert	Tennessee Valley
TE William Hawk	Pacific
TE Robert Hays	Mississippi Valley
RE Downs Henry	Tennessee Valley
TE David Howe	Tennessee Valley
TE Darwin Jordan	Covenant
TE Carl Kalberkamp	Palmetto
TE D. Doug Mallow	Grace
TE Chip McArthur	Grace
TE Albert Moginot, Jr.	Missouri
TE Joseph V. Novenson	Palmetto
RE Alec Parr	Eastern Canada
RE Mike Pfefferle	Pacific NW
TE Steve Reese	Central Florida
TE David F. Roberts	North Texas
TE Larry Roff	South Florida
TE Petros Roukas	Great Lakes
TE Kennedy Smartt	North Georgia
TE Dale L. Smith	North Texas
TE James A. Smith	New Jersey
TE Ira Staley	James River
RE Loyd Strickland	North Georgia
TE James Thornton	Tennessee Valley

## JOURNAL

TE J. Andrew White  
TE Ford S. Williams, Jr.  
RE Bob Wynkoop  
TE Curt Young

Central Carolina  
Covenant  
Great Lakes  
Pacific NW

### **19-74 Adjournment**

On motion the Assembly voted to adjourn at 2:45 p.m. Psalm 133 was sung and, following the declaration by Moderator Belz, the Assembly was dismissed with the benediction by TE Jimmy Lyons.



## PART III

### CORRECTIONS TO PREVIOUS MINUTES

#### ERRATA FOR MINUTES OF 18TH GENERAL ASSEMBLY, 1990

**p. 99 -- Insert Minority Report on recommendation 5 (which failed to pass) as follows:**

**ADD:**

That the General Assembly take exception to the action of CE/P in approving of and helping to sponsor a multi-media worship service during this conference.

**GROUNDS:**

- (1) It is a violation of WCF 1, 20, and 21, WLC Q/A 108-109, and WCS Q/A 50-51
- (2) It is a violation of the position of the 14th GA (p. 200, item 24B), in which exception was taken to presbytery minutes for approving elements of worship not found in the WCF.
- (3) It is greatly grievous and offensive to many in the church who adhere to the historic Presbyterian faith.
- (4) This issue was going to be addressed directly by members of the majority by means of a personal resolution; their failure to introduce that resolution has left the minority with no choice but to raise this matter in this way at this time.

RE Julian Davis, Central Georgia Presbytery  
TE Frank J. Smith, Northeast Presbytery

**p. 99 -- Insert Minority Report on recommendation 12 (which failed to pass) as follows:**

12. That the Assembly not approve the 1991 CE/P budget as presented by the Administrative Committee, but direct the Administrative Committee to prepare and present a new budget taking into account the action of the Assembly on Recommendation 15, the indebtedness of the CE/P Committee on its restricted funds, the indebtedness of the PCA to Great Commission Publications, and a reasonable projection of giving by the churches.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### Grounds:

1. The proposed budget includes approximately \$400,000 for the *Messenger*.
2. The CE/P Committee has "borrowed" over \$20,000 from restricted funds (created by designated giving), and has proposed no specific plans for repayment.
3. The PCA lack of giving toward Great Commissions Publications, amounting to hundreds of thousands of dollars, was not addressed by the Committee of Commissioners despite the requests of the minority. We therefore are not persuaded that the matter has been properly concluded. The AC should consider and conclude any actions that should be taken.
4. Giving by the churches to CE/P has declined significantly in recent years, and the level has been constant for this past year. Nevertheless, the budget is projected on the basis of a 40% increase in giving averaged over calendar year 1991. We believe this projection to be unrealistic.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE Rodney King  
/s/ TE Frank Smith

**p. 101 -- Insert Minority Report recommending new item 18 (which failed to pass) as follows:**

### Brief History

The *PCA Messenger* underwent a transformation a few years ago from a "newsletter" communication presented upon request without cost to a monthly "magazine" having paid subscriptions and paid advertising. In the former newsletter style a circulation of 57,000 was present to a present subscription of about 10,000. The newsletter and the magazine both have run with deficit spending. In the past few years the undesignated funds to the General Assembly went to support the *Messenger*. It is estimated 20,000 to 25,000 subscriptions will be necessary to make the magazine self sufficient financially.

The Committee on CE/P has experienced a financial shortfall this past year in that the giving has dropped. The cost of publication of the *Messenger* added to the reduced financial shortfall has impacted on the program at CE/P with some other programs being underfunded.

I would make the following points:

- 1) Financially the *Messenger* has had a significant impact with a financial deficiency.
- 2) The *Messenger* has a low subscription rate in its present format. (Approximately 10,000 subscriptions.) the church at large ("the market") has seen the magazine ("the product") for over two years, and is not buying it. The Permanent Committee itself has declared that

## CORRECTIONS TO PREVIOUS MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

subscriptions must increase "to at least the 20,000 mark if the magazine is to continue to exist". (*Handbook*, p. 502)

- 3) In my opinion, the newsworthy portion of the *Messenger* could be published in a more cost effective method, such as: less frequent publication (bimonthly or quarterly), return to a newsletter format rather than the magazine format. In light of the continued financial plight of the CE/P (necessitating recent staff reductions), the committee cannot long afford to continue the *Messenger* in its present format.

I would make the following recommendation:

That the Assembly instruct the CE/P Committee to publish the *Messenger* without deficit spending by January 1, 1991, or cease publication and that the future of the *Messenger* be determined by the action of the 19th Assembly on the recommendations of the Ad-Hoc Committee on Communications.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE Rodney King  
/s/ TE Frank Smith

**p. 110 -- The 18th General Assembly did not act on the following Minority Report since the whole section was postponed indefinitely. Nevertheless, insert after section 13-12 and before "postponed indefinitely" the following:**

13.a Amend item 4-9 of the further proposed amendments to the Rules of Assembly operation (p. 443) to read:

"The Stated Clerk and the Coordinators of the three program committees shall be elected by a majority vote of the General Assembly for a term of four years. Each year, the General Assembly, through its committees of commissioners on the respective committees, shall review their service and at that time may renew their contracts by majority vote. Elections to subsequent four-year terms must be a 2/3 vote of commissioners present and voting.

If the nominee has not been examined by the Theological Examining Committee, such an examination must take place prior to a first-time election. A new Stated Clerk or Coordinator shall assume office at the end of the Assembly meeting at which he is elected, or at such time as designated by the General Assembly.

In the event that the Stated Clerk or one of the Coordinators resigns, dies or is unable to act, his committee may employ a provisional replacement, who has been examined and approved by the Assembly's Theological Examining Committee, and who shall serve until the next General Assembly".

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

13.g Amend Article 13 of the further proposed amendments to the Rules of Assembly Operations so that 13-1 (p. 445) reads:

"All business shall ordinarily come to the floor of the Assembly for final action through Committees of Commissioners, except reports of the Standing Judicial Commission, the Committee on Review and Control, the Nominating Committee, and ad interim committees which shall report directly to the Assembly".

And delete 13-7 items "F" and "G" and 13-8 and 13-9 (*Handbook* p. 446).

Respectfully submitted:

/s/ TE Jim Jones  
/s/ TE Mike Hall  
/s/ RE Bruce Finney  
/s/ RE Dale Peacock  
/s/ TE Fredric Mau

**p. 340 -- Bottom of page, after last recommendation, add:**

ATTACHMENT 1: Stanley D. Wells Minority Report

Concerning the PCA *Messenger*

### Brief History

The PCA *Messenger* underwent a transformation a few years ago from the "newsletter" communication presented upon request without cost to a monthly "magazine" having paid subscriptions and paid advertising. In the former newsletter style a circulation of 57,000 was present to a present subscription of about 10,000. The newsletter and the magazine both have run with deficit spending. In the past few years the undesignated funds to the General Assembly went to support the *Messenger*. It is estimated 20,000 to 25,000 subscriptions will be necessary to make the magazine self sufficient financially.

The Committee on CE/P has experienced a financial shortfall this past year in that the giving has dropped. The cost of publication of the *Messenger* added to the reduced financial shortfall has impacted on the program at CE/P with some other programs being underfunded.

I would make the following points:

- 1) Financially the *Messenger* has had a significant impact with a financial deficiency.



CORRECTIONS TO PREVIOUS MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- 2) The *Messenger* has a low subscription rate in its present format. (Approximately 10,000 subscriptions.)
- 3) In my opinion, the newsworthy portion of the *Messenger* could be published in a more cost effective method, such as; less frequent publication (bimonthly or quarterly), return to a newsletter format rather than the magazine format.

I would make the following recommendations:

14. That the Assembly instruct the CE/P Committee to publish the *Messenger* without deficit spending by January 1, 1991, or cease publication until the *Messenger* does not present a financial burden and can be published without additional subsidy required.
15. That the CE/P budget be changed to be in accord with Recommendation 14.

Respectfully Submitted,

/s/ RE Stanley D. Wells, M.D.  
Member of CE/P Committee

(Editor's Note: It was brought to the attention of the Stated Clerk on April 1, 1991 that the CE&P Committee on June 11, 1990 had authorized this minority report to be attached to the permanent committee's report to General Assembly).

p. 554 RAO 17-4 b, delete "of the permanent committee, special committee or agency".



**PART IV  
INDEX**

AD-INTERIM COMM. ON DIVORCE AND REMARRIAGE . . . . . 19-16, p. 63  
 . . . . . Appendix P, p. 604

ADJOURNMENT . . . . . 19-74, p. 209

ADMINISTRATION  
 Comm. of Commissioners' Report . . . . 19-20, p. 69; 19-41, p. 90; 19-61, p. 121  
 Permanent Committee  
     Budget . . . . . Appendix C, Attachment 3, p. 274  
     Report . . . . . Appendix C, p. 256

AITKEN, JAMES GARY, MEMORIAL . . . . . 19-28, III, 7, p. 77

APPOINTMENT OF  
 Assistant Parliamentarians . . . . . 19-6, p. 46

ARCHIVES (see Historical Center)

ASKINGS . . . . . 19-28, III, 6, p. 76; Appendix C, Attachment 2, p. 273

AUDITORS  
 Arthur Anderson & Co. . . . . 19-65, III, 2 & 3, p. 139  
 Ernst & Young . . . . . 19-27, III, 10, p. 73; 19-61, III, 18, p. 126  
 Timothy Mersereau . . . . . 19-35, III, 5, p. 86  
 Robins, Eskew & Farmer . . . . . 19-61, III, 18, p. 126

BETHANY CHRISTIAN SERVICES . . . . . 19-55, III, 8, p. 114; 19-60, p. 121;  
 . . . . . Appendix J, Attachment 6, p. 381

BILLS AND OVERTURES REPORT . . . . . 19-12, p. 62; 19-67, p. 155

BOARD OF DIRECTORS MINUTES . . . . . Appendix B, p. 253

BOOK OF CHURCH ORDER  
 Amendments Enacted . . . . . 19-9, p. 48  
 Amendments Proposed . . . . . 19-53, p. 110  
 Proposed Amendments Deferred to 20th GA . . . . 19-67, III, 2, p. 157; 4, p. 161  
 . . . . . 7, p. 164; 9, p. 166; 13, p. 168; 14, p. 169; 22, p. 174

BOWEN, DAVID - Judicial Case . . . . . 19-33, p. 84

BUDGETS--APPENDIX C, Attachment 3  
 Administration . . . . . p. 274  
 Approved . . . . . 19-61, III, 20-30, p. 126  
 Christian Education . . . . . p. 278  
 Covenant College . . . . . p. 301  
 Covenant Theological Seminary . . . . . p. 305  
 Insurance, Annuities and Relief . . . . . p. 311  
 Investor's Fund for Building and Development . . . . . p. 312  
 Mission to North America . . . . . p. 283  
 Mission to the World . . . . . p. 288  
 PCA Foundation . . . . . p. 313  
 Ridge Haven . . . . . p. 314  
 SIMA . . . . . p. 296

BYLAWS . . . . . Appendix R, p. 703  
 Amendments to . . . . . 19-61, III, 9, 124

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

CERTIFICATE OF INCORPORATION . . . . .	Appendix Q, p. 700
CHAPLAINS AND MILITARY PERSONNEL REPORT . . . . .	Appendix J, Attachment 4, p. 374
CHAPPELL, CHARLES E. - Judicial Case . . . . .	19-33, p. 81
CHRISTIAN EDUCATION AND PUBLICATIONS	
Committee of Commissioners' Report . . . . .	19-27, p. 71
Permanent Committee	
Budget . . . . .	Appendix C, p. 278
Report . . . . .	Appendix D, p. 316
CHURCHES NOT REPORTING 1989 STATISTICS . . . . .	Appendix A, Attachment 5, p. 241
COMMUNICATIONS listed by title and cross reference . . . . .	19-10, p. 60
1 Resolution Honoring Teaching Elder Thomas G. Kay . . . . .	19-10, p. 60
2 "Does Not Concur With Ascension New Presbytery Boundaries" . . . . .	19-55, p. 116
3 Greetings From the General Synod of the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church . . . . .	19-18, p. 64
4 "Consent to Transfer Escambia County to SE Alabama Presbytery" . . . . .	19-55, p. 119
5 From Orthodox Presbyterian Church . . . . .	19-10, p. 61
COMPENSATION FOR CEO . . . . .	19-61, III, 17, p. 125; Appendix C, VIII, 17, p. 267
COMPLAINTS--SEE JUDICIAL CASES	
CONSTITUTIONAL BUSINESS COMMITTEE	
Manual . . . . .	Appendix A, Attachment 2, p. 237
Report . . . . .	19-37, p. 90; 19-56, p. 120, Appendix A, Attachment 1, p. 230
COOPERATIVE AGREEMENTS:	
MTW - New . . . . .	Appendix K, Rec. 8-11, p. 391
Black Forest Academy . . . . .	19-46, p. 92, Appendix K, p. 419
Christian Literature Crusade . . . . .	19-46, p. 92, Appendix K, p. 426
Church Resource Ministries . . . . .	19-46, p. 92, Appendix K, p. 439
Project Nehemiah, Inc. . . . .	19-46, p. 92, Appendix K, p. 431
CORRECTIONS TO PREVIOUS MINUTES . . . . .	Part IV, p. 211
COVENANT COLLEGE	
Board Report . . . . .	Appendix E, p. 321
Budget . . . . .	Appendix C, p. 301
Committee of Commissioners' Report . . . . .	19-28, p. 75
COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY	
Board Report . . . . .	Appendix F, p. 329
Budget . . . . .	Appendix C, p. 305
Committee of Commissioners' Report . . . . .	19-25, p. 70
DAY OF PRAYER FOR WORLD EVANGELISM . . . . .	19-46, III, 8, p. 92
DIVORCE AND REMARRIAGE	
Committee Report . . . . .	19-16, p. 63, Appendix P, p. 604
ELECTION OF	
Assistant Clerks, Recording Clerks . . . . .	19-6, p. 46
Permanent Committees and Agencies	
Coordinators	
CE/P . . . . .	19-27, III, 3, p. 72
MNA . . . . .	19-55, III, 2, p. 114

## INDEX

ELECTION OF - continued	
MTW	19-46, III, 6, p. 92
Moderator	19-5, p. 46
Stated Clerk	19-61, III, 15, p. 125; Appendix C, VIII, 14, p. 266
Term of Service	19-61, III, 42, p. 134
ENROLLMENT OF COMMISSIONERS	19-3, p. 19
EVANGELICAL PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH	19-18, p. 64, 19-19, p. 65
EXCUSED COMMISSIONERS	19-73, p. 208
FOX, CARL	19-48, p. 97
FRATERNAL DELEGATES	19-18, p. 64
GENERAL ASSEMBLY	
Meeting Dates	19-61, III, 10, p. 124; 11, p. 125
Registration Fee (1992 & 1992)	19-61, III, 19, p. 126
Representation	19-9, Item 3, p. 51
HATHAWAY, VAUGHN	
Judicial Cases	19-33, p. 84-85
Objection to decision	19-63, p. 137
HISTORICAL CENTER (Archives)	
Report	Appendix C, Attachment 1, p. 270
INSURANCE, ANNUITIES AND RELIEF	
Board of Trustees Report	Appendix G, p. 330
Budget	Appendix C, p. 311
Committee of Commissioners' Report	19-65, p. 138
INTERCHURCH RELATIONS	
Committee of Commissioners' Report	19-19, p. 65
Permanent Committee Report	Appendix H, p. 341
INVESTORS FUND FOR BUILDING AND DEVELOPMENT	
Committee of Commissioners' Report	19-35, p. 86
Permanent Committee	
Budget	Appendix C, p. 312
Report	Appendix I, p. 346
JUDICIAL CASES	
Case 1: Grace Covenant PC, Blacksburg vs. New River Presbytery	19-33, p. 81
Case 2: RE Charles E. Chappell vs. E. Carolina Presbytery	19-33, p. 81
Case 3: TE Wallace Marshall Jr. vs E. Carolina Presbytery	19-33, p. 82
Case 4: M/M Bryan Melton et. al vs Tennessee Valley Presbytery	19-33, p. 83
Case 5: TE Randy Stringer vs Mississippi Valley Presbytery	19-33, p. 83
Case 6: TE David Bowen vs E. Carolina Presbytery	19-33, p. 84
Case 7: TE Vaughn Hathaway, Jr. vs Grace Presbytery	19-33, p. 84
Case 8: TE Vaughn Hathaway, Jr. vs Grace Presbytery	19-33, p. 85
KAY, THOMAS G, Resolution	19-10, p. 60
KOREAN LANGUAGE BCO	19-61, III, 12 & 13, p. 125
	Appendix C, VIII, 34 a and c, p. 237
KOREAN PRESBYTERIES BYLAWS, STANDING RULES, MINUTES	
	Appendix C, IV, p. 257
MANUAL OF OPERATION FOR COMMITTEE ON CONSTITUTIONAL BUSINESS	Appendix A, Attachment 2, p. 237
MANUAL FOR STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION	Appendix O, p. 583

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MARSHALL, WALLACE W - Judicial Case . . . . .	19-33, p. 82
MELTON, M/M BRYAN - Judicial Case . . . . .	19-33, p. 83
MESSENGER . . . . .	19-27, III, 13, p. 74
<b>MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA</b>	
Committee of Commissioners' Report . . . . .	19-55, p. 114
Permanent Committee	
Budget . . . . .	Appendix C, p. 283
Report . . . . .	Appendix J, p. 352
<b>MISSION TO THE WORLD</b>	
Committee of Commissioners' Report . . . . .	19-43, p. 90; 19-46, p. 91
Cooperative Agreements . . . . .	Appendix K, Rec. 8-11, p. 391
Permanent Committee	
Budget . . . . .	Appendix C, p. 288
Report . . . . .	Appendix K, p. 385
<b>MODERATOR</b>	
Election and Installation . . . . .	19-5, p. 46
Retiring Moderator . . . . .	19-1, p. 19
NEW CHURCHES SINCE 18TH GA . . . . .	19-8, p. 46
<b>NOMINATING COMMITTEE</b>	
Elections . . . . .	19-52, p. 108
Meetings and Membership . . . . .	Appendix L, p. 443
Report . . . . .	19-52, p. 108
ORTHODOX PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH. . . . .	19-18, p. 64, 19-19, III, 1, p. 65
OVERTURES listed by title and cross reference . . . . .	19-10, p. 57
1 "Restatement of <i>BCO</i> 38-2" . . . . .	(to CCB and B&O), p. 156
2 "Enforce <i>BCO</i> 46-2" . . . . .	(to CCB and B&O), p. 157
3 "Divide the Presbytery of the Southwest" . . . . .	(to MNA), p. 115
4 "Disclaimer on CE&P Bookstore Materials" . . . . .	(to CE&P), p. 73
5 "Amend <i>BCO</i> 15-4 to Permit General Assembly to Adjudicate"	
. . . . .	(to CCB and B&O), p. 161
6 "Instruct GA Committees Not to Initiate Changes in Governing Documents"	
. . . . .	(to B&O), p. 155
7 "Do Not Include Grounds for <i>BCO</i> Amendments" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 128
8 "Amend <i>BCO</i> to Provide More Direct Election by Presbyteries" . . . . .	
. . . . .	(to CCB and B&O), p. 161
9 "Have CCB Report on Committees Re: <i>BCO</i> 14-1 (7)" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 163
10 "Amend <i>BCO</i> Preface II, 1 to Avoid Pluralistic Interpretation" . . . . .	
. . . . .	(to CCB), p. 164
11 "Amend <i>BCO</i> 15-4 to Permit General Assembly to Adjudicate" . . . . .	
. . . . .	(to CCB and B&O), p. 164
12 "Amend <i>BCO</i> 34-1 so Neighboring Presbytery May Adjudicate Case" . . . . .	
. . . . .	(to CCB and B&O), p. 165
13 "Amend <i>BCO</i> 15-5 Requiring GA Ratification before Executing Verdict" . . . . .	
. . . . .	(to CCB and B&O), p. 166
14 "Instruct Clerk re: Constitutionality of Appeals" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 167
15 "Divide Ascension Presbytery" . . . . .	(to MNA), p. 115
16 VACATE	
17 "Instruct IAR to Find Appropriate Coverage for Therapy" . . . . .	(to IAR), p. 153

## INDEX

18	"Transfer Escambia County, AL, from Gulf Coast" . . . . .	(to MNA), p. 119
19	"Amend RAO 18 Re: Amendment or Suspension" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 128
20	"Instruct Committees and Agencies to Furnish Minutes" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 167
21	"Provide Methods for Presbyteries and Churches to Send . . . . . Missionaries Apart from MTW" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 92
22	"Amend 24-5 to Permit Session to Ordain Elders and Deacons" . . . . . . . . . .	(to CCB and B&O, p. 167)
23	"Annex Counties from Great Lakes and New River Presbyteries" . . . . . . . . . .	(to MNA), p. 116
24	"Mission Money for Missions" . . . . .	(to MTW and B&O), p. 93
25	"Administrative Fees for Missionaries" . . . . .	(to MTW and B&O), p. 94
26	"Redraw Boundaries of Eastern Canada Presbytery". . . . .	(to MNA), p. 118
27	"Amend BCO 15-4 So as to Limit Membership on SJC" . . . . . . . . . .	(to CCB and B&O), p. 168
28	"Reaffirm Position on Homosexuality" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 169
29	"Amend ARO (or BCO 14-1) to Limit Membership on Administrative . . . . . Committee" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 129
30	"Amend RAO V to Limit Membership on Administrative . . . . . Committee" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 130
31	"Allow no Grounds to Be Included When BCO Amendments are Sent Down" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 128
32	"Amend RAO 4-11 RE. Adoption of Budgets" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 132
33	"Loving Rebuke of Stated Clerk" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 126
34	"Appoint Study Committee on Christian School . . . . . Development" . . . . .	(to B&O) p. 73
35	"Instruct CE&P re. Advertisements in <i>The Messenger</i> " . . . . .	(to B&O) p. 74
36	"Instruct AC to Review Investment Portfolio of PCA Agencies" . . . . . . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 130
37	"Appoint AC to Review Effectiveness of IAR" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 131
38	"Appoint Study Committee: 'Are Drama and Liturgical Dance Consistent . . . . . with Doctrine of Worship?'" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 169
39	"Establish Ad Interim Committee to Plan Anniversary 350th of WCF" . . . . . . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 170
40	"Declare Ordination of Deaconesses to Be In Violation of BCO". . . . . . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 171
41	(Substitute for Overture 16 now Vacated) . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 172
42	"Calling a Day of Thanksgiving for War Victory" . . . . .	(to MNA), p. 115
43	"Amend RAO 4-9 to Limit Coordinators and Stated Clerk to two Four-Year . . . . . Terms" . . . . .	(to B&O), p. 134
<b>PARLIAMENTARIANS</b>		
	Appointment of Assistants . . . . .	19-6, p. 46
	PCA COMMUNICATIONS COMMITTEE . . . . .	19-27, III, 7, p. 73; 19-69, p. 175
<b>PCA FOUNDATION</b>		
	Board Report . . . . .	Appendix M, p. 470
	Budget . . . . .	Appendix C, p. 313
	Committee of Commissioners' Report . . . . .	19-29, p. 79

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### PERSONAL RESOLUTIONS listed by title and cross reference:

1: From James Richwine . . . . .	19-21, p. 69; 19-61, III, 46, p. 135
2: From Robert H. Miller. . . . .	19-30, p. 80; 19-67, III, 20, p. 172
3: From Timothy Diehl. . . . .	19-30, p. 80
4: From Michael Chastain . . . . .	19-30, p. 80; 19-67, III, 21, p. 173
5: From Vaughn Hathaway, Jr. . . . .	19-36, p. 88
6: From Vaughn Hathaway, Jr. . . . .	19-36, p. 88
7: From Albert Moginot, Jr. . . . .	19-36, p. 89
8: From Grover Gunn. . . . .	19-36, p. 89; 19-67, III, 22, p. 173
PRESBYTERY BOUNDARIES. . . . .	19-55, III, 9, p. 115; 12, p. 118; 13, p. 119
PROTEST -- Drama and Pledge of Allegiance in Worship . . . . .	19-72, p. 207
REPORTS - see each subject	
REVIEW OF PRESBYTERY RECORDS	
Report . . . . .	19-70, p. 176
Funding . . . . .	19-61, III, 16, p. 125
RIDGE HAVEN	
Board of Trustees	
Budget . . . . .	Appendix C, p. 314
Report . . . . .	Appendix N, p. 472
Committee of Commissioners' Report . . . . .	19-54, p. 112
RULES FOR ASSEMBLY OPERATIONS . . . . .	Appendix S, p. 710
Amendments adopted . . . . .	19-61, III, 1 & 3, p. 122' 4-6. p. 123
ROSS, JACK - Memorial. . . . .	19-36, p. 88
SPECIAL OFFERINGS:	
IAR Ministerial Relief. . . . .	19-65, III, 8, p. 152
MNA Mercy Ministries . . . . .	19-55, III, 5, p. 114
STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION	
Manual. . . . .	Appendix O, p. 583
Report . . . . .	19-33, p. 81; 19-48, p. 96; 19-53, p. 110; Appendix O. p. 475
STATED CLERK	
Job Description. . . . .	Appendix R, p. 711
Report . . . . .	19-8, p. 46; Appendix A, p. 227
STRINGER, RANDY - Judicial Case. . . . .	19-33, p. 83
THANKS COMMITTEE	
Appointed . . . . .	19-24, p. 70
Report . . . . .	19-69, p. 175
THEOLOGICAL EXAMINING COMMITTEE . . . . .	19-11, p. 62
VISION 2000. . . . .	19-55, III, 7, p. 114; Appendix J, IV, 6, p. 364;
. . . . .	Appendix K, Attachment 1 p. 392
WARREN, JOHN M. MEMORIAL	
Reply. . . . .	19-48, p. 97
Protests re adoption of report. . . . .	19-49, p. 106; 19-66, p. 154
WEEK OF PRAYER . . . . .	19-27, III, 9, p. 73; Appendix D, rec. 9, p. 320
WOMEN IN THE CHURCH (WIC) LOVE GIFT . . . . .	19-27, III, 4, p. 72; 6, p. 73
WORSHIP SERVICES . . . . .	19-1, p. 19; 19-14, p. 63; 19-39, p. 90; 19-58, p. 121



**MINUTES**  
of the  
**NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY**  
of the  
**PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH  
IN AMERICA**

**VOLUME 2**  
APPENDICES

**June 17-20, 1991**  
**Birmingham, Alabama**



**MINUTES  
OF THE  
NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
VOLUME 2**

Appendix A	- Stated Clerk . . . . .	227
Appendix B	- Board of Directors . . . . .	253
Appendix C	- Administrative Committee . . . . .	256
Appendix D	- Christian Education . . . . .	316
Appendix E	- Covenant College. . . . .	321
Appendix F	- Covenant Seminary. . . . .	329
Appendix G	- Insurance, Annuities & Relief . . . . .	330
Appendix H	- Interchurch Relations . . . . .	341
Appendix I	- Investor's Fund . . . . .	346
Appendix J	- Mission to North America. . . . .	352
Appendix K	- Mission to the World. . . . .	385
Appendix L	- Nominating Committee . . . . .	443
Appendix M	- PCA Foundation . . . . .	470
Appendix N	- Ridge Haven . . . . .	472
Appendix O	- Standing Judicial Commission . . . . .	475
Appendix P	- Ad Interim Committee on Divorce and Remarriage. . . . .	604
Appendix Q	- Certificate of Incorporation . . . . .	700
Appendix R	- Bylaws . . . . .	703
Appendix S	- Rules for Assembly Operations. . . . .	710

**NOTE:** The INDEX to Volume 1 and Volume 2  
is found in Volume 1, page 217.



## APPENDICES

### VOLUME 2

## APPENDICES

The Appendices include the Reports of the Permanent Committees as originally submitted to the General Assembly, except where the text may have been amended by the Assembly. The recommendations in this section are those originally submitted by the Permanent Committees and may not have been adopted by the Assembly. See the reports of the committee of Commissioners for each of the respective committees to find the recommendations as they were adopted by the Assembly.

The budgets as approved by the Assembly are found in Appendix C, p. 274ff.



APPENDIX A

REPORT OF THE STATED CLERK  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
June 17-20, 1991

*Come and hear, all you who fear God,  
And I will declare what He has done for my soul.  
I cried to Him with my mouth,  
And He was extolled with my tongue.  
Psalm 66:16-17*

In reading the Psalms this year, I have been struck again by the amazing similarities in the psalmist's life and work and our own experience. So many times he looks for answers by focusing in on our gracious and merciful God. The Lord God deals with us better than we deserve. And so it has been this past year in the Office of the Stated Clerk. One cannot express enough the gratitude for his lovingkindness both in personal matters as well as in the business of the church.

I. PUBLICATIONS

During the past year, several publications have been produced. The *Minutes of the 18th General Assembly* were completed in a timely fashion, though not without some missed reports. These will be published as part of the Corrections to Previous Minutes. This year we expect the Minutes to be out around September.

The *1990 Yearbook* (volume 1) was distributed and available at the 18th General Assembly. This year, the *1991 Yearbook* will appear in two volumes and will be available at the 19th General Assembly. The magnitude of the work forces us to print it in two volumes from here on out.

The smaller *Directory of Churches* will also be available at the 19th General Assembly. As the name implies, it is only a directory of churches in the PCA by State, and does not include all the ministers. Our intention is to produce this blue *Directory* in January of each year rather than in June, thus having it in time for Spring and Summer travel for people in our denomination.

The *Commissioner's Handbook* for the 19th General Assembly has gone out to all registered commissioners. Two lengthy reports make it rather large this year: the report of the Ad Interim Committee on Divorce and Remarriage, and the report of the Standing Judicial Commission.

Two other major projects accomplished were the new editions of the *Westminster Confession and Catechisms* and the *Book of Church Order*. Both of these

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

were done last Fall. Unfortunately, there were a few errors, typographical and otherwise, that crept into these documents. They will be corrected in future editions.

One very important correction to the *Westminster Confession* is worthy of immediated attention. Dr. David Calhoun noticed that *WCF 20-4* did not end correctly. The new edition inadvertently omitted the last phrase ("and proceeded against, by the censures of the Church, and by the power of the civil magistrate") as well as a lengthy footnote.

Dr. Calhoun pointed out that "and by the power of the civil magistrate" had been deleted by the drafters of the American edition in 1789 along with the amendments to chapter 23. All of the published Confessions by the PCA still incorporated those words. However, Dr. Morton Smith suggested looking into *the Minutes of the 1st General Assembly of the PCA, (1973)*. We were pleasantly surprised to see that these very last words were not included. Therefore, in the next printing we will have it corrected.

### II. BOOK OF CHURCH ORDER AMMENDMENTS

The six *Book of Church Order* amendments sent down to presbyteries by the 18th General Assembly for their advice and consent are listed on pages 255 and following of the *Commissioner's Handbook*.

Contrary to rumors and reports, the Stated Clerk has not tried to influence the vote by presbyteries or even the next General Assembly on the *BCO* amendments. As a matter of fact, I am opposed to at least one of the proposed amendments on principal grounds.

Further, the context of the Stated Clerk's letter points to the fact that he was addressing a question asked by several sessions about what if the amendment regarding ruling elder representation passed. When would it take effect, and how might sessions apply it if it does pass.

If anyone has been offended by my written remarks, I offer my humble apologies. I realize I could have been more judicious in my choice of words.

### III. STATISTICS

A Five Year Summary of PCA Statistics is Attached, Table 1 (see page 271). For 1990 we are reporting 1,055 churches and 128 missions as compared to previous year of 998 churches and 120 missions. This represents an increase of 5.7% and 6.6% respectively. In 1984 we projected having 1197 churches in 1990.

As for membership, our statistics show a total membership of 224,821 which includes ministers, communicant members, and non-communicants. (It is to be noted that in 1989 churches reported baptized and non-baptized children of the covenant. The 1990 statistics do not include the non-baptized children). Total communicant



## APPENDICES

membership went from 173,490 to 186,064 for an increase of 7.24%. There was a 17.7% growth for the five year period in communicant membership. In terms of our 1984 projections, we are two years behind schedule.

The book of Acts reports the increase of the church by 3,000 persons in one special day (Acts 2:41). It is interesting that Luke uses a recurring phrase about the church "But the Word of God grew and multiplied" (Acts 12:24) and "The Word of God spread, and the number of the disciples multiplied greatly in Jerusalem" (Acts 6:7). Would that history might record that kind of growth in the PCA.

We are now reporting 2096 ordained ministers in the PCA (see Table 2, page 272). Apart from those who are pastoring (including assistants and associates) in PCA churches, there are a large number who are foreign missionaries, chaplains (in the military as well as in other institutions), professors, teachers, and administrators. All of this reflects a significant influence of the PCA throughout the world. In 1984, we projected a need for 2095 ordained ministers.

Table 3 (page 273) lists churches for whom we have not received recent statistics. This continues to be a problem in determining accurately our statistical situation. I would urge that elders in these churches seek to promote the need for good and timely statistics.

Table 4 (page 281) gives a summary analysis by presbyteries of churches contributing to General Assembly causes. We are still around 79% of churches who contribute to one or more General Assembly causes.

### IV. OTHER ASSEMBLY ASSIGNMENTS

The Stated Clerk has sought to be faithful to his Lord and Master, Jesus Christ. He has tried diligently to fulfill all the responsibilities of his office and regularly reports to the chairman of the Administrative Committee, under whose supervision he serves. The clerk has attended presbytery meetings, preached in churches, conducted seminars, responded to multitudinous questions on the *BCO* and other General Assembly documents, has conducted regional meetings of presbytery clerks, communicating fairly regularly with sessions and friends of the PCA. He has assisted various committees of the General Assembly as well as the Standing Judicial Commission in order to enable them to do their work on behalf of General Assembly.

The clerk is grateful for the hard-working staff without whose help it would be impossible to fulfill the duties of the office. Above all, he is grateful to the Lord Jesus Christ, the King and Head of the church, who wonderfully rules and overrules in the affairs of people. We humbly offer the work of our hands and minds to His glory, honor and praise.

Faithfully Submitted,  
/s/ Paul R. Gilchrist  
Stated Clerk of General Assembly

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

ATTACHMENT 1

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON CONSTITUTIONAL  
BUSINESS  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

PART I: ASSIGNMENTS GIVEN TO THE COMMITTEE BY THE  
18TH GENERAL ASSEMBLY

There were three matters assigned to the Committee by the 18th General Assembly. One is found in *Minutes*, 18-45, p. 118. The other two are referred to in *Minutes*, 18-59, p. 135

1. *M18GA*, 18-41, p. 118. Moderator's Ruling Concerning the Manner of Receiving References in the Future.

**RESPONSE:** The Committee on Constitution Business, at its stated meeting on April 26 and 27, 1991, consulted with Jack Williamson, who was representing the appropriate Subcommittee of the Administrative Committee. Language was drafted for insertion in the Operations Manual of the Constitutional Business, and was sent with Mr. Williamson for the Administrative Committee's consideration at their June meeting.

2. *M18GA*, 18-59, p. 135. Referring to Overture 19 (*M17GA*, p. 166). Draft amendments to *BCO* 37 to clarify jurisdiction in the process of restoring an excommunicated and deposed teaching elder.

**RESPONSE:** The Committee recommends that a new 37-5 be inserted, to read as follows:

"Prior to the restoration of an excommunicated teaching elder, the Session shall request the Presbytery of record to absolve him from the censure of excommunication. Following the removal of the censure by the Presbytery, the Session shall proceed with restoration."

Re-number the remaining paragraphs accordingly.

MINORITY OPINION  
CONCERNING

ASSIGNMENT GA 18-59

(*M18GA*, p. 135, referring to Overture 19, *M17GA*, p. 166)

This minority opinion, which would be filed as a Protest if the majority opinion were that of a court, is in protest of the majority opinion requiring that a Session obtain permission of a higher court in order to exercise a power assigned exclusively to the

## APPENDICES

Session by the PCA Constitution. Also, it is respectfully pointed out that the majority opinion is incorrect on the effect of excommunication on the jurisdiction of church courts.

*BCO 12-5* assigns the power "to receive members into the communion of the church" to the Session. This power is exclusively a Sessional power and the Constitution gives it to no other court.

*BCO 11-4* provides that "For the orderly and efficient dispatch of ecclesiastical business, it is necessary that the sphere of action of each court should be distinctly defined".

The majority in requiring that "Prior to restoration of an excommunicated Teaching Elder, the Session shall request the Presbytery of Record to absolve him from the censure of excommunication. Following the removal of the censure by Presbytery, the Session shall proceed with restoration." (Emphasis of mandatory language added.)

Such a requirement that one court must request action by a higher court in a non-judicial matter and to be bound by that higher court's action, manifestly violates the sphere of action of the Session defined by the Constitution in *BCO 11-4* and *12-15*. For that reason, the majority opinion should be rejected.

The minority does recognize that a Session confronted by the application of one known to be excommunicated would be wise to obtain information and advice from the court imposing such censure in order to assist the Session in determining that the excommunicated person desiring to be readmitted to the communion of the church is "so affected with his state as to be brought to repentance" (*BCO 37-4*). It is submitted that the framers of what is now *BCO 37-4* knew exactly what they were doing, and in the opinion of the minority, were correct in their exactness, when they made the restoration of all excommunicated persons subject to Session action alone.

It is the minority dissenting opinion that the majority recommendation is the second example of their misconstruing the meaning and result of excommunication.

*BCO 30-4* states that "Excommunication is the excision of an offender from the communion of the Church". *BCO 11-2* states that "The highest censure to which their (Church Courts) authority extends is to cut off the contumacious and impenitent from the congregation of believers. Matthew 18:17 alludes to an excommunicant with the words, "let him be as an heathen man and a publican".

Excision is defined as expunging or removing. "Cut off from the congregation of believers" by good and necessary consequence also confirms removal from membership.

Therefore, an office formerly held by an excommunicant has no bearing on his status as a non-member . . . as one who is not in the communion of the church. Since the non-member is obviously not a Teaching Elder, he is not a member of Presbytery and therefore that court has no jurisdiction to take action with respect to a non-member.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The analogy in Civil Law is that when a convicted person is sentenced by a judge and that person is incarcerated in prison, the sentencing judge has no further jurisdiction over that prisoner . . . I. who is now in the jurisdiction of the court in which the prison is located.

By rejecting the majority opinion, the Assembly will be confirming the Biblical principle of excommunicants being outside the Church as well as the Constitutional principle of maintaining the distinctly defined sphere of action of each court.

Respectfully submitted in Christ,  
/s/ Granville Dutton, Ruling Elder

3. *MI8GA*, 18-59, p. 135. Referring to Assignment 8 (*MI7GA*, p. 151). Draft amendments to *BCO* 10-3 to clarify whether the last two sentences of *BCO* 10-3 apply to presbyteries, or only to the General Assembly.

**RESPONSE:** The Committee recommends that *BCO* 10-3 be amended to read as follows:

"The Pastor is, for prudential reasons, moderator of the Session. The moderator of the Presbytery may be elected at each stated meeting of the court, or for a period of time up to one year. The Moderator of the General Assembly shall be chosen at each meeting; he, or in the case of his absence . . . ."

## PART II: OTHER ACTIONS

1. The Committee on Constitutional Business met for only one meeting for the 1990-91 year in Atlanta on April 26, 1991.
2. Those in attendance were: TE David Dively, Great Lakes, Chairman; TE Roland Barnes, Central Georgia; TE Craig Childs, Evangel; TE Rod Mays, Mississippi Valley; RE Granville Dutton, North Texas; RE David Lackman, Philadelphia; and RE Richard Springer, New Jersey, Secretary. TE Dr. Paul Gilchrist, Stated Clerk of the General Assembly represented the Administrative Committee. RE Donald Campbell, Eastern Canada, joined the committee later during the meeting.
3. **Call to Order**  
The meeting was called to order at 2 p.m. by the chairman and led in opening prayer. TE E. Crowell Cooley, Northern Illinois, and RE Daniel Domin, South Florida, were excused by proper motion. TE Childs was seated as a voting member due to the absence of TE Cooley.

## APPENDICES

### 4. References

Item E - from North Texas - The Proper Interpretation of *BCO* 46-5.

It was M/S/P that in the opinion of the Committee the answer to the question, "Does 46-5 allow sessions the option of removing members' names from the roll without formal process leading to excommunication?" is that the intention of the 16th General Assembly in amending 46-5 was to allow for the non-judicial removal of members and the language adopted by the 18th General Assembly might be so interpreted. (*M16GA* 16-77, III, 13)

The following minority report was submitted:

#### MINORITY REPORT for Item E - North Texas Presbytery

This minority report to the advice given by the majority is respectfully submitted.

The grounds for this report are as follows:

1. The answer avoids a definitive answer to the question posed.
2. Clearly, *BCO* 46-5 does allow Sessions the option to remove members from the local church roll without formal process leading to excommunication. This clarity is based on:
  - a. Excommunication is a censure "to be inflicted only on account of gross crime or heresy and when the offender shows himself incorrigible and contumacious." (*BCO* 30-4)
  - b. As a censure, excommunication can be imposed only by judicial process, which requires a charge, an indictment, citation, trial, witnesses, a roll call vote, a verdict and judgment. (*BCO* 31 and 32)
  - c. Such process in NOT contemplated by 46-5 language authorizing "deleting such name from the church roll."
  - d. The current 46-5 language is a result of a directive by the 16th General Assembly to the CJB "to consider amendments to the *BCO* to provide for non-judicial removal from membership" (*M16GA* 16-77, III, 13, p. 173), the CJB recommendation of the current language, its adoption by the 17th GA and, after approval by 35 of 43 Presbyteries, the 18th GA.
  - e. The principal change in 46-5 so adopted was to eliminate the necessity of complying with 27-5 in favor of following "scriptural procedures (Matthew 18)."
  - f. 27-5 requires that "the Church must act through her court unto admonition, suspension, excommunication and deposition." Matthew 18 makes no such requirement.
  - g. To carry out the 16th GA's direction to provide for non-judicial removal, it was necessary to eliminate the 27-5 requirement that "the Church must" take one of the judicial actions of admonition, suspension, excommunicaiton or deposition.
  - h. The new 46-5 language included the addition "The Session shall always notify the person whose name has been deleted." Such notice after the fact of deletion would not comply with the requirements of the judicial process of excommunicaiton.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

3. To equate a deletion from the church rolls because a member has "willfully neglected the church for a period of one year or has made it known that he or she has no intention of fulfilling the church vow" with the "gross crime or heresy" and incorrigible and contumacious conduct essential for excommunication would necessitate an unreasonable interpretation of the words used.

The answer to the question should be clearly stated as: "Yes. The word "delete" as used in *BCO* 46-5 does not mean "excommunication" as used in the *BCO*.

To accept another interpretation would do violence to the entire Presbyterian system of Due Process. (Incidentally, it would also result in the possibility of excommunicating a member "whose residence has been unknown for one year." paragraph 4 of 46-2).

Although the majority's deliberately ambiguous answer does allow Sessions the option to come to the same conclusions as the minority answer, the majority's inability to state a clear "yes" appears to be based on a sincere question as to the validity of a non-judicial removal from the roll. The minority view is that non-judicial removal was clearly endorsed by the actions of the 16th, 17th and 18th General Assembly's and 35 of the 43 Presbyteries, and to condemn non-judicial removal, such as by restoring the prior 46-5 language, would require a similar change of the *BCO*.

Respectfully submitted in Christ's Service,  
/s/ TE Granville Dutton.

5. **References**

II a. Northeast Presbytery - Drama and dance in worship. It was M/S/P that this be returned to the Presbytery with the determination that the matter is not properly before the committee (*BCO* 41-1) due to a lack of proper documentation. *BCO* 41-4.

6. **References**

II b. New River Presbytery - Recourse of a Presbytery to perceived errors by GA. It was M/S/P that the committee felt that the advice of the 18th General Assembly, although technically correct did not completely address the first question of Reference 3 (*M18GA*, page 203). The Committee's answer to the reference is that which was given by the 12th GA, - to overture the GA to take a contrary position or to condemn the action of a previous General Assembly. It is the opinion of the CCB that Overture 8 from New River Presbytery to the 16th GA should have been found in order and voted on.

7. **References**

Reference from Northeast Presbytery on *BCO* 42-8. It was M/S/P that it is the opinion of the CCB that the "and" between the first two phrases of *BCO* 42-8 is expegetical and not conjunctival. The language of the first sentence of 42-8 envisions one action of the court, not two separate actions. Therefore, when a court finds an appeal in order it must proceed to hear the case. In the opinion of

## APPENDICES

the CCB, the constitutional way for the presbytery not to hear the appeal would, in the case cited, have been to determine that the appeal was not in order because the content of the grounds did not fit the requirements of *BCO* 42-3.

### 8. Reference

Reference from Great Lakes Presbytery on *BCO* 41-3. It was M/S/P that it is the opinion of the CCB that the answer to question #1 is "yes", ordination of a man in the PCA to serve in another connectional church is proper in that it is not prohibited by the language of *BCO* 8-7 - "A Presbytery may, at its discretion, approve the call of a teaching elder to work with an organization outside the jurisdiction of the Presbyterian Church in America."

It was M/S/P Question #2 - It is the opinion of the CCB that a "contract" in the RCA can be within the parameters of a call in the PCA provided the requirements of *BCO* 20-1 and *BCO* 8-7 are met.

### 9. Assignments

*M18GA*, p. 118 - it was M/S/P that the CCB carry out its assignment by consulting with Jack Williamson, representing the AC and preparing principles to be submitted to that Committee.

### 10. Assignments

Assignment from General Assembly 18-59 (*M18GA*, p. 135 referring to Overture 19 *M17GA*, p. 166) Editorial note: since *BCO* 37 has been renumbered, the assignment refers to *BCO* 37-4.

It was M/S/P that it is the recommendation of the Committee to insert a new 37-5, as follows, (and renumber the remaining paragraphs): "Prior to restoration of an excommunicated teaching elder, the session shall request the presbytery of record to absolve him from the censure of excommunication. Following the removal of the censure by presbytery, the session shall proceed with restoration."

### 11. Assignments

Assignment from General Assembly 18-59 (*M18GA*, p. 135 referring to an amendment to *BCO* 10-3). It was M/S/P that it is the recommendation of the Committee that *BCO* 10-3 be amended to read, in part, that, "The Moderator of the General Assembly shall be chosen at each meeting; he, or in the case of his absence the last ... "

### 12. Overtures

Overture #2 from Northeast Presbytery - Enforce *BCO* 46-2. M/S/P that it is the opinion of the CCB that *BCO* 46-2 does not presently refer only to the PCA, but that it refers more broadly to Presbyterian and Reformed congregations.

### 13. Overtures

Overture #5 from New River Presbytery - Amend *BCO* 15-4 to Permit General Assembly to Adjudicate. M/S/P that the overture be found in order and referred to

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

the Bills and Overtures Committee with the notation that in the "Therefore" portion of the overture it appear that the word "ordinarily" should be inserted after the second "shall".

14. **Overtures**

Overture #8 from Westminster Presbytery - To Amend *BCO* to provide more direct election by the Presbyteries. M/S/P that the overture be found in order and referred to the Bills and Overtures Committee.

15. **Overtures**

Overture #11 from Westminster Presbytery - To Permit GA to Adjudicate. M/S/P that the overture be found in order and referred to the Bills and Overtures Committee.

16. **Overtures**

Overture #12 from Ascension Presbytery - Amend *BCO* 34-1 so neighboring Presbytery may adjudicate case. M/S/P that the overture be found in order and referred to the Bills and Overtures Committee.

17. **Overtures**

Overture #13 from Ascension Presbytery - Amend *BCO* 15-5 requiring GA ratification before executing verdict. It was M/S/P to find the motion in order and refer it to the Bills and Overtures Committee.

18. **Overtures**

Overture #22 from New River Presbytery - to permit session to ordain elders and deacons. M/S/P that the overture be found in order and referred to the Bills and Overtures Committee.

19. **Overtures**

Overture #27 from James River Presbytery - Limit membership on Standing Judicial Committee. M/S/P that the overture be found in order and referred to the Bills and Overture Committee with the notation that the phrase "permanent committees" needs to be defined.

20. **Overtures**

Overture #1 from Evangel Presbytery - restatement of *BCO* 38-2. M/S/P that the overture be found in order and referred to the Bills and Overtures Committee with the notation that the reference to 37-4 should read 37-5 and that the word "ceremony" is not consistent with the language of *BCO*.

Respectfully submitted,

/s/ Richard Springer  
Secretary



## APPENDICES

### ATTACHMENT 2

#### OPERATIONS MANUAL

#### For The

#### COMMITTEE ON CONSTITUTIONAL BUSINESS

##### 1. ORGANIZATION

- 1.1 The Committee is composed of eight members elected in the same manner as other committees of the General Assembly. The members are divided into four classes with one teaching and one ruling elder per class. There are also one teaching and one ruling elder alternate elected each year.
- 1.2 The officers of the Committee shall be a chairman and a secretary, who shall be elected by the committee at the General Assembly. They shall begin their term of office immediately after the meeting of the General Assembly.
- 1.3 The alternates are expected to attend all the committee meetings. When a member is absent, an alternate (preferably of the same class) shall serve and shall have full voting privileges.
- 1.4 At regular meetings, a quorum shall consist of a majority of the members. \*
- 1.5 The Committee shall not be funded separately but administratively will operate as a subcommittee of the Administrative Committee of the General Assembly.
- 1.6 Minutes of the committee shall be maintained in accordance with RAO 13-13.

##### 2. FUNCTIONS

- 2.1 The Committee shall serve the General Assembly as provided in RAO 7-2 and shall meet at the direction of the Assembly and at the request of the Stated Clerk.
- 2.2 The Committee shall not introduce new business.
- 2.3 The committee shall prepare a report of its advice submitted to the Stated Clerk between Assemblies for inclusion in the Stated Clerk's report to the General Assembly.

---

\* In a meeting directed by the Assembly, during an Assembly, the Assembly may authorize a smaller quorum.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- 2.4 When the Assembly shall require the committee to make a study of a matter, the committee may use learned consultants from the church at large. The committee will attach to its minutes a digest of the advice received in such cases.

### 3. AMENDMENT:

This manual may be amended at any meeting of the Committee by a two-third's vote of those present and voting, provided that:

- a. Prior notice has been given by mailing a copy of such proposed amendment to each Committee member at least 10 days prior to such meeting.
- b. Such amendment is consistent with the Constitution and the Rules of Assembly Operations.

**ATTACHMENT 3**  
**TABLE 1**  
**FIVE YEAR SUMMARY OF THE**  
**PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA STATISTICS**

	1986	1987	1988	1989	1990
Presbyteries . . . . .	43	43	44	47	49
Churches . . . . .	924	951	957	998	1,055
Missions . . . . .	99	91	126	120	128
Ministers . . . . .	1,722	1,809	1,978	1,971	2,096
Candidates . . . . .	270	269	--	255	266
Licentiates . . . . .	153	166	--	185	161
Profession of Faith by Covenant Children . . . . .	1,609	1,640	2,124	2,348	2,524
Profession of Faith by Adults . . . . .	3,026	3,027	3,329	3,574	4,728
Communicants . . . . .	159,105	165,525	170,344	172,519	183,968
Non-communicants . . . . .	30,133	30,241	38,832	43,525 (1)	38,757
Total Membership (Comm, Non-comm, Ministers) . . . . .	190,960	197,575	211,154	218,015	224,821
Family Units . . . . .	74,787	69,645	78,857	83,415	89,616
Sunday School Enrollment . . . . .	90,986	86,446	101,870	109,467	112,674
Adult Baptisms . . . . .	1,370	1,251	1,614	1,686	1,834
Infant Baptisms . . . . .	3,210	3,323	3,787	4,057	4,489
Total Contributions . . . . .	153,361,757	148,701,489	191,094,807	183,315,615 (2)	204,477,817
Per Capita Giving (3) . . . . .	954	898	1,122	1,093	1,141
Assembly Causes . . . . .	7,793,178	7,748,092	9,432,052	11,000,553	11,436,347
Presbytery Causes . . . . .	1,858,488	1,933,576	2,224,299	2,550,230	2,410,094
Congregation Benevolences . . . . .	28,046,848	30,184,589	38,110,387	47,600,758	48,550,118
Total Benevolences . . . . .	37,698,514	39,866,257	49,766,738	61,151,541	62,396,559
Per Capita Benevolences (3) . . . . .	234	241	304	365	348
Congregational Current Expenses . . . . .	76,208,959	76,317,462	101,010,154	111,177,210	123,432,523
Congregational Building Expenditures . . . . .	30,542,956	25,546,202	35,520,438	35,664,818	41,899,537
Total All Disbursements . . . . .	144,450,429	141,729,921	186,297,330	207,993,569	227,728,619

(1) Included non-baptized covenant children; all other years include only baptized covenant children.

(2) Beginning in 1989, the statistics included a category for Earned Income, separate from Total Contributions.

(3) Presbytery and Assembly per capita giving was figured only for those congregations reporting financial statistics.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

ATTACHMENT 4

STATUS OF ORDAINED MINISTERS IN PCA BY POSITION  
as of December 31, 1990

Pastor	702
Senior Pastor	151
Associate Pastor	89
Assistant Pastor	149
Evangelist	30
Organizing Pastor	100
Subtotal	1,221
Administration	53
Chaplain	83
Foreign Missionary	133
Campus Minister	16
Stated Supply	16
Professor	55
Teacher	8
Honorably Retired	170
Out-of-Bounds	173
Without Charge	168
TOTAL	2,096

APPENDICES

ATTACHMENT 5  
CHURCHES NOT REPORTING 1990 STATISTICS

	Year for Which Statistics Were Last Received
<b><i>Ascension</i></b>	
Chapel PC, Beaver, PA	1988
<b><i>Calvary</i></b>	
Center Point PC, Moore, SC	1989
Immanuel PC, Greer, SC (m)	*
Mountville PC, Mountville, SC	1984
Norris Hill PC, Anderson, SC	1988
Union PC, Abbeville, SC	1989
<b><i>Central Carolina</i></b>	
Castanea PC, Stanley, NC	1988
Coulwood PC, Charlotte, NC	1988
Countryside PC, Cameron, NC	1989
First PC, Ellerbe, NC	1989
Harvest Grove PC, Charlotte, NC (m)	*
New Hope PC, Charlotte, NC	1988
Sandhill PC, Southern Pines, NC (m)	*
University City, Charlotte, NC (m)	*
Westminster PC, Concord, NC	1983
<b><i>Central Florida</i></b>	
Good News PC, St. Augustine, FL (m)	*
Sawgrass PC, Ponte Verde, FL (m)	*
<b><i>Central Georgia</i></b>	
Christ Community PC, Thomasville, GA (m)	*
Eastern Heights PC, Savannah, GA	1988
Trinity PC, Elberton, GA	1988
Westminster PC, Valdosta, GA	1987
<b><i>Covenant</i></b>	
Bassett PC, Bassett, AR	1988
College Hill PC, Oxford, MS	*
Covenant PC, Greenville, MS	1989
Faith PC, Aberdeen, MS	1985
Grace PC, Germantown, TN	1988
Gracewood PC, Memphis, TN	1989
Northside PC, Sherwood, AR	1985

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Year for Which Statistics  
Were Last Received

***Eastern Canada***

First PC, Unionville, ONT 1989

***Eastern Carolina***

Reformed Fellowship, Jacksonville, NC (m) \*

***Evangel***

Briarwood South PC, Birmingham, AL 1989

Courtland PC, Courtland, AL 1989

Frontier PC, Birmingham, AL \*

Grace Fellowship, Albertville, AL 1988

Grace PC, Fort Payne, AL 1988

***Grace***

Ellisville PC, Ellisville, MS 1988

First PC, Woodville, MS 1985

Helena PC, Escatawpa, MS 1989

McDonald PC, Collins, MS 1988

Monticello PC, Monticello, MS 1988

Oldenburg PC, Roxie, MS 1987

Petal PC, Petal, MS 1988

Pine Ridge PC, Natchez, MS 1988

Sharon PC, Magee, MS 1989

Sleigo PC, Collins, MS 1984

Wesson PC, Wesson, MS 1989

***Great Lakes***

Christ PC, Union, KY (m) \*

Good Shepherd PC, Valparaiso, IN 1989

Grand Valley PC, Allendale, MI (m) \*

Great Lakes PC, Wyoming, MI 1989

***Gulf Coast***

Loxley PC, Loxley, AL

Westminster PC, Tallahassee, FL 1989

***Heartland***

Grace Reformed PC, Des Moines, IA 1986

***Heritage***

Evangelical PC, Elkton, MD 1989

Grace PC, Dover, DE 1988

Manor PC, New Castle, DE 1989

APPENDICES

Year for Which Statistics  
Were Last Received

***Illiana***

Evangelical PC, Carbondale, IL	1989
First PC, West Frankfort, IL (m)	1986
Grandcote Reformed PC, Coulterville, IL	1988
Immanuel Reformed PC, Belleville, IL	1989

***James River***

Covenant PC, Harrisonburg, VA	1989
Eden Korean PC, Virginia Beach, VA	*
The Coventry Church, Hampton, VA	1989
Westminster Reformed PC, Suffolk, VA	1989

***Korean Central***

First Korean PC, Springfield, MO	1988
Han-Maum PC, Prospect Heights, IL (m)	1989
Korean PC, St. Louis, MO	1985
Sungmin PC, Chicago, IL	1989

***Korean Eastern***

First Korean PC of N. Penn., Landsdale, PA	1989
Hab Dong PC, Cheltenham, PA	*
Korean PC of Southern NY, Woodside, NY	1989
Korean PC, Edison, NJ	*
Korean Saints PC, Warminster, PA	*
Nak Won PC, Willow Grove, PA	*
New Covenant PC, Landsdale, PA	*
New Jersey Ephesus PC, Parsippany, NJ	*
New Jerusalem PC, Blue Bell, PA	*
New Life PC, Philadelphia, PA	*
Philadelphia Soh Mang PC, Ambler, PA	*
State College PC, State College, PA (m)	*
Union Korean PC, Ayer, MA	*

***Korean Southeastern***

Alexandria Korean PC, Alexandria, VA (m)	*
Augusta Bethel PC, Augusta, GA	*
Ban Suk PC, Pasadena, MD	*
Eastern PC, Baltimore, MD	*
First Korean PC, Columbia, SC	*
Jerusalem Korean PC, Fayetteville, NC	*
Jerusalem PC, Columbia, MD	*
Korean Central PC, Baltimore, MD	1983
Korean First PC, Decatur, GA	1989
Korean of S. Washington, Woodbridge, VA	*
Korean Orthodox PC, Arlington, VA	*

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Year for Which Statistics  
Were Last Received

***Korean Southeastern - continued***

Korean Shinjung PC, Atlanta, GA	1989
Korean Zion PC, Baltimore, MD	*
McLean Korean PC, McLean, VA	1989
Mil Al PC, Columbus, GA	*
Siloam PC, Severn, MD	*
Washington Shin Il PC, Annandale, VA	*

***Korean Southern***

Chung Hyun PC, Houston, TX	*
Dallas Korean PC, Carrollton, TX	*
Hahn-Mee United PC, Del City, OK	*

***Korean Southwest***

Asia PC, Los Angeles, CA (m)	*
Bethlehem Korean PC, Seattle, WA	1988
Eden Korean PC, San Leandro, CA (m)	1986
High Desert Korean PC, Victorville, CA (m)	*
Hosanna PC, Santa Clara, CA	1989
Korean Bethany PC, San Jose, CA	1988
Korean Disciple PC, Fullerton, CA	*
Korean Glory PC of San Jose, Cupertino, CA	*
Korean Holy & Grace PC, Los Angeles, CA (m)	*
Korean Peniel PC, S. San Francisco, CA (m)	*
La Mirada Korean PC, La Mirada, CA (m)	1986
Los Angeles Amen PC, Los Angeles, CA	*
Messiah PC, Whittier, CA (m)	*
Orange PC, Orange, CA	1988
Rialto Korean PC, Ontario, CA (m)	*
Union First PC, Fremont, CA (m)	*
Victory PC, Los Angeles, CA (m)	1985

***Louisiana***

Atchafalaya PC, Melville, LA	1981
DeRidder PC, DeRidder, LA	1986
Grace PC, Metairie, LA	1988

***Mid-America***

Christ PC, Claremore, OK (m)	*
Covenant PC, Fayetteville, AR	1989
Covenant PC, Ft. Smith, AR	1987
First Reformed PC, Minco, OK	1987



APPENDICES

Year for Which Statistics  
Were Last Received

**Mississippi Valley**

Alta Woods PC, Jackson, MS	1989
Carolina PC, Madden, MS	1989
Center Point PC, Prairie Point, MS	1987
Covenant PC, Louisville, MS	1989
DeKalb PC, DeKalb, MS	1989
First PC, Philadelphia, MS	1989
Goodman PC, Goodman, MS	1987
Korean PC of Jackson, Clinton, MS (m)	1988
Old Madison PC, Canton, MS	1987
Pleasant Springs PC, Preston, MS	1988
Smyrna PC, Kosciusko, MS	1977

**Missouri**

Hazelwood Reformed PC, Hazelwood, MO	1988
Murphy-Blair Community Church, St. Louis, MO	1986
Redeemer Reformed PC, Columbia, MO	1988

**New Jersey**

Comunidade Crista, South Orange, NJ (m)	*
Covenant Bible Church, Cape May, NJ	1989
Covenant PC, Cherry Hill, NJ	1988
Fairfield PC, Fairton, NJ	1989
Igreja Evangelica, Newark, NJ (m)	*
Logos PC, Bridgewater, NJ (m)	1989

**New River -- All Churches Reporting**

**North Georgia**

Calvary PC, Peachtree City, GA (m)	1989
New Covenant PC, Atlanta, GA (m)	*
Perimeter East, Tucker, GA	*
Rock of Ages PC, Decatur, GA (m)	1989
Trinity PC, Griffin, GA (m)	*

**North Texas**

Church of the Hills, Fort Worth, TX	*
First PC, Rowlett, TX	1985
Lakewood PC, Dallas, TX	1989
PCA Colleyville, Colleyville, TX	1989
Westminster PC, Bedford, TX	1989

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Year for Which Statistics  
Were Last Received

***Northeast***

Community Covenant PC, St. Albans, VT	1989
Covenant PC, Flushing, NY	1989
Covenant PC, Groton, CT (m)	*
Jefferson PC, Jefferson, NH (m)	1988
Nova Vida Fellowship, Allston, MA (m)	*

***Northern California***

Oak Hills PC, Walnut Creek, CA (m)	1989
Ridge PC, Paradise, CA	1989
Sierra View PC, Fresno, CA	1989

***Northern Illinois*** -- All Churches Reporting

***Pacific***

Calabasas PC, Calabasas, CA	1989
Foothills PC, San Bernardino, CA	1988
Inland Korean PC, Pomona, CA (m)	1988
Spring Meadows PC, Las Vegas, NV (m)	*
Valley PC, Sepulveda, CA	1989

***Pacific Northwest***

Bellewood PC, Bellevue, WA	1989
Fraser Valley PC, Surrey, BC (m)	*
Highline Reformed PC, Seattle, WA	1989
Woodgreen PC, Calgary, ALB	1988

***Palmetto***

Andrews PC, Andrews, SC	1988
Central PC, Kingstree, SC	1987
N. Augusta PC, N. Augusta, SC (m)	*

***Philadelphia***

Christ PC, Doylestown, PA	1989
Church of the Redeemer PC, Philadelphia, PA	1989
Hope PC, Solebury, PA	1989
New Man PC, Melrose Park, PA	*
Proclamation PC, Wayne, PA	*

***Potomac*** -- All Churches Reporting

***Siouxlands*** -- All Churches Reporting

APPENDICES

	Year for Which Statistics Were Last Received
<b><i>South Coast</i></b>	
Escondido PC, Escondido, CA (m)	*
New Life PC, San Diego, CA	1989
<b><i>South Texas</i></b>	
Dios Con Nosotros, McAllen, TX (m)	*
Evangelical PC, San Antonio, TX	1989
<b><i>Southeast Alabama</i></b>	
Covenant Fellowship PC, Andalusia, AL (m)	*
Eastwood PC, Montgomery, AL	1989
First PC, Florala, AL	1989
Friendship PC, Eufaula, AL	1989
Lowndesboro PC, Lowndesboro, AL	1989
New Harmony PC, Waverly, AL	1985
Pea River PC, Clio, AL	1989
Trinity PC, Opelika, AL	1989
<b><i>Southern Florida</i></b>	
El Redentor PC, Miami, FL	1989
Iglesia Presbiteriana, Miami, FL (m)	1988
PC of Boatswain Bay, West Bay, Grand Cayman, BWI	*
Trinity PC, Miami, FL	1989
West Boca PC, Boca Raton, FL	1988
<b><i>Southwest</i></b>	
Evergreen PC, Evergreen, CO (m)	1988
Forestgate PC, Colorado Springs, CO	1989
Northeast PC, Albuquerque, NM	1989
South Valley PC, Chandler, AZ (m)	1988
Word of Life PC, Mesa, AZ	1987
<b><i>Southwest Florida</i></b>	
Auburn Road PC, Venice, FL	1988
Christ PC, Valrico, FL (m)	*
Community PC, Palm Harbor, FL	1989
<b><i>Susquehanna Valley -- All Churches Reporting</i></b>	
<b><i>Tennessee Valley</i></b>	
Alta Vista PC, Sweetwater, TN	*
Grace PC, Cleveland, TN (m)	*
Highland PC, Lafayette, GA (m)	*

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Year for Which Statistics  
Were Last Received

*Tennessee Valley - continued*

Lookout Valley PC, Chattanooga, TN	1989
New Covenant PC, Clarksville, TN (m)	*
Westminster PC, Dayton, TN (m)	*

*Warrior*

Akron PC, Akron, AL	1987
Catherine PC, Catherine, AL	*
Cedar Grove PC, Epes, AL	1988
Central PC, Emelle, AL	1987
Gainesville PC, Gainesville, AL	1973
Mt. Olivet PC, Gordo, AL	1979
Myrtlewood PC, Myrtlewood, AL	1981

*Western Carolina*

Covenant Reformed PC, Asheville, NC	1989
Whiteside PC, Cashiers, NC (m)	*

*Westminster*

Bartlick Chapel, Haysi, VA (m)	*
King Memorial PC, Bristol, VA	1986
Lippincott PC, Bristol, VA (m)	1987
Trinity PC, Tazewell, VA	1989

**Total number of churches:169**

**Total number of missions:55**

**\* Statistics not available**

TABLE 4  
SUMMARY ANALYSIS BY PRESBYTERY OF CHURCHES CONTRIBUTING TO G.A. CAUSES

NOTE: This analysis is based on the 1990 Yearbook statistics.

	Total Number of Churches	Administration		Christian Education		Mission to North America		Mission to the World		Covenant College		Covenant Seminary		Ridge Haven		Other G.A. Causes		G.A. CONTR. SUMMARY	
		Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent
<b>Ascension</b>	Chur.	38	53%	19	50%	24	63%	31	82%	22	58%	21	55%	5	13%	22	58%	33	87%
	Missions	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	38	53%	19	50%	24	63%	31	82%	22	58%	21	55%	5	13%	22	58%	33	87%
<b>Calvary</b>	Chur.	48	71%	31	65%	31	65%	35	73%	28	58%	27	56%	26	54%	29	60%	43	90%
	Missions	1	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	49	69%	31	63%	31	63%	35	71%	28	57%	27	55%	26	53%	29	59%	43	88%
<b>Central Carolina</b>	Chur.	28	39%	10	36%	14	50%	15	54%	9	32%	8	29%	8	29%	15	54%	21	75%
	Missions	5	20%	0	0%	1	20%	1	20%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	20%
	Total	33	36%	10	30%	15	45%	16	48%	9	27%	8	24%	8	24%	16	48%	22	67%
<b>Central Florida</b>	Chur.	20	65%	8	40%	12	60%	13	65%	7	35%	8	40%	4	20%	8	40%	15	75%
	Missions	4	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	24	54%	8	33%	12	50%	13	54%	7	29%	8	33%	4	17%	8	33%	15	63%
<b>Central Georgia</b>	Chur.	30	50%	13	43%	13	43%	19	63%	12	40%	11	37%	10	33%	18	60%	24	80%
	Missions	3	0%	0	0%	0	0%	2	67%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	33	45%	13	39%	13	39%	21	64%	12	36%	11	33%	10	30%	18	55%	26	79%
<b>Covenant</b>	Chur.	40	53%	20	50%	21	53%	24	60%	14	35%	14	35%	9	23%	22	55%	30	75%
	Missions	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	40	53%	20	50%	21	53%	24	60%	14	35%	14	35%	9	23%	22	55%	30	75%
<b>Eastern Canada</b>	Chur.	6	17%	0	0%	1	17%	2	33%	1	17%	0	0%	0	0%	2	33%	2	33%
	Missions	1	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	7	14%	0	0%	1	14%	2	29%	1	14%	0	0%	0	0%	2	29%	2	29%
<b>Eastern Carolina</b>	Chur.	13	54%	7	54%	6	46%	8	62%	5	38%	5	38%	5	38%	8	62%	11	85%
	Missions	1	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	14	50%	7	50%	6	43%	8	57%	5	36%	5	36%	5	36%	8	57%	11	79%
<b>Evangel</b>	Chur.	31	55%	14	45%	18	58%	20	65%	10	32%	11	35%	8	26%	16	52%	26	84%
	Missions	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	31	55%	14	45%	18	58%	20	65%	10	32%	11	35%	8	26%	16	52%	26	84%
<b>Grace</b>	Chur.	44	36%	18	41%	21	48%	29	66%	11	25%	10	23%	6	14%	27	61%	37	84%
	Missions	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	44	36%	18	41%	21	48%	29	66%	11	25%	10	23%	6	14%	27	61%	37	84%
<b>Great Lakes</b>	Chur.	15	73%	9	60%	11	73%	12	80%	9	60%	10	67%	4	27%	8	53%	12	80%
	Missions	10	30%	2	20%	1	10%	2	20%	1	10%	1	10%	1	10%	2	20%	4	40%
	Total	25	56%	11	44%	12	48%	14	56%	10	40%	11	44%	5	20%	10	40%	16	64%
<b>Gulf Coast</b>	Chur.	22	45%	12	55%	16	73%	17	77%	10	45%	8	36%	6	27%	13	59%	18	82%
	Missions	3	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	25	40%	12	48%	16	64%	17	68%	10	40%	8	32%	6	24%	13	52%	18	72%

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

	Total Number of Churches	Admini- stration		Christian Education		Mission to North America		Mission to the World		Covenant College		Covenant Seminary		Ridge Haven		Other G.A. Causes		G.A. CONTR. SUMMARY		
		Number	Contrib.	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	
<b>Heartland</b>	Churches	13	9	69%	8	62%	7	54%	9	69%	9	69%	9	69%	2	15%	7	54%	10	77%
	Missions	1	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	14	9	64%	8	57%	7	50%	9	64%	9	64%	9	64%	2	14%	7	50%	10	71%
<b>Heritage</b>	Churches	16	9	56%	12	75%	13	81%	11	69%	12	75%	12	75%	3	19%	10	63%	14	88%
	Missions	0	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	16	9	56%	12	75%	13	81%	11	69%	12	75%	12	75%	3	19%	10	63%	14	88%
<b>Illiana</b>	Churches	11	5	45%	5	45%	8	73%	11	100%	9	82%	7	64%	2	18%	7	64%	11	100%
	Missions	2	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	13	5	38%	5	38%	8	62%	11	85%	9	69%	7	54%	2	15%	7	54%	11	85%
<b>James River</b>	Churches	24	15	63%	15	63%	13	54%	14	58%	10	42%	8	33%	6	25%	10	42%	19	79%
	Missions	1	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	100%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	100%	1	100%
	Total	25	15	60%	15	60%	13	52%	15	60%	10	40%	8	32%	6	24%	11	44%	20	80%
<b>Korean Central</b>	Churches	6	0	0%	0	0%	1	17%	1	17%	0	0%	1	17%	0	0%	0	0%	2	33%
	Missions	1	0	0%	0	0%	1	14%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	7	0	0%	0	0%	1	14%	1	14%	0	0%	1	14%	0	0%	0	0%	2	29%
<b>Korean Eastern</b>	Churches	15	1	7%	1	7%	1	7%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	2	13%	3	20%
	Missions	1	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	16	1	6%	1	6%	1	6%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	2	13%	3	19%
<b>Korean Southeast</b>	Churches	21	2	10%	2	10%	2	10%	1	5%	1	5%	0	0%	1	5%	3	14%	4	19%
	Missions	2	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	23	2	9%	2	9%	2	9%	1	4%	1	4%	0	0%	1	4%	3	13%	4	17%
<b>Korean Southern</b>	Churches	6	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	17%
	Missions	0	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	6	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	17%
<b>Korean Southwest</b>	Churches	7	0	0%	0	0%	1	14%	1	14%	0	0%	1	14%	0	0%	0	0%	4	57%
	Missions	11	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	18	0	0%	0	0%	1	6%	1	6%	0	0%	1	6%	0	0%	0	0%	4	22%
<b>Louisiana</b>	Churches	15	9	60%	9	60%	9	60%	11	73%	7	47%	8	53%	4	27%	11	73%	12	80%
	Missions	2	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	17	9	53%	9	53%	9	53%	11	65%	7	41%	8	47%	4	24%	11	65%	12	71%
<b>Mid-America</b>	Churches	8	4	50%	3	38%	3	38%	5	63%	4	50%	4	50%	1	13%	3	38%	6	75%
	Missions	1	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
	Total	9	4	44%	3	33%	3	33%	5	56%	4	44%	4	44%	1	11%	3	33%	6	67%
<b>Mississippi Valley</b>	Churches	58	31	53%	31	53%	31	53%	39	67%	21	36%	23	40%	14	24%	30	52%	44	76%
	Missions	1	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	100%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	100%
	Total	59	31	53%	31	53%	31	53%	40	68%	21	36%	23	39%	14	24%	30	51%	45	76%

APPENDICES

Total Number of Churches	Admin-istration Number	Christian Education Number	Mission to North America		Mission to the World		Covenant College		Covenant Seminary		Ridge Haven Number	Other G.A. Causes		G.A. CONTR. SUMMARY					
			Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent		Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent		
Missouri Churches	18	14	78%	11	61%	12	67%	15	83%	12	67%	13	72%	6	33%	8	44%	16	89%
Missions	0	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	18	14	78%	11	61%	12	67%	15	83%	12	67%	13	72%	6	33%	8	44%	16	89%
New Jersey Churches	17	9	53%	6	35%	9	53%	11	65%	7	41%	7	41%	3	18%	9	53%	15	88%
Missions	4	1	25%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	21	10	48%	6	29%	9	43%	11	52%	7	33%	7	33%	3	14%	9	43%	16	76%
New River Churches	15	9	60%	8	53%	8	53%	12	80%	5	33%	5	33%	3	20%	10	67%	12	80%
Missions	0	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	15	9	60%	8	53%	8	53%	12	80%	5	33%	5	33%	3	20%	10	67%	12	80%
North Georgia Churches	29	18	62%	17	59%	17	59%	20	69%	12	41%	11	38%	10	34%	18	62%	24	83%
Missions	6	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	2	33%	3	50%
Total	35	18	51%	17	49%	19	54%	20	57%	12	34%	11	31%	10	29%	20	57%	27	77%
North Texas Churches	17	8	47%	9	53%	9	53%	13	76%	8	47%	7	41%	4	24%	9	53%	14	82%
Missions	0	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	17	8	47%	9	53%	9	53%	13	76%	8	47%	7	41%	4	24%	9	53%	14	82%
Northeast Churches	14	7	50%	5	36%	8	57%	10	71%	5	36%	5	36%	1	7%	5	36%	11	79%
Missions	6	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	17%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	20	7	35%	5	25%	8	40%	11	55%	5	25%	5	25%	1	5%	6	30%	12	60%
Northern California Churches	7	2	29%	0	0%	1	14%	3	43%	1	14%	0	0%	0	0%	3	43%	4	57%
Missions	4	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	2	50%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	2	50%	2	50%
Total	11	2	18%	0	0%	1	9%	5	45%	1	9%	0	0%	0	0%	5	45%	6	55%
Northern Illinois Churches	13	4	31%	4	31%	5	38%	9	69%	5	38%	3	23%	0	0%	8	62%	10	77%
Missions	4	1	25%	0	0%	0	0%	1	25%	1	25%	0	0%	0	0%	1	25%	3	75%
Total	17	5	29%	4	24%	5	29%	10	59%	6	35%	3	18%	0	0%	9	53%	13	76%
Pacific Churches	9	3	33%	3	33%	3	33%	5	56%	3	33%	3	33%	0	0%	2	22%	5	56%
Missions	3	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	12	3	25%	3	25%	3	25%	5	42%	3	25%	3	25%	0	0%	2	17%	5	42%
Pacific Northwest Churches	14	9	64%	8	57%	8	57%	8	57%	7	50%	8	57%	2	14%	8	57%	11	79%
Missions	7	2	29%	2	29%	3	43%	2	29%	2	29%	2	29%	2	29%	1	14%	3	43%
Total	21	11	52%	10	48%	11	52%	10	48%	9	43%	10	48%	4	19%	9	43%	14	67%
Palmetto Churches	43	26	60%	24	56%	28	65%	36	84%	22	51%	20	47%	23	53%	32	74%	39	91%
Missions	3	1	33%	1	33%	1	33%	1	33%	1	33%	1	33%	1	33%	0	0%	1	33%
Total	46	27	59%	25	54%	29	63%	37	80%	23	50%	21	46%	24	52%	32	70%	40	87%
Philadelphia Churches	22	12	55%	11	50%	12	55%	14	64%	11	50%	9	41%	4	18%	10	45%	17	77%
Missions	2	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	24	12	50%	11	46%	12	50%	14	58%	11	46%	9	38%	4	17%	10	42%	17	71%
Potomac Churches	42	33	79%	26	62%	27	64%	29	69%	25	60%	25	60%	12	29%	21	50%	36	86%
Missions	7	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	14%	1	14%
Total	49	33	67%	26	53%	27	55%	29	59%	25	51%	25	51%	12	24%	22	45%	37	76%

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Number of Churches	Admin- stration Number	Christian Education Number	Mission to North America		Mission to the World		Covenant College		Covenant Seminary		Ridge Haven		Other G.A. Causes		G.A. CONTR. SUMMARY		
			Contrib.	Percent	Number	Percent	Number	Percent	Contrib.	Percent	Number	Percent	Contrib.	Percent	Number	Percent	Contrib.
Siouxlands Churches	10	6	60%	7	70%	7	70%	5	50%	6	60%	2	20%	9	90%	10	100%
Missions	0	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	10	6	60%	7	70%	7	70%	5	50%	6	60%	2	20%	9	90%	10	100%
South Churches	8	2	25%	3	38%	5	63%	2	25%	1	13%	1	13%	0	0%	6	75%
Missions	3	0	0%	0	0%	1	33%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	33%
Coast Total	11	2	18%	3	27%	6	55%	2	18%	1	9%	1	9%	0	0%	7	64%
South Churches	15	7	47%	10	67%	10	67%	6	40%	4	27%	2	13%	8	53%	12	80%
Missions	3	1	33%	1	33%	2	67%	1	33%	1	33%	0	0%	0	0%	2	67%
Texas Total	18	8	44%	11	61%	12	67%	7	39%	5	28%	2	11%	8	44%	14	78%
Southeast Churches	35	16	46%	13	37%	15	43%	10	29%	7	20%	6	17%	17	49%	26	74%
Missions	2	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Alabama Total	37	16	43%	13	35%	15	41%	10	27%	7	19%	6	16%	17	46%	26	70%
Southern Churches	28	13	46%	10	36%	17	61%	11	39%	9	32%	4	14%	16	57%	24	86%
Missions	3	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	2	67%
Florida Total	31	13	42%	10	32%	17	55%	11	35%	9	29%	4	13%	16	52%	26	84%
Southwest Churches	19	10	53%	9	47%	15	79%	10	53%	6	32%	0	0%	14	74%	16	84%
Missions	7	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	14%
Total	26	10	38%	9	35%	15	58%	10	38%	6	23%	0	0%	14	54%	17	65%
Southwest Churches	19	13	68%	13	68%	12	63%	10	53%	12	63%	8	42%	8	42%	16	84%
Missions	3	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Florida Total	22	13	59%	13	59%	12	55%	10	45%	12	55%	8	36%	8	36%	16	73%
Susque, Valley Churches	11	8	73%	6	55%	7	64%	8	73%	8	73%	2	18%	9	82%	11	100%
Missions	2	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	13	8	62%	6	46%	7	54%	8	62%	8	62%	2	15%	9	69%	11	85%
Tennessee Churches	34	24	71%	21	62%	24	71%	23	68%	16	47%	11	32%	21	62%	29	85%
Missions	4	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Valley Total	38	24	63%	21	55%	24	63%	23	61%	16	42%	11	29%	21	55%	29	76%
Warrior Churches	29	8	28%	7	24%	10	34%	5	17%	7	24%	4	14%	15	52%	19	66%
Missions	0	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Total	29	8	28%	7	24%	10	34%	5	17%	7	24%	4	14%	15	52%	19	66%
Western Churches	25	16	64%	14	56%	17	68%	12	48%	12	48%	13	52%	14	56%	22	88%
Missions	1	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%
Carolina Total	26	16	62%	14	54%	17	65%	12	46%	12	46%	13	50%	14	54%	22	85%
West- minister Churches	27	16	59%	16	59%	15	56%	11	41%	8	30%	8	30%	17	63%	23	85%
Missions	3	0	0%	0	0%	1	33%	0	0%	0	0%	0	0%	1	33%	1	33%
Total	30	16	53%	16	53%	15	50%	11	37%	8	27%	8	27%	18	60%	24	80%
ALL Churches	1055	554	53%	502	48%	570	54%	447	42%	418	40%	253	24%	568	54%	830	79%
PRESBY. Missions	128	10	8%	6	5%	9	7%	21	16%	5	4%	4	3%	13	10%	31	24%
TERIES Total	1183	564	48%	508	43%	579	49%	453	38%	423	36%	257	22%	581	49%	861	73%



APPENDICES

APPENDIX B

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
BOARD OF DIRECTORS

June 9, 1990

The Board of Directors of the Presbyterian Church in America held a regular meeting on June 9, 1990 in the Executive Boardroom, Hyatt Hotel, in Atlanta. GA.

The meeting was convened by Chairman William S. Henderson at 9:31 p.m. with RE Ralph Mittendorff leading in prayer.

A quorum was declared present. Those attending were as follows:

TE William A. Fox, Calvary  
TE William S. Henderson, Northeast

TE William C. Hughes, MS Valley  
TE John Love, Calvary  
TE Charles McGowan, TN Valley  
TE Harold Patteson, Palmetto  
TE Robert D. Wilcox, IFBD

RE Douglas Haskew, IAR  
RE William Joseph, Jr.  
SE Alabama  
RE Scott Levy, Illiana  
RE Ralph Mittendorff, S. Florida  
RE W. Jack Williamson, MTW

STAFF:

TE Paul Gilchrist, Stated Clerk  
RE Ross Cook, Bus. Administrator  
Laurel De Bert, Admin. Assistant  
Susan Starnes, PCA Historical Center

GA Reps:  
RE Gerald & Kay Sovereign  
TE Jack & Bette Spears

The Minutes of the March 1990 BOARD OF DIRECTORS meetings were approved.

The meeting was recessed to be reconvened at the call of the Chairman. RE Scott Levy closed in prayer at 9:32 p.m.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE William S. Henderson, Chairman  
/s/ TE Paul R. Gilchrist, Secretary

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**BOARD OF DIRECTORS**  
Presbyterian Church in America  
October 13, 1990

The Board of Directors of the Presbyterian Church in America held a regular meeting on October 13, 1990, at the Sheraton Hartsfield West Inn, Atlanta, GA.

The meeting was called to order by Chairman Scott Levy at 11:05 a.m. and RE Robert Eberst opened with prayer.

A quorum was declared present. Those attending were as follows:

**ATTENDANCE:**

TE William Fox, Jr., Calvary	RE Robert Eberst, PCAF
TE William Hughes, MS Valley	RE David Huggins, Jr., TN Valley
TE R. Grady Love, N. Georgia	RE Scott T. Levy, Illiana
TE Donald J. MacNair, Missouri	RE Robert L. Liken, Philadelphia
TE Charles Turner, Southwest	RE Lanny Moore, CTS
TE Robert Wilcox, IFBD	RE William Moore, IV, Potomac
	RE William Rocap, Jr., C. Carolina
	RE John White, MNA
	RE Jack Williamson, MTW

**STAFF:**

TE Paul R. Gilchrist, Stated Clerk  
RE Ross Cook, Bus. Administrator  
Laurel De Bert, Admin. Assistant

The Minutes of the June 1990 BOARD OF DIRECTORS meeting were approved.

MSP to move into executive session - visitors requested to leave but staff members Ross Cook, Paul Gilchrist and Laurel De Bert asked to stay.

The committee moved out of executive session.

BD-10/90-1 MSP to designate Dr. Paul R. Gilchrist as the official spokesman for the denomination in litigation arising out of Old Cutler Presbyterian Church (PCA) of Miami, FL.

BD-10/90-2 MSP that the AC members covenant together daily to pray for all the facets of the Old Cutler situation and for Dr. Paul Gilchrist as our spokesman, seeking God's hand to bring glory to Himself.

The meeting was adjourned at 11:20 a.m. with TE Charles Turner leading in prayer.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ RE Scott T. Levy, Chairman  
/s/ TE Paul R. Gilchrist, Secretary

## APPENDICES

### BOARD OF DIRECTORS Presbyterian Church in America March 16, 1991

Chairman RE Scott Levy called the meeting to order at 11:35 a.m. and RE William Moore opened with prayer.

#### ATTENDANCE:

TE William Hughes, MS Valley  
TE Donald J. MacNair, Missouri  
TE Ron Shaw, CE&P  
TE Charles Turner, Southwest  
TE Robert Wilcox, IFBD

RE Robert Eberst, PCAF  
RE Richard Herbert, Mid-America  
RE David Huggins, Jr., TN Valley  
RE Scott T. Levy, Illiana  
RE William Moore, IV, Potomac  
RE William Rocap, Jr., C. Carolina  
RE John White, MNA  
RE Jack Williamson, MTW

#### STAFF:

TE Paul R. Gilchrist, Stated Clerk  
Laurel De Bert, Administrative Assistant

The MINUTES of the October 1990 Board of Directors meeting were approved.

BD-3/91-1 MSP that the corporation minutes reflect that the annual corporate filings have been accomplished in a timely manner in all states where the corporation is registered to conduct business.

BD-3/91-2 MSP that the minutes reflect that the annual RPCES corporation filings have been accomplished in a timely manner where required.

BD-3/91-3 MSP that the Board recommend to the 19th General Assembly that the Corporate Bylaws be amended by adding to Article VI Section 2 and 3 regarding Covenant College and Covenant Theological Seminary the following: "Furthermore, the Board may recommend one nominee per class from a NAPARC member denomination for consideration by the Assembly Nominating Committee."

The meeting was adjourned at 11:40 a.m. with TE Paul R. Gilchrist leading in prayer.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ RE Scott T. Levy, Chairman  
/s/ TE Paul R. Gilchrist, Secretary

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### APPENDIX C

#### ADMINISTRATIVE COMMITTEE REPORT TO THE 19TH GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

##### I. INTRODUCTION:

The Administrative Committee of the General Assembly has served the church by seeking to be true to the Lord and obedient to His Word and the subordinate standards. The committee and the staff have sought to be "your servants for Jesus' sake" (2 Corinthians 4:5).

##### II. MEETINGS BETWEEN THE ASSEMBLIES:

Following the annual meeting in June at the General Assembly, the Administrative Committee met twice in Atlanta, Georgia, to handle all the matters coming before it, first on October 12-13, 1990 and then on March 15-16, 1991. The annual meeting this year will be held in Birmingham, Alabama on June 15. The officers met with the staff on January 7, 1991.

##### III. SUMMARY OF ACTIONS BY THE BOARD OF DIRECTORS:

The committee met three times in its corporate role as the Board of Directors: June 9, 1990, October 13, 1990 and March 16, 1991. See minutes of the Board of Directors attached (*Handbook*, pages 321-323).

Shortly after the 18th General Assembly we were served notice that four civil suits had been filed against Presbyterian Church in America, (A Corporation). This was considered to be a "deep pockets" suit arising in connection with an alleged child molestation suit in a local church. At the October 13, 1990 meeting of the Directors, the Stated Clerk was designated as the official spokesman for the denomination in the litigation. Dr. Gilchrist was assisted by attorneys W. Jack Williamson and James Ostenson in working with an attorney appointed by Church Mutual Insurance Company. As of this writing (April 10, 1991), the four suits have been resolved.

##### IV. GENERAL ASSEMBLY ASSIGNMENTS:

The following assignments have been given to the Administrative Committee of General Assembly, some being carried over from previous years:

17-81,II,51, pp. 147f, part 2: That the matter of financial audits and policy audits for the permanent committees and agencies be studied and propose a method to accomplish these. A proposal has been discussed among coordinators, directors and presidents. RE W. Jack Williamson is to discuss these proposals with each

## APPENDICES

committee and agency. This task is yet to be completed and reported to the 20th General Assembly.

18-40,III,34, p. 112: That the 18th GA carry over to the 19th GA item *M17GA*, 17-81, II, 11, p. 133, as follows:

- a. A new translation of the *BCO* into Korean be made by the Assembly and each Korean presbytery ratify it prior to its ratification by the General Assembly. That the translation be funded by designated funds to the Stated Clerk's Office. That CE&P be instructed to make available the *BCO* and amendments in Korean at the cost for English versions -- any extra being subsidized in CE&P's budget.
- b. That the 19th GA refer the remaining items in *M15GA* 15-96, III, 19, items 2-4, p. 207, to the Administrative Committee for discussion with Korean presbytery stated clerks. AC is asked to report on the progress of these discussions at the 19th GA.
- c. Each Korean presbytery should check its current bylaws or standing rules for conformity to the *BCO*.
- d. New English translations of each presbytery's rules be submitted to the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records prior to the 19th GA.
- e. Each Korean presbytery should appoint a representative to certify the English translation of all Korean minutes submitted to Committee on Presbytery Records.

NOTE: These will need to be carried over to the 20th GA.

18-45, p. 118: Response to constitutional inquiry about receiving references in the future. The ruling of the moderator was to refer it to the Committee on Constitutional Business for study and recommendation to the Administrative Committee to be brought back to the 19th GA. Since the CCB has not had a chance to address this matter, this may need to be carried over to the 20th GA.

18-55,III,7, p. 124: That Overture 15 be answered by this assembly in the negative (as amended) and referred to the Administrative Committee. The assignment is unclear as to what is referred since the overture was answered in the negative.

18-70, rec.4, p. 143: That the Administrative Committee docket the report from the Ad Interim Committee on Divorce and Remarriage for Tuesday morning, 8:45 a.m. at the 19th GA. This is so docketed.

### V. PCA OFFICE BUILDING

So far this year, we are exceeding budgeted income and holding expenses under budget on the management of the PCA's office building. This allows us to use all contributions to pay down the loan principle, which in turn further reduces the interest expense. As of June 1 the total balance on the building loans will be \$2,217,000.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### VI PERSONNEL

We continue to function with a lean staff, for whom overtime is "normal" through February. March and April, our peak work-load period as we work on the General Assembly preparations, including the Commissioner's *Handbook*. This is the period of time when the gray *1991 Yearbook* and the blue pocket *Directory of Churches* is prepared for press. We now have a fairly stable staff which is a capable, dedicated, hard-working team.

Mr. James Ostenson served for two and a half months half-time as temporary Assistant to the Stated Clerk during which time he confirmed the necessity of having someone full time in that position. But it will be difficult to fill the position at the current level of contributions.

Mr. Jerry Kornegay was appointed last Fall to fill the position of Director of the PCA Historical Center. The committee is very encouraged by the contribution he has already made to maintaining the archival records of the church. His report is attached.

### VII. SOME OF THE MORE IMPORTANT ACTIONS TAKEN

1. Approved new exhibitors for General Assembly subject to space availability: Birmingham Theological Seminary; Women to the World, International; Mainland China Missions International; Faith Prison Ministry; Association of Church Missions Committee; CHAIM; Covenant Home Curriculum; Future Systems Consultants; Institut Farel; Integrated Computer Services; Overseas Missionary Fellowship; Membership Services; National Association of Church Business Administration; Schullmerich Carillons; Walk Thru the Bible Ministries; Watchman Fellowship; World Harvest.
2. Approved a clarification of policy for GA Exhibitors along with establishing a priority for exhibitors when space is limited.
3. Approved speakers suggested by the 19th GA Arrangements Committee: Alabama Governor Guy Hunt; Vice President Dan Quayle; Secretary Jack Kemp; Senator William (Bill) Armstrong; Ron Weide of NavPress as seminar speaker; Max McLean as well as Ruth and Charles Jones as seminar leaders.
4. Reaffirmed agreement of 3rd GA (1975) that committee meetings "may be attended by any member of the PCA and that such members shall be afforded a place on the committee's docket when a request to do so is received by the committee at least 10 days before the committee meeting, and that the dates of stated committee meetings must be published at least 30 days prior to the meeting." It further affirmed that "our approved minutes are open for examination by any member of the PCA except for confidential matters."
5. Endorsed the editorial work of the Stated Clerk on the *BCO* and commended it to the General Assembly.
6. Determined to postpone further work on the PCA logo until present activities and obligations are adequately funded.

## APPENDICES

7. Approved an equal distribution of the Kauppinen bequest of \$10,000 to MTW and to MNA (for MICAH).
8. Approved a plan whereby the business of the Assembly would be expedited by eliminating refreshment breaks, having worship and special services in the evening, limiting the time for fraternal delegates to speak to five minutes each, and limiting special orders to unusual circumstances. It was proposed that GA begin on Tuesday evening, permitting the committee of commissioners to meet on Monday and Tuesday, and completing the work of GA by Friday afternoon.
9. Is discussing clarification to the policy on making mailing labels available to other than committees, presbyteries and churches of the PCA.
10. Set the following dates for committee meetings: October 4 and 5, 1991; March 20 and 21, 1992; June 15, 1992; October 9 and 10, 1992.
11. Set CEO total compensation ranges for committees and agencies. (See recommendation 16)
12. Discussed ways and means to improve fundraising for the AC.
13. Adopted a revised edition of the Operations Manual for the Committee on Constitutional Business. (See Attachment xx). TE David Dively, chairman of CCB, was coopted for this project.
14. Evaluated the State Clerk and his work and proposed clarifying the guidelines for evaluation.

## VIII. RECOMMENDATIONS

**PREFATORY STATEMENT** to recommendations 1 through 5: These proposed revisions of RAO are recommended to be dealt with by the General Assembly on the first day of the Assembly; and, if approved, these would take effect immediately at the 19th General Assembly.

1. Amend Article II of Section 2-3 to read as follows: "2-3. Any former moderator attending a General Assembly shall be enrolled and seated as a Commissioner."

**Comments and Rationale:** It has been the practice from the inception of PCA that former moderators were honored by being given the privileges of a commissioner, i.e. being seated, having the privilege of speaking and voting. Some questions arose at the last General Assembly concerning the meaning of this rule. This amendment is designed to make clear the former practice and intention of the General Assembly. It is only meet and proper that a former moderator be so honored.

2. Amend by substituting for RAO 7-2, paragraph 2 the following:  
The Committee on constitutional Business shall, between the General Assembly meetings:
  - (1) Function as advisor to the Stated Clerk when requested by him. Such advice shall be for information only and without binding authority and shall not be reported to the General Assembly.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- (2) Receive from the Stated Clerk all non-judicial references submitted by presbyteries under *BCO* 41-1 and 41-4, and, if it accedes to the request, give its advice to the presbytery sending the non-judicial reference. Such advice shall be for information only and without binding authority or precedent but shall be included as a part of the annual report of the Stated Clerk to the General Assembly.

The Committee on Constitutional Business shall, during the General Assembly meetings:

- (1) Advise the General Assembly of the effect of any proposed amendment to the constitution (including but not limited to overtures requesting amendment submitted under RAO 10-5 and 10-6). Such advice to the General Assembly shall be given at the time the proposed amendment is submitted for action.
  - (2) Report directly to the General Assembly on all constitutional inquiries submitted to it by the General Assembly.
3. Delete RAO 11-2 as this information is contained in RAO 7-2 above.

**Comments and Rationale:** The amendment to RAO 7-2, paragraph 2, above, and the deletion of RAO 11-2 have been reviewed with the Committee on Constitutional Business. They basically represent no change in the present RAO as directed by General Assembly. It is simply an attempt to consolidate all the duties of the Committee on Constitutional Business in this RAO section. After consultation with the Committee on Constitutional Business, from our original draft, we have added recommendations dealing with "non-judicial references". The Committee on Constitutional Business is in accord with these suggested changes.

4. That AC instruct the Stated Clerk to attach a summary explanation of some of the more commonly used motions from *Robert's Rules of Order* used in General Assembly.
5. Amend Article XVIII "Amendment or Suspension of Rules" be amended to read as follows:

The Rules of Assembly Operations may be amended or suspended only by a two-thirds vote of those voting; provided however that the total vote (ayes, nays, and abstentions) is equal to a majority of the total enrollment of Commissioners. Voting on any motion to so amend or suspend shall be by written ballot. Each Commissioner present in the room shall take a ballot and must vote either "aye", "nay" or "abstention". A motion to amend is debatable. A motion to suspend is not debatable.



## APPENDICES

**Comments and Rationale:** Much confusion has arisen during votes for amendment or suspension of the RAO. Many questions have arisen about the accuracy of the count of votes in view of the fact that commissioners are moving around, getting up and down, making it very difficult for the clerks to count. Under the present rules, it is also possible for commissioners who wish to defeat any proposed amendment to just abstain from voting. This is not the intention of the rule. To avoid these problems, this amendment only changes the present rule as follows, to-wit:

1. Each commissioner will be required to vote on a written ballot so that the total commissioners in the room can be accurately counted.
2. Each commissioner will either vote aye, nay, or abstain.

PREFATORY STATEMENT to recommendations 6 through 8: These proposed revisions of RAO are recommended to be dealt with by the General Assembly on the second day of the Assembly; and, if approved, these would take effect at the 20th General Assembly.

6. Amend RAO 12-2 by substituting the following language:

New business must be presented to the Assembly before noon of the second day. All new business presented by members of the Court must be in written form, and if received shall be referred to the proper permanent committee, special committee or agency and if they are unable to act the General Assembly may choose to act upon a two-thirds vote of those voting (ayes, nays, and abstentions), provided, however, that the total vote (ayes, nays and abstentions) is equal to a majority of the total enrollment of the Commissioners.

**Comments and Rationale:** This rule would require that new business be referred to the proper permanent committee, special committee or agency other than to a Committee of Commissioners. It would seem logical that if a matter of new business presented to the Assembly which affected one of the permanent committees, special committees or agencies that such business be referred to that committee or agency so affected. It would seem logical that it would be this group that would be most familiar with all of the facts and be better prepared to accurately and efficiently handle the new matter. A provision is included so that if there is not a quorum of any permanent committee or agency then the General Assembly could act upon the new business upon a two-thirds vote of those voting, provided that the total vote is equal to a majority of the total enrollment of the commissioners. It would seem that such a provision would facilitate the efficient and orderly handling of new business.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 7. Amend Article XIII. COMMITTEE OF COMMISSIONERS as follows:

Section 13-5. Add the following:

(h) The Committee of Commissioners shall not bring recommendations or advice to the Assembly that are at variance with the work or recommendations of a committee or agency without first conferring with the Chairman of the committee or agency or his designated representative.

Section 13-6. The chairman of the permanent committee, special committee or agency or his designated representative shall present the report of the committee or agency to the Assembly. No report printed in the *Handbook* shall be read in full to the Assembly. The chairman of the Committee of Commissioners or his designated representative shall have the privilege of presenting the position of the Committee of Commissioners on any recommendation in which the Committee of Commissioners differ from the permanent or special committee's report or agency report. The Assembly may waive the reading of any particular report by a majority vote of the commissioners present and voting.

Section 13-7. Thus the order for consideration of reports and recommendations shall be:

- a. Report of the Permanent Committee or Agency.
- b. Recommendation of the Permanent Committee or Agency.
- c. Recommendations of the Committee of Commissioners which differ with the report or recommendation of the permanent committee or agency.

Section 13-8. The written report of the Committee of Commissioners shall be brief and concise. It shall include the following:

- a. A list of all items referred to and considered by the committee, including the minutes presented for review.
- b. A report of any differences with any recommendation contained in an agency or committee report under consideration. Any such difference, together with grounds therefor, should be reported at the time that particular recommendation is made by the committee of agency.
- c. A record shall be kept of the division of the vote on every official recommendation made to or by the committee.

## APPENDICES

- d. Reference to overture by number and title and recommend answer.
- e. Reference to communications by number and title and recommended answer.
- f. Only such portion of narrative sections of the printed reports as are necessary to make the report of the Committee of Commissioners intelligible.
- g. The findings with respect to the minutes of the committee or agency.
- h. The report as adopted shall be signed by the chairman of the Committee of Commissioners and filed with the recording clerk for the permanent record.

Present 13-7. Deleted as covered above.

Present 13-8. Deleted as covered above.

Present 13-9. No change.

Present 13-10. No change.

Present 13-11. Deleted as covered above.

Remaining Sections of 13. No change but renumbered.

**Comments and Rationale:** This is not a change in the function or role of the Committee of Commissioners. It is only a change in their method of reporting to the General Assembly.

The PCA is a "grass-roots" church. Every teaching elder is automatically a commissioner to each General Assembly; and every local church is entitled to at least one ruling elder commissioner to each General Assembly. This "grass-roots" assembly protects itself from the control of the bureaucracy in at least three ways, to-wit:

- 1. By assigning functions to permanent committees which are limited in their scope to the expressed authority and functions so assigned by the General Assembly; and,
- 2. By electing men to non-consecutive four year terms, with rotation classes, to oversee during the year the work of its permanent committees, boards and agencies; and,

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

3. By providing a Committee of Commissioners selected by the "grass-roots" presbyteries to review the work of each permanent committee, board or agency to insure that the policies and directives of the General Assembly have been accurately and fully complied with and carried out.

The function or role of the Committee of Commissioners is in the nature of a "watch-dog" committee. It cannot and it has never had the authority to generate any new business. RAO 13-5 (a) now provides, as it always has since the inception of PCA, as follows:

"No new items of business not referred to the committee by the Assembly may be considered by the Committee".

The function or role of the Committee of Commissioners will not be changed or altered by this proposal. The only change is the method of reporting to the General Assembly.

The members of the permanent committee, board or agency, being elected representatives of the grass-roots assembly are in the best position to understand the recommendations that are made to the General Assembly and the rationale therefor. These permanent committee members are the General Assembly representatives who have labored all year to implement the General Assembly directives and policies.

The members of the Committee of Commissioners are under time, experience and information restraints. Their primary function is to review and evaluate the actions of the permanent committee, board or agency, to insure objectivity for the General Assembly in holding it's permanent committees, boards and agencies accountable to its directives and policies. For these reasons the Committee of Commissioners should be retained as they serve a vital function.

But, it seems logical for the permanent committees, boards or agencies to report on their stewardship and recommendations directly to the General Assembly - the body which chose them and to which they are accountable.

And the Committee of Commissioners should report to the General Assembly any violations they find with General Assembly policies and directives and any disagreements they have with the permanent committees, boards or agencies actions or recommendations.

## APPENDICES

The Administrative Committee believes that this will facilitate the work of the General Assembly, reducing expenses, and helping the General Assembly focus more clearly on the issues before the church.

8. Amend Section 17-2 to read as follows:

The Chairman of the Permanent Committee, Special Committee or Agency or his designated representative shall lead the Assembly in a brief prayer before making his report. The entire report shall not be read except upon a majority vote of the commissioners present and voting.

If a minority of a Committee wishes to present a report, the member reporting for the minority shall request permission from the Assembly to make a formal presentation of the minority report. A majority vote of the Assembly shall be required to permit presentation of the minority report. The minority report thus presented shall be for information only. After such presentation, the minority report cannot be acted upon except by a motion to substitute it for the Committee of Commissioners' report or that portion of the Committee of Commissioners' report affected.

**Comments and Rationale:** The first paragraph of proposed amended Section 17-2 is simply a revision made necessary by the fact that the Chairman of the permanent committee, special committee or agency will make the report to the General Assembly. This proposed amendment simply provides for the chairman to lead the assembly in a brief prayer before making the report.

The second paragraph of proposed amended Section 17-2 deals with a minority report. This proposed amendment tracks Roberts Rules of Order. *Roberts Rules of Order, Newly Revised*, 1990 edition, pages 519-521, provide as follows:

The formal presentation of a so-called "minority report" -- that is, the presentation of an expression of views in the name of a group of the committee members not concurring with the committee report -- is usually allowed by the assembly when such permission is requested . . . the formal presentation of a "minority report" is a privilege that the assembly may accord, not a matter of right . . ."

A majority vote is required to receive a minority report; the question is undebatable. When the minority report is presented, it is for information, and it cannot be acted upon except by a motion to substitute it for the report of the committee.

A great deal of confusion has been caused by parliamentary maneuvering so that several issues are before the General Assembly at

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

the same time. It is greatly confusing to the commissioners. This rule will provide that if there is a minority on a Committee of Commissioners, this minority must present its minority report to the General Assembly as a perfection of the majority report of the Committee of Commissioners; and the Committee of Commissioners' report will be so perfected. When so perfected then there will only be before the General Assembly the recommendations of the permanent committee and the perfected recommendations of the Committee of Commissioners; the General Assembly will not be so confused by all the parliamentary maneuvering.

### 9. PROPOSED AMENDMENT TO BYLAWS

That the Corporate Bylaws be amended by adding to Article VI Section 2 and Section 3 regarding Covenant College and Covenant Theological Seminary the following:

"Furthermore, the Board may recommend one nominee per class from a NAPARC member denomination for consideration by the Assembly Nominating Committee."

#### Grounds:

1. The Bylaws of these two institution provide for members of NAPARC denominations, but no mechanism has been provided for implementation by the Nominating Committee of General Assembly.
2. The 18th GA adopted the following recommendation from 18-44, 5: "That the Nominating Committee recommend to the GA Administrative Committee that they develop and implement policies and procedures intended to facilitate the establishing and sustaining of two members of the Board of Trustees of Covenant college from other NAPARC Denominations and that this implementation be done in time for the consideration of persons for the 1991 slate of nominees."
10. That the 20th General Assembly begin on Tuesday, June 16, 1992, and conclude Friday afternoon permitting Committee of Commissioners to meet Monday and Tuesday, thereby shortening the time commissioners are away for General Assembly.
11. Approve June 7-10, 1994 as the dates for the 22nd General Assembly to be held in Atlanta, Georgia, and that it be an assembly primarily for business and worship.
12. That the assembly continue the project of a new translation of *Book of Church Order* into Korean in accordance with *M18GA*, 18-40, III, 34; p. 112.
13. Express its gratitude to God for the progress made thus far in translating *BCO* chapters 1-14, and express appreciation for the following men who are serving on the translation subcommittee: Dr. Dan Kim, Rev. Sam D. Park, Rev. Hywan Song, Rev. Hosea H. J. Kim and Dr. Dwight Linton.
14. That Dr. Paul R. Gilchrist be commended for his good work as Stated Clerk and that he be elected for another year of service.

## APPENDICES

15. VACATED

16. That expenses of committees of GA be funded as follows:

- (a) Presbytery Records Committee be reimbursed as necessary for food and lodging for the two or three days prior to GA from the GA registration fees. Further, that members of Presbytery Records Committee who are not commissioners, be reimbursed for travel, food and lodging for only as long as they are needed to complete the work. (NOTE: This policy to be reviewed after 3 years.)
- (b) Standing Judicial Commission shall be subsidized from any surplus from GA registration fees after GA expenses.

17. Approve the total Compensation Range for coordinators for 1992 as follows:

	<u>Low</u>	<u>Median</u>	<u>High</u>
AC	\$58,842	66,866	\$74,890
CE&P	59,148	67,214	75,280
MNA	61,321	69,683	78,045
MTW	75,386	85,666	95,946
CC	68,469	77,806	87,143
CTS	60,151	68,353	76,555
RH	51,032	61,809	72,586
IAR	63,840	72,546	81,252
IFBD	55,553	63,906	72,259
PCA F	56,189	63,851	71,513

- 18. Approve: (1) Robins, Eskew and Farmer, PC as auditors for the Administrative Committee, Christian Education & Publications, and Mission to North America for the fiscal year ending December 31, 1991; (2) Ernest and Young as auditors for Mission to the World for the fiscal year ending December 31, 1991.
- 19. Set GA registration fee for 1992 and 1993 at \$100.
- 20. Approve Covenant Seminary FY 91-92 Budget of \$2,965,950 and ASKINGS of \$1,285,000.
- 21. Approve Ridge Haven 1992 Budget of \$491,358 and ASKINGS \$396,358.
- 22. Approve PCA Foundation 1992 Budget of \$350,168.
- 23. Approve IAR 1992 Budget of \$785,000.
- 24. Approve IFBD 1992 Budget of \$366,585 with an additional growth budget of \$85,000.
- 25. Approve Covenant College FY 91-92 Budget of \$8,729,339 and ASKINGS of \$1,348,000.
- 26. Approve CE&P 1992 Budget of \$1,947,252 and ASKINGS of \$1,212,252.
- 27. Approve AC 1992 operations budget of \$1,061,981 and ASKINGS of \$1,038,981. Office Building income of \$717,750 and expenses \$539,400 for 1992.
- 28. Approve MNA 1992 Budget: income \$3,562,000 and Expenses \$3,561,772 with a growth budget of an additional \$1,394,000 and ASKINGS of \$3,430,000.
- 29. Approve MTW 1992 Budgets: income \$15,001,200 and expenses \$14,953,000 and ASKINGS of \$14,600,000.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

30. Approve the SIMA 1992 Budget: income \$2,917,664 and expenses \$2,878,798.
31. Regarding Overture 26 from the 18th General Assembly:  
"Have General Assembly Meet Every Third Year in Atlanta"

**Whereas**, we are to be good stewards of time and finances; and  
**Whereas**, we can expect ruling elder attendance at General Assembly to be best in a region that contains a high concentration of PCA churches; and  
**Whereas**, PCA offices, materials, and employees are in Atlanta; and  
**Whereas**, having the Assembly annually meet in Atlanta would save the PCA Committees lodging costs as well as shipping costs on materials; and  
**Whereas**, having the Assembly in the same city annually could help in the smooth operation of the Assembly annually as snags from previous years could be specifically worked upon;

**Therefore Be It Resolved** that following a vote on any invitation to the 1990 General Assembly to host future General Assemblies, after those already scheduled in other cities, to meet every third year in Atlanta, Georgia, and that the responsibility for arrangements be left to the Administrative Committee and individuals who will work under their oversight.

Adopted at the Spring Meeting of Westminster Presbytery on April 21, 1990.

Attested by: /s/ Larry E. Ball, Stated Clerk

32. That Overture 43 be answered with the following:  
Amend RAO 4-9 by substituting the following so that it reads:  
**4.9.** The stated clerk and the coordinators of the three program committees shall be elected by the General Assembly for a term of four years with the provision that no person can serve as stated clerk or coordinator for more than three consecutive four year terms. After three consecutive terms he cannot be reelected unless during the third year of his third term he is reelected by at least 2/3 of the General Assembly's commissioners present and voting. If the nominee has not been examined by the Theological Examining Committee such an examination must take place prior to the election when it is a first time employment. A new stated clerk or coordinator shall assume office at the end of the General Assembly meeting at which he is elected, or at such time as designated by the General Assembly.
33. That Overtures 29 and 30 be answered in the negative.
34. That Overture 32 be answered in the negative.
35. With regards to Overture 36, the GA instruct the Moderator to appoint an Ad Interim Committee of 3 to employ professional objective help to review the effectiveness of IAR and report back to the 20th GA; and further, that a maximum of \$25,000 be paid by AC, subject to having 50% unwritten by designated gifts.
36. That Overture 41 calling for a Day of Thanksgiving for Victory be answered in the affirmative with the following substitution: that letters be sent only to the President of the USA, the Majority and Minority leaders of both Houses of Congress, and that a press release be prepared for immediate distribution to the media.
37. That Overture 6 be answered in the negative.



## APPENDICES

38. That Overtures 7 and 31 be answered in the negative. (The "whereas" clauses would be inserted as grounds but the "GROUNDS" provided by committee of commissioners would not be published.)
39. That Overture 14 be answered in the negative. GROUNDS: The Stated Clerk was responding to an appeal to reopen a case which the 16th GA had turned down in 1988 (see *16MGA 16-77*, III, 25, p. 176).
40. That Overture 19 be answered by reference to recommendation #5, p. 306.
41. That Overture 33 be answered in the negative.

Respectfully Submitted,  
/s/ Scott T. Levy, Chairman  
/s/ Paul R. Gilchrist, Stated Clerk

# MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

## ATTACHMENT 1

### **REPORT OF THE PCA HISTORICAL CENTER TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA**

Purpose: The purpose of the Historical Center is to fulfill the records management and historical preservation/research needs of the Presbyterian Church in America, its agencies and the churches of the denomination.

Goals: The Historical Center has developed a series of long range goals designed to improve the operations and efficiency of the Center. The major goals are:

Establish a priority schedule to obtain new collections

Develop a records management policy for the denomination

Develop and implement a fund raising strategy for receiving outside grants

Develop a records/collection processing priority schedule

Develop a worker training program

Establish an active oral history program

Many of these goals are inter-related and progress is being made in all of them.

Records Management: The Historical Center has developed a records management guide for use by denominational agencies. The guide is currently being reviewed by two agencies. Once the document is refined and implemented, it can be used to assist the agencies in making record retention decisions, as well as help the Historical Center determine what church records must be permanently maintained.

Oral History: An Oral History program has been developed to collect the thoughts and experiences of key denominational leaders. The Oral History Program is designed to build enthusiasm for collecting church history by using local volunteers. To assist these volunteers, the Center has prepared a handbook on conducting oral interviews.

Grants: The Historical Center is attempting to raise some of the funds needed for its operations by seeking financial grants from non-denominational sources. Fund raising efforts are being pursued in two areas. The first area will seek funds to process collections already housed in the Center. A second grant proposal is being prepared to obtain the funds necessary to tape and transcribe oral interviews with thirty church leaders.

## APPENDICES

**Services:** The Historical Center maintains four separate categories of records/materials: records of the church agencies, local church histories, personal collections of missionaries and church leaders and a small collection of books and pamphlets.

Research requests continue to come in from a variety of states and Canada. One of the more interesting requests this year came from an historical society in Stillwater, Oklahoma. The society was looking for information on the wartime activities of Reverend James McAlpine, who was an instructor of Japanese for the United States Navy at their language school in Stillwater.

The Center continues to look for ways to increase interest in the history of the PCA and to encourage the writing of local church histories. This desire to better serve the church was one of the driving forces behind notifying Covenant Seminary students of our holdings of PCA church histories and the preparation of a guide on how to collect oral history.

**Processing:** Several collections have been fully processed over the past twelve months and are now available for use by researchers. These collections include:

- Dr. J. Barton Payne Papers
- Dr. Robert G. Rayburn Papers
- Rev. Paul Settle Papers
- Dr. John Richards Papers
- Records of the Concerned Presbyterians
- Records of the Continuing Presbyterian Church
- Records of the Presbyterian Churchmen United

Processing is currently underway on:

- Dr. Donald MacNair Papers
- Records of the Stated clerk, PRCES
- Presbyterian Journal Collection
- Quarryville Home Records of Rev. Frank Dyrness

**Equipment:** A designated donation enabled the Historical Center to purchase the MicroMARC:amc computer software program. This program is designed to standardize and automate archives recordkeeping. The new system will replace manual record keeping methods, allow for faster record retrieval, and eliminate record keeping duplication. Entering five years worth of records onto the computer data base will be a time consuming process, but when fully operational, the computer system will greatly improve our response time to research requests.

**Staff:** The staff of the Historical Center is comprised of a full time director, two part-time student workers and three volunteers.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Jeff Dillard, a Middler at Covenant Seminary continues to process local church histories, write articles for the newsletter and process larger collections. D. Allen Calhoun, a recent Master's degree graduate of Indiana University, is completing his earlier work on the Presbyterian Journal Collection, before continuing his education in the fall.

Margaret Stephens, Mrs. Al (Florence) Graham and Mrs. Robert (LaVerne) Rayburn are our volunteers. They have been processing collections and organizing missionary correspondence and church/denominational minutes.

Historical Center Sub-Committee: Members of the Sub-Committee are: Mr. Scott Levy, Chairman, Dr. David Calhoun, Miss Lannae Graham, Mr. Ed Harris, Dr. Donald MacNair and Mrs. Paul (Georgia) Settle.

Contributions: Contributions to the work of the Historical Center are at an all time high (\$5,533.59) and are up over 20% from the previous calendar year. These increased contributions enabled the Center to greatly expand its level of activity and better serve our churches and researchers. We greatly appreciate the prayers and financial support we have received from individuals, the WIC's and congregations of our denomination.

Jerry Komegay  
Director  
PCA Historical Center

APPENDICES

ATTACHMENT 2

1992 ASKINGS (1)  
for the PCA  
GENERAL ASSEMBLY MINISTRIES

	1991 EXPENSE BUDGET	1992 EXPENSE BUDGET	1992 ASKINGS	percent of TOTAL	\$ Per MEMBER
Administrative Committee (4)	\$1,502,465	\$1,601,981	\$1,038,981	4.4	\$ 5.60
Christian Education & Publications	1,753,786	1,947,252	1,212,252	5.2	6.62
Mission to North America	3,685,613	3,561,772	3,430,000	14.6	18.58
Mission to The World	13,866,585	14,953,000	14,600,000	62.4	79.40
Covenant College (3)	8,050,634	8,729,339	1,348,000	5.8	7.38
Covenant Seminary (3)	2,778,470	2,965,950	1,385,100	5.9	7.51
Ridge Haven	393,345	491,358	396,358	1.7	2.16
Servants In Missions Abroad	2,533,522	2,878,798	-0-	-0-	-0-
Insurance, Annuities & Relief	777,405	785,000	-0-	-0-	-0-
Investors Fund for Building and Development	340,928	366,585	-0-	-0-	-0-
PCA Foundation (2)	(300,000)	(350,168)	-0-	-0-	-0-
<b>TOTALS</b>	<b>\$35,682,753</b>	<b>\$38,281,035</b>	<b>\$23,410,691</b>	<b>100.0%</b>	<b>\$127.25</b>

TOTAL COMMUNICANT MEMBERS (1990 STATISTICS) = 183,968

- (1) The ASKINGS is that portion of the budget which is dependent on contributions from the PCA churches and individuals. When the contributions are less than the amount of the ASKINGS, the committees, agencies and institutions cannot fulfill the programs and services which the General Assembly approves at the June 1991 meeting.
- (2) The PCA Foundation budget is included in the budgets of the participating committees and agencies for reimbursement. Therefore, its budget is not added to the total.
- (3) Institutions are on a July 1 through June 30 Fiscal Year.
- (4) AC Budgets include the office building budgets but the ASKINGS do not.

July 1991

**ATTACHMENT 3**

**ADMINISTRATIVE COMMITTEE**

Proposed Budgets

January 1, 1992 through December 31, 1992

The budgets have been built primarily on actual history, future plans and the assumptions listed below.

**STATED CLERK/ADMINISTRATION**

1. Cost of Living (COL) Index for 1992 will increase 5.5%.
2. Health Insurance premiums will increase 15% in January 1992.
3. General travel costs will increase 20%.
4. Workman's Compensation insurance premiums will increase 20%.
5. The PCA growth rate will be 5%.
6. One clerical worker will be added in January 1992.

**OFFICE BUILDING**

1. Increase rent to \$13.50 per square foot starting January 1992.
2. Reduce mortgage principle at least \$150,000 in addition to the regular payment schedule in 1991.

APPENDICES

STATED CLERK/ADMINISTRATION  
APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

Description	FY 89-90 Actual	1991 Budget	1992 Proposed
<b>INCOME</b>			
1 Designated	533,664	834,565	1032,981
2 Undesignated	3,257	6,000	6,000
3 Earned	134,614	18,000	17,000
4 Interest	110,018	6,000	6,000
5 TOTAL INCOME	<b>682,553</b>	<b>864,565</b>	<b>1,061,981</b>
<b>EXPENDITURES</b>			
6a St. Ck Salary/Housing	51,500	57,770	63,508
6b St. Ck Benefits	3,265	9,075	9,242
6c Salaries & Benefits	230,194	354,300	418,601
7 Travel	111,765	165,940	228,820
8 Rent	48,640	42,200	58,960
9 Janitor/Grounds	0	0	0
10 Mail/Shipping	24,757	28,500	29,950
11 Office Supplies	13,144	14,000	17,220
12 Telephone	14,067	15,750	21,640
13 Maintenance	6,207	5,500	8,400
14 Leased Equipment	18,115	9,000	11,730
15 Dues/Subscriptions	2,455	2,650	4,920
16 Insurance	2,300	1,500	10,000
17 Interest	1,216	1,600	1,000
18 Printing	60,662	46,250	54,070
19 Training/Development	1,460	4,900	7,800
20 Promotion	15,226	4,000	6,010
21 Foundation	31,188	37,500	33,750
22 Planning	11,479	8,000	5,000
23 Professional Services	30,644	14,000	19,060
24 Taxes	3,303	3,500	3,100
25 Utilities	0	0	0
26 Contingencies	20,039	8,250	25,000
27 Depreciation	29,217	30,600	24,200
28 TOTAL EXPENSES	<b>730,663</b>	<b>864,565</b>	<b>1061,981</b>
29 Surplus/(deficit)	-48,110	0	0

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

STATED CLERK/ADMINISTRATION  
PROPOSED BUDGET FOR 1992

A	B	C	D	E	F	G	H
	Description	Stated Clerk	Historical Center	Standing Committees	General Assembly	GA Repts	TOTAL AC Operations
	<b>INCOME</b>						
1	Designated	896,481	20,000	0	114,000	2,500	1,032,981
2	Undesignated	6,000	0	0	0	0	6,000
3	Earned	6,000	3,000	0	8,000	0	17,000
4	Interest	6,000	0	0	0	0	6,000
5	<b>TOTAL INCOME</b>	<b>914,481</b>	<b>23,000</b>	<b>0</b>	<b>122,000</b>	<b>2,500</b>	<b>1,061,981</b>
	<b>EXPENDITURES</b>						
6a	St. CK salary	63,508	0	0	0	0	63,508
6b	St CK benefits	9,242	0	0	0	0	9,242
6c	Staff salary/Benefits	280,175	34,986	1,500	36,440	65,500	418,601
7	Travel	39,500	2,100	100,800	15,220	71,200	228,820
8	Rent	38,600	0	0	20,360	0	58,960
9	Janitor/Grounds	0	0	0	0	0	0
10	Mailing/Shipping	19,330	1,300	3,200	6,120	0	29,950
11	Office Supplies	12,700	3,500	0	1,020	0	17,220
12	Telephone	15,200	900	2,020	1,020	2,500	21,640
13	Maintenance	7,400	1,000	0	0	0	8,400
14	Leased Equipment	0	0	0	11,730	0	11,730
15	Dues/Subscription	3,600	200	1,120	0	0	4,920
16	Insurance	10,000	0	0	0	0	10,000
17	Interest	1,000	0	0	0	0	1,000
18	Printing	21,900	250	3,360	28,560	0	54,070
19	Training/Development	4,500	750	0	0	2,550	7,800
20	Promotion	2,000	3,500	0	510	0	6,010
21	Foundation	33,750	0	0	0	0	33,750
22	Planning	3,000	0	0	0	2,000	5,000
23	Professional Services	18,450	100	0	510	0	19,060
24	Taxes	3,100	0	0	0	0	3,100
25	Utilities	0	0	0	0	0	0
26	Contingencies	22,990	0	0	510	1,500	25,000
27	Depreciation	24,000	200	0	0	0	24,200
28	<b>TOTAL EXPENSES</b>	<b>633,945</b>	<b>48,786</b>	<b>112,000</b>	<b>122,000</b>	<b>145,250</b>	<b>1,061,981</b>
	29 Surplus/(deficit)	280,536	-25,786	-112,000	0	-142,750	0

4/291



APPENDICES

PCA OFFICE BUILDING  
PROPOSED BUDGET FOR 1992

A	B	1991 BUDGETS		1992 PROPOSED BUDGETS		J	
		C	D	E	F		G
	Description	Building Operations	Capital Fund	Consolidated	Building Operations	Capital Fund	Consolidated
	<b>INCOME</b>						
1	Designated	0	300,000	300,000	0	240,000	240,000
2	Undesignated	0	0	0	0	0	0
3	Earned	12,000	0	12,000	12,000	0	12,000
4	Rent	447,000	0	447,000	465,750	0	465,750
5	<b>TOTAL INCOME</b>	<b>459,000</b>	<b>300,000</b>	<b>759,000</b>	<b>477,750</b>	<b>240,000</b>	<b>717,750</b>
	<b>EXPENDITURES</b>						
6	Salaries & Benefits	16,000	0	16,000	8,580	0	8,580
7	Travel	100	0	100	0	1,980	1,980
8	Rent	0	0	0	0	0	0
9	Janitor/Grounds	30,000	0	30,000	33,420	0	33,420
10	Mail/Ship	6,500	0	6,500	1,980	960	2,940
11	Office Supplies	1,500	0	1,500	480	0	480
12	Telephone	2,000	0	2,000	1,620	360	1,980
13	Maintenance	39,500	0	39,500	24,600	0	24,600
14	Leased Equipment	0	0	0	0	0	0
15	Dues/Subscriptions	0	0	0	0	0	0
16	Insurance	11,400	0	11,400	4,320	0	4,320
17	Interest	4,600	205,000	209,600	3,960	157,500	161,460
18	Printing	0	0	0	0	480	480
19	Training/Development	0	0	0	0	0	0
20	Promotion	4,800	2,000	6,800	0	4,800	4,800
21	Foundation	0	0	0	0	0	0
22	Planning	0	0	0	0	0	0
23	Professional Services	6,000	0	6,000	1,980	0	1,980
24	Taxes	48,000	0	48,000	49,980	0	49,980
25	Utilities	93,500	0	93,500	92,400	0	92,400
26	Contingencies	15,000	1,000	16,000	3,600	0	3,600
27	Depreciation	56,000	95,000	151,000	29,400	117,000	146,400
28	<b>TOTAL EXPENSES</b>	<b>334,900</b>	<b>303,000</b>	<b>637,900</b>	<b>256,320</b>	<b>283,080</b>	<b>539,400</b>
29	Surplus/(deficit)	124,100	-3,000	121,100	221,430	-43,080	178,350

4/2/91

**PCA CHRISTIAN EDUCATION AND PUBLICATIONS  
APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR  
BACKGROUND, ASSUMPTIONS AND ANALYSIS**

BACKGROUND and SUMMARY:

CE/P's proposed budget for 1992 represents anticipated growth in certain key areas identified in our strategic plan. The increase in budget is primarily due to the addition of two new departments, expansion of our existing ministries, additional support staff, and the 1992 WIC Conference.

The 1992 budget does represent a significant increase over the actual expenses of 1990. However, it is important to note that since April of 1990 CE/P has operated under self-imposed, extraordinary expense restrictions. These were implemented to help us recover from the bad deficit situation which was primarily caused by the rapid depletion of the Undesignated funds. Though we are in no way financially "strong", we have recovered enough that we need to plan for and anticipate growth.

ASSUMPTIONS and ANALYSIS (Budget line items):

1. Salaries and Benefits represent the following:
  - \* 6% salary and annuity increase.(5% COL across the board and \$4,500 to be distributed on the basis of merit). Note: CE/P has given below COL increases the last two years.
  - \* IAR projects a 15% increase in health insurance premiums.
  - \* Addition of part-time Ministry to Elderly Consultant. Total compensation cost \$23,320.
  - \* Addition of a full time Youth Ministries Consultant. Total compensation cost \$47,260.
  - \* Addition of a Circulation Manager with total compensation cost of \$22,577
  - \* Addition of an extra secretary total package of \$ 22,577
2. We project this to increase as CE/P will have to continue to add new titles to remain competitive and a full service bookstore to our customers.
3. These expenses are expected to increase based on the following:
  - \* inflation
  - \* two additional departments (four new employees)
  - \* increased invoicing, A/R management, and administrative overhead
  - \* aging equipment and increased maintenance costs
  - \* increased telephone promotion and maintenance of two "800" numbers

## APPENDICES

### CHRISTIAN EDUCATION & PUBLICATIONS

4. Printing expenses represent a decrease due to the budget assumption used for 1991 of 15,000 - 20,000 *Messenger* subscriptions. However, printing also increased due to new departments, increasing publications, promotional brochures, and inflation.
5. The postage increase of February 1991 is partially reflected in the 1991 budget (UPS increased residential delivery rates 16%). However, Bookstore shipping was underestimated for 1991. This along with another anticipated rate increase and increasing renewal mailings and newsletters represents the increase for 1992.
6. The *Messenger* eliminated certain subscriptions and memberships which were marginally used .
7. Due to our financial constraints we have neglected certain equipment. CE/P's Bookstore van has 160,000 miles on it and the van used primarily for seminars has traveled 100,000 miles. Our computer network is still operating with some marginal equipment. Also, the copy machine and postage meter will be due for replacement some time in 1992.
8. Additional rental space (\$20,000 annually) will be available in March 1992.
9. 20% increase in workman's comp and other liability insurance. The PCA has had two significant workman's comp claims this year along with overall industry increases.
10. Budgeted for external consultant in development and fund-raising.
11. General Assembly expenses are now presented as travel expense.
12. Overall, travel expenses are expected to increase 20%. However, our staff primarily travels by automobile and is extremely conservative when choosing accomodations (even to the point of staying in individual's homes). Also, 1990 expenses are lower as General Assembly was held in Atlanta.
13. If funds permit CE/P plans to introduce some formal computer/word processing/desktop publishing training for the secretaries. Also, plans for a representative of the *Messenger* to attend the EPA convention and Bookstore personnel to attend CBA.
14. Graphics and Design is exceptionally low for 1990. Graphics expenses through Walker Printing have been a real savings and bargain. Also, much of the true expense has been absorbed in the Coordinator's secretary's salary and in printing expense as some invoices were coded incorrectly. The 1992 budget reflects some savings but will remain high as we contract it out to a part-time employee and the Coordinator's secretary will no longer perform this function.
15. The increase in Video Inventory Purchases reflects the ongoing need to keep our library current with new releases, replacing damaged tapes, and serving an increasing membership base.

CHRISTIAN EDUCATION & PUBLICATIONS

16. The decrease in budget is based on the assumption that with GCP's new marketing emphasis, the need for subsidy will continue to decline.
17. Uncontrollable expenses, externally assigned.
18. The increase over 1990 represents increased lodging costs for our Minister's Conferences and one additional conference which we may host.
19. Committee meetings expenses are for the CE Committee meeting, WASC and PRESWIC meeting. As the WIC has been able to get all presbytery's involved, our expenses have exceeded expectations.
20. Honorariums increase represents the additional seminars and consulting that we anticipate the Regional Trainers performing in 1992.
21. Promotion and Special Events have been used interchangeably. This line contains expenses for fund-raising letters and appeals, pastor's lunches hosted by CE/P, the *Messenger's* Writers Conference, etc.
22. \$35,000 represents the out-of-pocket expenses to be incurred for the WIC Conference. If we are able to sell the entire conference this will be reimbursed to us. Note the increase in expected revenue for 1992.

OTHER ASSUMPTIONS WITH REVENUE IMPACT:

- \* Book Sales will probably not increase in 1992 as this year we had some extraordinary sales. Furthermore, our strategy will be to offer "specials", consequently reducing our profit margin, on inventory that is no longer moving in order to produce cash flow. Therefore, though our sales volume may increase our sales revenue may not. We will, however, produce cash to improve our liquidity.
- \* Messenger advertising assumes \$9,000 per issue. A significant increase!
- \* Average *Messenger* circulation at 12,012 (a low but safe estimate)
- \* Average *Bulletin Supplement* at 340 churches (currently 240)
- \* Average Audio Visual Club membership at 225

APPENDICES

**PCA CHRISTIAN EDUCATION and PUBLICATIONS**  
**APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR**

<u>INCOME</u>	1990 Actual	1991 Budget	1992 Budget
Contributions & Support	\$767,561	\$1,047,786	\$1,212,252
Revenues	709,067	700,000	735,000
<b>TOTAL INCOME</b>	<b>\$1,476,628</b>	<b>\$1,747,786</b>	<b>\$1,947,252</b>
<u>EXPENSES</u>			
Coordinator	\$106,430	\$116,759	\$126,051
Bulletin Supplement	26,728	23,471	25,344
Messenger	333,423	414,965	381,857
Training/Seminars	85,148	139,048	129,656
Regional Trainers	12,565	28,100	31,505
Administration & Development	247,387	319,402	366,361
Bookstore	453,871	481,360	518,970
Women in the Church	65,551	80,500	134,521
Curriculum & Publications	38,765	40,500	45,750
Adjunct Writer	5,919	0	0
Cross Cultural Ministries	21,753	16,477	19,094
Ministry to Elderly	4,943	0	29,920
Pastor's Conferences	12,746	33,170	24,200
Youth Ministries	0	0	56,638
Audio Visual Library	45,797	54,034	57,385
<b>TOTAL EXPENSES</b>	<b>\$1,461,026</b>	<b>\$1,747,786</b>	<b>\$1,947,252</b>
Net Gain/(Loss)	15,602	\$0	\$0

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**PCA CHRISTIAN EDUCATION and PUBLICATIONS**  
**APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR**

<u>INCOME</u>	<u>1990 Actual</u>	<u>1991 Budget</u>	<u>1992 Budget</u>
Contributions & Support	\$767,561	\$1,047,786	\$1,212,252
Revenues	709,067	700,000	735,000
<b>TOTAL INCOME</b>	<b>\$1,476,628</b>	<b>\$1,747,786</b>	<b>\$1,947,252</b>
<b>EXPENSES</b>			
1. Coordinator Salary & Housing	\$47,215	\$50,110	\$52,187
1. Coordinator Benefits	11,924	12,528	15,479
1. Salary Program Staff	215,951	266,123	319,776
1. Program Staff Benefits	64,430	57,760	68,254
1. Salary Support Staff	189,400	207,093	240,940
1. Support Staff Benefits	19,744	25,345	32,329
1. Employer FICA Tax	20,256	21,632	29,818
2. Bookstore Inventory Purchases	236,504	250,000	265,000
3. Supplies	14,496	23,000	18,850
3. Telephone	25,136	25,000	29,900
3. Computer Expense	3,357	9,500	7,780
4. Printing	193,807	200,000	201,200
5. Postage & Shipping Materials	94,378	105,000	119,400
3. Miscellaneous	5,585	9,000	9,975
6. Dues and Subscriptions	4,031	4,000	2,050
3. Equipment Rental/Maintenance	6,149	15,000	10,000
7. Equipment Purchases	0	5,000	3,000
7. Capital Expenditures	10,685	25,000	35,000
8. Office Rent	76,463	79,500	100,495
Warehouse Rent	1,350	2,700	1,800
9. Liability Insurance	6,670	6,500	7,800
Property Tax	6,383	7,000	7,700
10. Professional Consulting	898	5,000	5,000
11. General Assembly Expense	7,664	0	0
12. Travel	41,205	75,950	80,000
Book Allowance	2,027	1,000	1,170
12. Vehicles	6,320	7,000	8,200
13. Staff Training	810	2,500	3,000
14. Graphics/Design	19,562	60,000	55,000
Advertising	4,211	4,000	4,500
15. Video Inventory Additions	15,642	20,000	22,000
16. GCP Curriculum	15,000	40,000	20,000
17. PCA Foundation	18,000	40,000	43,750
17. GA Shared expenses	2,659	2,945	3,000
17. Audit Fees	4,950	6,000	5,800
18. Meeting Facility	8,010	15,000	12,000
19. Committee Meetings	21,100	16,000	22,500
20. Honorariums	9,115	16,000	15,700
Writers	1,686	6,000	4,600
Photography	663	3,000	1,000
21. Promotion	24,423	10,000	18,500
21. Special Events	893	10,000	5,700
Interest Expense	441	600	600
22. WIC National Conference	0	0	35,000
Account Write-offs	1,835	0	1,500
<b>TOTAL EXPENSES</b>	<b>\$1,461,028</b>	<b>\$1,747,786</b>	<b>\$1,947,252</b>
Net Gain/(Loss)	\$15,600	0	0

APPENDICES

**MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA**  
APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

BUDGET	ACTUAL		BUDGET	
	1990	1991	1991	1992
<b>INCOME</b>				
Individual	692,132	770,000		780,000
Church	1,787,838	2,500,000		2,350,000
Corporation/Foundation	260,452	300,000		300,000
Investment	41,620	60,000		78,000
Miscellaneous	<u>52,518</u>	<u>53,668</u>		<u>54,000</u>
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b><u>2,834,560</u></b>	<b><u>3,683,668</u></b>		<b><u>3,562,000</u></b>
	1991	1991	1992	1992
	BUDGET	GROWTH	BUDGET	GROWTH
<b>EXPENSES</b>				
Anglo Church Planting	1,103,400	600,000	1,327,550	743,750
MICAH Church Planting	778,227	336,000	902,152	281,750
New York City Project	210,000	40,000	100,000	30,000
Campus Ministry/RUM	440,735	90,000	451,000	158,000
Evangelism & Church Growth	100,000	0	100,000	
Chaplains	72,500	10,000	75,300	30,000
Building & Developmental	95,020	0	95,020	
Church Relations	214,100	0		
Mercy & Disaster Relief	<u>669,686</u>	<u>227,840</u>	<u>510,750</u>	<u>150,500</u>
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b><u>3,683,668</u></b>	<b><u>1,303,840</u></b>	<b><u>3,561,772</u></b>	<b><u>1,394,000</u></b>
	1991	1991	1992	1992
	BUDGET	GROWTH	BUDGET	GROWTH
<b>COORDINATOR</b>				
Salary		51,321		51,321
Benefits		<u>10,179</u>		<u>10,179</u>
<b>Total</b>		<b><u>61,500</u></b>		<b><u>61,500</u></b>

(These figures are included in the "Field Support" line items below.)

This budget is a "cost center" budget, therefore administration, finance, General Assembly, and Committee expenses are divided into each department under the line "Field Support".

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA - continued

CHURCH PLANTING

	1991		1992	
	BUDGET	GROWTH	BUDGET	GROWTH
<b>ANGLO CHURCH PLANTING</b>				
Church starts/empowerment	850,000	600,000	800,000	650,000
Salaries	135,000		208,500	
Travel & telephone	28,000		45,250	
Conferences	5,000		25,000	25,000
Postage/printing	3,000		4,000	
Processing & placement	8,000		5,000	10,000
Assessment			8,000	25,000
Western representative	23,000		50,000	
Midwest representative			50,000	
Regional representative			30,000	
Demographics	1,000		2,000	
Education/publication			10,000	10,000
Special projects			10,000	23,750
Miscellaneous	4,000		5,000	
Direct office space	6,400		14,800	
Field support	<u>40,000</u>		<u>60,000</u>	
<b>ANGLO GRAND TOTAL</b>	<b><u>1,103,400</u></b>	<b><u>600,000</u></b>	<b><u>1,327,550</u></b>	<b><u>743,750</u></b>
<b>MICAH CHURCH PLANTING</b>				
<b>FRENCH MINISTRY</b>				
Missionary church planting	94,606	50,000	95,000	50,000
Field support	<u>6,667</u>		<u>6,667</u>	
<b>Total French</b>	<b><u>101,273</u></b>	<b><u>50,000</u></b>	<b><u>101,667</u></b>	<b><u>50,000</u></b>
<b>HISPANIC MINISTRY</b>				
Missionary church planting	250,000	50,000	260,000	33,000
Field support	<u>6,667</u>		<u>6,667</u>	
<b>Total Hispanic</b>	<b><u>256,667</u></b>	<b><u>50,000</u></b>	<b><u>266,667</u></b>	<b><u>33,000</u></b>
<b>JAPANESE MINISTRY</b>				
Missionary church planting	19,000	10,000	19,000	10,000
Field support	<u>6,667</u>		<u>6,667</u>	
<b>Total Japanese</b>	<b><u>25,667</u></b>	<b><u>10,000</u></b>	<b><u>25,667</u></b>	<b><u>10,000</u></b>
<b>CHINESE MINISTRY</b>				
Missionary church planting		10,000		10,000
Scholarships		<u>5,000</u>		<u>5,000</u>
<b>Total Chinese</b>		<b><u>15,000</u></b>		<b><u>15,000</u></b>



APPENDICES

MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA - continued

	1991		1992	
	BUDGET	GROWTH	BUDGET	GROWTH
<b>KOREAN MINISTRY</b>				
Missionary church planting	50,000	50,000	20,000	50,000
Salaries	60,500		60,500	
Travel/telephone	12,000		14,400	
Scholarships	10,000	15,000	10,000	20,000
Printing/postage	4,000		4,000	
K.P.M.C.	5,000	3,000	5,000	3,000
Miscellaneous	2,000		2,000	2,000
Direct office space	6,400		6,400	
Field support	<u>6,667</u>		<u>6,667</u>	
<b>Total Korean</b>	<b><u>156,567</u></b>	<b><u>68,000</u></b>	<b><u>128,967</u></b>	<b><u>75,000</u></b>
<b>BLACK MINISTRY</b>				
Missionary church planting	10,000	55,000	35,000	10,000
Salaries	43,921			
Travel/telephone	8,000			
Scholarships	14,000	3,000		
CUM	27,000	30,000		
Training	5,000			
Field support	<u>6,667</u>		<u>6,667</u>	
<b>Total Black</b>	<b><u>114,588</u></b>	<b><u>88,000</u></b>	<b><u>41,667</u></b>	<b><u>10,000</u></b>
<b>GENERAL DEPARTMENT</b>				
Salaries	62,000		200,000	
Travel/telephone	12,000		43,250	
Sharpes/Wycliffe	36,000	5,000	36,000	5,000
C.U.T.S.		50,000		50,000
Ministry development	2,000		2,000	
Education/publication			10,000	10,000
Special projects			10,000	23,750
Direct office space	4,800		9,600	
Field support	<u>6,667</u>		<u>26,667</u>	
<b>Total General Department</b>	<b><u>123,465</u></b>	<b><u>55,000</u></b>	<b><u>337,517</u></b>	<b><u>88,750</u></b>
<b>MICAH GRAND TOTAL</b>	<b><u>778,227</u></b>	<b><u>336,000</u></b>	<b><u>902,152</u></b>	<b><u>281,750</u></b>
<b>NEW YORK CITY PROJECT</b>				
Anglo church planting	40,000			
Ministry operating expenses	30,000			
Ethnic church planting	80,000	20,000	60,000	30,000
Bridges of Friendship (Mercy)	10,000	10,000		
Training/interns	10,000	10,000		
Field support	<u>40,000</u>		<u>40,000</u>	
<b>Total</b>	<b><u>210,000</u></b>	<b><u>40,000</u></b>	<b><u>100,000</u></b>	<b><u>30,000</u></b>
<b>TOTAL CHURCH PLANTING</b>	<b><u>2,091,627</u></b>	<b><u>976,000</u></b>	<b><u>2,329,702</u></b>	<b><u>1,055,500</u></b>

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA - continued

CHURCH PLANTING SUPPORT DEPARTMENTS

	1991		1992	
	BUDGET	GROWTH	BUDGET	GROWTH
<b>CAMPUS MINISTRY/REFORMED UNIVERSITY MINISTRY</b>				
Salaries	140,000	15,000	150,000	50,000
Travel/telephone	14,000		14,000	8,000
Printing & materials	15,000		15,000	
Field assistance	15,000		15,000	
International	200,000	75,000	200,000	100,000
Training	3,000		3,000	
Direct office space	13,735		14,000	
Field support	<u>40,000</u>		<u>40,000</u>	
<b>Total</b>	<b><u>440,735</u></b>	<b><u>90,000</u></b>	<b><u>451,000</u></b>	<b><u>158,000</u></b>
<b>EVANGELISM &amp; CHURCH GROWTH</b>				
Salaries	50,000		50,000	
Travel/telephone	5,000		5,000	
Conferences	5,000		5,000	
Field support	<u>40,000</u>		<u>40,000</u>	
<b>Total</b>	<b><u>100,000</u></b>		<b><u>100,000</u></b>	
<b>CHAPLAINS</b>				
Salaries	17,200	10,000	20,000	30,000
Office expense	1,800		1,800	
Commission	1,500		1,500	
Travel	8,000		8,000	
Printing	2,500		2,500	
Conference	1,500		1,500	
Field support	<u>40,000</u>		<u>40,000</u>	
<b>Total</b>	<b><u>72,500</u></b>	<b><u>10,000</u></b>	<b><u>75,300</u></b>	<b><u>30,000</u></b>
<b>BUILDING &amp; DEVELOPMENTAL MINISTRY</b>				
Salaries	36,820		36,820	
Travel/telephone	11,000		11,000	
Printing	3,500		3,500	
Postage	2,000		2,000	
Legal	1,000		1,000	
Direct office space	700		700	
Field support	<u>40,000</u>		<u>40,000</u>	
<b>Total</b>	<b><u>95,020</u></b>		<b><u>95,020</u></b>	

APPENDICES

MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA - continued

	BUDGET	1991 GROWTH	BUDGET	1992 GROWTH
<b>CHURCH RELATIONS</b>				
Salaries	122,500			
Travel/telephone	17,000			
Education/publications	25,000			
Direct office space	9,600			
Field support	<u>40,000</u>			
Total	<u>214,100</u>			
<b>MERCY &amp; DISASTER RELIEF</b>				
Salaries	126,146	33,000	65,000	
Missionaries	363,000	138,000	340,000	100,000
Process & placement	2,400	400	2,000	500
Internship/summer program	65,000	27,000	10,000	5,000
Convocations	10,000		5,000	5,000
Travel/telephone	12,500	2,500	10,000	
Printing & postage	10,000		12,500	
Ministry development	20,000	20,000	15,000	30,000
Church relations	20,000	5,000	10,000	10,000
Direct office space	640	1,940	1,250	
Field support	<u>40,000</u>		<u>40,000</u>	
* Total	<u>669,686</u>	<u>227,840</u>	<u>510,750</u>	<u>150,500</u>
<b>TOTAL BUDGET</b>	<b><u>3,683,668</u></b>	<b><u>1,303,840</u></b>	<b><u>3,561,772</u></b>	<b><u>1,394,000</u></b>

\*\*\*\*\*

\* MINUTES FROM THE 13TH GENERAL ASSEMBLY:

\* That the Assembly approve removing the collection and distribution of gifts for Mercy Ministries, except for the cost of office support, from the annual budget of MNA, allowing the receipting of gifts (good for tax purposes) and the distribution of those gifts without budgetary restraints according to need as determined by a Subcommittee on Disaster Response. ADOPTED

U  
P  
S

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MISSION TO THE WORLD  
BUDGET HIGHLIGHTS

APPROVED BUDGET FOR CALENDAR YEAR 1992

I. CRITERIA FOR PREPARATION OF BUDGET

- A. The proposed budget covers the period January through December 1992. The prior fiscal year was for eighteen months, however in order to make a meaningful comparison, we have segregated the amounts corresponding to the 1991 calendar year.
- B. MTW Missionary growth is as follows:

Date	Missionary	Growth	
June 30, 1985	346	--	
June 30, 1986	372	7.5%	
June 30, 1987	386	3.8%	
June 30, 1988	403	4.4%	
June 30, 1989	442	10.0%	
June 30, 1990	463	4.8%	
December 31, 1990*	476	2.8%	* six months
December 31, 1991 proj.	517	8.6%	
December 31, 1992 proj.	559	8.1%	

The missionary growth is based on the currently approved goal as outlined in MTW's Vision 2000.

- C. Missionary support income for the budget year has been projected at 9% over the forecast income for 1991. If income from all sources are included for the budget year under consideration the increase over year 1991 would only be 8.9%
- D. Expenses for the budget year were adjusted based on individual analysis and projected costs, except those directly related to missionaries for which estimates were taken based on the missionary growth.

II. INCOME GROWTH

- A. The following is the contribution income growth pattern of Mission to the World for the past ten years:

DATE	MTW	GROWTH	
1981	5,052,875	16.0%	
1982	5,747,768	14.0%	
1983	6,356,983	11.0%	
1984	7,100,639	12.0%	
1985/86	8,227,837	16.0%	
1986/87	8,798,395	7.0%	
1987/88	9,653,928	9.7%	
1988/89	10,509,070	8.9%	
1989/90	12,165,142	16.7%	
1990 *	11,842,161	(1)	* Calendar Year
1991 **	13,772,000	16.3%	** Proposed for 1991
1992 ***	15,001,200	8.9%	*** Proposed for 1992

(1) Not calculated due to change in fiscal closing

## APPENDICES

### MISSION TO THE WORLD HIGHLIGHTS - continued

#### III. ADMINISTRATIVE COSTS

The following is the Administrative cost comparison from previous years actual, projection for 1991 and budgeted year 1992.

<u>DATE</u>	<u>COST %</u>	
1981 calendar year	17.2%	
1982 calendar year	19.8%	
1983/84 fiscal year	17.9%	
1984/85	17.3%	
1985/86	17.5%	
1986/87	15.7%	
1987/88	15.7%	
1988/89	15.3%	
1989/90	13.1%	
1990*	13.7%	* for six months
1991**	13.5%	** Projected estimate
1992***	14.0%	*** Proposed 1992 Budget

#### IV. BUDGET DETAILS - FOR 1992

1. Coordinator's compensation--Salary and housing have been maintained at the same level as in 1991. If an increase is recommended by the General Assembly this will be adjusted. The total increase to the total coordinator's compensation is 7.5%, mostly in the area of medical group insurance and car allowance.
2. Senior staff increases reflect project cost of living and merit increase plus the addition of one person about mid-year.
3. Office staff increase reflects the addition of two new employees and normal merit and cost of living increases.
4. Missionary salaries and quota increases are a result of the new projected number of missionaries plus the high cost of overseas living.
5. Benefits increase are a consequence of higher compensation costs and the substantial increase in medical insurance costs.
6. Conference and Meetings. The increase is mostly reflected in the Annual Missionary Conference and reflects the higher travel costs to attend this meeting.
7. General Assembly expense includes MTW's share of the PCA Foundation costs. At the time of budget preparation they were not able to provide a firm figure, hence the budgeted amount is an estimate.
8. Missionary travel. There is an overall increase in this area of 14% due to the high cost of travel to and from overseas assignments. Also shipping of personal goods has shown an equal rise in costs.
9. Associated Missionary Costs reflect increases due to the higher number of missionaries.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### MISSION TO THE WORLD HIGHLIGHTS - continued

10. Personnel Development has a substantial increase over the prior year due to the projected costs for a Team Leaders' training seminar.
11. Communications. The major increase in this area is due to the continued increase in postal rates.
12. Promotions. Network shows a substantial increase for 1992 since it reflects four issues in this year. The 1991 costs reflect three issues, because the January 1991 issue was paid for in 1990 ahead of the distribution.

All other promotional costs reflect expected cost increases as well as the increase in the number of missionaries needing prayer letters and cards to maintain contact with supporters.

13. Itineration costs have gone up substantially mainly due to (a) higher travel costs and (b) the need to visit more and more churches in order to raise support.
14. Field and Project Expenses. Estimated increase in requirements to be presented by missionaries.
15. Tentmaking expenses have been included in the budget even though it is uncertain whether there will be any expense to be incurred.

GDL/jm

APPENDICES

MISSION TO THE WORLD  
APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

	ACTUAL 6 Months <u>Year 1990</u>	BUDGET Year <u>1991</u>	PROJECTED Year <u>1991</u>	BUDGET Year <u>1992</u>
<b>INCOME:</b>				
Contributions to General Fund	310,153			
Contributions to Missionaries	5,847,172	13,978,000	13,400,000	14,600,000
Contributions for Itineration	8,479			
Field Income	67,422		100,000	100,000
Project Support	203,586		180,000	200,000
Investment Income	36,736	100,000	80,000	88,000
Other Revenue	<u>7,355</u>	<u>6,000</u>	<u>12,000</u>	<u>13,200</u>
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>6,480,903</b>	<b>14,084,000</b>	<b>13,772,000</b>	<b>15,001,200</b>
<b>EXPENSES</b>				
Coordinator's Expense	41,102	85,310	80,390	86,440
Salaries	3,499,323	8,070,200	7,702,370	8,402,070
Benefits	891,221	1,805,590	1,923,800	2,149,900
Committee Meetings	20,325	36,500	43,000	48,400
Computer Services	35,539	99,690	99,190	100,470
Conference/Meetings	79,439	210,000	160,000	186,000
General Assembly Expense	2,006	56,575	56,575	64,750
Professional Services	63,281	26,550	47,350	48,500
Occupancy Costs	78,952	149,115	148,865	157,470
Office Expense	68,734	103,050	111,500	121,250
Missionary Travel	292,200	456,300	515,000	587,500
Associated Missionary Costs	79,957	210,000	188,000	205,000
Personnel Development	188,839	187,000	246,000	349,250
Communications	67,536	127,910	140,700	151,600
Promotions	126,503	292,400	268,000	311,500
Itineration	155,796	297,900	306,000	334,600
Staff Travel Expense	122,378	201,250	205,000	213,300
Other Expenses	65,240	145,700	131,500	140,000
Field Expenses	452,391	918,600	918,600	965,000
Project Expenses	177,037	285,000	285,000	300,000
Tentmaking Project	12,800	100,000	30,000	30,000
<b>TOTAL EXPENSES</b>	<b>6,520,600</b>	<b>13,864,640</b>	<b>13,606,840</b>	<b>14,953,000</b>
<b>SURPLUS (deficit)</b>	<b>-39,697</b>	<b>219,360</b>	<b>165,160</b>	<b>48,200</b>

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MISSION TO THE WORLD - continued

	ACTUAL 6 months Year 1990	BUDGET Year 1991	PROJECTED Year 1991	BUDGET Year 1992
<b>COORDINATOR'S EXPENSE</b>				
Salary & Housing	32,550	68,350	68,350	68,350
Annuity	2,826	6,500	6,000	6,000
Health	1,854	4,160	4,310	4,800
Disability	597	1,040	1,290	1,290
Auto Lease	3,276	5,260	440	6,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>41,103</b>	<b>85,310</b>	<b>80,390</b>	<b>86,440</b>
<b>SALARIES</b>				
Senior Staff	211,601	473,950	474,000	534,900
Office Staff	281,359	623,500	595,000	678,600
Outside Help	13,313	26,000	26,000	27,300
Missionary Support	2,088,609	4,694,400	4,566,500	4,950,000
Missionary Quotas	859,772	2,142,000	1,950,000	2,115,000
Retiree's Supplement	44,670	110,350	90,870	96,270
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>3,499,324</b>	<b>8,070,200</b>	<b>7,702,370</b>	<b>8,402,070</b>
<b>BENEFITS</b>				
Annuity	232,861	603,600	515,900	563,000
Disability	33,405	119,050	75,900	82,800
Health	422,273	863,460	872,000	976,600
Life Insurance	33,421	19,080	76,000	83,000
Payroll Taxes	164,834	200,400	375,000	435,000
Retiree Medicare	4,428	0	9,000	9,500
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>891,222</b>	<b>1,805,590</b>	<b>1,923,800</b>	<b>2,149,900</b>
<b>COMMITTEE MEETING</b>				
Travel	7,524	15,300	20,000	23,000
Hotel	6,495	19,800	10,000	11,000
Group Meals	5,696	700	12,000	13,200
Other Expenses	609	700	1,000	1,200
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>20,324</b>	<b>36,500</b>	<b>43,000</b>	<b>48,400</b>
<b>COMPUTER SERVICES</b>				
Telephone Lines	2,314	4,640	4,640	4,920
Software Maintenance	11,189	15,300	15,300	26,360
Equipment Maintenance	11,732	54,850	54,850	32,790
Programming/Consulting	4,320	13,000	10,000	20,000
Supplies	2,582	10,400	8,400	10,400
Training & Travel	3,403	1,500	5,000	6,000
Software Purchase			1,000	
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>35,540</b>	<b>99,690</b>	<b>99,190</b>	<b>100,470</b>



APPENDICES

MISSION TO THE WORLD - continued

	ACTUAL 6 months Year 1990	BUDGET Year 1991	PROJECTED Year 1991	BUDGET Year 1992
<b>CONFERENCES &amp; MEETINGS</b>				
Staff & Missionaries	14,337	35,000	30,000	33,000
Summer Conferences	-92	60,000	60,000	65,000
Field Conferences	4,628		5,000	6,000
Annual Missionary Conferences	60,567	115,000	65,000	82,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>79,440</b>	<b>210,000</b>	<b>160,000</b>	<b>186,000</b>
<b>GENERAL ASSEMBLY EXPENSE</b>				
General Assembly Expense		19,000	19,000	21,000
PCA Foundation	2,006	37,575	37,575	43,750
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>2,006</b>	<b>56,575</b>	<b>56,575</b>	<b>64,750</b>
<b>PROFESSIONAL SERVICES</b>				
Audit/accounting	8,093	12,000	25,000	26,100
Research	9,605	3,500	5,000	5,000
Consultants	42,039	9,500	15,000	15,000
Legal	476	850	850	900
Other Professional Services	3,068	700	1,500	1,500
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>63,281</b>	<b>26,550</b>	<b>47,350</b>	<b>48,500</b>
<b>OCCUPANCY COSTS</b>				
Office Lease	62,754	125,750	125,750	132,100
Insurance	15,544	21,000	21,000	23,100
Repairs/Maintenance	84	1,000	750	900
Storage Costs	570	1,200	1,200	1,200
Safe Deposit Box		165	165	170
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>78,952</b>	<b>149,115</b>	<b>148,865</b>	<b>157,470</b>
<b>OFFICE EXPENSE</b>				
Bank Charges	2,226	750	3,500	3,850
Equipment Lease	2,590	6,000	500	
Repairs/Maintenance-Equip	2,577	6,100	5,000	5,000
Repairs/Maintenance-Auto	22	600	500	500
Hospitality	1,290	3,000	3,000	3,000
Supplies/Printing	27,759	48,000	54,000	59,400
Dues/Memberships	24,759	6,600	35,000	38,500
Subscriptions/Publications	7,510	32,000	10,000	11,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>68,733</b>	<b>103,050</b>	<b>111,500</b>	<b>121,250</b>
<b>MISSIONARY TRAVEL</b>				
Travel To/From Field	141,105	224,700	250,000	300,000
Shipping	57,007	101,600	110,000	121,000
Ministry Travel	54,965	50,000	75,000	82,500
Set-Up Expenses	39,122	80,000	80,000	84,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>292,199</b>	<b>456,300</b>	<b>515,000</b>	<b>587,500</b>

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MISSION TO THE WORLD - continued

	ACTUAL 6 months Year 1990	BUDGET Year 1991	PROJECTED Year 1991	BUDGET Year 1992
<b>ASSOCIATED MISSIONARY COSTS</b>				
Computer/Software Purchase	28,993	100,000	75,000	82,500
College Ed. Assistance	21,674	40,000	45,000	48,000
Language Studies	26,494	60,000	60,000	66,000
Continuing Education	2,796	10,000	8,000	8,500
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>79,957</b>	<b>210,000</b>	<b>188,000</b>	<b>205,000</b>
<b>PERSONNEL DEVELOPMENT</b>				
Assessment Center	17,151	35,000	35,000	36,750
Candidate Expense	5,431	22,000	25,000	25,000
Recruitment	2,893	14,000	10,000	10,000
Missionary Training	119,038	60,000	125,000	130,000
Debriefing	30,560	44,500	45,000	50,000
Physicals	9,186	8,500	2,000	20,000
Team Leader Development	1,995	3,000	4,000	77,500
Urbana Expenses	2,585	0	0	0
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>188,839</b>	<b>187,000</b>	<b>246,000</b>	<b>349,250</b>
<b>COMMUNICATIONS</b>				
Courier Fees	1,341		2,500	2,700
Federal Express	494	1,250	1,500	1,700
U. S. Postage	30,779	67,500	70,000	77,000
UPS	3,260	5,800	6,000	6,300
Telephone-Local	8,386	12,000	18,000	18,900
Telephone-TDX	14,624	39,900	30,000	31,500
Telephone-FAX	1,104	0	2,500	3,000
Telephone -Equip. Service	5,338	0	6,000	6,000
Cables/Telegrams	758	60	1,200	1,200
W.O. Easylink	1,452	1,400	3,000	3,300
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>67,536</b>	<b>127,910</b>	<b>140,700</b>	<b>151,600</b>
<b>PROMOTIONS</b>				
Network	40,856	108,000	80,000	108,000
Promotional Prayer	7,992	28,400	30,000	31,500
Day of Prayer		15,000	15,000	15,700
Missionary Directory		13,000	13,000	14,300
Prayer Cards	10,926	18,000	20,000	22,000
Prayer Letters	66,639	110,000	110,000	120,000
Other Promotional Material	90			
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>126,503</b>	<b>292,400</b>	<b>268,000</b>	<b>311,500</b>
<b>ITINERATION</b>				
Lodging/Meals	20,774	42,000	42,000	45,000
Telephone	39,071	56,300	60,000	65,000
Travel	93,473	190,400	198,000	218,000
Other	2,478	9,200	6,000	6,600
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>155,796</b>	<b>297,900</b>	<b>306,000</b>	<b>334,600</b>

APPENDICES

MISSION TO THE WORLD - continued

	ACTUAL 6 months Year 1990	BUDGET Year 1991	PROJECTED Year 1991	BUDGET Year 1992
<b>STAFF TRAVEL EXPENSE</b>				
Coordinator	10,253	28,000	25,000	28,000
Senior Staff	89,815	139,000	145,000	151,000
Office Staff	2,086	9,000	8,000	8,800
Foreign Regional Coordinator	10,016	12,000	10,000	10,500
US Regional Coordinator	6,905	12,000	12,000	10,000
Staff Hospitality	3,302	1,250	5,000	5,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>122,377</b>	<b>201,250</b>	<b>205,000</b>	<b>213,300</b>
<b>OTHER EXPENSES</b>				
Donations (Gifts)	2,500	4,000	4,000	4,000
Other Taxes	5,231	700	6,000	6,000
Interest	5,890	15,500	500	
Depreciation	51,286	106,000	106,000	115,000
Other Expenses	332	9,500	5,000	5,000
Contingencies		10,000	10,000	10,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>65,239</b>	<b>145,700</b>	<b>131,500</b>	<b>140,000</b>
<b>FIELD EXPENSES</b>				
Field Expenses (Gross)	452,391	918,600	918,600	965,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>452,391</b>	<b>918,600</b>	<b>918,600</b>	<b>965,000</b>
<b>PROJECT EXPENSES</b>				
Projects (Gross)	177,037	285,000	285,000	300,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>177,037</b>	<b>285,000</b>	<b>285,000</b>	<b>300,000</b>
<b>TENTMAKING PROJECT</b>				
Tentmaking Project	12,801	100,000	30,000	30,000
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>12,801</b>	<b>100,000</b>	<b>30,000</b>	<b>30,000</b>
<b>TOTAL EXPENSES</b>	<b>6,520,600</b>	<b>13,864,640</b>	<b>13,606,840</b>	<b>14,953,000</b>

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### SERVANTS IN MISSIONS ABROAD BUDGET HIGHLIGHTS

#### APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

#### I. CRITERIA FOR PREPARATION OF BUDGET

- A. The proposed budget covers the period January 1992 through December 1992. This is a change from past years where the fiscal year ended in June of each year, and is an approved change made at the request of the 17th General Assembly.
- B. The previous budget period covers an 18-month period July 1990 through December 1991 in order to make the transition to a calendar fiscal year beginning January 1992. The first column reflects the first six months of that 18-month fiscal period, while the second and third columns reflect the second 12-month portion.
- C. In order to provide meaningful comparisons, the actual twelve month expense through December 31, 1990 have been extrapolated for both the Projected January 1991/December 1991 Expenses and the Proposed January 1992/December 1992 Budget, but adjusted by either increases or decreases in expenses as they can be projected at this time.
- D. The two-year missionary growth is based on MTW's ten-year plan -- Vision 2000. It represents an average of 76 two-year missionaries for 1991 and 97 for 1992.
- E. The \* items designate those expenses directly tied to the numbers of two-year missionaries.

#### II. BUDGET DETAILS

The following major line items have been calculated based on the following assumptions.

- A. Salaries. Office staff increases reflect a 7 percent projected salary increase, plus the addition of one administrative position for the two-week programs. Missionary salaries represents the increase in the average number of two-year missionaries and projected 5 percent increase in the cost of overseas living for the budget year.
- B. Benefits increase reflects higher total salaries as well as a 12 percent increase in group medical benefits.
- C. Conferences. The increase in Miscellaneous reflects a more accurate estimation of expenses incurred by SIMA staff traveling to various meetings and conferences. The area retreat is to be held for the Europe/Africa area in March 1992.
- D. Professional Services. Financial Services reflects a charge of \$1,320 monthly to SIMA to be paid to MTW for services rendered (i.e. receipting, payroll, check-printing, etc.).
- E. Travel Missionaries. Travel to/from Field reflects a 10 percent annual increase as well as an increase in two-year missionary numbers. Program Travel reflects transportation expenses related to ministry.

APPENDICES

SERVANTS IN MISSION ABROAD - continued

- F. Associated Missionary Expenses. SIMA Ministry reflects a 5 percent increase in the amount spent by two-year missionaries on non-transportation expenses directly related to ministry (i.e. supplies, materials, hospitality, etc.).
- G. Communications. Postage reflects the recent postage rate increase, as well as the increased number of missionaries.
- H. Promotion. The limited increase in OnWords reflects a decreased number of newsletters published annually, from three to one, but with a much increased distribution number. Video/Other represents \$15,000 targeted for production of a new SIMA promotional video and brochures.
- I. Staff Travel reflects trips to cross-cultural training locations in Detroit and California, as well as two trips overseas to visit SIMA missionaries.
- J. Project Expenses are based on the following past and projected numbers:

	<u>1989</u>	<u>1990</u>	<u>1991</u>	<u>1992</u>
Two-month	60	65	88	97
Two-week	770	1050	1700	2200

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

SIMA

APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

	Actual 7-90/12-90	Budget 1-91/12-91	Projected 1-91/12-91	Approved 1-92/12-92
<b>INCOME</b>				
Missionary * Project	538,175	1,713,133	1,345,641	1,818,029
Two Month	192,805	325,332	274,080	316,497
Two Week	292,384	519,070	540,337	711,628
Interest	15,502	30,000	40,948	42,898
Other	15,530	3,000	27,311	28,612
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>1,054,396</b>	<b>2,590,535</b>	<b>2,228,317</b>	<b>2,917,664</b>
<b>EXPENSES</b>				
<b>SALARIES</b>				
Office Staff	94,968	200,300	193,858	231,540
Outside Help	799	2,680	1,721	1,803
Missionary *	253,309	755,884	618,359	826,803
Quotas *	29,702	18,000	32,904	43,996
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>378,778</b>	<b>976,864</b>	<b>846,842</b>	<b>1,104,142</b>
<b>BENEFITS</b>				
Annuity	8,837	20,249	18,713	19,604
Disability *	4,443	29,568	11,441	15,297
Health *	64,950	180,804	165,484	232,156
Life Insurance *	6,114	1,184	13,394	17,909
Payroll Taxes *	24,711	72,479	55,805	74,616
Other *	356	0	362	484
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>109,411</b>	<b>304,284</b>	<b>265,199</b>	<b>360,066</b>
<b>OFFICE</b>				
Repairs/Maintenance	50	667	104	109
Supplies/Printing	1,283	5,000	3,081	3,227
Other	503	0	1,908	1,999
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>1,836</b>	<b>5,667</b>	<b>5,093</b>	<b>5,335</b>

\* Items designate those expenses directly tied to the number of Two-Year missionaries.

APPENDICES

SIMA

APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

	Actual 7-90/12-90	Budget 1-91/12-91	Projected 1-91/12-91	Approved 1-92/12-92
<b>PERSONNEL</b>				
Candidate Expenses	3,663	9,932	7,734	10,341
Recruitment	1,649	3,334	2,736	2,867
Missionary Training *	21,981	75,504	37,987	50,792
Debriefing *	4,530	12,081	12,203	16,317
Staff Development	194	500	333	349
Urbana	4,531	0	0	0
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>36,548</b>	<b>101,351</b>	<b>60,993</b>	<b>80,666</b>
<b>COMMUNICATIONS</b>				
Postage *	5,856	10,290	15,977	20,391
Telephone *	6,141	8,820	14,653	18,702
Telephone-Fax *	414	441	501	640
Federal Express *	75	210	238	304
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>12,486</b>	<b>19,761</b>	<b>31,369</b>	<b>40,037</b>
<b>COMMITTEE MEETINGS</b>				
Travel	250	4,310	2,083	2,182
Hotel/meals	4,188	9,090	10,077	10,557
Other	288	225	473	496
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>4,726</b>	<b>13,625</b>	<b>12,633</b>	<b>13,235</b>
<b>CONFERENCES</b>				
Miscellaneous (GA, STL, etc.)	3,862	1,500	4,577	6,120
Annual Summer Conference	0	500	972	1,019
Local Field Conferences *	3,910	19,668	4,289	5,735
Annual Area Miss. Retreat *	12,852	21,500	18,722	25,034
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>20,624</b>	<b>43,168</b>	<b>28,560</b>	<b>37,908</b>
<b>PROFESSIONAL SERVICES</b>				
Audit/Accounting Service	3,052	4,767	9,261	9,702
MTW Financial Services	7,200	15,840	15,120	15,840
Other	346	0	671	702
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>10,598</b>	<b>20,607</b>	<b>25,052</b>	<b>26,244</b>

\* Items designate those expenses directly tied to the number of Two-Year missionaries.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

SIMA

APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

	Actual 7-90/12-90	Budget 1-91/12-91	Projected 1-91/12-91	Approved 1-92/12-92
<b>OCCUPANCY</b>				
Lease/Office	8,010	15,600	16,559	17,347
Other	156	0	164	172
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>8,166</b>	<b>15,600</b>	<b>16,723</b>	<b>17,519</b>
<b>TRAVEL MISSIONARIES</b>				
To/from Field *	41,333	75,504	77,227	107,527
Shipping *	14,120	18,178	30,125	40,280
Program Travel *	19,643	38,054	43,118	57,653
Setup *	4,932	12,175	13,915	18,606
Passports/visas/shots	2,465	3,334	5,408	7,232
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>82,493</b>	<b>147,245</b>	<b>169,793</b>	<b>231,298</b>
<b>ASSOCIATED MISSIONARY EXPENSES</b>				
Language Study *	1,969	14,270	8,975	12,000
SIMA Ministry *	2,336	16,309	11,808	15,788
Special Projects *	4,008	10,000	8,794	11,758
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>8,313</b>	<b>40,579</b>	<b>29,577</b>	<b>39,546</b>
<b>PROMOTION</b>				
OnWords	19	4,950	2,046	2,144
Prayer Cards *	2,268	7,425	4,323	5,780
Prayer Letters *	4,636	18,533	12,034	16,091
Video/Other	662	775	1,389	16,455
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>7,585</b>	<b>31,683</b>	<b>19,792</b>	<b>40,470</b>
<b>STAFF EXPENSES</b>				
Travel	4,798	3,367	8,195	8,940
Hospitality	337	320	635	666
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>5,135</b>	<b>3,687</b>	<b>8,830</b>	<b>9,606</b>
<b>PROJECT EXPENSES</b>				
Two Month	164,101	303,282	233,277	269,379
Two Week	261,783	506,120	458,121	603,349
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>425,884</b>	<b>809,402</b>	<b>691,398</b>	<b>872,728</b>
<b>EXPENSE TOTAL</b>	<b>1,112,582</b>	<b>2,533,522</b>	<b>2,211,855</b>	<b>2,878,798</b>
<b>EXCESS/(DEFICIT)</b>	<b>-58,187</b>	<b>57,013</b>	<b>16,463</b>	<b>38,865</b>

\* Items designate those expenses directly tied to the number of Two-Year missionaries.



APPENDICES

COVENANT COLLEGE

91-92 BUDGET ASSUMPTIONS

FISCAL YEAR:	ACTUAL 89-90	ACT/BUD 90-91	APPROVED 91-92
FALL ENROLLMENT			
HEAD COUNT	503	510	526
FULL TIME EQUIV QUEST	485 73	489 103	504 88
RESIDENCE HALLS ON CAMPUS	364	388	426
APARTMENTS	52	47	35
BOARD PLAN PARTIC.	353	380	429
FEEES:			
TUITION (% INC.)	3300 12%	3700 12%	3,950 7%
AVG. ROOM	682 6%	723 6%	769 6%
APARTMENT	800 7%	850 6%	900 6%
AVG. BOARD	785 1%	832 6%	885 6%
TOTAL FEES (NO APT.)	4767 9%	5255 10%	5604 7%
ANNUAL FUND	1,283,224	1,290,000	1,290,000
CHALLENGE GRANT	75,000	0	0
SALARY SCALE INC.	3.0%	2.5%	6.0%
TOTAL AVG. SALARY INC.	6.0%	2.5%	6.0%
STUDENT/FAC RATIO	13.9	13.0	13.8
STUDENT/STAFF RATIO	7.1	6.6	6.8

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

COVENANT COLLEGE  
 APPROVED 1991-1992 BUDGET  
 July 1, 1991 - June 30, 1992

FISCAL YEAR:	ACTUAL 89-90	BUDGET 90-91	APPROVED 91-92	% CHANGE
<b>REVENUE</b>				
<b>EDUCATION &amp; GENERAL</b>				
TRAD. TUITION/FEES	3,169,144	3,514,416	3,991,099	13.6%
QUEST TUITION/FEES	466,425	613,996	572,995	-6.7%
M Ed TUITION/FEES	0	875	73,065	8250.3%
GOVERNMENT APPRO.	129,832	156,300	156,300	0.0%
GIFTS - ANNUAL FUND	1,283,224	1,290,000	1,290,000	0.0%
GIFTS - RESTRICTED	138,170	63,000	58,000	
CHALLENGE GRANT	75,000	0	0	0.0%
ENDOWMENT	97,662	36,500	61,500	68.5%
OTHER	84,940	60,615	72,027	18.8%
STUDENT AID	25,236	405,200	453,200	11.8%
<b>TOTAL E &amp; G</b>	<b>5,969,633</b>	<b>6,140,902</b>	<b>6,728,186</b>	<b>9.6%</b>
<b>AUXILIARY ENTERPRISES</b>				
RESIDENCE HALLS	560,638	625,725	693,365	10.8%
BOARD PLANS	556,002	632,320	732,788	15.9%
TUCK SHOPPE	0	0	0	0.0%
LOOKOUT INN	82,829	80,000	100,000	25.0%
SUMMER CONFERENCES	415,720	452,683	475,000	4.9%
OTHER	10,189	0	0	0.0%
<b>TOTAL AUXILIARIES</b>	<b>1,625,378</b>	<b>1,790,728</b>	<b>2,001,153</b>	<b>11.8%</b>
<b>TOTAL REVENUES</b>	<b>7,595,011</b>	<b>7,931,630</b>	<b>8,729,339</b>	<b>10.1%</b>

APPENDICES

COVENANT COLLEGE  
 APPROVED 1991-1992 BUDGET  
 July 1,1991 - June 30, 1992

FISCAL YEAR:	ACTUAL 89-90	BUDGET 90-91	APPROVED 91-92	
<b>EXPENSES</b>				
<b>EDUCATION &amp; GENERAL</b>				
TRAD. INSTR.	1,774,912	1,908,181	1,890,668	-0.9%
QUEST	383,347	454,397	436,995	-3.8%
M Ed	0	22,500	73,065	224.7%
ACADEMIC SUPPORT	277,163	171,000	347,701	103.3%
PUBLIC SERVICE	0	0	0	0.0%
LIBRARY	149,074	201,715	207,948	3.1%
STUDENT SERVICES	796,370	878,352	899,097	2.4%
MAIN. OF PLANT	501,324	604,241	644,000	6.6%
INST. SUPPORT	1,183,959	1,172,543	1,217,084	3.0%
President-Salary			79,793	
President-Benefits			7,016	
STUDENT AID	1,046,631	1,039,353	1,157,366	11.4%
<b>TOTAL E &amp; G</b>	<b>6,112,780</b>	<b>6,452,282</b>	<b>6,960,733</b>	<b>7.9%</b>
<b>AUXILIARY ENTERPRISES</b>				
RESIDENCE HALLS	380,730	517,846	624,029	20.5%
BOARD PLANS	438,703	472,177	586,230	24.2%
TUCK SHOPPE	0	0	0	0.0%
LOOKOUT INN	67,131	63,696	80,000	25.6%
SUMMER CONFERENCES	400,398	403,363	425,000	5.4%
OTHER	10,189	0	0	0.0%
<b>TOTAL AUXILIARIES</b>	<b>1,297,151</b>	<b>1,457,082</b>	<b>1,715,259</b>	<b>17.7%</b>
CONTINGENCY	0	0	1,018	0.0%
TRANSFERS	184,646	22,266	52,329	135.0%
<b>TOTAL EXPENSES &amp; TRANS.</b>	<b>7,594,577</b>	<b>7,931,630</b>	<b>8,729,339</b>	<b>10.1%</b>
NET REVENUE	434	0	0	0.0%

**NOTES:**

Presidents's salary and benefits are included in Inst. Support for 90 & 91.  
 Higher Academic Support costs represent reallocation of academic computing costs from Instructional to Academic Support.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

COVENANT COLLEGE  
APPROVED 1991-1992 BUDGET

FISCAL YEAR:	ACTUAL 89-90	BUDGET 90-91	APPROVED 91-92
REVENUES BY SOURCE:			
TRAD. STUDENTS	56.4%	60.2%	62.1%
QUEST STUDENTS	6.1%	7.7%	6.6%
M Ed STUDENTS	0.0%	0.0%	0.8%
DONORS	21.4%	18.1%	17.0%
GOVERNMENT	5.1%	5.3%	4.8%
PROFIT BUSINESSES	6.7%	6.7%	6.6%
OTHER	2.4%	1.2%	1.5%
	<hr/> 98%	<hr/> 99%	<hr/> 99%
EDUCATION AND GENERAL EXPENSES BY CATEGORY:			
TRAD. INSTR.	29.0%	29.6%	27.2%
QUEST	6.3%	7.0%	6.3%
M Ed	0.0%	0.3%	1.0%
ACADEMIC SUPPORT	4.5%	2.7%	5.0%
LIBRARY	2.4%	3.1%	3.0%
STUDENT SERVICES	13.0%	13.6%	12.9%
MAIN. OF PLANT	8.2%	9.4%	9.3%
INST. SUPPORT	19.4%	18.2%	17.3%
STUDENT AID	17.1%	16.1%	16.6%

**COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY**  
**APPROVED BUDGET HIGHLIGHTS**  
**FY 91-92**

**I. Revenues:**

**A. Tuition and Fees:**

1. Tuition in most programs is increasing from \$125 per credit hour to \$140. This will still keep our tuition competitive with other similar seminaries. The Doctor of Ministry tuition is increasing from \$140 per credit hour to \$160. The increase is necessary to approximately maintain our current level of tuition since we have an increasing number of students taking part-time loads.
2. Enrollment is expected to grow to 362 students from the 322 enrolled in the Fall of 1990. Even though we expect larger growth in head count, we expect a growth to 214.04 full-time equivalent students from 195.2 enrolled in the Fall of 1990. In addition we expect 38 students to be auditing classes.
3. A new fee will be added for students applying for GSL government loans. This fee will only defray a small percentage of the actual administrative cost required by us to process the loans.

**B. Endowment:**

1. Earnings available for use are expected to continue at 8%. With management expenses the net income to the operating budget is 7.7%
2. Unrestricted endowment income will increase because earnings will now be available from stock that has been held for ten years with no use of earnings (required by the donor).

**C. Gifts & Grants:**

1. In an effort to begin a long process to reduce our dependence on Gifts & Grants, the goal remains about the same, \$1,385,000. Expenses had to be carefully examined and reduced where possible to attain this Gifts & Grants figure.
2. Restricted gifts expected are reduced due to a former source being deleted.

**D. Student Aid:**

In spite of the loss of one source, Student Aid revenue will increase with growth in our Endowment.

**E. Other Income:**

This revenue will increase to \$42,050 from \$37,950 this year with increasing media production sales, added interest earnings, and growth in syllabi sales.

**F. Auxiliary Enterprises:**

Revenue will increase with the completion of 24 three bedroom apartments. Rent will be the same for the apartments as currently. With all 48 apartments available, to be conservative, we have increased expected vacancy.

**II. Expenditures:**

**A. General:**

1. The budget assumes overall salary increases of 3%. The increases will be a mixture of cost of living and merit where appropriate. Salary increases had to be kept low in order to reduce gifts and grants.
2. We are uncertain of what increase to expect for medical insurance. To be conservative we had budgeted a 25% increase.

COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY - continued

3. Our postage figures had to be increase by 20% due to the expected rate increase in April, 1991.
4. General expenses were increased by 6% based on inflation projections provided by the Kiplinger Letter and uncertainty in the Mideast.

B. Educational & General:

1. President & Trustees:

- a. Trustee travel was reduced with the assumption that the President's secretary would arrange more travel to economize. Also, that budget assumes only one Executive Committee Meeting in December. The March meeting is so close to the January Board Meeting it has not proven to be necessary.
- b. A miscellaneous dollar amount of \$2,000 was also dropped from the budget.

2. Instruction - Doctor of Ministry:

- a. A portion of Dan Zink's time in the Student Life office is no longer allocated to this budget.
- c. Subsidized housing for visiting students has been dropped.
- c. Provision is still made for an extension program at Chesapeake.

4. Instruction - Master of Theology:

The stipend for a part-time director of this program has been dropped.

5. Instruction - Evening Program:

The program is being expanded to teach more classes. The increase pays the faculty stipends.

6. Instruction - Extension Program:

No changes are anticipated.

7. Instruction - Francis Schaeffer Institute:

- a. Part of Student Services secretary's time is now charged to this budget for more secretarial support.
- b. Instead of one student, two are now in the budget and each works more hours.
- c. Due to the caliber of special speakers used for this program the stipends have ben increased.

8. Instruction - Church Planting:

The program is essentially unchanged except for provision for inflation. This program continues to be almost fully funded by Restricted Gifts.

9. Registrar's Office:

With the new computer system in place we are able to eliminate student and part-time labor.

10. Library:

- a. Provision is made for a new Librarian who will begin in August, 1991.
- b. Some savings come in salary and benefits since the Assistant Librarian will be part-time rather than full-time.
- c. We will have a large expense to initiate a new automated system to catalogue books. However, a large part of the start-up cost (\$14,000) is being set aside in FY 90-91 toward this project. Within a few years we should have eliminated the bulk of the cataloguing backlog.
- d. The book purchase line item will be increased to its normal amount with the coming of a new Librarian.

11. Student Services:

- a. Dan Zink is in the budget for a full year instead of eleven months and retirement benefits are added after a full year of employment. Also more of his time is allocated to this budget.

COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY - continued

- b. Student Labor is increased.
- c. There is a reduction in operating expenses since moving expenses for Dan Zink are not repeated.
- d. Less of the departmental secretary's time is charged to the budget.
- 12. Family Nurture Program:
  - a. A student coordinator is added.
  - b. Provision for added special speakers is made.
- 13. Student Aid:
  - a. More of Wallace Anderson's time is allocated to this budget to reflect how he spends his time.
  - b. Additional departmental expenses are added which have previously been incorrectly charged to Admissions.
  - c. Financial Aid is increased to reflect higher tuition cost.
  - d. Average awards (as a % of tuition), however, will be decreased somewhat from this year.
- 14. Development:
  - a. Increase is due to some expenses being moved from the Seminary Relations budget which has been eliminated entirely.
  - b. Seminary switchboard hours are reduced and the cost is moved from Seminary Relations.
  - c. Student Labor is added - moved from Seminary Relations.
  - d. Retirement cost increases with longer term personnel.
  - e. Printing cost increases substantially with the loss of gift subsidy by a printer.
  - f. The outside consultant is dropped from the budget.
  - g. Provision for increased alumni activity is made.
  - h. Expected cost for the PCA Foundation is reduced from the current year's budget based on expected cost. It would have been reduced further except that the PCA Foundation is expected to increase their expenses substantially next year.
- 15. Seminary Relations:
  - a. The director position is dropped.
  - b. Other expenses are reduced to meet a lower Gifts & Grants goal.
  - c. Remaining costs are transferred to the Development budget.
- 16. Admissions:
  - a. Student Labor wages are increased to retain high quality student workers - our key contact people with prospective students.
  - b. Duplicating costs are reduced due to the new computer system.
  - c. Printing costs are increased with more evening program activity.
  - d. Advertising increases somewhat, but is still substantially less than our competition spends.
- 17. Electronic Media Production:
  - a. Student labor provision is reduced to what our actual expense has been.
  - b. Two courses are produced rather than the three courses in the current year's budget.
- 18. Business Office:
  - A. Part-time hours are added since the various computer systems on campus now require a full-time manager.
  - b. Contract expenses are reduced by doing bank reconciliations in-house.
  - c. Provision is made for the staff to train on the new computer system.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY - continued

- d. Professional advancement is eliminated due to budget crunch.
- e. Provision for bad debt expense is increased to eliminate uncollectible accounts.

19. Physical Plant:

- a. Move to less costly staff by mid-year.
- b. One full-time position reduced to part-time.
- c. Student labor reduced due to budget crunch.
- d. Increase travel budget with older vehicles.
- e. Outside campus security eliminated.
- f. With a new insulated roof to be installed on the library this Spring, utility costs will not increase as much as usual.
- g. Provision is made to try to initiate a program to use more volunteer labor in many campus departments.

C. Auxiliary Enterprises:

- 1. General operations are unchanged.
- 2. Student Apartments:
  - a. A full-time Supervisor of Grounds is added.
  - b. Student labor is increased to maintain the added apartments.
  - c. Operating expenses are increased with added apartments.
  - d. Utility budget has larger increases with a possible higher vacancy rate.
- 3. *Timeless Insights* expenses are increased to a level more consistent with history.

D. Transfers:

- 1. With Educational & General facilities we expect to spend the following capital projects:
  - a. \$4,260 from utility savings to pay over-budget cost of Library roof replacement in FY 90-91.
  - b. \$6,250 to replace the roof on the Administration Building.
  - c. \$5,000 - heating repair in Edwards annex.
  - d. \$43,700 to service debt on the Administration Computer System.
  - e. \$15,000 for ongoing maintenance and development of the Administrative Computer System. This will be allocated to Contract Expenses in appropriate departmental budgets.
  - f. \$1,290 to restore the cost of the postage machine (purchased 2 years ago) to Renewal & Debt.
- 2. In our Auxiliary facilities we plan the following for capital:
  - a. \$40,800 to be set aside as reserves for future apartment repairs.
  - b. \$4,450 - Paint and gutter - the Kooistra house.
  - c. \$2,950 - Paint and gutter - the Calhoun house.
  - d. \$1,500 - deck - the Chapell house.
- 3. Contingency remains the same as the current year.



## APPENDICES

## COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

APPROVED BUDGET  
July 1, 1991 through June 30, 1992

	89-89 <u>ACTUAL</u>	90-91 <u>BUDGET</u>	91-92 <u>BUDGET</u>
<b>REVENUES</b>			
Educational & General:			
-Tuition:			
General	442,679	545,550	525,900
Doctor of Ministry	23,265	43,510	48,400
Master of Theology	0	10,500	18,500
Evening Program	76,744	99,375	115,500
Extension Programs	7,410	18,450	18,000
Auditors	0	0	25,200
-Fees	<u>22,501</u>	<u>25,000</u>	<u>34,250</u>
TUITION & FEE SUBTOTAL	572,599	742,385	785,750
-Endowment	161,304	200,100	225,400
-Gifts & Grants - ASKINGS	1,314,489	1,385,100	1,385,000
-Restricted Gifts	173,314	108,945	98,600
-Minis. Form. Prog	0	0	0
-Student Aid	126,323	131,600	134,700
-Other	<u>43,880</u>	<u>37,950</u>	<u>42,050</u>
TOTAL/ED & GENERAL	2,391,809	2,606,080	2,671,500
Auxiliary Enterprises:			
-General	47,068	40,160	41,450
-Student Apartments	49,763	121,150	242,900
-Timeless Insights	<u>10,594</u>	<u>10,200</u>	<u>10,100</u>
TOTAL AUXILIARY	107,426	171,510	294,450
<b>TOTAL REVENUES</b>	<b>2,499,234</b>	<b>2,777,590</b>	<b>2,965,950</b>
<b>EXPENDITURES:</b>			
Educational & General:			
-President/Trustees Expenses	58,179	57,687	56,007
-President Salary	53,097	57,383	57,383
-President Benefits	<u>8,894</u>	<u>9,891</u>	<u>10,300</u>
PRESIDENT/TRUSTEE SUBTOTAL	120,170	124,961	123,690

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

APPROVED BUDGET  
July 1, 1991 through June 30, 1992

	89-89 <u>ACTUAL</u>	90-91 <u>BUDGET</u>	91-92 <u>BUDGET</u>
-Instruction	575,741	568,024	608,388
-Instruction - D. Min	10,748	38,112	29,201
-Instruction - Th. M	0	8,400	7,300
-Instruction - Evening	9,229	13,405	22,537
-Instruction - Extension	17,359	40,248	41,501
-Instr. - Schaeffer Institute	0	71,232	91,014
-Instruction - Ch. Pltg.	<u>118,206</u>	<u>104,217</u>	<u>108,355</u>
INSTRUCTION SUBTOTAL	731,284	843,638	908,296
-Registrar's Office	47,259	55,103	52,311
-Library	101,570	108,064	133,349
-Student Services	52,656	56,366	64,511
-Student Min/Family Nurture	5,929	9,305	15,002
-Minis. Form. Prog	0	0	0
-Student Aid	189,931	220,906	248,214
-Development	260,566	332,618	378,682
-Seminary Relations	0	72,853	0
-Admissions	184,855	181,159	192,899
-Electronic Media Prod.	68,158	74,867	65,841
-Business Office	215,259	198,658	210,091
-Physical Plant	<u>294,609</u>	<u>303,051</u>	<u>293,532</u>
TOTAL ED & GEN'L	2,272,246	2,581,549	2,686,418
Auxiliary Enterprises:			
-Operations	23,654	22,244	22,292
-Student Apartments	36,956	63,165	111,051
-Services	0	0	0
-Timeless Insights	<u>15,160</u>	<u>11,752</u>	<u>15,989</u>
TOTAL AUXILIARY	75,769	97,161	149,332
Transfers	35,960	93,880	125,200
Contingency	<u>0</u>	<u>5,000</u>	<u>5,000</u>
TOTAL EXPENDITURES	<u>2,383,975</u>	<u>2,777,590</u>	<u>2,965,950</u>
Net Revenue/(Expenditures)	\$115,259	0	0
Cumulative Fund Balance	3,893	3,893	3,893
H C Enrollment, Fall	251	357	362
FTE	184.6	256.2	214.04
		Actual: 322	
		195.2	

## APPENDICES

**INSURANCE, ANNUITIES AND RELIEF**  
**APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR**

	BUDGET 1990	ACTUAL 1990	BUDGET 1991	BUDGET 1992
<b>INCOME:</b>				
Insurance Premiums	\$358,211	\$358,211	\$377,930	\$380,000
Retirement Funds-Investment	240,634	240,634	255,825	265,000
Relief Investment-Inc. & Gifts	<u>136,155</u>	<u>136,155</u>	<u>143,650</u>	<u>140,000</u>
<b>TOTAL INCOME</b>	<b>\$735,000</b>	<b>\$735,000</b>	<b>\$777,405</b>	<b>\$785,000</b>
<b>EXPENSES:</b>				
Director's Salary	\$ 55,000	\$ 55,000	\$ 57,750	\$ 61,750
Director's Benefits (1)	16,708	15,160	16,800	15,600
Other Salaries	264,000	225,092	280,390	212,790
Other Benefits	55,292	45,505	59,220	50,140
Employer's FICA	<u>25,000</u>	<u>20,528</u>	<u>26,500</u>	<u>21,200</u>
<b>Total Salaries and Benefits</b>	<b>\$416,000</b>	<b>\$361,285</b>	<b>\$440,660</b>	<b>\$361,480</b>
Actuarial	\$ 5,000	\$ 2,120	\$ 5,300	\$ 3,180
Audit	18,000	16,945	19,080	19,080
Legal	<u>10,000</u>	<u>19,792</u>	<u>10,600</u>	<u>29,220</u>
<b>Total Professional Fees</b>	<b>\$33,000</b>	<b>\$38,864</b>	<b>\$34,980</b>	<b>\$51,480</b>
Board Meetings	\$ 20,000	\$ 20,926	\$ 21,200	\$ 23,320
Computer (2)	50,000	87,634	53,000	31,800
Consulting Fees	10,000	8,257	10,600	5,300
Depreciation on Equipment	12,000	11,810	12,900	10,600
GA Long-Range Planning	5,000	3,590	0	0
GA Nominating Committee	0	0	0	2,120
Marketing	10,000	2,142	10,600	6,360
Office	19,000	16,283	20,140	21,200
PCA Foundation	34,000	26,334	38,000	40,280
Postage	15,000	12,372	15,900	15,900
Printing	20,000	32,741	21,200	21,200
Rent	38,000	37,624	40,280	43,460
Telephone	15,000	9,383	15,900	12,720
Third Party Administration	0	41,225	0	98,580
Training	5,000	3,443	5,000	5,300
Travel	<u>33,000</u>	<u>20,941</u>	<u>35,100</u>	<u>33,900</u>
<b>Total Other Expenses</b>	<b>\$286,000</b>	<b>\$334,705</b>	<b>\$299,820</b>	<b>\$372,040</b>
<b>TOTAL EXPENSES</b>	<b>\$735,000</b>	<b>\$734,854</b>	<b>\$775,460</b>	<b>\$785,000</b>

(1) Each year includes insurance, retirement and personal automobile expense.

(2) Amounts include depreciation of computer hardware and software.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**INVESTOR'S FUND**

APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

	1990 Actual	1991 Budget	1992 Budget	1992 Growth
Director's Salary & Housing	44,512	46,855	43,523	
Director's Benefits			12,030	
Staff Salary/Benefits	102,855	113,900	88,182	55,000
Travel	1,701	14,280	1,500	
Telephone	5,988	6,300	7,500	
Office	2,433	2,100	3,500	
Rent	7,739	10,500	19,500	
Legal: Loans	4,924	22,000	24,000	
Legal: Registration	6,043	7,500	7,500	
Postage	1,733	3,500	3,500	
Printing	1,974	2,000	2,500	
Marketing	9,662	17,250	25,000	15,000
Management	57,063	63,000	75,000	15,000
Trustees	395	2,500	2,500	
Audit	3,853	4,500	4,750	
Miscellaneous	2,471	2,500	3,100	
Conferences	542	2,000	2,000	
Loans	293	6,000	6,000	
Depreciation/Amort	12,301	12,298	n/a	
Gifts			35,000	
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>266,482</b>	<b>338,983</b>	<b>366,585</b>	<b>85,000</b>

## APPENDICES

## PCA FOUNDATION

## APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

EXPENSES	ACTUAL 1990	BUDGET 1991	BUDGET 1992
Director's Salary	45,551	48,362	50,539
Director's Benefits	10,599	11,017	11,994
Field Staff Comp.	14,200	35,000	50,000
Office Staff Comp.	35,278	39,418	53,600
Office Staff Benefits	4,492	3,495	3,992
Payroll Taxes	6,739	8,084	10,100
Prof. Services	26,321	23,200	35,000
Promo/Advertising	31,617	30,000	31,500
Office Supplies/Exp.	8,642	9,000	9,450
Rent	16,863	18,408	19,328
Telephone	6,282	8,000	9,000
Dues/Subscriptions	387	300	400
Travel	28,373	30,000	36,000
Staff Training	6,792	8,000	8,000
Board Meetings	6,772	7,000	8,400
Capital Expenses	6,435	3,000	3,500
Office Insurance	2,115	5,000	5,000
Operating Reserve	206	12,716	4,365
<b>TOTAL EXPENSES</b>	<b>257,664</b>	<b>300,000</b>	<b>350,168</b>

## RIDGE HAVEN CONFERENCE CENTER

NOTES on BUDGET FOR  
January 1, 1992 Through December 31, 1992

1. Administrator's Compensation was higher than approved because of the transitional period when both Ed Robeson and Jim Poteet were serving in 1990.
2. Other Salaries figure was higher than approved because a Maintenance position was opened and filled in 1990.
3. The Summer and Parttime Workers' expenses and the Maintenance & Tools were both higher than approved as more general maintenance and refurbishing were required and undertaken in 1990.
4. Board Meeting expenses were higher in 1990 than approved because more board members are submitting expense vouchers for reimbursement of travel expenses.
5. The Proposed Other Salaries figure includes another staff member that is being added: Rev. Paul Settle, Director of Ministries.
6. The Proposed Summer Workers figure includes \$20,000 compensation for 20 counselors that we propose to hire for the summer camps. The Estimated Income from Facilities includes the off-setting amount expected from higher camp fees. We are intending to hire counselors in summer 1991, too, although the approved budget does not reflect this.
7. The Proposed Utilities figure keeps climbing, but we have no control over that, and the increased planned into budgets never seems to be enough!

APPENDICES

RIDGE HAVEN CONFERENCE CENTER  
 APPROVED BUDGET FOR 1992 CALENDAR YEAR

BUDGETED EXPENSES	EXPENSES 1990	BUDGET 1991	BUDGET 1992
	<u>          </u>	<u>          </u>	<u>          </u>
Administrator's Salary	58,333	58,000	58,000
Administrator's Benefits	0	0	0
Other Salaries	94,789	90,000	143,358
Summer/parttime workers	17,122	14,000	40,000
Equipment/vehicle expense	11,167	12,000	12,000
Utilities	31,328	29,000	42,000
Property Taxes	5,442	7,000	5,500
Maintenance/tools	16,992	13,000	18,000
Casualty Insurance	10,520	14,000	12,000
Telephone	4,510	5,000	7,500
Promotional Expense	63,141	85,000	85,000
Travel	77	1,000	1,000
Board Meeting Expenses	3,249	2,400	3,500
Office Expense	6,055	7,500	7,000
Audit	2,165	3,000	2,500
Miscellaneous	910	1,000	1,000
Payroll Taxes	11,862	12,000	13,500
Foundation Support	20,385	37,500	37,500
Nom. Comm. Expenses		1,945	2,000
<b>TOTALS</b>	<u>358,047</u>	<u>393,345</u>	<u>491,358</u>
Less Estimated Income from Facilities	70,000	70,000	95,000
Net Operating for General Assembly's ASKINGS	<u>288,047</u>	<u>323,345</u>	<u>396,358</u>

**APPENDIX D**

**REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE FOR  
CHRISTIAN EDUCATION & PUBLICATIONS  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA**

**Introduction**

"Taking the Reformation Into the 21st Century." This theme of VISION 2000 presented to the 1990 General Assembly characterizes Christian Education and Publications' ministry.

The VISION 2000 brochure states,

"The Presbyterian Church in America is one of the fastest growing, most dynamic, evangelical Christian denominations in the world today. And yet it is, literally, just a teenager. As denominations go, just a child. If so much has been accomplished in less than twenty years, can you picture where we will be when we mature? Can you even begin to imagine the impact we could have on the world in the next decade...in the next century."

The statement continues,

"Your church is where it all begins. The local church--your church--is the backbone and foundation of everything the PCA does."

Christian Education and Publications exists to facilitate, not direct the Church's taking the Reformation into the 21st Century. CE/P serves local PCA churches which are the key to the PCA's impact on the world today and into the new millennium.

**Report of Training and Education Activities**

We believe that 1990 has been the best year in CE/P's brief history. This may sound subjective and self-serving. We say this after careful analysis of our training, education and publications ministries and after listening to the evaluations given us by those whom we have served, some formal and some informal.

We marvel that after these many years people continue to tell us, "I had no idea that CE/P and the PCA offered these kinds of programs and resources to local churches." We are grateful to God for the privilege given us at CE/P to serve this young and potentially dynamic denomination. It is a thrill for us to have the privilege of being in local churches constantly helping in some capacity. Not a week goes by that some CE/P staff members, including our regional trainers, are not in local churches.



## APPENDICES

CE/P's larger training seminars such as the Leadership Skills Seminar served over two thousand people in several different states during the past year. God has given us, both with our full-time staff and with our co-opts, opportunities to serve a multitude of purposes.

We listen carefully to what people in the local churches express both as "felt needs" and "real needs." Our seminars address those needs. We are committed to a biblical and theological approach that reflects a standard of excellence. One of our biggest frustrations is to cover the wide range of topics while offering the expertise local churches need to be even more effective in ministry.

Through our seminars, the video lending library, the consulting services with local churches, the *PCA Messenger*, WIC, the Great Commission Publications Sunday School curriculum and the bookstore, we have served almost every local PCA church and mission during the past year.

We serve the Lord and the PCA as a training and educational resource center, doing our part in making our Church strong for years to come. Evaluating our process is ongoing. Utilizing and networking the plethora of gifts within our church is a great burden of our hearts at this time.

The Women In the Church ministry, the bookstore and the *PCA Messenger* are departments which give us opportunity to serve the church broadly. CE/P reflects in its entire program the idea of the Great Commission in Matthew 28; the work of the Church is one work. The WIC ministry, the *Messenger* and the bookstore have been our most used areas to voice this message and commitment on a regular basis.

The 1989 WIC National Conference continues to bear fruit in creating the sense of identity and oneness across our Church. We are planning an even larger WIC conference in 1992.

Each month the *PCA Messenger* presents articles which will not only bring sense of belonging and identity to PCA readers but will challenge them to pray for the things God is doing and has done in our midst. The *Messenger* is mailed to 11,000 readers monthly. Another 1,000 to 2,000 copies are distributed more broadly. Though a CE/P project and publication, the *Messenger* serves the whole Church.

The bookstore has continued to experience growth in ministry over the past several years. This is one of the most frequently used resources to local churches. Training materials, curriculum and other Christian study materials are ordered daily. The toll free number links the PCA together around the country. Our staff keeps abreast of materials available, including new publications of value in local church discipleship programs.

Great Commission Publications relocated its business and marketing offices to the Atlanta area in the Fall of 1990 to better serve the local churches.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### Development

To encourage more support and prayer for CE/P, the committee and staff established a Gideon's 300 Club, like Gideon's band of 300 faithful warriors. Over 150 people joined with us this year. We have seen the impact financially. We also know that many prayers have been offered for our ministry.

Time has been invested in promoting CE/P's program-- the *PCA Messenger* and the WIC ministry as well as our Pastor and Wives Seminars, Music Seminars and other similar activities. More people are beginning to see the significance of the Assembly's CE/P Committee. Marketing and promotion will continue to be top priorities for CE/P.

### Staff

A word to the Assembly about the CE/P staff would be in order. God has brought highly gifted and skilled people together to serve CE/P's ministry. They are godly people. They demonstrate a high level of commitment to Christ, His Word and the Reformed faith. They are experts in their areas, and work diligently at keeping in touch with the grassroots.

We work at remaining on the cutting edge. We do so realizing that we serve a community of believers in the Reformed tradition. We take our roots seriously and seek to reflect them in a winsome and effective way. We take our role seriously in striving to be a part of taking the Reformation into the 21st Century. A shallow rootless Christianity is not going to change society for the better. Those people are ill equipped. We want our people to know where we have come from, and where we believe God would have us go as a Church.

### Committee Oversight

The CE/P Committee, elected from the grassroots, serves the Assembly as the program overseers and policy-makers. Members take their commitment and assignment seriously. This past year, the Committee is doing an in-depth evaluation and analysis of CE/P's present and future role in the PCA's march to the 21st Century. Members are asking hard questions, doing research and examining present programs to determine present and future needs.

The Committee is structured into:

- an external environment analysis sub-committee studying the trends both in and out of the Church. This involves significant research.
- an internal analysis sub-committee reviewing and evaluating the present program and staff to insure biblically sound and pedagogically effective approaches.

## APPENDICES

- the communication sub-committee serving as the oversight committee for the *PCA Messenger* and other resources growing from there. It recommends policy and advises staff in the area of publications. Represented on this sub-committee are people with particular knowledge theologically, but also in skills relating to writing and publishing.

- the resources sub-committee which checks CE/P's present resources. It looks at the past, present and future, considering the bigger PCA picture. It seeks to maintain a high quality of stewardship and ordering of CE/P's God-given resources.

The CE/P Committee will use the results of this 18-month process to develop its strategy and plan for the next five years.

The CE/P Committee is serving some "new waves" in the PCA. We give coordination and work with PCA groups presently involved in a variety of youth ministries. Our desire is to develop a PCA strategy for a youth movement within our church that will bring together the youth of our churches and mobilize them for service. We are glad to be working with Covenant College, Ridge Haven, and SIMA as well as other local works.

The same is already happening with the Men Of the Covenant--developing a strategy to mobilize PCA men to serve the Lord in particular and new ways. The Women In the Church are showing good and positive things that such coordination can bring to our denomination.

CE/P is also working with a steering group to develop a "PCA Worship and Music Guild." This will bring together those serving the Lord in local churches in the area of worship and music. Using the resources of the South Carolina PCA pioneers in this area, we envision a network of PCA music guilds throughout the church. This will allow more opportunities for the music and worship seminars to be available to the Church.

### Conclusion

The year 1991 is an important year for CE/P. Our planning and direction for the next five years is being set. We will continue to minister to, assess and test our programs. We will continue to reflect the VISION 2000 statement,

"We are committed to teaching and discipling men and women in the whole counsel of God and also to ministering to the needs of the whole person. We are committed to dynamic, prophetic confrontation on non-Christian thought forms and behavior and also to the demonstration of truth through the practice of holiness and love in Christian fellowship. We are committed to the freedom of every member to minister through spiritual gifts and also to the responsibility to do so under spiritual and loving discipline."

Considering the above, we offer to the 1991 General Assembly the following recommendations:

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

1. That the CE/P minutes of September 20, 21, 1990, and February 21, 22, 1991 be approved.
2. That the Assembly join with the Committee in expressing its thanks to the CE/P staff and regional trainers for their assistance to local churches and presbyteries in their training, education and communication roles.
3. That Dr. Charles Dunahoo be continued as Coordinator of CE/P with gratitude to God for his faithful and wise leadership in the past and because of the need for his continued leadership for CE/P and the PCA in the future.
4. That the PCA WIC be commended for their 1990 Love Gift of \$98,000 to Mission to The World.
5. That the Assembly at this time give thanks to God for the WIC's work of promoting the ministry and mission of the PCA, particularly giving thanks for the first 100% participation of presbyteries at the annual PresWIC President's Meeting in March 1991.
6. That the 1992 Love Gift, according to the WIC rotation schedule, be designated to CE/P and its Women In the Church ministry.
7. That the Assembly receive as information and be advised that the Ad Hoc Communication Committee for the PCA, authorized by the 1990 Assembly, has met by one conference call with the intention to continue the study as funds become available.
8. That the General Assembly approve the 1992 budget of CE/P as presented by the Administration Committee.
9. That the General Assembly designate the first full week in May 1992 as the annual PCA Week of Prayer.
10. That the audit report of CE/P prepared by Ernst and Young be found in order.

APPENDICES

APPENDIX E

REPORT OF COVENANT COLLEGE  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

Greetings in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ:

Following is a summary report of major developments at Covenant College. The report is divided into seven sections that coincide with major committees of the board of trustees.

The time period of the report is from March 24, 1990, to March 21, 1991. These dates coincide with the period between board meetings of the college since the last report to the General Assembly. Most of this report pertains to the present school year, which began in August and ends in May. The financial part of this report pertains to the last fiscal year, which began July 1, 1989, and ended June 30, 1990.

I am pleased to report that the overall health of the college remains strong. The college experienced another record year of enrollment. The operating statement and balance sheet are strong. The administration and faculty continue to emphasize the motto, "In all things . . . Christ pre-eminent."

Recent planning documents read as follows: "By providing an environment of academic rigor and by encouraging students to develop a Christ-centered world view, a Covenant college education is designed to produce in students knowledge, skills, and values that equip students to serve effectively and live responsibly in a rapidly changing world. Such a mission merits the support of the Presbyterian Church in America.

ACADEMIC AFFAIRS

Dr. C. Everett Koop was scheduled to be the commencement speaker, but at the last minute his wife had a heart attack. His address was delivered to the graduates and their families by Professor Ray Dameron.

Seniors graduated with majors in the following areas:

	<u>1989</u>	<u>1990</u>
Organizational Behavior *	49	31
Social Sciences	41	58
Humanities	12	20
Natural Sciences	10	13
Bible/Missions	6	7
Interdisciplinary Studies	8	11
Physical Education	1	0
TOTAL	<u>127</u>	<u>140</u>

\* These students participated in the adult degree completion program, Quest.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Three new faculty members joined the college this year. Dr. Richard Baxter was hired as a professor in the business department in the area of marketing. Dr. Baxter considerably strengthens this important department. A major goal of the five-year plan is to build the library, and Mr. Ethan Pettit became a member of the faculty as assistant librarian. Mr. Dennis Miller was hired as director of the degree completion program, Quest. New faculty members are examined by the administration and the academic affairs committee of the board of trustees.

A major review of the core curriculum is under way. The faculty is considering ways to help students better understand the inter-relatedness of all academic disciplines. Also being considered are experiential and cross-cultural requirements. The core curriculum comprises almost half of the total hours required for graduation, and no decrease in total hours in the core is anticipated.

The Southern Association of Colleges and Schools requires that all colleges assess their effectiveness in achieving the stated mission. This new requirement has resulted in appointing a full-time director of planning and assessment to gather departmental goals from the faculty and administration. An assessment process will be in place by the fall of 1991.

A minor in youth ministry has been added. The college receives many requests for youth workers. The purpose of this program is to enable students to work effectively for a few years as youth workers. Those who decide to pursue this as a career would be able to enter seminary; those who conclude that they are not called to this vocation could then pursue a career in their major field of study.

The degree completion program experienced considerable growth under the capable direction of Mr. Dennis Miller. Better marketing of the program, which exists only in Chattanooga and the surrounding area, and the recession combined to bring record enrollment. There was a major revision of the Quest curriculum. Greater emphasis was placed on having full-time Covenant faculty members teach in the program with less dependence on adjunct professors.

At the time of this report, the college is planning to introduce its first graduate level program, a master's degree in education. The program will be in a non-traditional format with three weeks of intensive classroom time during the summer. Each participant will be tutored by a faculty member throughout the school year so that the knowledge learned can be applied immediately by the elementary or secondary teacher.

### FINANCE

The executive committee serves as the finance committee.

The college balanced its 1989-90 \$7,327,829 budget, but to do so the college gave only a two percent pay increase, and it was necessary to use \$4,000 of discretionary reserves. Cost control was effective with costs coming in below budget. Though tuition income was at budget, total revenue fell below budget. Work study

## APPENDICES

reimbursement was below budget. Conference revenue was below budget. Summer conferences have become very competitive with more colleges getting into this field. Very few denominational conferences are held at Covenant College.

The cash position of the college is strong. Even with the construction of a \$2.5 million residence hall, short-term borrowing has been well within the college's line of credit. Within one year, the capital funds of the college should be balanced by pledges in the capital campaign.

For the year ending June 30, 1990, total giving to the college exceeded \$3,000,000 for the first time. Giving from churches continues to grow, but at a much slower rate. One hundred fifty-nine churches are currently participating in the Church Partnership Program by giving at the level of the ASKINGS, which was \$7.15 per member in 1990.

In preparation for the upcoming year, the executive committee and the full board spent an unusually large amount of time reviewing the budgeting process. For the 1991-1992 budget, the board decided to emphasize faculty pay and student financial aid. A major goal of the board is to increase faculty pay. (See the enclosed chart comparing faculty pay with national averages.) A six percent raise is anticipated for the year beginning July 1, 1991. To accomplish this goal and have sufficient student financial aid, tuition will be increased by seven percent. No contingency is planned for the 1991-92 budget, so the administration must compensate during the year for unexpected changes in revenue or expense.

A major capital campaign has been under way for two years and will be publicly announced this year with an expected goal in excess of \$16,000,000. Key features of the capital campaign are enrollment growth to 763 students by 1994, the addition of another residence hall for 75 students, the addition of a \$4,300,000 classroom/science building, renovation of historic Carter Hall, and a permanent endowment to enhance faculty pay and student financial aid. Over \$13,000,000 has already been pledged toward this goal. All of these pledges are from individuals, corporations, and foundations associated with members of the PCA, and are over and above the ASKINGS of churches.

Covenant received a favorable report from the auditor.

There are currently no lawsuits against the college.

### PERSONNEL COMPENSATION

There are two different groups of employees of the college: the faculty and the staff. The college seeks to compensate individuals adequately to insure that the mission of the college is not hampered by high turnover or improperly trained individuals. If faculty members are to serve as mentors to the students, they must be full-time faculty members who can devote all their time to their valued profession.

As has been mentioned, a major goal of the board is to increase faculty pay, and a chart is attached showing why this is important.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Staff members are normally hired out of the Chattanooga, Tennessee/North Georgia area. Staff pay rates are reasonably competitive for this area. Pay for middle and senior level administrators of the college is compared to national averages for similar positions at other colleges. Pay raises in this group are based primarily on merit.

The college is fortunate to have a dedicated group of faculty and staff. Turnover, particularly among the faculty and administration, is at an acceptable level, though a number of faculty members with many years experience are within ten years of normal retirement age.

### STUDENT DEVELOPMENT

In an effort to enable each student admitted to Covenant to succeed -- that is, to persist to graduation -- the college instituted a retention management system. This system is designed to identify particular students who may need assistance and to see that they receive that assistance. Though academic performance is occasionally a problem, the most frequent problems are personal in nature and often are manifested in lack of purpose or direction. It is a major goal of the college to assist such students.

An important tool in assisting students is the Career Planning and Placement Center (CPPC). The college continues to urge students to take personal assessment instruments and receive counsel concerning suitable careers and majors leading toward those careers.

The college continues to encourage each student to participate in a small accountability group of peers.

By the time the present students reach age fifty, more than half of all Americans are expected to be people of color. There will be virtually no growth in the number of white eighteen-year olds in the United States during the next decade. With this in mind, a director of multicultural affairs was hired to help the college attract and retain more minorities, especially African-Americans, and to help all students have cross-cultural experiences. Trips to Haiti, Africa, Europe, and India have either been held or are in the planning stage. Many students are participating in off-campus programs with nursing homes, the inner city, prison ministry, and evangelism. A brochure describing this program is attached.

A major effort was made to bring a greater variety of programs and speakers to the chapel hour. This effort has been well received. The college has had a number of outstanding speakers on subjects ranging from the environment to black awareness, the war, and sexual relationships. In addition, a number of chapel programs use a small group format and are not held in the chapel. Freshmen chapels were implemented in the fall of 1990 to assist all our freshmen in their personal and academic adjustment as part of a semester-long plan of orientation to the college. Senior graduation chapels were implemented in the spring of 1991 to assist seniors in their transition away from college.



## APPENDICES

The college has strongly encouraged all students to become involved in intramurals. Our goal for 1990-1991 was 85 percent participation of all college students in our intramural program.

There is a strong trend of graduating students entering graduate schools.

### MARKETING

The marketing committee, formerly called the admissions committee, changed its name to emphasize the importance of making the college known inside and outside the denomination. Research done by the college shows two problems: misinformation and no information, with the latter being the greater problem. Most people know very little about the college.

To help people understand the college and the mission, a series of six quality bulletin inserts was prepared. There were five alumni testimonials and a message by the president designed to help readers understand the difference between a Bible college and a liberal arts college and the practical outworking of a biblical world-and-life view. Students from churches which agreed to use the bulletins were given an additional \$500 scholarship. Thirty-eight thousand bulletins were sent out to ninety-seven participating churches.

This was the first year that the higher admissions standards were in effect. The result was that while national SAT averages declined, Covenant's averages increased to 1039. These averages are among the highest in the Christian College Coalition. In spite of the higher standards, Covenant maintained its total enrollment in the traditional program. Comparative figures are shown below:

	<u>Fall of 1989</u>	<u>Fall of 1990</u>
Total full-time students	474	481
Total part-time students	32	29
Total head count	506	510
(Total full-time equivalent)	(486)	(489)
Total Quest students	74	103
Grand total head count	580	613

The budgeted enrollment goal for the fall of 1991 is 526 students (504 FTE).

### FACILITIES

As has already been mentioned, a new \$2.5 million residence hall was completed and is now occupied by approximately fifty students. It is a show place residence hall that will also enhance the college's reputation as a conference center.

The administration and faculty are currently designing a \$4.3 million classroom/science building. The college's laboratories and equipment are in drastic need of modernization.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

A major renovation of historic Carter Hall is taking place. All desks and dressers older than five years are being replaced. The entire building is being re-wired. Rooms are being carpeted and painted. Where necessary, plumbing is being replaced. The entire building is being wired so that students can have phones in the rooms.

A campus master plan for a student body of one thousand students was presented for approval to the board of trustees. The college used the services of outside counsel to augment the internal effort. This was a major undertaking that will influence the shape of the campus for decades to come.

### TRUSTEE NOMINATIONS

The college established specific criteria for board members and submitted these criteria to the denominational nominating committee. A major goal is to find qualified ruling elders who have a good understanding of the importance of a biblical world-and-life view and who can help formulate plans and policies for an institution operating in the highly competitive and complex world of higher education. After a nationwide search for candidates, the college's nominating committee suggested the names of seven individuals, six of whom were nominated by the denominational nominating committee. Seven well-qualified candidates were nominated by the PCA Nominating Committee and were subsequently elected without opposition by the General Assembly.

### RECOMMENDATIONS TO THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

1. That the General Assembly approve the 1991-92 operating budget.
2. That the General Assembly approve October 20 as Covenant College Sunday and encourage local churches to allow students on fall break an opportunity to speak on behalf of the college.
3. That the matter of government aid to a church-related institution not be studied. Neither the denomination nor the board seems to feel that the issue warrants the time.
4. That the college seek to improve cultural diversity in our enrollment. We request assistance from the church in recommending that all students consider the advantages of receiving a Covenant College education, with special encouragement to those of different ethnic backgrounds.
5. That churches be urged to participate at the level of the ASKINGS and support the mission of the college by enclosing bulletin inserts provided by the college to inform the membership of the advantages of Covenant College.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ Joel Belz, Chairman  
Board of Trustees

## APPENDICES

### COVENANT COLLEGE

JUNE 30, 1990

Development Office  
Monthly Giving Report

#### GIVING BY PURPOSE

	<u>1989-1990</u>		<u>1988-1989</u>	
	<u>Month</u>	<u>YTD</u>	<u>Month</u>	<u>YTD</u>
Annual Fund				
Unrestricted	273,671	1,374,290	278,804	1,236,795
Restricted	175,834	324,575	229,928	469,702
TOTAL	449,505	1,698,865	508,732	1,706,497
Endowment	---	25,132	5,000	486,718
Capital	259,054	1,365,221	1,125	474,556
Total Giving	708,558	3,089,218	514,857	2,667,771

#### GIVING HISTORY BY PURPOSE

	<u>Annual Unrestricted</u>	<u>Total Giving</u>
1989-1990	1,374,290	3,089,218
1988-1989	1,236,795	2,667,771
1987-1988	1,025,786	2,179,706
1986-1987	975,557	2,506,585
1985-1986	930,000	2,010,068
1984-1985	865,889	2,276,316

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

COMPOSITE CHURCH GIVING

<u>YTD</u>	<u>Month</u>		<u>TOTAL</u>	<u>YTD</u>	<u>88-89</u>
	<u>Church Budget</u>	<u>Indiv-church</u>			
PCA	64,070	6,020	70,090	511,321	475,472
Other	250	--	250	10,091	9,516
TOTAL	64,320	6,020	70,340	521,412	484,988

---

RANGE OF GIFTS  
ALL PURPOSES

	<u>1- 99</u>	<u>100- 499</u>	<u>500- 999</u>	<u>1000- 2499</u>	<u>2500- 4999</u>	<u>5000 Over</u>	<u>Total</u>
Month	354	191	24	25	4	14	612
Total YTD	2,897	1,500	221	152	44	68	9,150
Prev. YTD	3,108	1,429	213	115	23	61	4,949

## APPENDICES

### APPENDIX F

#### REPORT OF COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY TO THE 19TH GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

June, 1991

Last year we reported to the General Assembly that we had had a growth in enrollment of 55 percent. The enrollment for this academic year was another increase of 37 percent. Not only has our denomination been the fastest-growing denomination in America, but our seminary has also been the fastest-growing accredited seminary in America. That this growth has been solid growth can be seen in the fact that the M.Div. degree has grown 51 percent over this same two-year period.

Last year we also reported that we had completed 24 on-campus apartments for married students and hoped to begin the second and final stage of 24 apartments in the future. We are pleased to announce that the second phase is complete and students began occupying these new apartments the first of June.

The Francis Schaeffer Institute continues to develop and grow and gives Covenant a very unique theological emphasis. We begin with a solid foundation of Reformed theology. This is taught by Robert Peterson who is always challenging his students to live and minister from the position of their doctrine. We then teach ethics and biblical interpretation. David Jones is very special in this area of theological application. He has had a part in authoring the last three ethics papers of the General Assembly. We conclude our teaching of theology with our emphasis on "Theology and Contemporary Culture." Jerram Barrs teaches these courses and is uniquely qualified, growing up spiritually in the L'Abri movement. He was a lead teacher in the English L'Abri for 16 years.

You will note that we progress in our doctrinal instruction from foundations to application to outreach. The purpose of theological education at Covenant is to equip servants of God to penetrate the world with the only message of hope that exists -- the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Respectfully submitted,

/s/ Paul Kooistra

**APPENDIX G**

**REPORT OF THE BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE  
INSURANCE, ANNUITY AND RELIEF FUNDS  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA**

**PROGRAM SUMMARY**

Participation in our program was as shown below:

<u>Program</u>	<u>12-31-87</u>	<u>12-31-88</u>	<u>12/31/89</u>	<u>12-31-90</u>
Health Insurance	2046	2057	2013	1319
Supplemental Life Insurance	832	829	838	580
Relief*	68	69	65	52
Money Purchase Pension Plan	449	469	439	**
Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan	994	1154	1233	***
Employer Contribution				1296
Salary Reduction Contribution				303
Death and Disability Plan	910	956	974	****
Lay Disability Plan	65	59	80	****
Term Life Insurance				978
Long-Term Disability Plan				1061
Total Active Retirement Participants	1205	1252	1366	1383
Frozen Retirement Accounts	288	336	335	335
Retirees/Surviving Spouses				
Receiving Retirement				
Plan Benefits	124	112	112	113
Disabled Participants				
Receiving Benefits	4	7	6	3

\* Family units receiving direct financial assistance.

\*\* Money Purchase Pension Plan contributions frozen 12/31/89. All new contributions are applied to Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan accounts.

\*\*\* In previous years participation in this plan was stated in terms of total participants and was not broken down by type of account.

\*\*\*\* Death and Disability Plan separated into Long-Term Disability Plan and Term Life Insurance Plan effective July 1, 1990.

**RETIREMENTS, DISABILITIES AND DEATHS**

During 1990 the following retirement participants began receiving benefits: Mrs. June Blankenship, Dr. Robert C. Duhs, Dr. Donald E. Hoke, TE Thomas G. Kay, Sr., TE R.

## APPENDICES

Dale McCord, TE James L. Moss, TE Eugene B. Potoka, TE Robert C. Schoof, TE James B. Sherwood, TE Loren V. Watson, and Mrs. Sarah P. Wright.

During 1990 the following plan participants died: TE Gary Aitken, TE Robert Brown, Mrs. Emma Butler, TE Charles Cox, RE Kenneth Kullmar, Mrs. Hillary Morris, TE Robert Rayburn, TE Jack Ross, and Mr. Theodore Still. Total life insurance benefits paid to survivors amounted to: \$262,100.

### COMMENTARY

The seizing of Kuwait by Iraq on August 2, 1990 brought trauma to already nervous financial markets in the United States and around the world. During the first half of the year the U.S. economy seemed headed towards certain recession. Inflation fears further complicated the situation and added to the volatility in the stock and bond markets.

The sudden increase in the price of oil plus the prospect of a shooting war in the Middle East and problems in the banking system, as well as higher taxes, attributed to the battering received by the stock market in the second half of the year. The damage was especially visible in indexes representing the broad market, such as Value Line (-21.8%), the NASDAQ (-17.8%) and the equal-weighted S&P 500 (-10.8%).

In this environment, for 1990, the PCA Equity Fund returned -12.2%. The Balanced Fund realized an increase of 2.2% and the Income Fund, 8.7%. In light of the adverse climate for investing, we were fortunate that these figures were not worse.

In an effort to further diversify management of the Equity Fund during 1990, the Board purchased shares in the Templeton Foreign Fund and hired Bowen, Haynes and Company, an Atlanta money management firm with an excellent long-term performance record.

Management of the Income Fund was also diversified during the year with the hiring of Consistent Asset Management, a Chads Ford, Pennsylvania firm.

Decisions concerning hiring these additional managers were made after exhaustive manager searches conducted by the Board's Investment Committee with assistance from Resource Advisory, our investment consultant.

### Retirement Plans

When the Voluntary Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan (TSA) was established in 1983 it was designed to supplement the Money Purchase Pension Plan (MPP) by allowing churches and employees to make additional retirement contributions to enhance benefits. Funds could not be withdrawn from the MPP prior to retirement, except for non-deductible employee contributions, unless a participant terminated service in the PCA (or a participating minister ceased to be a member of a PCA presbytery).

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The TSA was more flexible, allowing pre-retirement demand and hardship withdrawals. Unfortunately, many participants took such withdrawals, often in cases of financial emergency, and had no easy way to put those amounts back into their accounts. The plan was amended in 1986 to permit loans to provide a convenient way of replacing "borrowed" funds. Approximately 35% of those who borrowed from their accounts defaulted on their loans. Others continued to take demand withdrawals. In both cases the pre-retirement distributions resulted in additional taxable income and in an additional 10% federal income tax penalty for those under age 59 1/2. Because of the high default rate and the administrative burden placed on the IAR staff, the Board decided to suspend the loan program in March 1989.

The Eighth Amendment to the Money Purchase Pension Plan (Attachment 1) and the Tenth Amendment to the Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan (Attachment 2) allow the Trustees to value the plan assets on a more frequent basis. Previously the plan valuations were conducted annually. The Tenth Amendment to the TSA further provides that all retirement contributions for a disabled participant in the PCA Long-Term Disability Plan be made to the Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan. It also updates the loan provisions to conform to current law, in the event the Trustees decide to reopen the loan program in the future.

The MPP was closed to new contributions after December 31, 1989 because of the impossibility of assuring compliance with the legally binding adoption agreements and the potential tax liabilities employees of local churches may experience if non-compliance occurred and was discovered. This change means that all retirement contributions after 1989 go into the TSA. Because demand withdrawals are possible from employer contribution accounts, it is possible for participants to draw down their accounts to meet current needs and have little or no funds for retirement when the time comes.

A number of participants have withdrawn funds their employers contributed for retirement. Some have already reached retirement, having previously depleted most of their account balances and now have inadequate retirement incomes.

The Board is concerned that in the years ahead, with no new contributions going into the MPP, many more ministers and lay employees may use funds intended for retirement to ease current financial pressures and be left without adequate resources at retirement. In late 1990, the Board set restrictions on withdrawals. Effective January 1, 1991 and thereafter participants in the Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan can make demand withdrawals and in-service transfers only after quarterly plan valuations. Approved hardship withdrawals are now restricted to no more than 80% of one's account balance as of the previous valuation. All pre-retirement withdrawals (except in-service transfers and rollovers) entail both regular federal (and state in many cases) taxes and a 10% federal tax penalty in most cases for those under age 59 1/2.

Amendment Eleven to the TSA Plan Document (Attachment 3) establishes the restrictions mentioned above and brings this section of the plan into compliance with recent federal law.



## APPENDICES

### Defined Benefit Plans

On the advice of our pension actuary the Board decided to approve the purchase of group commercial annuities to fund future benefits for those retirees receiving benefits from the Annuity Fund for Ministers, the Employee's Annuity Fund and the Reformed Presbyterian Church, Evangelical Synod Pension Fund Plan. The rationale for this decision is that, as assets in these plans decrease (as they should since liabilities for the plans also decrease with the passage of time), the percentage of the assets spent for actuarial work, record-keeping and general administration increases. At some point it is no longer cost effective to continue administering the plans. Our actuary feels that now is the right time to purchase annuities for these retirees. The General Assembly will need to approve the plan amendments before the annuities can be purchased. (See Attachments 4, 5 and 6.)

### Health Plan

One of the continuing concerns of the Board of Trustees is the ever-rising costs for health care for our ministers and lay employees. The 1991 health premium renewal increase amounted to approximately 12%, well below the industry norm of over 20%. The Board continues to monitor the Blue Cross/Blue Shield of Michigan plan for ways to improve service and meet the challenge of medical inflation.

In our report to the General Assembly for 1989, the Board shared its concern with the Assembly about its ability to continue providing a health plan over time unless the General Assembly recognized that without mandatory enrollment by those eligible to participate, the plan may be forced to close down at some point in the future. After an initial decline in enrollment during 1990, the group stabilized and ended the year at slightly over 1,300 participants.

Another health care concern is for the ministers in our denomination who do not participate in Social Security and consequently may not be eligible for Medicare coverage during retirement. The cost of providing primary coverage to retirees not covered by Medicare will be expensive, if not unaffordable, for those retirees. The Board has wrestled with this problem for several years and has yet to arrive at any satisfactory solution. The General Assembly needs to be aware that it may not be possible for the health plan to survive while including a large number of retired non-Medicare participants. As increasing numbers of participants retire without Medicare, the problem will become acute, even though it is not a significant factor at the present time.

### Long-Term Disability Plan

Benefits to the PCA Long-Term Disability Plan were significantly enhanced during 1990, without additional premium increases to our churches and other employers. The elimination period (the time from the onset of a disability until benefits can be received) was shortened from six months (180 days) to three months (90 days). The definition of disability was changed to cover one's own occupation until age 65. Previously the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

definition changed after two years to any occupation the participant was able to perform by previous education or experience. Another change now allows terminated employees or ministers without call to convert from our group policy to an individual LTD policy without showing proof of insurability.

Benefits from the PCA LTD plan are annually adjusted based on "indexed pre-disability earning," which means that on the first and each subsequent anniversary of benefit payments the basic monthly earning in effect just prior to the disability beginning date will be adjusted based on the lesser of 10% or the current percentage increase in the Consumer Price Index.

The plan also contains a survivor benefit of three times the monthly benefit for those participants whose disability had continued for 180 or more consecutive days while receiving a benefit.

### Administrative Changes

Several administrative changes were made during 1990 to enhance our ability to meet the needs of our participants. Grotenhuis Underwriters in Grand Rapids, Michigan took over the administration of the health plan beginning January 1. They now handle all enrollments, terminations and premium collections for the health plan plus the basic and supplemental life plans. Blue Cross/Blue Shield of Michigan insured the health plan and began paying claims in January as well. The associated life coverages are insured by Metropolitan Life Insurance Company.

Other administrative changes include transfer of the administration of the Long-Term Disability and Term Life Insurance Plans to the W. P. Northey Company in Bloomingdale, Illinois July 1. Both plans continue to be insured as before by UNUM Insurance Company (LTD) and Metropolitan Life Insurance Company (TLI).

July 1 was also the date of another significant administrative change. We contracted with Cash Flex, an administrative services organization in Levittown, Pennsylvania, to receive and process retirement plan contributions. The funds are deposited daily as received in our account with Merrill Lynch in Philadelphia. Once per month these funds are transferred for deposit and record-keeping to the First National Bank of Atlanta, the Atlanta operations bank of First Wachovia, our custodial bank. Funds are then invested by our portfolio managers. First Wachovia Employee Benefit Services records all contributions to individual participant accounts. Beginning December 31, 1990, First Wachovia also conducts the valuation of the trust funds and sends participant statements. Valuations have moved from semi-annual to quarterly effective in 1991. Enrollments for the Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan continue to be handled by our Atlanta office.

## APPENDICES

### Relief Fund

Through the Relief Fund the Board has been able to assist a number of needy retired and disabled ministers, surviving spouses and dependent children over the years. The primary source of funding for this activity has been the annual Christmas Gift. As the chart below indicates, the trend has been decreasing income through offerings since 1988. On the other hand, because of general inflation and medical inflation in particular, awards from the fund and associated costs have continued to increase. If the trend continues, it is quite possible that at some point in the not-too-distant future, the fund will run out of money and not have sufficient assets to continue assisting our needy church servants.

The Board wishes to call attention to this matter with the request that the churches of the General Assembly take seriously their responsibility to assist our needy church servants. Teaching elders have a vested interest in this fund, since some of you will one day need assistance. Pastors are encouraged to have their churches participate in the annual Christmas Gift offering or ask their sessions to budget regular contributions to the Relief Fund.

	Christmas Gift				
	<u>1986</u>	<u>1987</u>	<u>1988</u>	<u>1989</u>	<u>1990</u>
Contributions	\$171,263	\$164,727	\$261,386	\$230,617	\$202,330
Disbursements	\$231,848	\$218,125	\$267,138	\$307,425	\$306,208

The Board and Staff are committed to serving our ministers and lay workers with the best possible employee benefit programs. We encourage all our churches to participate on behalf of their pastors and lay employees. It is our pleasure to continue serving our Lord by serving you.

#### Recommendations:

1. That the Minutes of Board Meetings of August 17, 1990, November 2, 1990 and March 1, 1991 be approved.
2. That the audit report dated December 31, 1990 by Arthur Andersen & Company be received.
3. That the General Assembly approve the use of Arthur Andersen & Company to conduct the 1991 audit.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

4. That the 1992 budget be received with the understanding that this budget is a spending plan and that adjustments will be made during the year, if necessary, by the Trustees.
5. That the General Assembly approve the Eighth Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Money Purchase Pension Plan and the Tenth Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Voluntary Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan. (See Attachments 1 and 2.) Further, that the Resolution related thereto be adopted and include in the Minutes of the General Assembly.
6. That the General Assembly approve the Eleventh Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Voluntary Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan. (See Attachment 3.) Further, that the Resolution related thereto be adopted and include in the Minutes of the General Assembly.
7. That the General Assembly approve the amendments to the Annuity Fund for Ministers, the Employees' Annuity Fund and the Pension Fund Plan of the Reformed Presbyterian Church, Evangelical Synod allowing the Trustees to purchase group commercial annuities to fund future benefits for retirees and surviving spouses under these plans. (See Attachments 4, 5 and 6.) Further, that the Resolution related thereto be adopted and include in the Minutes of the General Assembly.
8. That the General Assembly urge its member churches to receive an annual offering or budget regular benevolent giving to support relief activities through the Ministerial Relief Fund.
9. That the General Assembly approve the revised wording in the Trustees' Bylaws, Article I, Statement of Purpose from:

Present Wording:

*The purpose of the Board of Trustees of the Insurance, Annuity and Relief Funds of the Presbyterian Church in America is to glorify God through serving His servants who minister in the Church. This service is carried out through providing for the health, welfare, and retirement needs of the denomination's ministers, lay church workers and their families.*

to:

## APPENDICES

### New Wording:

*The purpose of the Board of Trustees of the Insurance, Annuity and Relief Funds of the Presbyterian Church in America is to glorify God through serving His servants who minister in the Church. Insurance and Annuities acts as a service organization to support and assist PCA churches and related organizations by offering employee benefits. The Ministerial Relief Fund assists PCA retired and disabled ministers, lay workers, their surviving spouses and dependent children on a needs basis.*

Respectfully Submitted

J. Edmund Johnston  
Chairman

James L. Hughes  
Director

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

ATTACHMENT 1

EIGHTH AMENDMENT  
TO THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
MONEY PURCHASE PENSION PLAN

(See 19-65, III, 5, p. 138 where it was acted upon)

\* \* \* \* \*

TENTH AMENDMENT  
TO THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
TAX-SHELTERED ANNUITY PLAN

(See 19-65, III, 5, p. 140 where it was acted upon)

\* \* \* \* \*

ELEVENTH AMENDMENT TO  
THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA  
TAX-SHELTERED ANNUITY PLAN

(See 19-65, III, 6, p. 144 where it was acted upon)

\* \* \* \* \*

APPENDICES

AMENDMENT TO THE  
OFFICIAL PLAN OF THE  
ANNUITY FUND FOR MINISTERS OF  
THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

(See 19-65, III, 7, p. 148 where it was acted upon)

\* \* \* \* \*

AMENDMENT TO THE  
OFFICIAL PLAN OF THE  
EMPLOYEES' ANNUITY FUND OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

(See 19-65, III, 7, p. 149 where it was acted upon)

\* \* \* \* \*

AMENDMENT TO THE  
PENSION FUND PLAN OF THE  
REFORMED PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, EVANGELICAL SYNOD

(See 19-65, III, 7, p. 151 where it was acted upon)

\* \* \* \* \*

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**ATTACHMENT 2**

**EXCERPT FROM THE MINUTES  
OF THE  
GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA**

WHEREAS, the Board of Trustees of the Presbyterian Church in America Insurance, Annuity and Relief Funds has approved adoption of the following amendments, subject to approval by the General Assembly:

1. The Eight Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Money Purchase Pension Plan.
2. The Tenth Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Voluntary Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan.
3. The Eleventh Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Voluntary Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan.
4. The Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Annuity Fund for Ministers.
5. The Amendment to the Presbyterian Church in America Employees' Annuity Fund.
6. The Amendment to the Pension Fund Plan of the Reformed Presbyterian Church, Evangelical Synod.

WHEREAS, the General Assembly has determined that the amendments recommended by the Trustees should be approved.

RESOLVED, that adoption of the six amendments identified above is hereby ratified by the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America.

**STATED CLERK'S CERTIFICATION**

The undersigned Stated Clerk of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America hereby certifies that attached hereto is a true and correct Excerpt from the Minutes of a Meeting of the General Assembly, duly called, convened and held on the \_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_, 1991, and that such Resolution therein contained is still in full force and effect.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, I have hereto affixed my signature this \_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_, 1991.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Stated Clerk



## APPENDICES

### APPENDIX H

#### REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON INTERCHURCH RELATIONS TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

##### A. Membership

TE Robert Vasholz	Missouri	1993
RE Jack Merry	Northeast	1993
TE K. Eric Perrin	Heritage	1992
RE Michael Frey	Philadelphia	1992
TE Henry L. Smith	SE Alabama	1991
RE George H. Gulley, Jr.	Grace	1991
TE Paul Gilchrist	Stated Clerk	ex officio
TE Tim Fortner	Covenant	alternate
RE Wilson Barbee	C. Carolina	alternate

##### B. Meetings

November 7-8, 1990 (Atlanta)  
January 17, 1991 (telephone conference call)  
April 4, 1991 (telephone conference call)

##### C. ISSUES DISCUSSED AND ACTIONS TAKEN

1. Met on November 6-7, 1990. in Atlanta, with the Committee on Ecumenicity and Interchurch Relations of the Orthodox Presbyterian Church, in compliance with the directions given us by the 18th General Assembly.

"that the Interchurch Relations Committee continue to be available to the OPC Committee on Ecumenicity and Interchurch Relations for discussion of matters relating to the joining and receiving process."

Our committee minutes reflect our perception that these meetings were "frank and fruitful". There does seem to be present in both committees a desire to make progress toward the goal of union through the joining and receiving process.

Regular correspondence has been exchanged with the OPC Committee. Your committee took the further step of requesting the privilege of sending a representative to the March 1991 meeting of the OPC committee. RE

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Michael Frey of Philadelphia reports that he received a most cordial reception and that there was a strong interest in the work and workings of the PCA.

2. Appointed the following delegates to the 1990 annual meeting of the North American Presbyterian and Reformed Council: RE Jack Merry, RE George Gulley, Jr., TE Eric Perrin, TE Henry Lewis Smith, with TE Paul Gilchrist as alternate.

Your PCA delegation joined five other delegations (the CRC abstaining) in voting to send this communication to the Christian Reformed Church:

In harmony with the stated "purpose and function" of the NAPARC to "exercise mutual concern in the perpetuation, retention, and propagation of the Reformed Faith (Constitution III:3), the North American Presbyterian and Reformed Council calls upon The Christian Reformed Church to reverse the action of the 1990 Synod leading to the opening of the offices of minister and ruling elder to women, as contrary to the Scripture and the Reformed standards which insist that "everything (will) be carried on in the church . . . according to the rule prescribed by Saint Paul in his Epistle to Timothy" (Belgic Confession of Faith Article XXX), I Timothy 2 and 3, in giving authoritative instruction regarding proper conduct "in the household of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and support of the truth" (3:15), the Apostle explicitly disallows to a woman the exercise of teaching or ruling authority over men in the church (2:12), and grounds this command in the divine creation order.

We send this resolution to our brethren in the Christian Reformed Church with profound respect and deep appreciation for the Christian Reformed Church, in an humble spirit and with a heavy heart.

3. Appointed fraternal delegates to the 1991 General Assemblies/Synods of churches with whom we are in ecclesiastical fellowship:

Associate Reformed Presbyterian - June 10-13, Flat Rock, NC  
- TE D. Clair Davis

Christian Reformed Church - June 11-20 - Dordt College  
- TE Timothy Diehl

Korean American Presbyterian - June 18-21, Toronto  
- TE Bruce C. Davis

Orthodox Presbyterian Church - May 30-June 6, Beaver Falls, PA  
- TE Stuart Perrin

Reformed Presbyterian Church of North America  
- June 1-7, Beaver Falls, PA - TE Stuart Perrin

4. Appointed TE Robert Berkey to convey our greetings at General Assembly marking the tenth anniversary of the founding of the Evangelical Presbyterian Church in Livonia, Michigan, June 24-26, 1991.

## APPENDICES

5. Elected TE William S. Barker to serve on the board of the National Association of Evangelicals, 1991-92.
6. Elected denominational representatives to serve on NAE Commissions as follows:

### COMMISSION REPRESENTATIVES

**Evangelical Churchmen** - RE Irv Wicker (Prattville)

**Evangelism and Home Missions** - TE J. Allen Thompson (Atlanta)

**Evangelical Social Action** - TE Mark Dalbey (Cincinnati)

**Higher Education** - TE David Jones (St. Louis)

**Hispanic** - TE Manuel Salabarría (Miami)

**Christian Education** - TE Charles Dunahoo (Atlanta)

**Stewardship** - TE Richard Aeschlimann (Stone Mountain)

**Women's Fellowship** - Mrs. Gordon (Jean) Shaw (Ballwin)

**World Relief** - TE David Calhoun (St. Louis)

7. Appointed the following voting delegates to the 49th annual NAE Convention in St. Louis, Missouri, March 5-7, 1991:

TE Robert S. Allyn

TE W. S. Barker

RE Wilson Barbee

TE Wilson Benton

TE Tim Fortner

TE Paul Gilchrist

TE Paul Kooistra

TE Henry Lewis Smith

TE George Stulac

TE Robert Vasholz

8. Approved a proposal to the World Evangelical Fellowship which the PCA is a part of through our membership in NAE, and of which our Committee on Mission to the World is an associate member.
9. Studied the responsibility given by the 18th GA of "formulating principles and policies for the category of corresponding churches for approval of the 19th GA".

### **RECOMMENDATIONS:**

1. That the 19th General Assembly reaffirm its desire that this committee continue to be available to the OPC Ecumenicity committee for discussion of matters relating to the joining and receiving process; that we rejoice in the reported progress of these discussions, and support them with our prayers.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

2. That the paper entitled "Report on Defining the Nature of Relations With Other Churches, including recommendations 1, 2, and 3, of that paper, be adopted. See Appendix A.
3. That the paper entitled "Proposal to the World Evangelical Fellowship Regarding a World Wide Presbyterian and Reformed Fellowship" be adopted. See Appendix B.
4. That a special welcome to the 19th General Assembly be given to the representatives of the Presbyterian Church in Japan.
5. That this communication be sent to the Christian Reformed Church:

The Presbyterian Church in America praises God for the vigorous and vital witness to our Lord Jesus Christ through the Reformed faith that the Christian Reformed Church has long maintained. We are grateful that many who have been nurtured and matured in your fellowship have come to us and been used to strengthen our church in faith and witness.

It is then, with respect, humility and gratitude toward you, and with deep concern for the retention and propagation of the Reformed faith that we entreat you to reverse the 1990 action opening the offices of minister and ruling elder to women.

We believe this to be contrary to the clear teaching of Scripture (I Timothy 2, 3) and the Belgic Confession (Article XXX).

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ Henry Lewis Smith  
Chairman

**APPENDICES**

**ATTACHMENT 1**

**APPENDIX A**

**REPORT ON DEFINING THE NATURE OF RELATIONS WITH OTHER  
CHURCHES**

(See 19-19, III, 2, p. 66 where it was acted upon)

\* \* \* \* \*

**APPENDIX B**

**PROPOSAL TO THE WORLD EVANGELICAL FELLOWSHIP REGARDING  
A  
WORLD WIDE PRESBYTERIAN AND REFORMED FELLOWSHIP**

From the Interchurch Relations Committee of the  
Presbyterian Church in America

(See 19-19, III, 3, p. 67 where it was acted upon)

\* \* \* \* \*

APPENDIX I

**REPORT ON THE INVESTOR'S FUND  
FOR BUILDING AND DEVELOPMENT  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA**

I. Introduction

- A. After hearing of the Investor's Fund for the first time a recent caller exclaimed, "you guys must be the best kept secret in the PCA--you can really do all that to help churches?". Yes, the Investor's Fund can do "all that" for churches new or established,- either developing their first building program or adding facilities to accommodate an expanding ministry. From its small beginning in 1986, Investor's Fund For Building and Development has grown to assist PCA congregations develop dedicated ministry facilities in the most God-honoring way.
- B. Investor's Fund For Building and Development is one of the General Assembly's great success stories. Measured by the return of the Assemblies investment (Investor's Fund For Building and Development generates all its income by performing services) or by the impact on ministry of local churches. Investor's Fund For Building and Development has been a "success" meaning used by God. The stories of changed lives associated with the work of Investor's Fund For Building and Development make worthwhile the labor associated with building and finance. The following true story helps to illustrate the point.

For some years a PCA congregation had struggled to expand its ministry as it met in a storefront facility. Like most temporary facilities, it lacked adequate Sunday School and nursery space. As often happens, the church became caught in the church planter's Catch-22--to grow requires a facility, to acquire a facility requires more money, to raise more money requires more people, which requires a facility, etc.

At this point entered the Investor's Fund. The church was able to raise sufficient funds for a down-payment on a property. With the help of the Investor's Fund For Building and Development Consulting Program, a strategic site was located and, when other financing was not available, Investor's Fund For Building and Development financed the purchase of property. At this point many churches settle down and have to wait out paying off the property, hoping to raise enough money and income to build an expensive facility. Once again the Investor's Fund For Building and Development stepped in and provided a way for the church to escape its Catch-22. Utilizing the prototype building

## APPENDICES

plans developed by Investor's Fund For Building and Development, an affordable building sufficient to meet the needs of the congregation, was developed and-with Investor's Fund For Building and Development financing construction was begun.

However, in the four months since construction began, attendance has increased by ten to fifteen percent. But most importantly, lives have been changed. With the beginning of the construction, people in nearby neighborhoods became aware of the church's existence. As a direct result, at least two people have come to saving faith in Christ.

- C. Of the various assistance programs offered by the IFBD, perhaps the one with the most far-reaching impact will be the Building Consultation System. Designed primarily for the church with no facility, the BCS brings together, in a single system, a series of specialized and advanced building programs that are being offered to more than 230 congregations of the PCA without dedicated facilities. Either in operation or under development, these programs provide unique ways for these congregations to obtain their desired facilities:
1. The Traditional Series is a series of basic floor plans developed by IFBD with the MNA Building Department and a professional architect and contractor. As a starter facility, it is bought by the churches as a complete package including design, financing and construction.
  2. The Church/Daycare/Lease Purchase utilizes the most advanced of financing techniques for churches - lease/purchase - and combines the ministry of growing churches with the outreach and income potential of the church-based (professionally managed) daycare center. IFBD and MNA Building Department are developing this program which will put congregations in dedicated facilities two to three years earlier than through traditional methods.
  3. Prototype Retirement Center Many established churches have been looking for ways to expand their ministries among senior adults. Working with MNA Mercy: Word/Deed Ministries, IFBD has developed a basic independent living center including design, financing and management that many churches can utilize without overwhelming their church's other ministries.
- D. Though focused on new churches and those without facilities, IFBD is not neglecting the established congregations which require assistance as they expand their facilities in order to house their growing ministries. Even the largest churches are finding it difficult to obtain financing for continued expansion from secular lenders who will take money from God's people but will not return it in the form of financing.

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- E. The "heart and soul" of the expanding IFBD still is bound in its basic philosophy, "God's Money for God's Kingdom". The IFBD is a vehicle, a mechanism for God's people to put some of the monies He has entrusted to them to work for Him. Through investments placed in IFBD, the Master is honored while PCA congregations and presbyteries which desire it receive help - help they find little of elsewhere. Slowly but surely, one person at a time, the IFBD is winning a hearing for its philosophy and seeing a positive response. But the process remains slow as IFBD must go church by church to present its work.
- F. At present, the average Christian has little option but to place money God has entrusted to him for savings and retirement into secular institutions. There God's money is mingled with other funds and used at the discretion of the often non-Christian financial managers. In the current environment, where the guiding principle often is the bottom line - what is profitable, legal and expedient - this means that God's work in churches often is ignored in favor of other things, including abortion clinics, pornographic magazines and scripturally unethical businesses. The secular world is growing fat on God's money while His Kingdom goes without.

### II. Activity in 1990

#### A. Administrative Activity

- 1. For the first five years the IFBD staff has assisted in the administration of various programs of the MNA Building Department. This has included the administration of the Five Million Fund program of interest-free loans and acting as development staff and consultants for that department. In the early days of the IFBD this was necessary and convenient, but with the growth of the IFBD and the expansion of available programs through the combined staff, it has become unwieldy and unmanageable. In addition, the growth in demands on the combined program is distracting to the focus of MNA church planting while it fits snugly into the work of IFBD. Therefore, the IFBD Trustees and the Committee on MNA are jointly recommending to the 18th General Assembly that the MNA Building Department and IFBD be combined under IFBD (See Recommendation E).

#### B. Investment Activity

- 1. The Investor's Fund is now registered or being registered in twelve states: Alabama, Georgia, Florida, Mississippi, Tennessee, Maryland, Virginia, West Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, Indiana and Pennsylvania (pending). Interest has been



## APPENDICES

shown in other states including Missouri and Texas and if sufficient funds can be raised in these states IFBD will pursue registration.

2. No new investment funds were forthcoming from the PCA retirement plan. The investment of 1.5 million dollars continues to grow at 9% (compounded semi-annually) for those in the "Income Fund".
3. As of December 31, 1990 the total assets of the Investor's Fund investments and gifts exceed \$4.7 million.

### C. Financing Activity

1. As of December 31, 1990 IFBD will have provided direct loans to the following congregations:

Church & Location	Amount	Int	Term	Purpose
Pinelands, Miami, FL	220,000	10.5%	4.5 yrs	land
Grace Covenant, Blacksburg, BA	41,930	10.75%	3 yrs	land
Christ, Jacksonville, FL	257,000	10.5%	4.5 yrs	land
Hope, Ballston Spa, NY	180,000	10.75	3 yrs	renovate
Emmanuel, Philadelphia, PA	210,000	10.5%	4.5 yrs	renovate
Christ, Arlington, VA	176,000	11.125%	4.5 yrs	purchase
Sycamore, Midlothian, VA	315,000	10.5%	4.5 yrs	build
Murphy-Blair, St. Louis, MO	42,000	11%	3 yrs	purchase
Frontier, Birmingham, AL	80,000	11.125%	3 yrs	purchase
Chinese Christian, Falls Church, VA	240,000	11%	4.5 yrs	purchase
North Coast, Enchinitas, CA	315,000	11.5%	3 yrs	expand
Lake Stevens, Lake Stevens, WA	61,800	11%	3 yrs	refinance
Coquina, Ormond Beach, FL	120,000	11%	4.5 yrs	land
Sycamore, Midlothian, VA	82,000	11%	2.5 yrs	build
Aliso Creek, Laguna Nigel, CA	215,000	11%	3 yrs	purchase
Hope, Marietta, GA.	210,000	11%	3 yrs	land
Covenant, Short Hills, NJ*	100,000	11%	3 yrs	renovate
Christ, Olathe, KS	90,000	11%	3 yrs	land
Shady Grove, Gaithersburg, MD	240,000	11%	3 yrs	land
Cornerstone, Tallahassee, FL	75,000	11%	3 yrs	land
West Boca, Boca Raton, FL	40,000	11%	1 yr	build
Calabasas, Calabasas, CA	250,000	11.25%	5 yrs	build
New City Fellowship, Chattanooga, TN	220,000	11%	5 yrs	purchase
Cornerstone, Tallahassee, FL	290,000	10%	5 yrs	build
New Life, Philadelphia, PA*	100,000	11%	5 yrs	purchase
Christ, Mobile, AL*	77,000	11%	5 yrs	build
Korean, St. Louis, MO*	100,000	10%	5 yrs	purchase
Promise, Philadelphia, PA	55,000	11%	5 yrs	purchase

#### \*Participation Loans

2. Additional loans of \$908,000 are anticipated by the beginning of the 18th General Assembly.

## MINUTES OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY

3. Besides IFBD's ability to make direct loans from its available funds, it has an increasing ability and opportunity to draw upon other sources to expand its resources. Through commercial lending and investment banks IFBD has made an additional 5 million in permanent financing available through its assisted financing program.

### D. Future Activity

In the next year, in the grace of God, IFBD seeks

1. To continue to help the growing number of PCA congregations which will require some type of financing assistance IFBD is seeking to :
  - a) Find new ways to interest PCA members and friends to take advantage of the investment opportunity offered by IFBD.
  - b) Continue to register IFBD in new states, providing more PCA people the chance to participate in the investment program.
  - c) Develop new innovative financing sources, resources and strategies.
2. To continue to expand the consulting services of the BCS through use of regional consultants. This is one of the most effective ministries we have and can have a significant impact on the PCA's Vision 2000.
3. To add to the number of building packages which churches can use. Based on last year's experience, additional packages in which design, financing and construction are presented as a unit are going to be in increasing demand.

### III. Recommendations

- A. That the General Assembly express its gratitude to God for continued growth of IFBD and its ministries to churches, as well as encourage churches, presbyteries, individuals and Committees of the Assembly to participate in IFBD programs.
- B. That the General Assembly give thanks to the Father for the work of the staff of IFBD, TE Cecil A. Brooks, Coordinator; TE John T. Ottinger, Associate Coordinator; Shirley S. Covington, Virginia Harris, John Underwood.

## APPENDICES

- C. That the General Assembly approve the audit of the year pending December 31, 1990 (IFBD has already moved to a calendar year).
- D. That the General Assembly approve the continued employment of the firm of Timothy Mersereau, C.P.A., as auditors for the year ending December 31, 1991.
- E. **WHEREAS**, the importance of an adequate dedicated building to facilitate church growth cannot be underestimated; and  
**WHEREAS**, due to the increasing expense and complexity of building programs, there is growing need for the demand upon the various denominational agencies involved in providing building assistance to wit the MNA Building Department and the Investor's Fund; and  
**WHEREAS**, these two agencies, having separate existence but some shared staff, have grown to a point that their structure is unwieldy and cumbersome; and  
**WHEREAS**, the primary focus of MNA is church extension and the primary focus of the Investor's Fund is church building and financing;  
**THEREFORE**, it is requested that the 19th General Assembly agree to the transferring of files and other assets, and the Five Million Fund, to the Investor's Fund for Building and Development for the PCA for administration and development.
- F. That the General Assembly adopt the budget for the year ending December 31, 1992.
- G. That the General Assembly direct the Board of Trustees of Insurance, Annuities and Relief to make every effort to keep a minimum of 5% of its pension fund assets in the Investor's Fund under its current investment plan and/or;
- That the General Assembly direct the Board of Trustees of Insurance, Annuities and Relief to allow participants to specify that all or a part of their retirement contributions be invested in IFBD or;
- That the General Assembly grant authority to the Board of Trustees of the Investor's Fund to develop a 401 (k), 403 (b) or other retirement plans that complement the IAR plans and which will enable staff and employees of PCA churches, presbyteries, agencies, committees and institutions to invest retirement funds in IFBD directly.
- H. That the General Assembly direct the Trustees of the Investor's Fund to research, develop and implement ways and means that will allow PCA people to invest, at their discretion, God's money in God's Kingdom.

APPENDIX J

THE REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON  
MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA  
TO THE 19TH GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF  
THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

I. INTRODUCTION

We at Mission to North America continue to be deeply moved by what God is doing throughout this continent. Conversions, new churches, expanded campus ministry, deep human need met in Christ's name, chaplains ministering effectively at home, in the Persian Gulf and around the world -- all are evidence of God's work.

When, however, we look at the deep spiritual need of our continent and its culture, the progress made by the PCA can seem minuscule. As North America moves toward the 21st Century, the overall impact of the Reformed faith -- indeed that of the entire evangelical church -- often appears negligible.

What will it take to see sweeping movements of church planting among the many cultures and sub-groups that make up our land? How can the tremendous truly pagan segment of our society experience radical penetration by the gospel? What must happen to see the secular college campuses awakened by the light of the gospel? How can the large number of our static or declining churches come alive with spiritual vigor and make community-changing impact?

North America will not be reached and changed for Christ without the intervention of God Himself. Biblical methods without God's power lead to lifeless routine or manipulation. Biblical church polity and organization without His hand of blessing result in organizations existing merely for their own survival. Sound preaching not energized by God's Spirit results in dead orthodoxy. God must be at work!

Incredible need, sinful instruments, limited resources -- all force us to acknowledge our deep dependency upon God to work in power.

And while God's work is sovereign, He has chosen to work in answer to earnest believing prayer. "Whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours" (Mk. 11:24). "You do not have because you do not ask God" (James 4:2). "Ask the Lord of the harvest to send out workers into his harvest field" (Matt. 9:38).

Convinced of the foundational nature of prayer to our work, Mission to North America has embarked on a plan to enlist at least 10,000 members of the PCA who will agree to

## APPENDICES

pray regularly for the accomplishment of Vision 2000. Key presbytery and congregational representatives are being asked to assist in this "Army of Intercessors" Prayer Project.

God is at work.

We desire to see all of North America under the rule of its King, the Lord Jesus Christ. To that end, *we call the Presbyterian Church in America to commit itself to earnest prayer that God's sovereign power will be unleashed as never before through presbyteries, churches, individuals and the many ministries of the PCA.*

## II. DEPARTMENTS.

### Church Planting

Facilitating the starting of new churches continues to be the principle emphasis of your Mission to North America Committee. We believe that the health of the PCA in the future will be determined by the health of the churches that are begun today. Consequently, not only must there be the prayers of God's people for church planting, but further, a great deal of effort must be concentrated upon establishing churches that are strong in every way.

1. The church is to be a center for worship. We endeavor to build into every new congregation a great love for worshipping the Lord in spirit and in truth.
2. The church is to be a center of learning and growth. Since actions flow out of beliefs, we seek to build into every new church a commitment to clear teaching of all of God's truth from a Reformed perspective.
3. The church is to be involved in evangelism and missions. Even a new congregation has a responsibility to be involved in four levels of outreach ministry: The unchurched and non-Christians of its own community, those who can be reached within and through its presbytery, those in more distant parts of our nation who can be reached by church planting, and those beyond the borders of our nation who are reached by the foreign mission effort of the church.
4. The church is to provide strong and deep fellowship that will provide mutual encouragement and accountability to each member. New congregations are encouraged to create an infrastructure and climate of biblical body life to that end.
5. The church is to be concerned for the needs of the local congregation, of the community and of the world, showing mercy and providing aid to those in need, in the name of Christ. Even mission churches cannot put off this biblical mandate until they feel more "able" but must early on reach out in compassion.
6. The church is to be filled with the Spirit of God so that every aspect of the ministry has a spiritual dynamic in which it is obvious that the living God is present.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

MNA seeks to build into new congregations a corporate dependence upon and relationship with the living God.

7. The church is to be the church of Jesus Christ. He should be exalted in every new congregation. People are to be brought under the Lordship of Christ so that it is recognized that the church is His and not theirs.

8. The church is to be based upon the inerrant word of God so that all of its activities, ministry, structure and life flow out of the Scripture and drive the members of the church back to the Scripture. New churches begun by MNA hold the Bible as their rule of faith and life.

9. The church is to be a prime arena in which a great deal of God's covenantal promises are carried out. From the beginning, every new church seeks to provide a forum for the dynamic work of the covenant-keeping God by providing a vital ministry to covenant children and the covenant family.

10. The church is to have local and regional expression. Every new church acknowledges its participation in the Presbyterian Church in America and seeks to build Presbyterian government into the church from the beginning. Godly leaders are established not only to make decisions but also to lead in ministry and to shepherd the flock. This may take the form of a presbytery commission or a local ministry team. In the embryonic days, but within a short period of time, extensive training is provided that leads to the establishment of the first session of the church.

While this is not an exhaustive description of a biblical church, it does indicate the commitment of your Committee on Mission to North America to establish solid Reformed and Presbyterian congregations in North America.

We rejoice in the establishment of the "Midwest Project" which was begun as a joint effort of Covenant Theological Seminary and Mission to North America. The goals of this project are to establish 119 churches in the Midwest by the year 2000 AD.

In order to provide increased and more effective training for church planting, MNA has occasionally worked with the Church Planting Center (an independent agency in Orlando, Florida) in a manner similar to numerous other occasions on which we have received special services or expertise from others. Already several dozen church planters have received this training.

We are endeavoring to communicate the message that church planting in North America requires the prayerful financial commitment to specific church planters just as church planting in a foreign land requires the commitment and designated giving of all our churches to specific church planters overseas. We request that every congregation of the PCA endeavor to provide the financial support in their benevolence budget for specific church planters as they are able.

Three Assessment Centers were held in 1990 -- Jackson, Mississippi; Atlanta, Georgia; St. Louis, Missouri -- with forty-one church planting couples receiving this assessment.

## APPENDICES

The ultimate decision on church planting candidates funded by GA MNA lies with the GA MNA Committee and the assessment center continues to be one of the tools used in selecting men for this specialized work.

Increasingly, the conviction of the Committee on Mission to North America is that the Presbyterian Church in America must return to a concept clearly understood by its founders -- the work of the church may be, indeed, should be done at every level of the church. For too long the practical expectation has often been that General Assembly MNA is responsible for church planting. Efforts will be made increasingly to decentralize church planting efforts from the national office to presbyteries and local churches. The need of North America is too vast, the resources of your Assembly Committee too limited, the potential of presbyteries and congregations too great, and the mandate of the Scripture too clear. Your MNA Committee and staff continue to stand ready to assist in this endeavor.

The annual church planters training conference, held in July 1990 in Tampa, Florida, had one-hundred sixty in attendance. The training was similar to previous years, providing three "tracks" of learning experiences. The training covered (1) the church planter's arrival on the field until the first worship service, (2) the first service until organizing as a particular church, and (3) church development and growth for the established congregation.

In 1990 church planting was done at every level of the PCA. Your MNA Committee has helped recruit, assess and place church planters for congregations and presbyteries as well as our own church planting effort. Further, financial support has often been in partnership with presbyteries and congregations. The commitment and faithful service of all these organizing pastors and their families is commendable. The list of church planters specifically supported by your MNA Committee in 1990 will be found as Attachment 1.

Effective February 28, 1991, Dr. Paul W. Taylor III concluded his ministry with Mission to North America. Paul served as a church planter under the RPCES, on the staff of National Presbyterian Missions (RPCES), and in 1982 joined MNA (then MUS) as Minister-at-Large for the Midwest. In 1984 Paul moved into the Atlanta office as Coordinator of Church Planting. Paul and his wife Sarah have accepted an invitation from Mission to the World to lead a church planting team in Manila, Philippines, with further special emphasis on providing church planting training for men from the Third World. The MNA Committee expresses its appreciation to Paul for his years of hard work and productive service to MNA and the PCA.

God is at work in church planting. *But the work of the Church Planting Department must have the earnest believing prayer of the Presbyterian Church in America.*

### Evangelism

The Department of Evangelism concerns itself primarily with six responsibilities:

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

1. To encourage and train individuals and congregations in the area of evangelism.
2. To promote evangelism throughout the PCA by every biblical means possible.
3. To promote prayer and church renewal by every biblical means possible.
4. To counsel stagnant churches to help them find ways to grow spiritually and numerically.
5. To encourage the pastors of the PCA to find more effective ways to lead their congregations in growth.
6. To conduct missions conferences in support of home and foreign missions.

To accomplish this, the Coordinator of Evangelism spends a great deal of time either on the telephone or traveling in order to visit with pastors, listen to their needs and share ideas that have been gathered from other PCA pastors and other available sources.

Because he is a coordinator, he works to bring to bear in local situations ministries that are available and Reformed in doctrine and content. These would include literature, videos, films, and individuals.

Several very significant sporting events are on the calendar for the decade of the nineties that provide outreach opportunities for PCA churches in the Southeast. Atlanta will host a Super Bowl, the 1996 Olympics and likely a World Cup Soccer Championship. Plans are underway for an interdenominational joint evangelistic effort to reach as many people as possible at those events. Plans also include using some of the outstanding Christian athletes who will be here to reach the Atlanta community with the gospel.

The 1990 statistical reports show that for that year, the PCA added 11,243 new members to its roll. 7379 were removed or died during the year. There were 4,489 infants baptized, 1,834 adults baptized, 4,728 who joined by profession of faith and 12,205 who joined by transfer of letter or by reaffirmation.

God is at work. There have been conversions across our land. We must be faithful evangelists but God must awaken churches, convert the hearts of pagans, and draw men and women to himself. *The work of the Evangelism Department must have the earnest believing prayer of the Presbyterian Church in America.*

### **MICAH (Missions Challenge At Home)**

As the department that has responsibility for facilitating multi-cultural church planting in North America, MICAH has wrestled with several significant issues this year. These have not been totally new matters but rather a continued clarification of focus.

1. Focus on Priorities. In the past, Mission to North America has tended to want to respond to every multi-cultural opportunity and need. Our limited resources, staff and expertise have forced us to think more realistically about what any one denomination can do effectively. Therefore, MNA has clarified its priorities in multi-



## APPENDICES

cultural church planting. The following three tiers represent the present priority with which MICAHA will pursue its work:

- 1.1. Korean/Hispanic (including Brazilian)
- 1.2. African-American
- 1.3. French Canadian/Japanese/Sea Islanders

It is not as though there are no other people groups who need reaching with the gospel. Rather, limited resources of all kinds demand that we limit the span of what we do to that which we can in some sense do well.

2. Focus on Church Planting. There are many worthy multi-cultural ministries of all types and kinds throughout North America. Understandably, many would like affiliation with MNA. It has been helpful in clarifying our objectives to note that the work of MICAHA is much more narrowly focused on multi-cultural church planting.

3. Focus on "Movement Leaders." To see Vision 2000 accomplished among the various people groups of North America will take a strategic approach. What we will not do is merely to start a Korean church here or an Hispanic church there, or a African-American church there. The need in North America is too great. We seek under God's providence movements of church planting among the various people groups. Thus, what is needed is not multi-cultural church planters but "movement leaders."

These are men who have ability and drive, but not merely to plant a church in their own culture. Rather, we need men who can recruit others in their own culture, train and mentor them as the recruits themselves become the church planters. The "movement leader" sees himself not as a church planter but as a leader, a motivator, a trainer of church planters.

Implications flow clearly from this. Understandably, this focus affects the sort of men who will be recruited by MNA and the quality of training that will be necessary for them. Further, PCA churches will need to fund these men as long-term missionaries, who will not become a pastor of any one congregation. We are confident that this approach will pay wonderful dividends as we see people groups won for Christ.

4. Focus on Integration. The unchurched obviously form the target of church planting. But the great majority of them live in the cities of our land. To reach North America, we must so reach the cities that eventually, in God's providence, there are vibrant, effective presbyteries there.

Those cities are a montage of cultures--Hispanic, white, African-American, Asian, etc. Increasingly, there must be strategic coordination and synergism among all the departments of MNA as a city is targeted. While every church planting situation varies, there must especially be integration between Church Planting (Anglo) and MICAHA (Multi-cultural Church Planting). Demographics, recruitment, training, funding, placement, mentoring of church planters -- all must be done in harmony rather than on completely separate "tracks".

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The New York City Project illustrates the need for and benefits of a systematic approach to a city as opposed to the Church Planting Department and MICAH each separately "doing their thing."

The work of church planting continues among Koreans; among Hispanics in Houston, the Rio Grande Valley of Texas, New York City, Puerto Rico; among the French-speaking in Quebec; among Japanese in Atlanta; and among African-Americans in Birmingham. Scripture translation continues among Sea Islanders in coastal South Carolina. A complete list of MICAH missionaries is included as Attachment 2.

Your MNA Committee is delighted that Dr. J. Allen Thompson has become MICAH Coordinator. Coming to MNA from over twenty years of leadership of WorldTeam, Dr. Thompson brings breadth of cross-cultural training, and church planting experience to his new role.

As we consider the need and potential among the varied people groups throughout North America, we confess our deep dependence upon God. It is clear that He must work in order for movements of church planting to emerge. *MICAH must have the earnest believing prayer of the Presbyterian Church in America.*

### Buildings

This year saw a revolution in the way the PCA assists congregations obtain facilities. Working closely with the building finance ministry of the PCA the MNA Building Department has developed a full service building development program that offers everything a church needs to obtain the needed facility. A "package approach" was designed that includes prototype building designs and financing and construction overseen by knowledgeable consultants. A church can in "one stop" find everything it needs to obtain the maximum facility in keeping with its own vision and resources.

In addition, the Building Department has developed, in partnership with the Mercy Department, prototype facilities for church-based daycare/worship facilities and retirement living facilities. Through a consulting program a church for a low initial investment can determine the need and feasibility of integrating these important ministries into its ongoing programs.

For the first time in recent memory the number of churches moving into facilities declined relative to the number of new churches, due in part to the new programs introduced or implemented this year. Still, over two-hundred congregations are seeking to obtain their first facility while many others come to the Building Department for assistance in expansion and relocation.

For the past five years the staff of the Investor's Fund for Building and Development for the PCA has assisted in the administration of various programs of the Building Department on behalf of Mission to North America. This has included administering the Five Million Fund program of interest-free loans and acting as development staff

## APPENDICES

and consultants for the department. In the early days of the Investor's Fund, this was necessary and convenient, but with the growth of the Investor's Fund and the expansion of available programs through the combined staff, it has become unwieldy and unmanageable. In addition, the growth in demands on the building department is distracting from the primary focus of MNA--church planting. Therefore, the MNA Committee, with the concurrence of the Investor's Fund Trustees recommend that the work of the Building Department (including the Five Million Fund) be transferred to the Investor's Fund. (See Recommendation 10)

Clearly God has been at work and we praise Him. But to accomplish what must be done, *the Building Department must have the earnest believing prayer of the Presbyterian Church in America.*

### Campus Ministry

#### Reformed University Ministries

Reformed University Ministries, Mission to North America's work on college and university campuses, reaches students for Christ and equips them to serve through local Reformed University Fellowship (RUF) groups. Outreach to international students is carried out through International Students Christian Fellowship (ISCF). Over fifty campus ministers, interns, missionaries, and staff members minister to students on thirty-six campuses across the country (see Attachment 3 for listing of campuses and staff).

Reformed University Fellowship ministers to mainline American students through large group meetings, small group Bible studies, and one-to-one relationships. The weekly large group meetings, involving prayer, praise, fellowship, and Bible study, serve as a focal point of activities for many RUF groups. The large group functions as a base from which contacts are made with new students and fringe students are incorporated into RUF. Campus interns and staff members expand the ministry's sphere of influence by going dorm to dorm, personally contacting individuals who visit the large group meetings and building relationships of friendship and trust with them.

Large group meetings also provide a forum for students to introduce other students to RUF. At the beginning of the year at Georgia Southern University, student leaders in the group put up posters inviting students to RUF, mailed out newsletters, and made phone calls to new students--increasing attendance at large group by fifty percent. RUF's influence is also multiplied exponentially as individuals invite their own friends. Campus minister Ron Brown describes the "evangelistic mentality" taking root in the RUF group at Florida State University: "As a result, we have had numerous non-Christians visit our Bible studies and activities. I have personally talked to a Mormon, a Muslim from Iraq, and a Spiritist, all brought to our large group meeting by students." One young man at Mississippi State University met a neighbor in his apartment complex and invited him to RUF; this visitor soon began asking for a Bible and for individual instruction.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Small group studies, led by campus ministers, interns, and students allow closer relationships of support and accountability to develop within the group and give the students opportunity to receive training in special areas. Subject matter for small group studies ranges from particular books of the Bible, to topical studies on Holiness, Evangelism, Church History, or How To Study the Scripture, to prayer and devotional groups. At Clemson University, where over fifty small groups meet weekly, staff member Jerdone Davis and intern Gwynn Llewelyn Wear not only lead small groups themselves, but also are actively involved in training, encouraging, and overseeing young women who are leading studies for their fellow students. They represent Reformed University Ministries' fifteen women staff and interns working with female students under the oversight of campus ministers.

One-to-one interaction between campus staff and students often grows out of issues that have been raised in large group or small group Bible studies. Campus minister Fred Harrell at the University of Tennessee in Knoxville (new work 1990-91) tells of one such occasion: "A young woman student attended one of our large group meetings the night I was preaching on *Blessed are the Poor in Spirit* (Matthew 5:3). She began to understand the gospel for the first time that night and afterward requested an appointment with me. As we talked a few days later in one of the cafeterias on campus, I had the privilege of explaining the gospel to her in a detailed fashion. She told me that day with tears of repentance, 'I realize that I have nothing in and of myself to offer God for the sin in my life. Christ is my only hope.' She expressed true repentance and faith. Since she had never been baptized, I had the privilege of baptizing her in February at Cedar Springs Presbyterian Church. Our whole RUF group was there to support her . . . ."

Regular discipling relationships also provide fellowship and encouragement for students struggling in their spiritual life. Campus intern Dan Newcomb (Miami area): "One student with whom I meet weekly for breakfast has a father who is an atheist. His father writes him lengthy letters questioning his faith in Christ, and has even told my friend that the more he reads, the more he will lose his faith. Over breakfast, my friend and I talk about his father's questions. It has been good to see his faith strengthened as I help him answer these questions."

### International Students Christian Fellowship

Reformed University Ministries continues to minister to international students through International Students Christian Fellowship (ISCF), with seven missionaries active on over ten campuses across the country. Internationals make up a significant percentage of students on American university campuses. At Southern Illinois University, for example, a total of 2600 internationals from seventy-five countries represent ten percent of the entire student body.

Outreach to international students is initiated through organized activities which provide encounters at every level from initial contact to intensive Bible study and Christian fellowship. Such activities typically include monthly coffees or luncheons, book tables, conversational English classes, seasonal parties, and small group Bible

## APPENDICES

studies. As relationships develop between missionaries and internationals, opportunities arise for one-to-one evangelism and discipleship.

Local PCA congregations play a crucial role in this ministry. In Atlanta, Westminster Presbyterian Church provides conversational English classes for internationals, while Intown Perimeter church assists ISCF missionaries Jim Gearing and Jean Lappin with a Sunday morning international fellowship hour. In Clemson, South Carolina, Clemson Presbyterian Church provides a weekly international Sunday School class and church members meet regularly with ISCF missionary Rick Brawner for training in ministry to international students. A number of families from Clemson Presbyterian Church have also "adopted" individual students in order to show them the love of Christ through hospitality and practical assistance.

ISCF's ministry in 1990 culminated in the first annual Christmas Conference held at Orangewood Presbyterian Church in Orlando, Florida. Both Christian and non-Christian internationals attended and heard evangelistic messages and teaching on Christian growth. The hospitality shown by PCA families was invaluable. One student reported that the questions asked by his Muslim roommate at the conference led to discussions of the Bible with both this student and the host family. Another student from China said, "One of the primary reasons we came to the conference was to see how an American Christian family lives. We would like to have spent even more time with our host family."

The tasks and opportunities of ISCF missionaries change constantly with world events. There has recently been an influx of students from Eastern European countries including Bulgaria, Czechoslovakia, Yugoslavia, Poland, and Russia. Political changes in those countries now enable large numbers of students to come to the United States to study. In Atlanta, opportunities to minister to students from Saudi Arabia and other Middle Eastern countries have arisen directly out of the events of the Persian Gulf conflict.

A large proportion of internationals in the United States are graduate students or post-doctoral scholars, in many cases sent by their government. Upon their return home, they will fill leadership roles in education, politics, business, and medicine. As we reach these internationals for Christ and equip them to serve Him, we prepare missionaries to go to the farthest corners of the earth with the Gospel of Christ.

God is doing significant work through Campus Ministry. But the need and opportunity are tremendous. *Campus Ministry must have the earnest, believing prayer of the Presbyterian Church in America.*

### **Chaplains**

Sixty-four PCA teaching elders now serve as active duty chaplains in the military services. In addition, thirty-seven serve in the reserves and forty-five in other categories, including sixteen seminarians in the Chaplain Candidate Program.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The crisis in the Persian Gulf focused special attention on the military -- and its chaplaincy. As of this writing, twenty-four PCA chaplains are in the Gulf including twelve reserve chaplains called up. They report most unusual opportunities for ministry and incredible response to the Gospel. As one said, "It looks more like revival than a war!"

TE William (Bill) Leonard coordinates the MNA Chaplains Department. He also serves as Executive Director of the Presbyterian & Reformed Joint Commission on Chaplains & Military Personnel, which is the endorsing agency for chaplains not only from the PCA, but also the Orthodox Presbyterian Church, the Reformed Presbyterian Church of North America, and the Korean American Presbyterian Church. The Commission report is found as Attachment 4.

God is blessing through our chaplains. Yet new danger in war and continued phenomenal opportunities for ministry remind us that the *Chaplains Department must have the earnest believing prayer of the Presbyterian Church in America.*

### Mercy--Word/Deed

The objective of the Mercy Department is to develop the people and structures that will enable the PCA to present the Gospel through word/deed ministries to those in need. The PCA has been richly blessed in many ways and cannot remain aloof from the cries of those in need around us and among us. The world in which we are called to serve is one full of hurt and pain, and in imitation of the Savior we must present the Good News in words and deeds of love.

Our vision is for the PCA to present the compassion, hope, and love of Jesus Christ to the varieties of hurting people wherever they are found, whatever their needs may be, through wholistic service. Six key ministry areas have been identified by the Mercy Department in order to focus our resources:

- The poor (especially inner city)
- The Senior Adult
- The Children
- The Prisoner
- The Afflicted (emotionally, physically)
- Disaster Relief

As a relatively new department within the PCA the work has been devoted to foundation laying tasks which should enable us to fulfill the God-given mandate to be rich in mercy. At the grass roots we are developing networks of people interested in mercy ministry both in local churches and at presbytery level and are equipping them with strategies and tools for ministry. Much of this work is being done through regional convocations on Mercy Ministry. This past year meetings were held in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; St. Louis, Missouri; and Rock Hill, South Carolina. Additional convocations are planned for 1991. Other networks of those active in key ministry areas are being built through informal meetings around the country.

## APPENDICES

To assist those called but not trained in ministry, "how-to" manuals are being written and made available to the churches. To date, the PCA provides manuals on Disaster Relief, AIDS Ministry, and Prison Ministry which will be a special focus for 1991.

In addition to developing and training local volunteers we are calling and placing ministry specialists--Mercy Missionaries--among people of particular need. In 1990 six missionary families served various needy communities in Miami, Florida; Chattanooga, Tennessee and Charlotte, North Carolina, as well as a specialist in Disaster Relief. This past year has seen the introduction of short-term internships and one-week work teams in inner city ministries.

A particular area of effort for the Mercy Department is working in the inner city to establish job training and business incubation projects. These job training programs are based on biblical foundations of personhood and work and are funded by non-gift resources. A pilot project is underway in Atlanta.

A list of Mercy Missionaries and Interns who served in 1990 is included as Attachment 5.

The warm and effective relationship between the PCA and Bethany Christian Services continues. Mrs. Robert (Ginger) Blaylock, a member of the PCA, serves on the national Bethany Board. We commend Bethany to the churches and individuals of the PCA for ministry involvement, for use of the quality services provided, and for financial commitment. The Bethany annual report will be found as Attachment 6.

The PCA has responded positively to the call to show mercy. Yet the deep human need around and within are deep and vast. *The Mercy Department must have the earnest, believing prayer of the Presbyterian Church in America.*

### III. CONCLUSION:

God is at work through the various ministries of Mission to North America. But the phenomenal need of our continent calls us all to *prayer*. Limited resources lead us to a place of dependency upon God in *prayer*. But above all, the promises of our sovereign God himself encourage us to *pray*. "I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask me for anything in my name and I will do it" (John 14:13,14).

### IV. RECOMMENDATIONS:

1. That the General Assembly commend TE Terry Gyger for the quality of leadership he has provided as Coordinator and reelect him for another year.
2. That the General Assembly express its gratitude to God for the staff and personnel of Mission to North America.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

3. That the General Assembly offer thanks to God for the MNA organizing pastors, MICAH and Mercy missionaries, campus ministers, staff and interns, and for chaplains whether active duty or reserve status.
4. That the General Assembly approve an offering for PCA Mercy Ministry to be taken preferably during the Thanksgiving season.
5. That the General Assembly encourage congregations to consider providing financial support in their benevolence budgets as they are able for specific church planters.
6. That, recognizing the absolute necessity of a foundation of prayer to see Vision 2000 accomplished, the General Assembly urge congregations to participate wholeheartedly in the "Army of Intercessors" Prayer Project.
7. That the General Assembly express praise to God for the ministry of Bethany Christian Services and its staff, encourage involvement in and support of it, and invite its representative to speak to the Assembly for ten minutes at this, or a more appropriate time. (See Report from Bethany Christian Services, Attachment 6)
8. That Overture 3 from Southwest Presbytery be answered in the affirmative allowing Southwest Presbytery to divide--the Presbytery of the Southwest to include the states of Arizona and New Mexico, and El Paso, Hudspeth, Culberson, Jeff Davis, and Presidio Counties of Texas; and the Rocky Mountain Presbytery to include the states of Colorado and Wyoming.

Further, that this be effective in the stated September 1991 meeting of "The Presbyteries".

9. That Overture 15 from Ascension Presbytery be answered in the negative and that a new request come before the 20th GA in 1992; that in the interim GA MNA sponsor a meeting in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania to be attended by representatives from the Great Lakes, Ascension and New River Presbyteries and GA MNA with the purpose of developing a plan for the development of presbytery boundaries and to consider how to develop the region for the Gospel and the PCA.
10. **WHEREAS**, the importance of an adequate dedicated building to facilitate church growth cannot be underestimated; and **WHEREAS**, due to the increasing expense and complexity of building programs, there is growing need for the demand upon the various denominational agencies involved in providing building assistance to wit the MNA Building Department and the Investor's Fund; and **WHEREAS**, these two agencies, having separate existence but some shared staff, have grown to a point that their structure is unwieldy and cumbersome; and **WHEREAS**, the primary focus of MNA is church extension and the primary focus of the Investor's Fund is church building and financing;



## APPENDICES

**THEREFORE**, it is requested that the 19th General Assembly agree to the transfer of the work of the MNA Building Department (including the Five Million Fund) to the Investor's Fund for Building and Development for the PCA for administration and development.

11. That the General Assembly adopt the budget of MNA for 1992 and commit itself to its support.
12. That the General Assembly respond in principle in the affirmative to the request of the Presbytery of Eastern Canada (Overture 26) that its boundaries be revised, but for clarification that the boundaries be defined as follows: that part of Ontario south of the 45th parallel and west of the 77th meridian and the Provinces of Nova Scotia and New Foundland.
13. That the General Assembly respond in the affirmative to the request of the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama (Overture 18) for transfer of Escambia County, Alabama, originally assigned to Gulf Coast Presbytery, to become a part of the Presbytery of Southeast Alabama. Gulf Coast Presbytery concurs in this request.

**MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
ATTACHMENT 1  
CHURCH PLANTERS SUPPORTED IN 1990**

Andrew Adams (w-Kathy)  
Dayspring PC  
Lexington, KY

Richard Anderson (w-Reva)  
Good Shepherd PC  
Warsaw, IN

William Anderson (w-Diana)  
Oak Creek PC  
Santa Clarita, CA

Ed Bertalan (w-Joan)  
Chaparral Hills PC  
San Diego, CA

Steve Bickley (w-Maureen)  
Lakeside Church  
Milwaukee, WI

Evan Bottomley (w-Marilynn)  
North Ridge PC  
Calgary, Alberta

Robert Cassis (w-Kathy)  
South Sound PC  
Olympia, WA

John Collins (w-Diane)  
Faith PC  
Spokane, WA

Allan Dayhoff (w-Deborah)  
Harvester PC  
Springfield, VA

Robert Dillard (w-Juanita)  
Southern Pines PC  
Shreveport, LA

Ron Dunton (w-Amy)  
Metrocrest PC  
Carrollton, TX

Tom Egbert (w-Joan)  
Our Savior's Church  
Norcross, GA

Ron Ellis (w-Cathy)  
Gallatin Valley PC  
Bozeman, MT

David George (w-Jayne)  
Valley Springs PC  
Roseville, CA

Denny Hieber (w-Tammy)  
Cornerstone PC  
Conyers, GA

John Johnson (w-Barbara)  
New Life PC  
Ithaca, NY

John Keen (w-Diane)  
Orleans PC  
New Orleans, LA

Timothy Kirk (w-Sally)  
Christ Community Church  
Carmel, IN

Bob Korljan (w-Jayne)  
Berea PC  
Barrington, RI

Ian Lamont (w-Linda)  
Trinity PC  
St. Albert, Alberta

Steve Laug (w-Irene)  
Fraser Valley  
Surrey, British Columbia

Charles McArthur (w-Sheree)  
New Hope PC  
Eustis, FL

David Mullens (w-Judith)  
Peninsula Hills PC  
Palo Alto, CA

Giullaume (Gil) Odendaal (w-Elmaric)  
Grace PC  
Hudson, OH

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Tim Posey (w-Pamela)  
Spring Meadows PC  
Las Vegas, NV

Mike Rasmussen (w-Renatta)  
Christ PC  
Greenville, NC

Lewis Ruff (w-Cornelia)  
Canyon Creek PC  
San Ramon, CA

A.B. Scott (w-Dabney)  
Ponte Vedra Beach PC  
Ponte Vedra, FL

Dan Thompson (w-Margaret)  
Christ Community Church  
Titusville, FL

Mark Vigil (w-Laurie)  
Hope PC  
Collinsville, IL

Don Ward (w-Caron)  
South Dayton PC  
Dayton, OH

Cecil Wells (w-Kathleen)  
Presbyterian Church of the Hills  
Fort Worth, TX

Jeff Willey (w-Kerry)  
Prairie Winds PC  
Moore, OK

Wayne Zaepfel (w-Beth)  
University City PC  
Charlotte, NC

John Ziegler (w-Deborah)  
Willowbeech PC  
Bloomington, IL

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### ATTACHMENT 2 MICAH MISSIONARIES AND STAFF 1990

Francis L. Foucachon (w-Donna)  
Eglise Chetienne Reformee  
de LaRive Nord  
Repentigny, Quebec

[REDACTED]  
Commaunaute Chretienne  
De LaRive Sud  
St. Lambert, Quebec

Jose Martinez (w-Pam)  
Hispanic Church Planter  
McAllen, TX

Demetrio Rodriguez (w-Dolohiram)  
Hispanic Church Planter  
Mayaguez, Puerto Rico

Guillermo Salinas (w-Jennie)  
Hispanic Church Planter  
Houston, TX

Claude and Pat Sharpe  
Bible Translators with  
Sea Islanders  
St. Helena, SC

Tsuneyoshi Takeda (w-Makimi)  
Westminster Japanese  
Christian Center  
Roswell, GA

Andrew L. Toth (w-Dorciane)  
Hispanic Church Planting Team  
Los Angeles, CA

Isaias Uc (w-Ruth)  
Emanuel Dios Con Nosotros  
McAllen, TX

J. Garnet Zoellner (w-Daryl)  
Institut Farel  
Charny, Quebec

Gerald Austin (w-Gwen)  
Coordinator of Black Ministries

Dan Kim (w-Young)  
Coordinator of Korean Ministries

Sam Ling (w-Mildred)  
General Representative for  
Chinese Ministries

## APPENDICES

### ATTACHMENT 3 ATTACHMENT TO REFORMED UNIVERSITY MINISTRIES 1991 GA REPORT

The Committee on Mission to North America provides support services through Reformed University Ministries-MNA to presbyteries whose campus ministries are affiliated with Reformed University Ministries-MNA. The presbyteries receiving services make a contribution toward their cost. Presbyteries are completely responsible for the funding of ministries within their area and for determining the budget for such ministries. Reformed University Ministries-MNA receives and disburses funds only as directed by those presbyteries.

From January 1, 1990, to December 31, 1990, Reformed University Ministries-MNA received \$921,621 and disbursed \$946,252 as directed by presbyteries. The funds are received for particular ministries, which are the responsibility of a presbytery as noted below. The responsible body receives an audit report of its funds. The following list gives the presbyteries, campus staff, and location of ministries receiving support services-accounting through Reformed University Ministries-MNA, and other ministries and staff affiliated with Reformed University Ministries-MNA.

#### PRESBYTERIES

Alabama Joint Committee on Campus Work  
(Evangel, Southeast Alabama, and Warrior)

Calvary Committee on Campus Work

Central Georgia Committee on Campus Work

Palmetto Committee on Campus Work

Florida Joint Committee on Campus  
Work (Central Florida, Gulf Coast,

#### CAMPUS AND STAFF

**Auburn University**  
Rev. William Gresham  
(Jan.-July)  
Rev. Paul Hahn  
(June-Dec.)  
**University of Alabama**  
Rev. Billy Joseph

**Clemson University**  
Rev. David Sinclair  
**Winthrop College**  
Rev. Sam Joyner

**Georgia Southern University**  
Rev. Craig Higgins  
**Mercer University**  
Rev. Chip Miller

**University of South Carolina**  
Rev. Kenny Crosswhite  
(Part-time)

**Area Coordinator**  
Rev. David Gordon

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

South Florida, and Southwest Florida)  
Florida Joint Committee - continued

**University of Florida**  
Rev. Don Bush  
(June-Dec.)  
**Florida State University**  
Rev. Ron Brown  
**Miami Area**  
Rev. Jose Ortega  
(Jan.-June)

Tennessee Valley Committee on Campus Work

**University of Tennessee**  
Rev. Fred Harrell  
(June-Dec.)  
**Vanderbilt University**  
Rev. Hal Farnsworth

Texas Joint Committee on Campus Work  
(North and South Texas)

**Texas A & M**  
Rev. Chris Yates

### CAMPUS INTERNS/STAFF

Leigh Ayres  
Susan Barlow  
Susan Bukovsky  
Beth Compton  
Kim Cotten  
Jerdone Davis  
Brian Habig  
Julie Holland  
Tim Kay  
David Kimball  
Jean Kinzinger  
Tim Meyer  
Terry Mitchell  
Elizabeth Moore  
Sigrid Morrison  
Dean Moyer  
Dan Newcomb  
Phillip Palmertree  
Ronnie Rogers  
Carson Sensing  
Kim Smith  
Leslie Smith  
Todd Teller  
Gwynn Llewelyn Wear  
Betsy Wheat

Winthrop College  
Texas A & M  
Florida State University  
Winthrop College  
Mississippi State University  
Clemson University  
Vanderbilt University  
University of So. Mississippi  
University of Alabama  
University of Arkansas  
Winthrop College  
University of Maryland  
Florida State University  
University of Arkansas  
University of Mississippi  
Florida State University  
Miami Area  
Mercer University  
University of Mississippi  
Mercer University  
Auburn University  
University of Mississippi  
Mississippi State University  
Clemson University  
Mississippi State University

## APPENDICES

### OTHER AFFILIATED MINISTRIES

Delmarva (Potomac) Presbytery

Mississippi Joint Committee on Campus Work  
(Covenant, Grace and Mississippi Valley  
Presbyteries)

### CAMPUS AND STAFF

**University of Maryland**  
Rev. Chris O'Brien

**Mississippi/Arkansas Area  
Coordinator**

Mr. James Elkin

**Administrative Assistant**

Cindy Baskin

Cindy Thompson

(Part-time)

**Belhaven College**

Rev. Billy Dempsey

**Delta State University**

Mr. Henry Morris

(Jan.-May)

Rev. Steve Malone

(June-Dec.)

**Mississippi State University**

Rev. Sam Downing

**University of Arkansas**

Rev. Mike Biggs

**University of Mississippi**

Rev. Durant Fleming

**University of So. Mississippi**

Rev. Ken Nippert

#### Part-Time Ministries

Hinds Junior College

Mississippi College

#### Part-Time Staff and Interns

Wally & Reni Bumpas

David Cantey

Elizabeth Ely

Spring Heflin

Allen Kolodney

Jeffrey Lancaster

Steven MacDonald

Margaret Smithson

Shane & Jean Sunn

Marisa Tate

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Philadelphia Presbytery

Rev. Carl Derk, Chairman  
of Subcommittee  
Rev. Jeff White, Staff  
Pastoral Asst. for  
Campus Ministry of Tenth  
Presbyterian Church  
(Jan.-June)

Philadelphia Area Schools  
University of Pennsylvania  
Temple University  
Drexel University  
University of the Arts  
Philadelphia College of  
Textiles

### INTERNATIONAL STUDENTS CHRISTIAN FELLOWSHIP

Atlanta Area

Rev. Jim Gearing  
Jean Lappin  
DeKalb Community College  
Emory University  
Georgia State University  
Georgia Institute of Technology

Clemson University

Rev. Rick Brawner

Mississippi State University

Julie McLean

Jackson, Mississippi Area

Brian DeJong (Part-time)

Philadelphia Area

Rev. Bruce McDowell  
University of Pennsylvania  
Temple University  
Drexel University  
University of the Arts  
Pennsylvania Academy of  
Fine Arts  
Philadelphia College of  
Pharmacy and Science  
St. Joseph's University  
Hahnemann University

Southern Illinois University

Derick McDonald



## APPENDICES

### GA MNA OFFICE

#### Ministries

#### **Coordinator of Campus**

**Rev. Mark L. Lowrey, Jr.**  
**Administrative Assistant**  
Joan Cannon  
Melissa Hause (Part-time)

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### ATTACHMENT 4 REPORT FROM THE PRESBYTERIAN AND REFORMED JOINT COMMISSION ON CHAPLAINS AND MILITARY PERSONNEL

What a difference a year has made! Last year we wrote: "In the heady atmosphere of perestroika and glasnost in Eastern Europe and Russia, the leaders of our nation will do well not to heed the siren call that would reduce our forces to a small 'police force' or an ineffectual, stripped-down fighting force. Fallen human nature being what it is, there will be 'wars and rumors of wars' until the return of our Lord. What is happening now in Russia and the Warsaw Pact nations in eastern Europe, under the sovereign hand of God, was unthinkable a short few months ago. Euphoria notwithstanding, we live in days of real crisis, days of danger, yet days of unparalleled opportunities for the gospel." Who would have anticipated that perestroika and glasnost would now be an empty shell, the Soviet Union threatening breakdown and civil war, and America and her allies involved in the Persian Gulf with far-reaching consequences beyond victory on the battlefield?

At this time (February 1991) twenty-four PCA Chaplains are serving in the Gulf with others in direct support roles. Twelve of our Reserves have been called to Active Duty. Many serve with combat units and we have daily trusted God for their safety and return to their families. The Command Chaplain on the Staff of General H. Norman Schwarzkopf, with responsibility for the deployment of nearly eight hundred chaplains, is PCA Chaplain David Peterson. There are some one-hundred and fifty faith groups endorsing chaplains to the military. This would average five chaplains per faith-group. God has graciously given us five times that number in the Gulf operation. In addition, faithful commission chaplains are now serving in Alaska, Japan, Korea, Okinawa, the Philippines, Guam, Hawaii, Germany and across America.

Two of our Desert Storm Chaplains have children serving in the same operation, Jeff Peterson, a West Point graduate with the Infantry, and Leigh Anne Philips as an Ordinance officer. A major purpose of the entire Gulf operation in the plan of God may be the opening up of countries long closed to the Gospel. Thousands of those serving in the Middle East are Believers. Their Christian witness will have lasting impact. There is an underground church in Saudi Arabia today! Furthermore, our chaplains report Saudi citizens attending their services, and a greater response to the gospel message among our troops than they have ever experienced. What a great missionary force God has given us in our chaplain community! Sixty-one Active Duty Military Chaplains serving around the world, with Manila as dangerous as Kuwait and Iraq.

Chaplain wives serve with their husbands. Many are home-schooling, some have to work outside the home. God is blessing their united witness. We thank God for each one of our "Chaplain Unit Ministry Teams", and for Covenant children being brought up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. Half of my time as Director is spent with chaplains and their families wherever assigned. It is a rewarding and demanding ministry.

## APPENDICES

While we have depended on Reserve chaplains to build up the Active Duty Forces during Desert Storm, we anticipate a build-down (a Washington euphemism!) through 1995 with some chaplains retiring and others entering the Reserve Forces. However, there are openings for PCA pastors in the Reserves serving in challenging, evangelistic and counseling ministries among a widely diverse cross-section of American life, with continuing education and financial benefits. Prerequisites: seminary graduate (ninety credit hours), recommended by presbytery and endorsed by the Commission, under forty years of age unless prior military service, and able to pass a physical exam. With an increasing number of VA (Veterans Affairs) chaplains nearing retirement age, we anticipate additional chaplain slots available to us. Three have been endorsed recently. Our first Federal Bureau of Prisons chaplain is now endorsed and his acceptance is expected.

PCA chaplains serve also in the Civil Air Patrol, as Marine/Port Chaplains, in Hospices and Hospitals, Retirement Homes and Police Forces. A number are in training during their seminary years as chaplain candidates. This is an amazing total force of one-hundred and forty chaplains. We thank God!

Ben Wilkinson (PEF) wrote to me recently expressing his appreciation for our "On Line" chaplaincy quarterly newsletter: "Of all things the PCA is doing, I think the chaplaincy is potentially the most purely evangelistic! Keep them at it, don't let them forget!" At the end of 1990 the PCA had approximately 1,200 churches and missions and approximately 2000 clergy. On any given Lord's Day, due to the unique circumstances of ministry opportunities to two and a half million young men and women in the military community, plus military families, our chaplains are presenting Christ's claims to more unsaved than all our churches combined. What a privilege! What a responsibility! Funding for this ministry, if it were provided by the PCA, would amount to over \$3,500,000 per year. Actually, it is a wise investment of tax funds by our government. The work of the Commission, however, is dependent upon the prayer and gift support of God's people as it serves member denominations (PCA, OPC, RPCNA and KAPC).

When our accounts as God's servants in these exciting and crucial days are submitted to our Master for scrutinizing, our trustworthiness will be tested (I Corinthians 4:2) and the eternal fruit of faithful witness as chaplains around the world will be abundantly evident. God is giving fruit. We praise and glorify Him!

TE WILLIAM B. LEONARD  
DIRECTOR OF CHAPLAIN MINISTRIES, MNA/PCA  
DIRECTOR, COMMISSION ON CHAPLAINS

# MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

## CHAPLAIN ROSTER

### ACTIVE DUTY - ARMY

MAJ Hubert R. Baker  
MAJ Russell C. Barrett  
1LT Peter Brzezinski  
CPT Kenneth W. Bush  
MAJ Fred S. Carr  
CPT James R. Carter  
1LT Gary Cox  
MAJ David L. Dare  
CPT Eric R. Dye  
CPT Michael Frazier  
CPT R. J. Gore  
LTC Bill C. Greenwalt  
1LT John Griessel  
CPT Gary Griffith  
MAJ James R. Griffith  
MAJ Leslie M. Hardeman  
MAJ Marvil L. Harris  
CPT Edward L. James  
MAJ Douglas E. Lee

LTC Stephen W. Leonard  
Cpt Jon K. Maas  
CPT Thomas A. MacGregor  
1LT William Manning  
CPT David McMillan  
LTC Charles H. Morrison  
MAJ Robert S. Mortenson, Jr.  
MAJ A. Randy Nabors  
COL David P. Peterson  
LTC W. Ingram Philips, III  
CPT Michael C. Pipkin  
CPT Charles M. Rector  
MAJ David Roberts  
CPT George Dewey Roberts  
CPT Paul Sagan  
CPT Gary Sexton  
LTC James Singleton  
1LT Peter R. Sniffen  
MAJ Robert A. Wildeman, Jr.  
CPT Andrew Zeller

### ACTIVE DUTY - NAVY

LCDR Donald W. Aven  
LCDR Christopher P. Bennett  
LT Michael R. Craig  
LCDR Daniel E. Deaton  
CPT J. Robert Fiol  
LCDR Peter C. Jensen  
LT Sam Larsen  
LCDR William Mahlow, Jr.  
LCDR Duane D. Mallow  
LT Stephen Parker

LT George Ridgeway  
LT Douglas E. Rosander  
LCDR Timothy D. Rott  
LT John C. Smith  
LT James L. Spiritosanto  
LCDR Ronald L. Swafford, Sr.  
LT Michael A. Uhall  
LT Jeffrey R. Weir  
LT Jan P. Werson  
LT Paul Wrigley

### ACTIVE DUTY - AIR FORCE

MAJ David E. Crocker  
MAJ Robert W. Gardner  
COL Beryl T. Hubbard

CPT Robert L. Jarrett  
CPT Frederick S. McFarland

## APPENDICES

### RESERVES - ARMY

TE Mark Fairbrother  
TE D. Charles Frost, Jr.  
TE Stevan Horning  
TE Douglas Hudson  
TE John E. Johnston

TE Philip H. Lancaster  
TE John R. Maphet  
TE Douglas B. McCullough  
TE Donald H. Post, Jr.  
TE David Upchurch

### ARMY NATIONAL GUARD

TE Richard W. Anderson  
TE John P. Apel  
TE John O. Butler  
TE Lamar Davis  
TE Craig DeBenedictis  
TE David Gilleran  
TE William Gleason  
TE Malcolm M. Griffith

TE Wesley N. Horne, Jr.  
TE James M. Hutchens  
TE Steven A. Jakes  
TE James Pakala  
TE Kenneth Ribelin  
TE Daniel J. Ricketts  
TE Richard H. Rosser  
TE Thomas E. Troxell

### RESERVES - NAVY

TE Alan Cochet  
TE David A. Crum  
TE Wayne Good  
TE Arnold E. Johnson

TE Larry Ruddell  
TE John Stringer  
TE Fred L. Zoeller, Jr.

### RESERVES - AIR FORCE

TE Michael E. James

TE John C. Ropp, Jr.

### AIR NATIONAL GUARD

TE Kenneth R. Elliott

TE Albert C. Hitchcock

### CIVIL AIR PATROL

TE R. L. Brinkley, Sr.  
TE Daniel F. Fannon  
TE Paul O. Honomichl  
TE Edward S. S. Huntington

TE Albert F. Moginot, Jr.  
TE Roy S. Parker  
TE Henry Thigpen

### STATE MILITIA

TE Raymond G. Cross

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### RETIRED

TE A. Kenneth Austin  
TE Robert A. Bonner  
TE Samuel S. Cappel  
TE John P. Clark  
TE Don K. Clements  
TE Howard T. Cross  
TE Edward A. Jussely  
TE William B. Leonard, Jr.  
TE John M. MacGregor

TE Nelson K. Malkus  
TE James S. Martin  
TE John D. Register  
TE Wilbur Siddons  
TE Thomas E. Sidebotham  
TE Frederick D. Thompson, Jr.  
TE E. Lee Trinkle  
TE Leon F. Wardell  
TE Lawrence Withington

### VA HOSPITAL - FULL-TIME

TE Phillip B. Binnie  
TE Robert E. Hobson

TE Ron Morrell

### VA HOSPITAL - PART-TIME

TE David Dively  
TE Lyle R. Graff

TE Charles E. Turner

### RETIREMENT HOME AND HOSPITAL CHAPLAINS

TE Richard Anderson  
TE Allen M. Baldwin  
TE John Buswell  
TE Drennon B. Cottingham

TE F. Seth Dyrness  
TE Roger W. Hunt  
TE James B. Von Drehle  
TE John Rhodes  
TE Paul Walker

### AIDS HOSPICE CHAPLAINS

TE Ken Larter

### POLICE CHAPLAINS

TE Charles H. Cobb  
TE John Clark

### MERCHANT MARINE PORT CHAPLAINS

TE Robert Ackley  
TE James Ransom

### BOY SCOUTS OF AMERICA

TE James A. Jones, Jr.

## APPENDICES

### CHAPLAIN CANDIDATE PROGRAM

#### Army

Jeff Carroll (CTS)  
Jerry Hayes (CTS)  
Chip Huey (RTS)  
Stevan E. Logan (ETS)

Tom McCort (CTS)  
Charles G. Parks (RTS)  
Stevan Richardson (CTS)  
Frank R. Theus (CTS)  
Earl Vanderhof (WTS)

#### Army National Guard

Scott R. Huber (WTS-CA)  
Richard W. Thomis (CTS)

#### Air Force

James E. Chizek (RTS)  
David E. Tate (WTS)

#### Navy

Robert A. Berry, Jr. (CTS)  
Brian C. Whitaker (GCTS)

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**ATTACHMENT 5  
MERCY MISSIONARIES 1990**

Paul Bennett (w-Lianne)  
Mercy Missionary Candidate  
Covenant Ex-offender Ministries  
Chattanooga, TN

Philip Henderson  
Mercy Missionary Candidate  
Missionary at Large  
Charlotte, NC

Barry Henning (w-Ann)  
Mercy Missionary Candidate  
Urban Ministry Discipleship  
Chattanooga, TN

Andy Mendonsa (w-Glorida)  
Mercy Missionary Candidate  
Widow's Ministry  
Chattanooga, TN

William Rushbrook (w-Ronnie)  
Mercy Missionary Candidate  
Disaster Services Coordinator  
San Jose, CA

Henry Trigg (w-Brenda)  
Mercy Missionary  
Haitians in Miami  
Miami, FL

Chris Hatch (Intern)  
Widow's Ministry  
Chattanooga, TN



## APPENDICES

### ATTACHMENT 6 REPORT FROM BETHANY CHRISTIAN SERVICES

Bethany Christian Services is a diaconal ministry. We are pleased to represent the Presbyterian Church in America in that regard.

Bethany ministers to the human and emotional needs of people, but in so doing gives witness to the love of Christ. With those we serve we recognize that His saving grace is the ultimate healing force in our lives.

We often work with the diaconal arm of congregations. And in many instances are able to minister in the stead of a local diaconate, extending Christian mercy to those who need professional care.

As an endorsed agency of the Presbyterian Church in America, it has been our privilege to be your ambassadors as we have extended Christian care to young people and families--particularly those whose lives have been ravaged by an unplanned pregnancy or disappointed by infertility.

In many ways, 1990 was a year of continuity. However, in other ways it was a year of change. Bethany continued its provision of services to young women and their families. And, as the accompanying statistical information indicates, 1990 surpassed previous years in terms of level of ministry provided.

One area of continuing service provision at Bethany is our ministry to families wishing to adopt. However, it is in the area of adoptive services that we also observed change this past year. Bethany found adoptive homes for 865 children in 1990, a decrease from 967 in 1989. However, the decrease in children placed was experienced entirely in the International Adoption field. In fact, the number of domestic children placed increased from 575 in 1989 to 600 in 1990. This reduction in the number of foreign children placed was due largely to the changing situation in Korea where fewer children are becoming available for adoptive placement. Due to this changing situation, Bethany has consolidated our International Adoption Program activity among fewer of our branch offices. We continue to explore the possibility of serving children in other countries and are seeing some very encouraging signs. In the arena of domestic adoptive work, we also need to remain alert to change. Even though Bethany served and placed a record number of children in 1990, we continue to experience "competitive" forces. One such force is the option of private adoption. The primary concern, of course, is that young people and children receive the highest quality care. In that regard, we see other options as being competitive only as they compromise the level of service provided.

Bethany continued its commitment to be a "front line" counseling option for young people experiencing an unplanned pregnancy. BETHANY LIFELINE is continually available to young people as a telephone counseling option. In 1990, BETHANY LIFELINE responded to over 19,000 calls from young people and families across the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

nation. It is the volunteer that serves as a counselor on BETHANY LIFELINE that often has first contact with a young unmarried person who has learned she is pregnant. Many a volunteer can share experiences of dramatic life-saving situations that have been offered through LIFELINE's counseling activities. Our counselors' primary objective is to dissuade the caller from abortion and to encourage her to proceed with active counseling which will continue in its encouragement of life-sustaining options.

It is from BETHANY LIFELINE that our branch offices receive some of their significant referrals. Counseling to young people with unplanned pregnancies continues as a cornerstone of our ministry. And, interestingly, that counseling has increasingly extended to and includes the families of the young people involved. We are working with these folks at a time of extreme crisis in their lives. It's a time in which they can and often are very receptive to the presentation of the Gospel's message of salvation. As such, our ministry's focus is not only healing emotional and physical hurts, but also ministering to the spiritual development and welfare of those who are in our care.

Leadership of Bethany's ministry is an extremely important ingredient. Leadership is provided by our Board of Directors at the local and corporate level. We are pleased to recognize with you that a significant number of that leadership is associated with the Presbyterian Church in America. Leadership is also provided by staff. Once again, the Presbyterian Church in America is well-represented at the managerial and direct service level.

It's in the arena of leadership that Bethany experienced another change in 1990. Our Executive Director, James K. Haveman, Jr., had been with Bethany for five years. As 1990 came to a conclusion, Jim received an appointment from the Governor of the State of Michigan to the Directorship of the state Department of Mental Health. While Jim's leadership will be missed, we are also pleased that Christian leadership will be much in evidence at the highest level of State government. Mr. Glenn DeMots, Associate Director at Bethany, has been appointed Interim Executive Director. Our Corporate Board of Directors is currently reviewing their expectations of the Executive Director position and will begin the search for a permanent replacement in the near future.

As a diaconal ministry, we consider ourselves in partnership with your denomination and with your congregations. We have become aware of needs for service through communication with your people. We regularly receive words of encouragement from individuals and congregations from within your denomination. And, of course, your ongoing prayer and financial support is absolutely essential to the continuance of our work. In 1990, individuals and churches associated with the Presbyterian Church in America gave approximately \$769,000 in gift support to underwrite Bethany's ministry across the country. We thank all of you very deeply for that most generous level of support. And, of course, your prayers continue to be ongoing. The work in which we are involved is challenging and often tremendously frustrating. That makes your supplications on our behalf so very critical.

1991 has begun. Events which are surrounding us point to a year of uncertainty. We don't know what that year will bring. Only our Father in Heaven knows. However, from what we are already experiencing, the demand for Bethany's ministry will once

## APPENDICES

again exceed what we have experienced in the past. It is your partnership that makes this ministry possible. We want you to know that we value that partnership very deeply and look forward to its continued nurture and productivity.

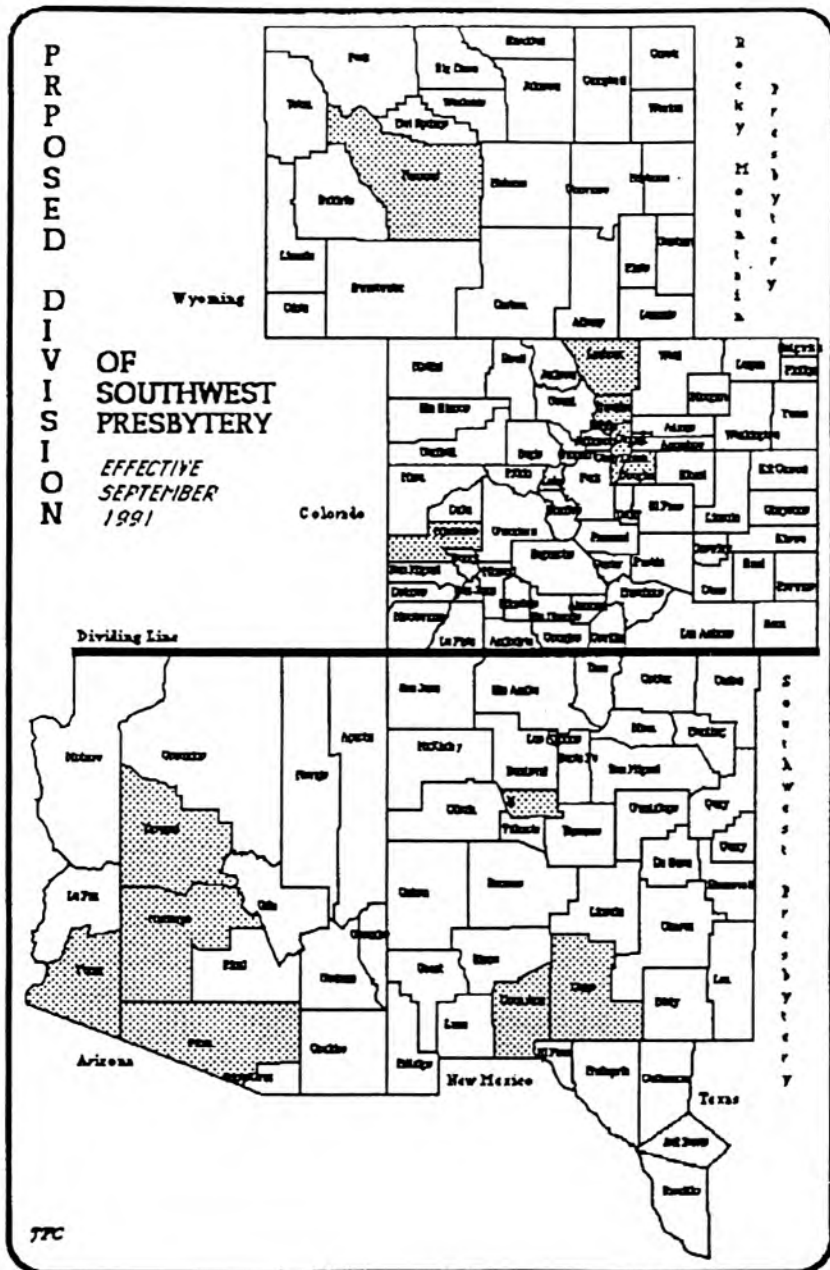
Glenn DeMots  
Interim Executive Director

### BETHANY CHRISTIAN SERVICES STATISTICAL FACT SHEET SERVICES PROVIDED-1990

BETHANY LIFELINE calls received	19,056
Adoptive Placements	865
Unplanned Pregnancy Counseling Cases	2,617
Children in Foster Case (infants awaiting adoptive placement and neglected or abused children)	1,493
Families/Individuals helped in counseling	1,723
Children in Day Care	97
Children in Residential Treatment	110
-----	
TOTAL	25,961

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

ATTACHMENT 7



APPENDICES

APPENDIX K

REPORT FROM THE COMMITTEE ON  
MISSION TO THE WORLD  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

This report, covering the ministry year of 1990, will be the last progress report on the 10-year plan, A PICTURE OF PURPOSE, approved in 1983. January 1991 we began working MTW VISION 2000, PARTNERING IN WORLD MISSIONS, the plan approved by the 18th General Assembly last June. This new plan builds on the foundation of the previous one, and projects MTW's expansion in World Evangelization through the turn of the century.

The new purpose as approved by the General Assembly, June 1990 is:

"Mission to the World will advance world evangelization with greater emphasis on developing and strengthening partnerships to plant and build the Church. Success will be determined by our faithfulness to God's Word and can be measured by the qualitative and quantitative growth in that part of the Body of Christ to whom we are ministering."

Join us in praising God for the foundation He has laid from which VISION 2000 is being launched.

I. MISSIONARY PERSONNEL		<u>1983</u>	<u>1990</u>
Ministries to build the church	MTW	180	293
	SIMA	26	51
Support & Technical Personnel	MTW	65	108
	SIMA	21	11
Bible Translation	MTW	35	24
	SIMA	0	
Medical Ministries	MTW	10	23
	SIMA	0	1
Education	MTW	21	15
	SIMA	8	7
Leave of Absence	MTW	0	13
TOTALS	MTW	311	476

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

TOTALS - continued	SIMA	<u>55</u> 366	<u>70</u> 546
		<b><u>1983</u></b>	<b><u>1990</u></b>
II. CHURCH-PLANTING TEAMS		10	20
III. FINANCES			
GA askings, fiscal year (per person, per year)		56.37	65.87
Income (this is not net income)			
1. MTW (in millions)		3.462	12.165
2. SIMA (in millions)		.622	1.685
		<b><u>1983</u></b>	<b><u>1990</u></b>
Administrative Costs (%)		19.9%	13.1%
Administrative Transfer from support accounts (%)		6.6%	8.8%

IV. CHURCH GROWTH

(totals as of 12-30-90)

	Churches Planted	Churches In Process	Attendance
Australia			
Brisbane	3	1	200
Sydney/Canberra	1	3	264
Chile			
Las Condes		1	70
NPC	3	2	255
Cote d'Ivoire		3	80
Ecuador	3	2	480
France			
Marseille	1		45
Paris		1	15

## APPENDICES

	Churches Planted	Churches In Process	Attendance
Japan			
Nagoya	1	1	35
Tokyo	0	1	24
Mexico			
Acapulco	5		450
Lomas		2	45
Pedregal		2	70
Peru	1	1	155
Portugal	2	2	145
Sensitive country		1	45
Taiwan	0	2	50

### OTHER CHURCH-RELATED MINISTRIES

Taiwan, Christ's College	780 students are enrolled at the college.
India, Children's Home	642 children from age 3 years until they are self-sufficient are being cared for in two homes. The majority are from leprous parents.
India, Seminary	79 resident students are enrolled in Bachelor, Masters and Doctoral programs.
Kenya	The Tei Wa Yesu Clinic in Muruu serves an average of 165 outpatients and inpatients per day. The local churches, Kenyan hospital chaplain and missionaries all find this medical facility an effective tool for evangelism.
Korea	Churches have been planted in 1,163 villages, less than 120 more to go, 19 churches in process.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### V. MAJOR DEVELOPMENTS DURING 1990

#### A. Australia

The cooperative agreement with Western Australia saw the first PCA teaching elder assigned to theological education in Perth. The first General Assembly of the Westminster Presbyterian Church was held in January 1990. A second cooperative agreement between the PCA and the Presbyterian Church of Victoria saw the assignment of Steve Young to Melbourne to reach the Japanese Diaspora. Contacts have already been made that lead for hope of the Gospel taking root amongst Japanese outside of their culture.

A number of PCA retired pastors took short-term assignments to oversee the emerging churches in the Sydney/Canberra area while career missionaries were on HMA. There are now three mission works and two particular churches operating with eight elders and two deacons ordained and in ministry.

#### B. The Middle East

The unrest in the Middle East has proven to be a testing time for many of our folks with ramifications being felt across North Africa and Central and South Asia. At this writing all teams have chosen to remain in place as a witness to the people.

#### C. Vietnamese Ministry

MTW missionary, Dr. Hi Truong has made a change in assignment with the opening of Eastern Europe. Under the Communist regimes thousands of Vietnamese were sent as "payment" for Vietnam debts to the Eastern bloc nations. The Lord has opened a very significant ministry to Vietnamese for the Truongs.

#### D. Tokyo/Chiba

The new team is beginning to move out of language training to church-planting ministry and has at present over 200 contacts through English outreach ministry. The team has experienced several firsts such as a baptism, a building erected, a special prayer service and the first Japanese Christian family committing itself to the first church.

#### E. Manila, Philippines

A significant appointment of a church-planting team leader in the person of Rev. Paul Taylor in February enables MTW to take one step further in its vision for establishing Reformed and Presbyterian churches in the Far East.

#### F. Taiwan, Christ's College

A strategic long-range planning process was initiated and is being implemented with a view to developing a three-fold vision of:



## APPENDICES

1. Training and developing workers to reach the Chinese peoples with the Gospel of Jesus Christ;
2. Equipping servants to plant and renew Chinese churches; and
3. The Christianization of Chinese culture.

Seven hundred and eighty (780) students are enrolled at the college.

### G. The Soviet Union

God has provided an unusual opportunity to unite with several mission organizations to establish a Christian oriented Management Training Institute in Alma-Ata, Kazakhstan, USSR. Classes are expected to begin October 1991 for middle managers, specialists, senior management of business enterprises and senior government officials. This institute will be the organizational springboard for evangelism and discipleship among the Soviet Muslims. This unreached people group of approximately 10 million people has only 20 known believers. It is part of the larger Turkic Muslim people group of Central Asia with 125 million Muslims, and no known indigenous church.

### H. New Churches Started

New church starts in Pedregal and Lomas, Mexico; one in Cusco, Peru; two in Lisbon, Portugal; two in Abidjan, Cote d'Ivoire; two in Santiago, Chile; one in each of Paris, France; Tokyo and Nagoya, Japan.

#### I. New Church-Planting Team

New team for Chile - Viva del Mar/Valparaiso area

#### J. New Fields Opened

First missionaries arrive on the new fields of Madrid, Spain; Milan, Italy; and Bogota, Colombia.

#### K. USA/Mexico Border Ministry

Rev. Moises Zapata of Merida, Mexico, was appointed border coordinator for the ministry along the U.S./Mexican border.

L. A visit to Brazil and Paraguay has opened a whole new realm of part-nering relationships with the Presbyterian Church of Brazil. They range from regular church-planting teams in Brazil to a joint venture in Angola. This includes training for their cross-cultural workers and professors of missiology for their seminaries.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

M. One major goal of MTW's short-term program, Servants in Missions Abroad (SIMA), is to recruit the next generation of career missionaries for MTW. Twenty-seven (27) percent of the career missionaries accepted during 1990 were influenced in their call to career missionary service through a SIMA short-term experience.

### N. SIMA's Growth

SIMA continues to grow rapidly in terms of numbers and scope of ministry. A six-year track of growth rate reveals:

1986 - 280	1989 - 1100
1987 - 580	1990 - 1300
1988 - 990	1991 - 2000 (projected)

Most of this growth is being seen in the numbers of people involved in SIMA's two-week opportunities. Especially exciting to note is that over 800 high-school students were exposed to cross-cultural ministry in 1990. The Lord only knows what this might mean for MTW's mission-ary force and the PCA as a whole in the coming years.

### O. Distribution of Funds

The following is the program distribution of funds donated to MTW.

Church Planting	60.0%
Theological Education	9.1%
Leadership	5.4%
Support Technical	6.0%
Medical Ministries	3.9%
Church Nurture	4.9%
Bible Translation	3.4%
Evangelism/Discipleship	5.1%
Retirees	2.0%
Education	2.2%

## VI. RECOMMENDATIONS

The Committee on Mission to the World makes the following recommendations to the Nineteenth General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America:

1. That the General Assembly express its gratitude to God for the staff, the missionaries and candidates of MTW and that we continue to ask Him to supply their physical, spiritual and emotional needs.

## APPENDICES

2. That the General Assembly express its appreciation to the members, churches and presbyteries of the PCA for their faithful prayers and financial support for the work and ministry of MTW.
3. That the General Assembly express its gratitude to teaching elder, John E. Kyle, for his excellent service as coordinator of Mission to the World and that he be re-elected to the office of coordinator.
4. That the General Assembly express its appreciation for the senior staff of MTW and their dedicated service to our church and the cause of missions around the world.
5. That May 17, 1992 be set as the Day of Prayer for World Evangelization and that the General Assembly unite in prayer that God would send many more laborers to His harvest field.
6. That the seminaries and colleges involved in training PCA candidates for ministries and PCA churches be urged to promote the need for both teaching and ruling elders to serve on Mission to the World church-planting teams.
7. That the proposed budgets of MTW and SIMA, as presented through the Administrative Committee, be approved.
8. That the cooperative agreement with the Black Forest Academy be approved.
9. That the cooperative agreement with Christian Literature Crusade be approved.
10. That the cooperative agreement with Church Resource Ministries be approved.
11. That the cooperative agreement with Project Nehemiah, Inc., be approved.

### VII. CONCLUSION

This report, along with gratitude to God, comes to the General Assembly with the approval of the Committee on Mission to the World currently serving the church.

#### SERVANTS IN MISSIONS ABROAD SUBCOMMITTEE

Class of 1991

RE Thomas Conway  
TE Ben Konopa  
TE Randy Smith  
RE Bill Gordy

Class of 1992

TE Shelton Sanford  
RE Scott Seaton  
RE Gerald Sovereign  
TE John Wood

Class of 1993

TE Hal Farnsworth  
RE Philip Gidiere  
TE Terry Mercer  
RE Jack Yarbrough

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ Dr. W. Jack Williamson, Chairman  
Committee on Mission to the World

# MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

## ATTACHMENT 1

Approved by the Eighteenth General Assembly of the PCA, June 1990.

### MISSION TO THE WORLD VISION 2000 -- PARTNERING IN WORLD MISSIONS

The Apostle Paul wrote to fellow believers in Philippi:

"... I always pray with joy because of  
your partnership in the Gospel  
from the first day...  
being confident...that He who began a  
good work will carry it on to completion..."  
(Philippians 1:4-6)

MTW's theme for the decade of the 1990's is:

WORLD EVANGELIZATION  
BY BUILDING THE CHURCH  
THROUGH PARTNERSHIP IN THE GOSPEL.

INTRODUCTION  
THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

What follows is our vision for the next decade; but because true vision is 360 degrees in scope, we begin by looking back to 1973. When the PCA unfurled its banner to the world as one of the true churches of Jesus Christ, it committed itself to the following principles:

- \* To be true to the Scriptures as the only infallible, inerrant rule of faith and practice.
- \* To be faithful to the reformed faith as the most accurate summary of the doctrine taught in Scripture.
- \* To be obedient to the Great Commission of Jesus Christ.

Mission To The World has sought to be faithful to these commitments. We reaffirm the statement from our Book of Church Order that the "work of the church is one work." We recognize that our task is but a part of the total work of the whole Church, and we acknowledge that MTW's task is but one part of the fulfillment of the Great Commission.

## APPENDICES

During the past decade, the average annual growth of the PCA has been as follows (adjusted for joining and receiving RPC, ES):

PCA churches	4.0%
Total membership	6.6%
Total contributions	17.1%
Total contributions to denominational ministries	11.3%
Total contributions to benevolences	14.7%
Per capita contributions to benevolences	7.0%

Mission to North America, our sister committee with responsibility for the U.S. expansion of the PCA, has set a goal of 2,000 churches by 2000 A.D., an average annual growth of 8.2% from the current 1,150. Using the rate of growth for the past 10 years, we project that by the year 2,000, PCA's membership of 455,000 will give \$294 million per year to benevolent causes. An MTW budget of \$66 million will maintain PCA benevolence giving to MTW at the current level of 22.5%.

This document reflects the MTW Committee's aggressive response to that portion of the task assigned to it. It is our purpose to envision the next decade as we present MTW's role in fulfilling our Lord's Great Commission in the 1990's.

### MISSION TO THE WORLD/SERVANTS IN MISSIONS ABROAD

We praise our God for His tremendous blessings upon MTW during the 16 years of its existence. One of the fastest-growing mission agencies in the world, MTW is the largest missionary-sending agency among reformed churches. Mission executives and agencies around the world have acclaimed MTW as being on the cutting edge of missions work.

As pleasing as is the acclaim of men, it is the Lord Jesus Christ who is the Head of the Church and Whom we serve. We pray our efforts have advanced His kingdom, have brought glory to His name, and have deserved the favor of His approval.

#### Achievements

Through God's grace, MTW has achieved the following significant accomplishments:

- \* Our missionary force has grown to 538 missionaries in 59 countries around the world.
- \* In fiscal 1988-89, contributions totaled \$12,155,000, as compared to MTW's first-year contributions of \$565,842, representing a growth of 2,048% during the past 17 years.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

\* Based on research conducted on 40 major cities of the world, MTW has selected 25 for church-planting teams and deployed teams to 18 of these cities, ministering primarily to middle-and upper-class people.

\* MTW has been a leader in cooperating with specialized mission agencies so that PCA personnel may exercise those gifts the Lord has given them. Presently we have cooperative agreements with 54 different agencies.

\* The first church-planting work has now been completed in Acapulco with the formation of a new presbytery which includes five churches, three mission churches, and one preaching point, with an average Sunday attendance of more than 1,000. Subsequently, missionaries have been redeployed to other areas. We expect that four additional teams will have completed their church-planting assignments within the next four years and will be redeployed.

\* Short term missions (SIMA) which began in 1981 with a handful of two-year missionaries, has grown to 986 missionaries who spent from two weeks to two years in cross-cultural service during 1989.

Because it is a young, flexible organization, MTW has had a unique advantage over most other mission agencies, both denominational and interdenominational. MTW continually redefines its focus in response to the changing world to which it ministers. Let us look at that world today.

### The Challenge

We live in an age of revolution. The last decade of our century will be marked by increasingly rapid change. Technology, travel, communications, people movements, political upheavals, growing cities, mass movements of refugees, and internationalization of business are some areas of radical change in human society. The following issues present formidable challenges to MTW.

- . By 2000 A.D., a significant percentage of the world's unreached people will be living in countries closed to traditional missionary activity.
- . Christians are a minority in the global population.
- . Islam, the largest non-Christian world-view of today, claims one of every five people.
- . The masses are moving to the cities. In 1980, 260 cities world-wide had populations of more than 1 million. By 2000, over 500 cities will have populations exceeding 1 million.
- . The population continues to grow, so that the world's people are becoming both younger and older simultaneously. For example, Mexico City has a

## APPENDICES

population under the age of 14 equal to the entire population of New York City!

- . Ten million refugees live in the world today--victims of war, revolution, oppression, and economic exploitation.
- . Almost 1 billion people live in extreme poverty.
- . The West has become so secularized that the traditional Christian world view is no longer the primary influence.
- . The center of Christian activity has moved to the Far East and the Southern Hemisphere. In Africa the Christian population is growing 500% faster than the population. In Latin America the growth is 20,000% faster. In Seoul, Korea alone there are 6000 churches, and it is estimated that more than 50 million Christians currently worship in "house churches" in China today. Consequently, the Two-thirds world is now sending out 25% more missionaries each year, and will, if present trends continue, be sending out more missionaries by the year 2000 than the Western world.
- . The many divisions of the evangelical church worldwide call for an effort toward accomplishing the common task of world evangelization.
- . Working with other evangelicals requires uncompromising commitment to the reformed faith.

How are we to be involved in missions in this world?

The world MTW is called to penetrate with the Gospel demands new strategies in missions. Like the "...men of Issachar, who understood the times and knew what Israel should do" (I Chronicles 12:32), so must we understand the times and know what we should do. Our strategy must be designed to permeate a world characterized by increased urbanization, poverty, hunger, millions of refugees, a secularized, nominally Christian world, and billions yet unreached by the Gospel.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### MISSION TO THE WORLD: VISION 2000

#### Purpose

Mission to the World will advance world evangelization with greater emphasis on developing and strengthening partnerships\* to plant and build the Church. Success will be determined by our faithfulness to God's word and can be measured by the qualitative and quantitative growth of that part of the Body of Christ to whom we are ministering.

#### Values

- . Ministering through teams made up of missionaries has been a strength of Mission to the World. This approach will be enhanced and expanded for greater productivity in our future ministries.
- . Mission to the World has traditionally emphasized partnership through establishing cooperative agreements with evangelical mission agencies. By 1989 we had made 54 such agreements. It is our desire to deepen these relationships in the future.
- . The people God calls into His service are MTW's most valuable resource. Enhancement, growth and the development of people to their highest potential will continue to be a major emphasis of MTW.
- . Enabling men and women of the laity to participate widely in world missions is an expanding area of concern for Mission to the World.
- . Forming partnerships with the emerging non-western mission-sending agencies and selected national churches is a priority in assigning our missionary force, as is developing tentmaking opportunities to reach inaccessible people.

The overall means of achieving these goals will be through actively establishing partnerships with other evangelical Christians worldwide who are committed to fulfilling the Great Commission by 2000 and beyond.

\* Definition = "Partnership is a broad term encompassing non-compromising working relationships between the PCA/MTW and local PCA churches, MTW and U.S. evangelical organizations, MTW and Two-thirds world churches, other mission sending agencies and nationals engaged in the task of world evangelization and planting churches among the world's unreached peoples."

#### Focus

##### . Prayer

The program of world evangelism is dependent on the prayers of God's people in the Presbyterian Church in America. We therefore issue the call to all our brothers and sisters to join and "ask the Lord of the harvest therefore to send workers into His harvest field." (Matthew 9:38)



## APPENDICES

### Unreached People Groups

A people group is "a significantly large grouping of individuals who perceive themselves to have a common affinity for one another, because of their shared language, religion, ethnicity, residence, occupation, class or caste, situation or combination of these." (Lausanne Committee for World Evangelization)

God, in His Sovereignty, has allowed thousands of people groups to be formed that share linguistic, geographical, racial and cultural similarities.

An unreached people group is "a people group within which there is no indigenous community of believing Christians able to evangelize this group." Missiologists estimate that there are still thousands of unreached people groups in which no viable church exists that can reproduce itself within its group.

At one time, people of our heritage were part of an unreached people group to whom others brought the Gospel because the love of Christ constrained them to bridge cross-cultural barriers. Today we are similarly constrained to carry the Gospel to existing unreached people groups.

At present MTW has 65 missionaries working in 25 specially-defined unreached people groups in evangelism, Bible translation and church-planting teams.

We envision that by 2000 A.D., MTW will have selected and/or entered 150 appropriate unreached people groups among whom we can utilize the gifts and skills of the PCA members to reach them effectively with the Gospel of Jesus Christ. This will be done through the training and deployment of nonresident missionaries, gifted national Christians, partnerships with Two-thirds world missions, professional persons in tentmaking ministries, Bible translation, and church-planting teams. MTW strategies will:

1. Pinpoint the location of these people groups in urban and rural settings.
2. Recruit personnel culturally adaptable, suitably gifted, motivated by the Holy Spirit, and specifically trained.
3. Challenge local congregations to adopt these people groups and support the PCA missionaries assigned.
4. Plant churches in these groups.
5. Leave behind structures which will disciple individuals and maintain the evangelical witness.

### Missionaries

By the end of the 20th century, MTW will have some 1,150 missionaries serving terms of two years or more. Approximately 78% of these will be career missionaries. These missionaries will be organized into several major divisions such as church planting, church nurture, support and technical ministries, and education.

A significant number of these missionaries will be working with men and women of like heart and mind in partnerships which will glorify God through the building of His Body.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### SIMA

SIMA will play a key role in its growth through expanding its work beyond short-term into program and personnel development. Approximately 22% of the 1,150 missionaries will be two-year missionaries under SIMA.

### Urban Centers

We anticipate that 80% of our field force will target the world's large urban centers. The remaining 20% will focus on geographic and culturally distant people groups.

### The Poor

Both scriptural teaching and world need compel us to deploy approximately 25% of our personnel and financial resources to build the Body of Christ among the world's poor.

### The Middle Class

While recognizing the numbers and the needs of the poor, we also realize that a major opportunity for us as Presbyterians is to reach the middle classes who will ultimately have a great impact on their worlds. These people constitute the battleground over which the various ideologies of this world are contesting. Basically they are unreached and the Gospel must be proclaimed to them.

### Non-western Missions

One of the key indicators of God's Spirit moving in the world is the emergence and flowering of non-western Mission organizations. We envision that nearly 10% of our missionaries will focus on this priority.

### Training

Training will be a major component of our system both at home and overseas. Training of laity, tentmakers, and church-planting team leaders will be needed for continued expansion of the Gospel from North America. Serving the Two-thirds world emerging missions movement and the emerging churches through available training resources of MTW and PCA will be an important component for cooperation in evangelism.

### Laity

If the world is to be evangelized, the men and women of the laity must be mobilized to accomplish the task. We propose to use many approaches to mobilize this body through practical, ministry-based training.

### Key Result Areas

The following are the crucial areas where we must achieve a standard of excellent performance if MTW is to accomplish its purpose by 2000 A.D.

- . Prayer
- . Church planting/building the Body of Christ
- . Deepening partnership relationships

## APPENDICES

- . Personnel
  - . Expanding Servants in Missions Abroad
  - . Deploying Laity
  - . Participating with Two-thirds world missions
  - . Tentmaking
  - . Training
  - . Improving finance and administration functions
2. The training will be done in partnership, utilizing existing training programs and materials and institutions.
  3. MTW will facilitate training for Two-thirds world missions, sister denominations and agencies.

### J. FINANCE/ADMINISTRATION

#### Goals

1. With 1150 missionaries
  - a. Office staff overall increase by 20 to 63 people
  - b. Unrestricted gifts to double to \$1,500,000
  - c. reduction of deficit missionary accounts by tighter departure control and requesting one-time expenses to be on hand prior to expenditure.
  - d. Reduction of administrative costs from 13.7% to 12%
  - e. Maintain strict controls on mission field budgets with the purpose of proper funding
  - f. Through the establishing of proper deputation scheduling, reduce costs and time needed to raise support with the assistance of church relations staff
  - g. Estimated annual revenue of \$37,700,000

Respectfully submitted  
/s/ John Kyle

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### ATTACHMENT 2

#### Field Reports

##### **Australia, Brisbane Church-Planting Team**

The Queensland, Australia, Church-Planting Team of Mission to the World has much to give praise and thanks to God for the way in which he has blessed the work in Queensland during the past year. In spite of the fact that the team again suffered blows to its personnel recruitment with the Dan Rowton family being seconded to the Navigators, the Snows resigning from MTW during their itineration, a SIMA couple going career and being reassigned, and another SIMA worker returning to the US after only nine months on the field, yet the Lord has given the Brisbane team a most fruitful year.

The team's vision statement calls for the establishment of five churches and two mission works by the end of 1994, but we must have additional personnel assisting us to see that realized. The loss of personnel and the delayed arrival of the Burch's have jeopardized the reality of our completing Phase II by the targeted date. We must pray that the Lord of the Harvest would send us laborers!

The Kiewiet family returned for its HMA after four and a half years in Brisbane. They returned with an overwhelming sense of completion of a portion of the work. Three of the four churches are fully self-governing and self-supporting. The fourth work begun by Aussies is beginning to move out of mission church status to that of a particular church. It is in no way dependent upon MTW for assistance.

The Brisbane team is very grateful for all the assistance SIMA has provided for the work here.

During this past year the team saw approximately 2200 exposed to the Gospel. Approximately 24 people made profession of faith in Christ. Overall Sunday attendance in the four Queensland churches is 350. There are 13 Aussie ruling elders now serving within those churches.

The Brisbane church-planting team is grateful to God for His evident continued blessing and for the prayer and material support of our sending congregations in the Presbyterian Church in America.

##### **Australia, Sydney Church-Planting Team**

The primary objective of the Sydney/Canberra team is to plant a presbytery of the Westminster Presbyterian Church, with boundaries from western Sydney to Penrith, South to Canberra, East to Bateman's Bay. At this date there are three missions churches, one particular church, and one preaching point with ruling elders in each of the mission churches and one Australian teaching elder.

## APPENDICES

For our objective to be completed, the team will focus on three goals over the next four-year period:

1. Nurture and consolidation of the existing presbytery.
2. Extension of the presbytery by planting four new churches through Australians (two in Sydney, two in Canberra).
3. Provide theological education for Australian men in order to fill the pulpits of the presbytery.

In the midst of human sin and weakness, we praise our God for His mercy towards our team and towards the Australians He is calling to Himself. Psalm 90:17 is a prayer than can be specifically employed for our setting.

### **Chile, Las Condes Church-Planting Team**

The team is in it's second year toward its goal of planting a solid presbytery in the East end of Santiago by the year 2000. Four of our five missionary units are on the field, the fifth to arrive in the fall of 1991. By that time we should have seven SIMA workers as well. We will receive Richard Crane from the National Presbyterian Church of Chile plus be involved with the work he has started in Providencia, a neighborhood adjoining our target area. By the end of 1991 our team strength will rise to 19.

The attendance at La Iglesia Presbiteriana Cristo Rey, the planned mother church, has increased from an average of 40 a year ago to a current 70. Membership has increased from 12 to 21. Our prime pastoral candidate, while showing initial promise, has had to be disciplined, which action has been beneficial to the church. Two other seminary students are currently being assisted in their studies by the church as well.

The first full year with Encuentro Con Dios, our outreach program, has gone well. Each of the four conferences has produced contacts in our target area, something we previously had not been able to do on a large scale. Due to a grant from Briarwood Presbyterian Church, we were able to bring in good speakers and produce top quality advertising. With our drug and abortion conferences we were able to reach into the schools of our area to touch some 2000 students which, in turn, led some of them to bring their parents to the services in the church in the evenings. The stress conference reached into the business community. In all, the four conferences produced 60+ new contacts and 9 Christians. All of the contacts were followed up by our Evangelism Explosion program where we saw an additional 19 conversions and also with our Greenhouse Bible study program which has an attendance of 35 to 40.

LeTourneau Ministries, the parent organization behind Encuentro Con Dios, has turned \$10,000 over to us for a building project from the Independent Presbyterian Church in Memphis, Tennessee. This gift is the first, we pray, of many which will help the mother church have a solid home in the next few years.

Each Encuentro Con Dios was preceded by a day of prayer, sometimes with fasting. The women held a two-day prayer retreat, and the youth spontaneously gathered for the same. Several of our youth are at the stage where they are actively discipling other

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

youth. The pastors and their wives have home Bible studies, supplemented by pastoral counseling. The spiritual basis for a unified church, aware of and standing against Satan's pressure, is building, with a plan heavy on evangelism, discipleship and of what God can do for His people in 1991.

### **Colombia, Bogota Church-Planting Team**

Bogota, Colombia, a city of over 600 square miles and some eight million in population, was selected by MTW in February 1989 as one of its next world-class city church-planting sites. Veteran missionary and team leader Tim McKeown was asked to phase out of Quito, Ecuador, where the vision for a presbytery was becoming reality and to turn his attention to Bogota, a city where less than one percent of the population claim to know Christ as personal Lord and Savior. During a one-year HMA during 1990, the McKeowns have recruited and begun training a team of five full-time church-planting units and one SIMA worker.

Cooperating with the team in Bogota will be cooperative agreement missionaries Rich and Ramona Wagner assigned to MTW/Wycliffe in Bogota, SIMA/Wycliffe school teacher Ms. Billie Kuykendall also assigned to Bogota, as well as Potomac Presbytery-supported retiring pastor Octavio Lopez and wife Rosa who have returned to their native Colombia to retire.

Thus far 50 percent of the team members have had previous missionary experience in Latin America! This is a direct result of the PCA/MTW insistence on "closure" as we establish presbyteries through team church planting and also because of MTW's persistence in promoting short-term SIMA assignments.

Recruitment continues since the team has already begun to think in terms of the ambitious goal of establishing a presbytery of 15 churches during 12 years of team ministry in Bogota! These 15 churches will reach into every socioeconomic and geographical setting of Bogota with the truth and the light. The team leader arrived in Bogota December 10, 1990, and should be closely followed by two other experienced team units (the David Strumbecks and Nena Cadiente). Another team unit (the Warren Fosters) completed cross-cultural training in Detroit during the summer of 1990 and hope to have enough support raised to attend language school during the summer of 1991. The fifth unit (Alan Kolodny) is completing seminary training at RTS in 1991 and has already begun his itineration and could possibly attend cross-cultural training in 1991. Other long and short-term candidates are being actively recruited at this writing to complete the team's personnel needs.

### **Cote d'Ivoire, Abidjan Church-Planting Team**

By God's grace, the Abidjan team has planted its first of the envisioned six Muslim-convert churches in the city. This fellowship is currently making the transition from mission church to particular church, national leadership is fully trained and ready to be installed. Four cell groups, which are anticipated to result in two new churches, are meeting in other sections of the city under the joint supervision of nationals and missionaries.

## APPENDICES

During this past year, one family has left the work and another has arrived from language school to replace them, maintaining the number of missionary units at three. This reorganization of the team has resulted in an increased unity, both among the missionaries and with the African leadership, which has actually enabled the work to progress more rapidly despite the chronic missionary manpower shortage. Two additional families are in preparation but are not anticipated to arrive for two years or more. God has blessed us with unusually-committed national leadership who are viewed increasingly as co-workers; their effective involvement in the evangelism program has made possible the multiplication of our outreach through geographic cell groups.

### **Ecuador, Quito Church-Planting Team**

The Quito team made significant advances in the areas of church growth, land acquisition, building projects, and leadership development. San Marcos set the pace in the area of church growth using a combination of well-publicized conferences, good preaching, attractive worship services, and home Bible studies. Starting the year with attendance around 125 and ended the year at over 275.

Fuente de Vida and San Pablo Apostol both started the year with regular attendance around 60 and ended the year at over 85. Palabra Viva and Cristo Vive took great strides forward with our first construction projects. Cristo Vive had their first worship service December 2 in a factory building that was ingeniously remodeled into an attractive church building with a sanctuary that can seat 200. Palabra Viva is 75 percent of the way to moving into their new building that will have a sanctuary seating 300. San Pablo, Fuente de Vida and San Marcos are proud owners of land purchased this year. In the area of leadership development we now have 18 people involved in the first phase of our pastoral training program. Over 40 people are involved in the advance discipleship programs that lead up to the pastoral training program

### **France, Marseille Church-Planting Team**

In January a new church building was dedicated for the growing congregation of Plan-de-Cuques. With close to 150 people in attendance, the building was packed! The usefulness of having this building cannot be overestimated as it gives a sense of permanency and identity to the people of the community whose culture associates church with church buildings. We see the building as a center for activities and outreach, a tool by which we can witness more effectively. Currently there are over 125 families who receive our monthly letter in which we announce programs and activities with a word of exhortation or encouragement included. These families have all attended some activity at the church for one reason or another, thus they receive these monthly letters because of some link with the church.

Helping in our outreach over the summer was the presence of SIMA summer workers, five in all. They helped with street evangelism, literature distribution, Vacation Bible School and by their presence at the various church activities. Such summer programs

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

give the work a higher profile, more credibility with the community and additional contacts to be followed up on.

1990 also saw the assignment of two additional couples to the team; Erick and Kathy Allen and Pete and Ruth Mitchell. Both couples are in the process of raising support and hope to be in language school by the fall of 1991. These couples are a precious source of reinforcement to the team. Their assignment leaves our team still short of personnel which are vitally necessary for us to reach our stated goals of establishing 3 to 5 churches by the year 2000.

As way of reminder, the Plan-de-Cuques church is the third work in which the Marseille church-planting team has been involved. The Ron Bergey family moved into the area after finishing up their two-year assignment in Brignoles. That work which we began to help some four years ago, by the presence of the Bill Johnson family, grew from mission status to a fully established church. Previously, the Hugh Wessel family had been involved with the team's first work in the very center of Marseille.

### France, Paris Church-Planting Team

The Paris Church-Planting Team is happy to report that the ministry in the Paris region is progressing in an encouraging way. We have come through a period of installation where over the last three years, four out of five members were involved in full time language study. Now with language learning behind us, we are entering into a new phase of team development and ministry.

Among the major advances of the past year are the following:

1. The team documentation was completed and approved by CMTW.
2. By the reading of this report, all members of the current team will have completed their language program and have been moved into the target area.
3. As a major part of our strategy, (investment in national workers), we have brought on our first national worker.
4. In response to a side door approach to ministry, the team has acquired a ministry/activity center which will serve as the focus of a regional evangelism effort.
5. The team has expanded its web of networking contacts to around 500 for the entire team and among these 500 there are at least 100 who are receiving a more profound exposure to the Gospel. The team goal was 1,000, but we are discovering a need to spend more time with those already contacted and so have stopped expanding the network for a time.

We have met our goal of 500 presentations of the Gospel, but we have not seen the response in conversions for which we have been praying. In fact, in this last year, we have seen no clear cut conversions through our ministry. What we are finding is that there is so much to undo in the life of a



## APPENDICES

Frenchman being exposed to Christ for the first time, that the presentation of the truths of scripture is a long process.

6. Contact among the youth has continued to yield fruit with a monthly meeting to which about 40 young people come regularly and with attendance up to 60.
7. The team is beginning to approach others in the region with a view towards partnership in a vision to reach the whole Paris area. We have seen some success in this but more with gifted individuals than with other missions societies.
8. The regional church is beginning to stabilize a small core group of 8 (outside of missionaries). There is an average attendance of 16 besides the missionaries. The total group gathered for worship averages 35. This number falls short of our goal of 30 additional attenders of which 10 are new converts. We had a goal of 15 "signed members" but this has not worked at all.
9. The regional church is beginning to embark on evangelism excursions. We had hoped to have an evangelism training program in place but have not yet had the human resources to do it.
10. Two associations have been formed, one for the team and one for the Regional church. These associations enable the team and the church to deal with financial issues more effectively. In relation to this, there is one Frenchman who has assumed "elder" type responsibilities and is well involved in the leadership of the Regional church.
11. There are currently two Bible studies out of a goal of four. There are 15 in combined attendance as opposed to our goal of 40.
12. There are currently four people in profound discipleship relationships.
13. Various evangelism efforts continue to take place, most of which are geared around relational evangelism.
14. Along with a heavy financial responsibility, the team has adopted a strategy of HMA rotation, visitation and active correspondence to provide the resources necessary to work in Paris. We have met the goal of a church budget of 5000 FF per month.

We would like to ask all who read this report to pray faithfully for an awakening to the message of life. We do not desire simply to assemble believers but to see new believers born to life. Pray that God would encourage us to both fire and discipline in evangelism. Pray that God would release the people of France from the chains of death.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### **Italy, Milan Church-Planting Team**

The campaign to reach Milan has begun! The Milan team is following a Seven-stage Plan to see a complete new and indigenous community of believers come into being there by 2005. The team is completing Stage Two (recruitment and itineration) and moving into Stage Three (language acquisition and culture adjustment).

As of December 1990, Stage Two is fifty percent completed with three missionary couples (Charles and Ilo McCoy, Dan and Bonnie Porter, and Scott and Linda Sieben) recruited. The McCoy's completed Stage Two and have begun Stage Three in Italy as of September 1990. The Porters near completion of Stage Two and have begun part-time on Stage Three. The Siebens are half-way through itineration. One couple/single is still to be recruited.

### **Japan, Nagoya Church-Planting Team**

With the conclusion of this year we are in the third year of our ten-year project to start three churches in Eastern Nagoya. In spite of the fact that the team has been short-handed this year with Jane Brinkerhoff on sick leave and the Bruce Youngs on home assignment, the team has taken substantial steps towards achieving its goals. First, in the area of church planting, big steps have been taken to establish the three churches with the purchase of property for the first and third church; the building of a three story multi-purpose building for the first church/center; the second church has located a rental building in the center of a new housing area as well as becoming an organized preaching point of the presbytery. Two, God has blessed our efforts towards achieving this year's goals ending March of 1991. There have been 7 baptisms, 10 conversions, and 12 "seekers." We are trusting the Lord for 15 baptisms, 25 conversions, and 30 seekers. Three, we are thankful for the dedicated and talented members of the church-planting team. In spite of the fact that they were called on to perform many tasks for which they had little experience nor language ability because two career missionaries were not there, four SIMA workers, one career couple and one single career missionary have done outstanding work. We are also greatly blessed with three dedicated Japanese Christian workers who have been an invaluable help to the team. We rejoice also that Jane Brinkerhoff could return to Japan in December and Wayne and Amy Newsome have arrived there to begin two years of language study.

### **Japan, Tokyo Church-Planting Team**

We now have two team families in our target area and the rest are a team nucleus in language school. We have begun evangelistic outreach in our target area and have begun outreach services that will grow into our first congregation.

During the past year a single career missionary graduated from language school and moved to the target area, bringing to three the number of units in our target area. The English outreach ministry grew to over 200 contacts, 100 in our target area and 100 at three partnering house churches in other areas. Three Bible studies were started. A regular outreach service was begun with about 25 Japanese in attendance. The first fruit of future harvests has been baptized and discipleship has begun.

## APPENDICES


### Kenya, North Kitui Church-Nurture Team

The past year has been marked by a shift in the focus of our team's ministry due to three major areas in which the Lord's sovereign hand can be seen. (1) We have experienced a shift in the personnel on our team: a decrease in the number with primarily pastoral skills and an increase of those with medically related skills. This personnel shift is appropriate to the other two shifts: (2) the necessary and increasing ability of the Africa Evangelical Presbyterian Church to maintain its own ministries, and

(3) our pursuit of new opportunities for spiritual ministry which are created by providing health care.

Our team has experienced several personnel losses. Stan and Donna Arms and Karl and Debbie Dortzbach both had to leave our team for family medical reasons. John and Kathy Lesondak completed a temporary assignment with our team. The missionary team members are now:

#### Mission to the World

Miss Eileen Hicks	Nurse Midwife
Mr. and Mrs. Mark Mollenkof (Clarice)	Nurse
Rev. and Mrs. Paul Meiners (Liz)	Pastor
Miss Lois Ooms	Community/health
Dr. Grietje Rietkerk	Physician
	Physician
Miss Corrie Van Galen	Nurse

#### Servants in Missions Abroad

Mr. and Mrs. Gary Nabinger (Jill)	Maintenance Training
Mr. and Mrs. Martin Sanderse (Marlene)	Administrator

As we have moved out of areas of ministry within our sister denomination, the AEPC, the leadership within the church moved to fill some of the gaps and expand into new ministries. Some key indicators of this growth are in the development of new leadership.

In 1990 more than five men completed their ordination exams. Several others are candidates for ordination and the denomination is operating their own Bible school which will present several more pastoral candidates each year. The A.E.P.C. has sent three of these young men as missionaries, two to neighboring tribes and the third to the Kenyan coastal city of Mombasa. These are important years for the church and our faithfulness in continued prayer is needed.

New opportunities for ministry are also developing which center on health care work. The history of Tei Wa Yesu Family Care Centre has been one of growth in number of patients as is reflected in this chart:

YEAR	AVERAGE PATIENTS/WORKING DAY
1987	138
1988	116

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

1989	153
1990	165

### YEAR AVERAGE WOMEN DELIVERING/MONTH

1987	68
1988	70
1989	83
1990	69

We want to praise God for the recovery of the team from the bandit attack the beginning of February of this year. We are very grateful for the response of the PCA to the Minuteman Appeal. About \$20,000 was received, which has helped in recovery, improvement of security at Muruu, and will make it possible for a telephone system to be installed to improve communication between the clinic and team homes.

### **Korea**

#### **Church Planting**

Four churches became completely free of all mission help, one completed a building project, and two more are in the process of building. Less than 120 of the original 1183 unreached villages in 1976 still need churches.

#### **Missionary Training**

Our missionaries taught and assisted in the mission's office of the Koshin Missionary Training Institute.

#### **North Korea Research**

The team has started gathering data on North Korea, in preparation for work there as soon as the door opens to missions.

#### **Seminary Teaching**

The members of the team are involved in teaching in four seminaries, especially in the training of students for home and foreign missions.

#### **Consultant**

The missionaries have had opportunities to serve as consultants in a variety of areas including:

1. Advisor for a Nationwide Missions Conference.
2. Serve as keynote speaker and workshop leaders in the Nationwide Missions Conference.
3. Write an article for a church magazine.
4. Help develop a Missions Manual for a large missionary sending church.

## APPENDICES

### Bible Studies

The team members and their wives are involved in Bible studies with pastors, young female professionals and young professional's wives, women, and high school and college students.

### Literature

The men continue to serve with a publishing society, to get conservative Christian literature into the Korean language.

### Mexico City, Lomas Church-Planting Team

During the past 12 months, 15 people joined as members of our first church and 8 adults were baptized. A second church-planting work was started in cooperation with the San Pablo Presbyterian Church of the National Presbyterian Church of Mexico. In these two groups we have a total of 45 average attendance on Sundays. We have made about 100 new contacts this year and 33 people made professions of faith.

We thank God that Mexicans are now actively participating in planning and ministry with two teaching in Greenhouse, one being certified in evangelism Explosion, ten being trained in EE, two leading small groups. We are currently ministering on three university campuses as well as to high school students. As in the past, we cooperated with the Pedregal team to sponsor several groups of high school and college students this summer. One team member, Dan Faber, is coordinating a project to translate the Dobson Focus on the Family videos into Spanish.

Also during 1990 we received one new MTW family on the field bringing our total here to four couples. Two other couples started language school and another is raising support having already learned Spanish during a SIMA term of service. We also have one SIMA missionary raising support.

### Mexico City, Pedregal Church-Planting Team

1. The first church, The El Shaddai Presbyterian Church, will have elders and deacons by April 1991. More than 85 people have accepted Christ. The Larry Trotters arrived from language school in June 1990, and Larry is the pastor of this church. The Bobby Browns are assisting in this church.
2. The Gary Watanabes will begin a new church-planting effort in Alvaro Obregon (delegation) in January 1991.
3. The Jerry Cross family has been on HMA since June 1990.
4. This coming year we will aggressively recruit Mexicans to be trained by us as pastors. We will partner with the National Presbyterian Church of Mexico in our church-planting efforts when possible. Prayer is becoming a more obvious part of our efforts in ministry.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### **Peru, Cusco Church-Planting Team**

The first church now has its own property, a Peruvian pastor (Rev. Nelson Ayllon), one ruling elder, 116 members and 16 in the current membership class with average attendance about 160. The second church began services in November 1990 with an average attendance of 30. 90 percent of these are native Quechua speakers.

The economic problems in Peru (we've descended to 4th world status) are reflected in lower giving and giving ability. Due to having to discipline two ruling elders we have a lack of male leadership. We have been unsuccessful in raising money for the second church and also in raising money to build the main sanctuary of the first church. The Peruvians are unable to pay for either.

Nevertheless, we have much for which to praise God. Many professions of faith (85 in 1990). We are the strongest church in Cusco although there are some other missions working among the middle class.

### **Portugal, Lisbon Church-Planting Team**

The year was one of intense struggle as we dealt with deficits, the reduction of our missionary force, changes in leadership in churches, and spiritual opposition. But as we enter the new year we suddenly realize how the Lord has improved our situation while we were in the clouds of change.

In relation to our goal of a 3-5 church presbytery, one is now legally constituted a Presbyterian church (the first in our ministry), two are training leadership for formation in 1991. Two mission works have been launch-ed, a third targeted for early '91. Leadership of the three churches is in the hand of nationals (Brazilian and Portuguese). The time is ripe for forming the presbytery in 1991 so we are on target for the five church presbytery in Lisbon in 1995.

Leadership development is not up to our expectations. One man was licensed in 1990 and two youth expressed a sense of calling to the ministry, a couple more to missions. We estimate that it will take another five years before we start to see the fruit of our ministries as pastors. Meanwhile, leadership training of elders and local church leaders is progressing.

The combined membership increased by 50% while many more are preparing for baptism. The arrival of a new missionary family to minister through sports evangelism has already resulted in dozens hearing the Gospel for the first time. Some of the new Christians are discovering gifts in evangelism.

Top priorities for 1991 are: evangelism, leadership development, presbytery formation.

### **Spain, Madrid**

After two years of building a strong foundation of team members and faithful supporters, the Madrid church-planting team is falling into place. In November 1990

## APPENDICES

we arrived in Madrid to begin the church-planting ministry in this historical city. In January 1991 the first of the five families forming the team arrived in language school in Costa Rica. In the Spring three of the other families should be ready for language school as well. One other family soon will be joining the team.

As we become more involved in the Spanish culture, God is giving a clearer direction and vision of what can be accomplished through the team ministry. The work is difficult but there are promising signs that people are becoming more responsive. They slowly are realizing that materialism and economic and political progress do not answer many of life's deeper questions. We are very encouraged as God brings together this team and gives us a vision for planting churches in this great city.

### **Taiwan Church-Planting Team - Shih Li, Taipei**

During the last quarter of 1990 the Shih Gwang Church was dedicated and has made steady progress. 28 to 30 adults are attending worship services. There were three baptisms on Christmas Day and approximately 35 adults attended the Christmas program.

They are actively involved in neighborhood visitation and occasional evangelistic meetings.

### **Taiwan Church-Planting Team - Miaoli County**

The work of the San Yi Gospel Center among the Hakka Chinese is attended by about 20 people on Sunday mornings. There were four new believers during the last quarter of 1990. Follow-up is extremely difficult. With the new believers and their need for discipleship and instruction the evangelistic thrust has been slowed.

The team has at least one evangelistic outreach per month.

Work among these spiritually oppressed people is very difficult and needs the prayers of the church.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
APPENDIX 3  
MTW MISSIONARIES

Adams, Rev. & Mrs. A. E. (Earl/Rosie)  
Adams, Mr. & Mrs. Steven P. (Joyce)  
Akovenko, Mr. & Mrs. James S. (Sue)  
Allen, Mr. & Mrs. Scott Erick (Kathy)  
Allen, Rev. & Mrs. William  
(Bill/Sharon)  
Altork, Rev. & Mrs. Richard F.  
(Barbara)  
Anderson, Rev. & Mrs. Sidney B.  
(Louise)  
[REDACTED]  
Armes, Rev. & Mrs. Stanley B.  
(Stan/Donna)  
Aschmann, Mr. & Mrs. Richard P.  
(Heidi Marie)  
Austin, Rev. & Mrs. Thomas (Ann)  
[REDACTED]  
Barnett, Miss Ellen S.  
Baughman, Mr. & Mrs. Loren (Pam)  
Baxter, Mr. & Mrs. John (Susan)  
Behrend, Miss Brenda  
Bergey, Dr. & Mrs. Ron (Francine)  
Bersach, Rev. & Mrs. Manny (Terri)  
Birdsall, Rev. & Mrs. Douglas  
(Doug/Jeanie)  
Black, Mr. & Mrs. Robb (Patti)  
[REDACTED]  
Bolton, Miss Rosemary  
Bordan, Rev. & Mrs. Jeffery (Patty)  
Booth, Mr. & Mrs. Dennis (Natalie)  
Boyer, Rev. & Mrs. R. Eugene  
(Charlotte)  
Brinkerhoff, Miss Jane  
Brooks, Mr. & Mrs. David (Gwen)  
Brown, Mr. & Mrs. Robert D.  
(Bobby/Mari)  
Bucklen, Dr. & Mrs. Keith (Janet)  
Buckner, Jr., Rev. & Mrs. James  
(Bonnie)  
Burch, Rev. & Mrs. John (Susan)  
Cadiente, Miss Nena  
Camenisch, Rev. & Mrs. Glenn D.  
(Frances)  
Campbell, Jr., Rev. & Mrs. John  
(Jack/Sherri)

Carney, Mr. & Mrs. G. Morris (Harriet)  
Carter, Miss Brenda  
Caviness, Rev. & Mrs. Don (Velma)  
Chambers, Mr. & Mrs. Garry (Anita)  
Chaplin, Rev. & Mrs. Carl (Becky)  
Claassen, Rev. & Mrs. Oliver (Helen)  
Clay, Mr. & Mrs. Henry (Wendy)  
Cobb, Miss Elyce  
[REDACTED]  
Coleman, Mr. & Mrs. J. Olin (Jean)  
Colson, Mr. Sanders  
Conroy, Mr. & Mrs. Dennis (Rhonda)  
Coulbourne, Mr. & Mrs. Craig (Ree)  
Courtney, Dr. & Mrs. Thomas J.  
(Tom/Jan)  
Crabb, Mr. & Mrs. Ken (Susan)  
Crane, Rev. & Mrs. Richard (Robyn)  
Crews, Rev. & Mrs. R. S.  
(Pete/Elizabeth)  
Cross, Rev. & Mrs. David L. (Barbara)  
Cross, III, Rev. & Mrs. Walter G.  
(Jerry/Peggy)  
Cvelich, Mr. & Mrs. Edward M. (Page)  
[REDACTED]  
Dangler, Miss Sally  
Davidson, Rev. & Mrs. Charles W.  
(Bonita)  
Day, Mr. & Mrs. William L.  
(Bill/Sherry)  
[REDACTED]  
Depue, Mr. & Mrs. Graydon  
(Greg/Diane)  
Deringer, Rev. & Mrs. Brian (Lorrie)  
DeWitt, Mr. & Mrs. Charles (Carol)  
Diaso, Mr. & Mrs. David (Dawn)  
Diebert, Miss Nancy  
Dillow, Mr. & Mrs. Michael (Janeen)  
Dooley, Miss Mari  
Dortzbach, Rev. & Mrs. Karl Dortzbach  
(Debbie)  
Douglass, III, Mr. & Mrs. Gillis (Gene)  
Dye, Rev. & Mrs. Richard (Dick/Ann)  
Edwards, Dr. & Mrs. Thomas  
(Tom/Connie)  
Faber, Rev. & Mrs. Dan (Dale)  
Faires, Rev. & Mrs. William  
(Will/Martha)



APPENDICES  
MTW MISSIONARIES

Farris, Mr. & Mrs. Edwin R.  
(Ed/Kathryn)  
Ferris, Rev. & Mrs. W. L. (Larry/Lisa)  
Fiol, Dr. & Mrs. David (Eleanor)  
Fleming, Miss Caroline  
Foster, Rev. & Mrs. Warren V. (Lana)  
Frank, Mr. & Mrs. Vernon R. Frank  
(Bud/Susan)  
Frederick, Dr. & Mrs. John R. (Gail)  
Gahagen, Mr. & Mrs. Craig (Heather)  
Gahagen, Rev. & Mrs. Donald H.  
(Don/Sue)  
Gibson, Mr. & Mrs. Herbert  
(Bert/Carole)  
[REDACTED]  
Gleason, Mr. & Mrs. W. Daniel  
(Dan/Bonnie)  
Goodman, Mr. & Mrs. J. William  
(Bill/Martha)  
Grubb, Mr. & Mrs. Robert G.  
(Glenn/Sharlene)  
Gutierrez, Mr. & Mrs. Gerardo  
(Gerry/Ruth)  
Harrell, Rev. & Mrs. Joseph R.  
(Joe/Becky)  
Hatch, Mrs. Alice  
Hatmaker, Miss Charlene  
Helms, Dr. & Mrs. Rob (Marilyn)  
Hendrix, Mr. & Mrs. Richard M.  
(Rick/Jan)  
Herron, Rev. & Mrs. Dan (Betty)  
Hicks, Miss Eileen  
Hivner, Jr., Mr. & Mrs. Richard  
(Rick/Clare)  
Hudson, Rev. & Mrs. Thomas  
(Tom/Carol)  
Iverson, III, Rev. & Mrs. Daniel  
(Dan/Carol)  
Jackson, Mr. & Mrs. William  
(Bill/Jean)  
Jennings, Rev. & Mrs. Nelson (Kathy)  
Jewett, Mr. & Mrs. Melvin  
(Mel/Charlotte)  
Johnson, Mr. Gary C.  
Johnson, Mr. & Mrs. Ronny  
(Ron/Lizanne)  
Johnson, Rev. & Mrs. William  
(Bill/Gale)

Johnston, Miss Judy  
[REDACTED]  
Jones, Mr. & Mrs. Lewis (Betty)  
Jones, Miss Pamela K.  
Jones, Dr. & Mrs. Peter R. (Rebecca)  
Karner, Miss Linda  
Kemp, Mr. & Mrs. Paul Robert (Louise)  
Kiewiet, Rev. & Mrs. David (Jan)  
King, Mr. & Mrs. Bryce (Noreen)  
King, Mr. & Mrs. J. Wayne (Julie)  
Klamer, Miss Lynn Suzanne  
Knauer, Mr. & Mrs. Ronald  
(Ron/Charlotte)  
Kobb, Rev. & Mrs. James (Jim/Debra)  
Kolodny, Mr. Alan  
Kroeger, Rev. & Mrs. C. Scott (Nancy)  
Krzyszowski, Dr. & Mrs. William  
(Bill/Susan)  
Kuch, Mr. & Mrs. Lawrence  
(Larry/Karen)  
Kuykendall, Mrs. Billie  
Kyle, Rev. & Mrs. Jayson D.  
(Jay/Maureen)  
Kyle, Rev. & Mrs. John (Lois)  
Kyle, Mr. & Mrs. Marc (Beth)  
[REDACTED]  
Lane, Mr. & Mrs. Bryan D. (Janet)  
Langford, Mr. Bruce  
Lee, Miss Mayetta  
[REDACTED]  
Leonard, Rev. & Mrs. John (Christy)  
Lesondak, Mr. & Mrs. John (Kathy)  
Levesque, Mr. & Mrs. Tom (Vicky)  
Linton, Mrs. Hugh M. (Betty)  
Linton, Mr. & Mrs. Philip (Phil/Janet)  
Lloyd, Mr. & Mrs. Robert (Ann)  
Long, Dr. & Mrs. Paul B. (Mary Jo)  
Long, Mr. & Mrs. Steve D. (Eva)  
Lyle, Mr. & Mrs. Joseph (Joe/Ann)  
Mahaffey, Mr. & Mrs. Robert  
(Bob/Sue)  
Mailloux, Mr. & Mrs. Marc (Aline)  
Manning, Jr., Rev. & Mrs. Fred (Betty)  
March, Mr. & Mrs. Cary (Charlotte)  
Marshall, Rev. & Mrs. Verne (Alina)  
Mateer, Rev. & Mrs. Samuel  
(Sam/Lois)

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
MTW MISSIONARIES

Mathis, Mr. & Mrs. Edmond  
(Ed/Sheryl)  
Matsinger, Mr. & Mrs. Jay (Nancy)  
May, Rev. & Mrs. Tom (Linda)  
[REDACTED]  
McCoy, Fam. Cucchi (Charlie/Ilo)  
McKaughan, Rev. & Mrs. Paul (Joanne)  
McKeown, Rev. & Mrs. Timothy A.  
(Tim/Becky)  
McLean, Miss Julia A. (Julie)  
Meiners, Rev. & Mrs. Paul (Liz)  
Michael, Mr. & Mrs. Ronald  
(Ron/Mary Jane)  
[REDACTED]  
Miley, Miss Gindy  
Miller, Mr. & Mrs. Dan (Debbie)  
Miller, Rev. & Mrs. Douglas H.  
(Doug/Ann)  
Mitchell, Jr., Mr. & Mrs. Petrie (Ruth)  
Mohrbacher, Mr. & Mrs. Carl (Yvonne)  
Mollenkof, Mr. & Mrs. Mark (Clarice)  
Morang, Mr. & Mrs. Kevin (Teresa)  
Nantt, Rev. & Mrs. Gary A. (Carol)  
Newbrander, Mr. & Mrs. Tim (Lyn)  
Newsome, Rev. & Mrs. Wayne (Amy)  
Omerly, III, Rev. & Mrs. George G.  
(Audrey)  
Ooms, Miss Lois  
Padilla, Mr. & Mrs. Tito (Kim)  
Park, Dr. & Mrs. G. Timothy  
(Tim/Lynn)  
Park, Dr. & Mrs. Hyung Young  
(Young/Soon Ja)  
Parker, Dr. & Mrs. John (Sue)  
Patterson, Mr. & Mrs. James T.  
(Jim/Mary Alice)  
Patton, Rev. & Mrs. Tom (Diana)  
Payne, Dr. & Mrs. Michael (Karen)  
Peck, Mr. & Mrs. Andrew E.  
(Andy/Sue)  
Pelletier, Dr. & Mrs. Allen (Marge)  
Peters, Rev. & Mrs. Stanley R.  
(Stan/Claudia)  
Pinckney, Rev. & Mrs. Daniel R.  
(Dan/Iara)  
Popp, Rev. & Mrs. Eric (Joy)  
Porter, Mr. & Mrs. Daniel  
(Dan/Bonnie)

Powlison, Rev. & Mrs. Hugh (Berenice)  
Powlison, Mr. & Mrs. Keith (Ruth)  
[REDACTED]  
Quarterman, Dr. & Mrs. Clayton E.  
(Clay/Darlene)  
Ramsay, Rev. & Mrs. Richard  
(Rich/Angie)  
Rarig, Rev. & Mrs. Stephen  
(Steve/Berenice)  
[REDACTED]  
Reid, Rev. & Mrs. Fred (Mele)  
Rietkerk, Dr. Grietje (Greet)  
Robfogel, Rev. & Mrs. William  
(Bill/Edna)  
Rollo, Mr. & Mrs. John T. (Claudia)  
Rowan, Mr. & Mrs. Steve (Nancy)  
Rowton, Mr. & Mrs. Dan (Sue)  
Rug, Rev. & Mrs. John (Cathy)  
Rusling, Mr. & Mrs. L. Van (Alice)  
Sawyer, Rev. & Mrs. Charles  
(Rick/Mindi)  
Scharf, Mr. & Mrs. Russ (Cherrie)  
Schnackenberg, Mr. & Mrs. Robert  
(Bob/Val)  
Schoof, Rev. & Mrs. Steve (Beth)  
Schorr, Mr. & Mrs. Robert A.  
(Rod/Sharilyn)  
Scott, Rev. & Mrs. Robert (Bob/Libby)  
[REDACTED]  
Sell, Mr. & Mrs. Dan (Robbie)  
Shane, Rev. & Mrs. John J. (Susan)  
Shelby, Mr. & Mrs. Bob (Dana)  
Shelden, Mr. & Mrs. Howard (Deidre)  
Sieben, Mr. & Mrs. Scott (Linda)  
Slawter, Dr. & Mrs. William (Kip/Judy)  
Sledge, Rev. & Mrs. Charles F. (Judy)  
Smith, Mr. & Mrs. W. Calvin  
(Calvin/Grayson)  
Sneller, Rev. & Mrs. Alvin R.  
(Al/Marilyn)  
Spooner, Dr. & Mrs. Arthur (Ursula)  
[REDACTED]  
Stevens, Rev. & Mrs. Carl (Irma)  
Stewart, Dr. & Mrs. James H.  
(Jim/Sue Ann)  
[REDACTED]

APPENDICES  
MTW MISSIONARIES

Strom, Dr. Priscilla (Pris)  
Strom, Dr. & Mrs. Richard B.  
(Dick/Donna)  
[REDACTED]  
Strumbeck, Rev. & Mrs. David M.  
(Susan)  
Talley, Rev. & Mrs. Jeffrey  
(Jeff/Esther)  
Taylor, Rev. & Mrs. Brad (Colleen)  
Taylor, Rev. & Mrs. Gordon (Beth)  
Taylor, Rev. & Mrs. Paul (Sarah)  
[REDACTED]  
Thomas, Mr. & Mrs. Robert (Carolyn)  
Thompson, Rev. & Mrs. Kenneth A.  
(Ken/Kim)  
Thrasher, Mr. & Mrs. James (Jim/Nan)  
Traub, Rev. & Mrs. William  
(Will/Judy)  
Travis, Mr. & Mrs. Edgar W.  
(Ed/Nitya)  
Trotter, Rev. & Mrs. Lawrence  
(Larry/Sandy)  
Truong, Dr. & Mrs. Hi Phan (Hi/Yen)  
Tucker, Rev. & Mrs. Eric (Conchita)  
Ulrich, Dr. & Mrs. Wesley (Beverly)  
Van Galen, Miss Cornelia (Corrie)  
Vick, Miss Renee  
Villa, Mr. & Mrs. Lorenz (Diane)  
Wagner, Mr. & Mrs. Richard C.  
(Ramona)  
Waldecker, Rev. & Mrs. Gary (Phyllis)  
Ward, Mr. & Mrs. Herbert  
(Herb/Kathy)  
Warren, Mr. & Mrs. Andrew  
(Andy/Bevely)  
Watanabe, Rev. & Mrs. Gary (Lois)  
Weeber, Miss Carol  
Weed, Mr. & Mrs. John (Ruthie)  
Wessel, Rev. & Mrs. Hugh S. (Martine)  
White, Rev. & Mrs. David C. (Barbara)  
White, Mr. & Mrs. David White  
(Robin)  
White, Miss Rebecca G. (Becky)  
Williams, Mr. & Mrs. Donald E.  
(Don/Terry)  
Williams, Dr. & Mrs. Steven Wilson  
(Steve/Rita)

Wilson, Rev. & Mrs. G. Michael  
(Mick/Michele)  
Wood, Mr. & Mrs. Kenton (Karen)  
Wood, Miss Susan  
Wood, Rev. and Mrs. William  
(Bill/Cristel)  
Woodham, Rev. & Mrs. Michael  
(Debbie)  
Woodson, Rev. & Mrs. Robert C.  
(Bob/Shirley)  
[REDACTED]  
Wroughton, Jr., Rev. & Mrs. James F.  
(Jim/Ellen)  
Young, Rev. & Mrs. Bruce D. L.  
(Susan)  
Young, Rev. & Mrs. Daniel James  
(Dan/Becky)  
Young, Rev. & Mrs. James W.  
(Jim/Tish)  
Young, Rev. & Mrs. Stephen T.  
(Steve/Sarah)

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
SIMA MISSIONARIES

Akin, Mr. & Mrs. Mark W (Virginia)  
Bakelaar, Mr. & Mrs. Peter (Diane)  
Barnett, Rev. Harry F. (Sue)  
Barnett, Miss Jan  
Baumgartner, Lori S.  
Blake, Mr. Jack Hickman  
Brown, Miss Judy  
Brown, Miss Roberta  
Brown, Mr. W. Larry (Larry)  
Carley, Miss Lynn  
Carr, Mr. & Mrs. Billy (Bill/Susan)  
Clarke, Mrs. Gretchen  
Colson, Mr. Sanders  
Cook, Rev. Thomas Allan (Nell Deane)  
Dearman, Miss Jan  
Deibert, Miss Nancy  
Dryden, Mrs. Shirley Robbins  
Durrell, Miss Kim  
Dye, Mr. Roger  
Fiol, Mr. Allan  
[REDACTED]  
Fiol, Miss Tina L.  
Giardiniere, Miss Judi  
Gilchrist, Mr. Daniel  
Gray, Mr. Rick  
Hebert, Mr. & Mrs. David (Dave/Paula)  
Holman, Miss Beth  
Houser, Rev. & Mrs. Gordon J (Bobbie)  
Jakes, Mr. & Mrs. Glenn (Norma)  
James, Mr. & Mrs. Guyton (Virginia)  
Johnston, Mr. Jed  
Kendrick, Miss Yasmin  
Keuler, Miss Donna  
Kim, Mr. & Mrs. Jae (Margaret)  
Kinsman, Miss Robin  
Lass, Mr. & Mrs. Paul (Eileen)  
Light, Mr. & Mrs. Richard  
(Dick/Dorothy)  
Marsh, Miss Susan  
McClurken, Rev. & Mrs. Edwin  
(Ed/Barbara)  
McCraw, Miss Katrina  
Mellor, Miss Debbie  
Miller, Mr. Dan  
Mitchell, Miss Kelly  
Moore, Miss Sarah Lynn  
Myers, Mr. Jim  
Nabinger, Mr. & Mrs. Gary (Jill)  
Owens, Mrs. Cynthia Ann (Cindi)  
Parker, Mr. & Mrs. Joseph (Joe/Alice)  
Patton, Mr. & Mrs. Douglas  
(Doug/Kennon)  
Perkins, Miss Sandra (Sandie)  
Peterson, Miss Karen  
Pitz, Mr. Daniel  
Phillips, Miss Carolyn  
Reichel, Miss Andrea  
Richards, Miss Carol  
Richie, Miss Merrily Faith  
Rowe, Mrs. Debra  
Sanderse, Mr. Martin (Marlene)  
Shinholser, Miss Robin  
Soltis, Miss Tanya  
Stevens, Miss Carla  
Swisher, Mr. & Mrs. LeRoy (Judy)  
Tate, Mr. James B. (Jim)  
Taylor, Mr. Fred  
Thomas, Mr. & Mrs. Richard (Lisa)  
[REDACTED]  
Thompson, Mr. Bruce K.  
Timberlake, Miss Mary Elizabeth (Beth)  
Vaughn, Mr. Jeff  
Walsh, Mrs. Angela  
Wessman, Mr. & Mrs. Todd (Sally)  
Whitis, Miss Anne  
Woodson, Miss Elizabeth (Ellie)  
Yates, Mr. & Mrs. Timothy Paul  
(Tim/Barbara)  
Zuniga, Mr. & Mrs. Manuel A. (Gladys)

## APPENDICES

### ATTACHMENT 4

Listed below are the agencies with which Mission to the World has missionaries serving under cooperative agreements.

#### Mission to the World

Africa Evangelical Fellowship  
African Bible Colleges  
Africa Inland Mission, International  
Arab World Ministries  
Biblical Education by Extension  
\* Black Forest Academy  
Campus Crusade for Christ  
Chinese Church Research Center  
\* Christian Literature Crusade  
Committee on Foreign Missions of Orthodox Presbyterian Church  
Evangelical Foreign Missions Association  
Frontiers  
Greater Europe Mission  
Hapdong Presbyterian Theological Seminary/Korea  
International Discipleship and Evangelization Associates  
International Service Fellowship  
International Students, Inc.  
Inter-Varsity Christian Fellowship  
Language Institute for Evangelism  
Liebenzell Mission  
Logoi, Inc.  
Mafrag Sanatorium Association  
MAP International  
Maturity Audio Visuals  
Ministeries in Action  
Mission Aviation Fellowship  
Nairobi Evangelical Graduate School of Theology  
The Navigators  
O.C. Ministries  
Operation Mobilization  
Overseas Missionary Fellowship  
Presbyterian Association of England  
Presbyterian Seminary of the North  
Presbyterian Church of Victoria (Australia)  
Reformed Theological Seminary (France)  
Send, International  
SIM International  
South America Mission  
Vienna Christian School  
Westminster Presbyterian Church/Australia

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

World Harvest Mission  
World Mission Prayer League  
World Radio Missionary Fellowship (HCJB)  
Worldteam  
Wycliffe Bible Translators  
Youth for Christ

### SIMA COOPERATIVE AGENCIES

Africa Inland Mission  
\* Arab World Ministries  
Campus Crusade for Christ  
Church Resource Ministries  
Logoi, Inc.  
Mission to Unreached Peoples  
World Harvest Mission  
Wycliffe Bible Translators

\*Denotes all cooperative agreements signed since last report.

## APPENDICES

### ATTACHMENT 5

#### COOPERATIVE AGREEMENT WHEREBY MISSION TO THE WORLD MISSIONARIES OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA WORK WITH BLACK FOREST ACADEMY.

This agreement concerns missionary personnel who are members of the Presbyterian Church in America, as to denomination, but members of both mission organizations.

1. The appointment of the missionary will be subject to the approval of both agencies in accordance with the standards established by each agency.
2. In the event that one agency requests confidential materials gathered by the other, such materials shall be shared with the understanding that the materials shall be kept confidential by that agency.
3. The missionary candidate shall participate in any candidate and training program of Black Forest Academy as requested in addition to that of Mission to the World.
4. Mission to the World shall be the primary sponsoring agency for financial and prayer support and will give oversight to all itineration work within the Presbyterian Church in America. Black Forest Academy will be responsible for all arrangements and expenses of any itineration of the missionary within Black Forest Academy constituency.
5. Black Forest Academy will supervise the securing of visas and make other arrangements necessary for beginning field work.
6. Black Forest Academy shall be the directing agency in relation to missionary activities on the field. Changes in the current job descriptions should be made in consultation with Mission to the World.
7. Final discipline as relates to theology and morals rests in the proper church court of the Presbyterian Church in America. Administrative discipline is the prerogative of Black Forest Academy but it shall be exercised only after consultation with Mission to the World.
8. The Mission to the World missionary will have liberty in the full and free presentation and practice of the whole counsel of God as contained in and understood in the Reformed view, as contained in the Westminster Confession of Faith and the Larger and Shorter Catechism, recognizing that he must also respect the position of others in an interdenominational setting.
9. While on the field and while traveling to and from the field, the missionary shall be under the jurisdiction of Black Forest Academy.
10. While on the field, the missionary shall be an integral part of the field staff, sharing equally in privileges and responsibilities as any other member and subject to the policies and direction of Black Forest Academy.
11. Black Forest Academy, in consultation with Mission to the World, will establish the date of the home ministry assignment (furlough).

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

12. While on home ministry assignment, the missionary shall be under the jurisdiction of Mission to the World. Among the missionary's home ministry assignment responsibilities, consideration will be given by Mission to the World to assignments and additional study or training requested by Black Forest Academy.
13. While on home ministry assignment, the missionary will be expected to carry on an itineration ministry for Mission to the World within the constituency of the Presbyterian Church in America congregations.
14. The missionary will not solicit homeland constituencies of either agency for personal funds or field needs without the permission of the respective agencies.
15. The support quota, work budget, etc. of the missionary with Black Forest Academy will be established by Black Forest Academy. Mission to the World will receive and receipt the missionary's funds from the Presbyterian Church in America and transfer them monthly to Black Forest Academy to be transmitted to the field by that agency. Black Forest Academy will inform Mission to the World of funds designated for the missionary from other sources.
16. The missionary shall be under the hospitalization, retirement, and insurance plans provided by Mission to the World.

BLACK FOREST ACADEMY

_____	_____
Title	
_____	_____
Title	

DATE: \_\_\_\_\_

COMMITTEE ON MISSION TO THE WORLD  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

_____	_____
Chairman	Executive Director

DATE: \_\_\_\_\_



## APPENDICES

### MISSIONS ON THE BLACK FOREST ACADEMY BOARD

Board Chairman: Dr. Hardy Sunderwald

BFA BOARD MEMBERS: Harding Braaten\*, Bea Crane, Frank Dyck, John Dyck\*, Cornie Enns\*, Barbara Friedman, Ralph Harvey, Bob Janz\*, Eckhard Kraska\*, Fred Polding, Henry Toews\*, Virginia Vishanoff, Tom Walsh. (\* = c/o Janz Team e.V.)

#### U.S. OFFICES

#### CANADIAN OFFICES

#### BFA BOARD MEMBERS

#### CANDIDATE SECRETARIES:

Janz Team Ministries  
Box 711  
Buffalo, NY  
14240 USA  
Tel. (716) 842-6856

Janz Team Ministries  
John Kauenhoffen  
2121 Henderson Hwy.  
Winnipeg, MB  
R2G 1P8 CANADA  
Tel. (204) 334-0055

\*Janz Team e.V.  
Hammerstrasse 11  
7850 Loerrach  
WEST GERMANY  
Tel. 07621-86043  
Fax. 07621-12713

#### Arab World Ministries

Jack Cleland  
P. O. Box 96  
Upper Darby, PA  
19081 USA  
Tel. (215) 352-2003

Chris Smurthwaite  
P. O. Box 3398  
Cambridge ON  
N3H 4T3 CANADA

Virginia Vishanoff  
149 ave de Montolivet  
13012 Marseilles  
FRANCE  
Tel. 0033-9149-5467

#### Bible Christian Union

C. L. Boughter  
P. O. Box 410  
Hatfield, PA  
19440-0410 USA  
Tel. (215) 361-0500

Henry Friesen  
117 Dogwood Street  
P. O. Box 585  
Caronporty, SK  
S0H 0S0  
TEL. (306) 756-2564

Frank Dyck  
Piazza Garibaldi 22/4  
33010 Colugna (UD)  
ITALY  
(Bus.) 0039-432-406630  
(Hm.) 0039-432-403771

(Mission Office)  
204-1059 Upper St. James St.  
Hamilton, ON  
L9C 3A6 CANADA  
Tel. (416) 389-0335

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### Christian & Missionary Alliance

Dennis Johnson  
P. O. Box 35000  
Colorado Springs, CO  
80935-3500 USA

Arnold Cook  
Box 7900  
Postal Station "B"  
Willowdale, ON  
M2K 2R5 CANADA

Fred Polding  
(Office)  
Alliance Chretienne  
Missionnaire de France  
92100 Boulogne  
Tel 0033-1-46212422  
(Home)  
16, rue Rieux  
92100 Boulogne  
Billancourt, FRANCE  
Tel. 0033-4604-3468

### Gospel Missionary Union

Rex Sandiford  
10000 North Oak  
Kansas City, MO  
64155 USA  
Tel. (816) 734-8500

John Harder  
2121 Henderson Hwy.,  
Winnipeg, MS  
R2G 1P8 CANADA  
Tel. (204) 338-7831

Ralph Harvey  
Hausruckstrasse 34  
4843 Ampilwang  
AUSTRIA  
Tel. (0043) 7675-3320

### Greater Europe Mission

David Zehr  
Box 668  
Wheaton, IL  
60189 USA  
Tel. (312) 462-8050  
Fax. (312) 462-8059

Rugen Guertz  
P. O. Box 984  
Oshawa, ON  
L1B 7N2 CANADA  
Tel. (416) 728-8222  
Fax. (416) 579-2634

Bea Crane  
6, rue de la  
Deliverance  
68440 Habsheim  
FRANCE  
Tel. 0033-8965-3499  
Fax. 0033-8964-1700

### TEAM

Dave Brown  
P. O. Box 969  
Wheaton, IL  
60189-0969 USA  
Tel. (312) 653-5300  
Fax. (312) 653-1826

Nelson Bezanson  
5409 Eglinton Ave. West  
No. 100 Etobicoke, ON  
M9C 5K6 CANADA

Murray Carter  
(Barbara Friedman)  
Via G. Miller 4  
47100 Forli  
ITALY  
Tel. (0039) 1-6084-716  
Bus. (0039) 6909-5470

### UFM International

Charles Picgrass  
P. O. Box 306  
Bala-Cynwyd, PA  
19004 USA  
Tel. (215) 667-7660

John Beerly  
# 11-10210 Matheson Blvd. E  
Mississauga, ON  
L4W 4J9 CANADA  
Tel. (416) 238-0904

Tom Walsh  
5, Impasse des Genets  
69960 Corbas  
FRANCE  
Tel. 0033-7250-8053

## APPENDICES

### THE DOCTRINAL POSITION

#### We believe:

1. In one holy, almighty God, eternally existing in three coequal persons: Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.
2. In the verbal plenary inspiration of the Bible, its inerrancy in the original documents, and its supreme authority in faith, life, and doctrine.
3. That the Genesis account of creation is factual and historic and that man was created directly by God.
4. That the whole human race fell into sin in Adam, the head and progenitor of mankind, and that because of sin, all men are totally depraved and utterly dead in trespasses and sin, and that all men are eternally lost apart from acceptance of the salvation wrought by Jesus Christ.
5. That Jesus Christ is the eternal Son of God who, in the fullness of time, was begotten by the Holy Ghost and born of the virgin Mary, thereby taking upon Himself human nature and becoming God-man so that lost men might be redeemed through His substitutionary death and shed blood.
6. That salvation is a gift of God which is received only through personal repentance for sin and faith in the person and work of Jesus Christ.
7. In the rapture of the church universal followed by the personal, visible, and premillennial return of our Lord Jesus Christ as King and Judge.
8. In the bodily resurrection of Jesus Christ and the final bodily resurrection of all the dead, those who are saved unto eternal life in heaven, and those who are lost unto eternal damnation in hell.
9. In the reality and personality of Satan, the enemy of God and the deceiver of men, who will ultimately be cast into the eternal Lake of Fire.
10. That every believer received the person of the Holy Spirit when he was born again and that the Spirit-filled life, maintained by constant obedience to the Spirit in harmony with the Word of God, is one in which the believer appropriates the power and control of the Holy Spirit by faith on the basis of Scripture.
11. That the church universal is a spiritual organism composed of the regenerated who are baptized into that body by the Holy Spirit at the time of the new birth and that the local church, a visible manifestation of this body, has the responsibility to provide for the fellowship and edification of believers and to propagate the gospel in all the world.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### WORK AGREEMENT FOR A MISSIONS ASSIGNMENT WITH BLACK FOREST ACADEMY

#### ASSIGNMENTS

(Name) \_\_\_\_\_, missionary with (mission) \_\_\_\_\_, is assigned as a (job title) \_\_\_\_\_ to the Black Forest Academy (BFA) to serve according to the terms of this work agreement, BFA Philosophy and Policies, and to a written job description as attached. The assignment begins (date) \_\_\_\_\_ and will conclude (date) \_\_\_\_\_, subsequent to evaluation and with approval of the sending mission, BFA, and the missionary, the assignment may be extended. The missionary is considered career staff (yes/no) \_\_\_\_\_. Career staff must have a furlough schedule approved by the sending mission and BFA.

#### SENDING MISSION RESPONSIBILITIES

1. To provide salary, social security, medical, and other benefits and all other administrative and personal matters related to the mission according to the mission policies.
2. To provide opportunities for continued missionary training and spiritual refreshment such as Annual Conference.
3. To insure that the missionary produces a quarterly written report to the mission.

#### BFA RESPONSIBILITIES

1. To supervise the missionary in relation to his/her work and ministry at BFA.
2. To provide orientation upon arrival in Europe including assistance in settling in, establishing legal residence, and adapting to a new life and ministry at BFA.
3. To make available personal and spiritual support and encouragement.
4. To provide a written job description and a work assignment.
5. To insure that the following are observed:
  - a. Dorm staff has one day off per week, and at least one weekend off per month.
  - b. Holidays in conformity to BFA vacation policy and schedule not to exceed five (5) weeks per year, including one week at Easter, one at Christmas, and three (3) weeks in the summer.
  - c. Staff participation in all activities normally expected of staff, including regular staff meetings, professional development programs, and the Christian Educators Conference in July.
6. To provide the necessary funds and equipment to carry out his/her ministry as outlined in the job descriptions and within budget constraints.

## APPENDICES

7. To insure that the missionary is given the time to attend the sending missions field conferences and any other mission-related events for which approval is obtained by BFA and the mission.
8. To produce and make available to the sending mission an annual written evaluation of the missionary.

Name and Signature:

---

Sending Mission Official

---

BFA Administration

---

Missionary

---

Date

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### ATTACHMENT 6

#### COOPERATIVE AGREEMENT WHEREBY MISSION TO THE WORLD MISSIONARIES OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA WORK WITH CHRISTIAN LITERATURE CRUSADE

This agreement concerns missionary personnel who are members of the Presbyterian Church in America, as to denomination, but members of both mission organizations.

1. The appointment of the missionary will be subject to the approval of both agencies in accordance with the standards established by each agency.
2. In the event that one agency requests confidential materials gathered by the other, such materials shall be shared with the understanding that the materials shall be kept confidential by that agency.
3. The missionary candidate shall participate in any candidate and training program of Christian Literature Crusade as requested in addition to that of Mission to the World.
4. Mission to the World shall be the primary sponsoring agency for financial and prayer support and will give oversight to all itineration work within the Presbyterian Church in America. Christian Literature Crusade will be responsible for all arrangements and expenses of any itineration of the missionary within Christian Literature Crusade constituency.
5. Christian Literature Crusade will supervise the securing of visas and make other arrangements necessary for beginning field work.
6. Christian Literature Crusade shall be the directing agency in relation to missionary activities on the field. Changes in the current job descriptions should be made in consultation with Mission to the World.
7. Final discipline as relates to theology and morals rests in the proper church court of the Presbyterian Church in America. Administrative discipline is the prerogative of Christian Literature Crusade but it shall be exercised only after consultation with Mission to the World.
8. The Mission to the World missionary will have liberty in the full and free presentation and practice of the whole counsel of God as contained in and understood in the Reformed view, as contained in the Westminster Confession of Faith and the Larger and Shorter Catechism, recognizing that he must also respect the position of others in an interdenominational setting.
9. While on the field and while traveling to and from the field, the missionary shall be under the jurisdiction of Christian Literature Crusade.

APPENDICES

10. While on the field, the missionary shall be an integral part of the field staff, sharing equally in privileges and responsibilities as any other member and subject to the policies and direction of Christian Literature Crusade.
11. Christian Literature Crusade, in consultation with Mission to the World, will establish the date of the home ministry assignment (furlough).
12. While on home ministry assignment, the missionary shall be under the jurisdiction of Mission to the World. Among the missionary's home ministry assignment responsibilities, consideration will be given by Mission to the World to assignments and additional study or training requested by Christian Literature Crusade.
13. While on home ministry assignment, the missionary will be expected to carry on an itineration ministry for Mission to the World within the constituency of the Presbyterian Church in America congregations.
14. The missionary will not solicit homeland constituencies of either agency for personal funds or field needs without the permission of the respective agencies.
15. The support quota, work budget, etc. of the missionary with Christian Literature Crusade will be established by Christian Literature Crusade. Mission to the World will receive and receipt the missionary's funds from the Presbyterian Church in America and transfer them monthly to Christian Literature Crusade to be transmitted to the field by that agency. Christian Literature Crusade will inform Mission to the World of funds designated for the missionary from other sources.
16. The missionary shall be under the hospitalization, retirement, and insurance plans provided by Mission to the World.

CHRISTIAN LITERATURE CRUSADE

_____	_____
Title	
_____	_____
Title	

DATE: \_\_\_\_\_

COMMITTEE ON MISSION TO THE WORLD, PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

_____	_____
Chairman	Executive Director

DATE: \_\_\_\_\_

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### ACTIVITIES

The outworking of the foregoing purpose may include, but need not be limited to, the following:

1. To assist in promoting literacy programs, where such are necessary.
2. To organize the writing and translating of manuscripts.
3. To assist in establishing and, in some cases, operating printing presses where such can improve production and effect savings.
4. To publish, in any language, books, tracts and gospel magazines which will fill gaps in the existing range of Christian literature.
5. To open and develop Christian literature centers throughout the world where facilities do not exist or may not be adequate.
6. To equip and maintain mobile units of all types for the sale and distribution of Christian literature.
7. To develop mail order programs to reach areas not being covered by a center or mobile unit.
8. To serve other Christian groups with booktables, correspondence courses and lending libraries, and by sharing, when invited, in a preaching or teaching ministry.
9. To further the ministry of literature evangelism by:
  - a. Encouraging the distribution of Christian literature by every Christian.
  - b. Bringing the worldwide challenge to other Christians by a deputation ministry.
  - c. Encouraging men and women to enter the Crusade as full-time workers.
10. To cooperate with all likeminded groups in establishing and promoting a national literature fellowship to improve the production and distribution of vital Christian literature in their country and throughout the world.
11. In the development of this program, this fellowship may extend its functions into any of the accepted activities related to Christian work, though this is not intended to lead into actual church founding.



## APPENDICES

### CHRISTIAN LITERATURE CRUSADE

#### WHY?

The purpose of the crusade is to obey the command of Christ to make the gospel known to all nations, using Christian literature as a vital, God-given tool in evangelization and the building of the Church.

#### WHEN?

The Crusade was founded in 1941 as an international, interdenominational and inter-mission service organization. It is devoted to the production and distribution of literature true to the Word of God and the fundamentals of the faith as commonly held by all evangelical believers.

#### HOW?

Our major thrust is distribution by all possible means, including bookstores, bookmobiles, book tables, market stalls and door-to-door selling. We also engage in a publishing and printing program where the need exists.

#### WHAT ARE CLC's AFFILIATIONS?

Christian Literature Crusade is a member of the Evangelical Foreign Missions Association, the Christian Booksellers Association, and is a Supporting member of the Association of Church Mission Committees.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### STATEMENT OF FAITH

The following is the Statement of Faith to which all personnel must subscribe and to which all the Christian literature stocked by this fellowship must conform. We believe:

- . the Holy Scriptures as originally given to be the only inspired, infallible and authoritative Word of God.
- . that there is only one God, eternally existent in three Persons: Father, Son and Holy Spirit.
- . in the Deity of our Lord Jesus Christ, in His virgin birth, in His miracles, in His vicarious and atoning death through His shed blood, in His bodily resurrection, in His ascension to the right hand of the Father, in His mediatorial work and in His personal return in power and glory.
- . in the universal sinfulness and guilt of all mankind since the Fall, rendering man subject to God's wrath and condemnation.
- . that for the salvation of lost and sinful men regeneration by the Holy Spirit is absolutely essential.
- . in the present ministry of the Holy Spirit, by whose indwelling the Christian is enabled to live a godly life.
- . in the bodily resurrection of both the saved and the lost; they that are saved unto the resurrection of life, and they that are lost unto the resurrection of judgment.
- . in the spiritual unity of believers in our Lord Jesus Christ, who comprise the Church which is His body.

## APPENDICES

### ATTACHMENT 7

#### COOPERATIVE AGREEMENT BETWEEN PROJECT NEHEMIAH INCORPORATED

and

#### MISSION TO THE WORLD PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

Whereas the Board of Directors of **Project Nehemiah Incorporated**, hereby referred to as **Project Nehemiah**, are members in good standing and promote the Presbyterian Church in America;

Whereas **Project Nehemiah** is particularly concerned with the physical and spiritual well being of sister churches of the Presbyterian Church in America in Latin America (e.g. The National Presbyterian Church of Peru);

Whereas **Project Nehemiah** has been particularly blessed with success in aiding covenant children of our sister church during a time of great distress;

Whereas, the part time efforts of the Mission to the World missionary Reverend Gerardo Gutierrez and Mrs. Gutierrez have successfully guided the international operations of our efforts;

Now therefore **Project Nehemiah**, a tax exempt 501(c)(3) charitable organization incorporated in the State of Virginia, enters into a cooperative agreement with the Mission to the World (MTW) of the Presbyterian Church in America (PCA). Through this cooperative agreement MTW missionaries of the PCA will work with **Project Nehemiah**. The terms of this cooperative agreement are:

1. **Project Nehemiah** accepts the services offered by the Reverend and Mrs. Gerardo Gutierrez and MTW of the PCA.
2. **Project Nehemiah**, in consultation with MTW, will assign the Reverend Gutierrez to its Executive Director position. Changes in the job description should be made in consultation with MTW.
3. **Project Nehemiah** will provide facilities, necessary equipment, and supportive assistance for the realization of this professional work to be performed in the greater Washington D.C. area and Latin America.
4. The Reverend Gutierrez will be directly responsible to **Project Nehemiah** and its Board of Directors.
5. Final discipline as it relates to theology and morals will rest in the proper church court of the Presbyterian Church in America. Administrative discipline is the prerogative of **Project Nehemiah**, but it shall be exercised only after consultation with MTW. Discipline by either agency will not necessarily commit the other to the same action.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

6. The **MTW** missionary will have liberty in the full and free presentation of the Gospel as contained and understood in the Reformed view, and contained in the Westminster Confession of Faith, and the Larger and Shorter Catechism while recognizing that he must also respect the position of others in an interdenominational setting.
7. The initiative for vacation planning rests with **Project Nehemiah**.
8. The missionary shall not solicit homeland constituencies of either agency for personal funds or field needs without the permission of either organization.
9. The Reverend and Mrs. Gutierrez and family will be under the hospitalization, retirement, and insurance plans provided by **MTW**. Other financial arrangements shall be determined by **Project Nehemiah** in consultation with **MTW**.
10. The salary structures and field budget will be determined by **Project Nehemiah** in accordance with standards compatible similar position in the field of missions. **MTW** shall be the primary sponsoring agency for the financial and prayer support of the missions. **Project Nehemiah** will inform **MTW** of funds designated for the missionary from other sources.

This agreement may be rescinded at the request of either party upon receipts of acknowledgment by the other.

**PROJECT NEHEMIAH, INC.**

**MTW COMMITTEE OF THE PCA**

\_\_\_\_\_  
Board Chairman

\_\_\_\_\_  
Committee Chairman

Signed this day 13th of May, 1991.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Coordinator

## APPENDICES

### PROJECT NEHEMIAH OVERVIEW

FISCAL YEAR 1992 (JULY 1, 1991 - JUNE 30, 1992)

#### PURPOSE OF PROJECT NEHEMIAH

Our stated purpose is:

*"To provide aid to children orphaned and made fatherless by political terrorism, establishing orphanages and securing the leadership of nationals for the Project."*

#### PROJECT NEHEMIAH BACKGROUND

This effort began during a Sunday School class of McLean Presbyterian Church (PCA) studying the Book of Nehemiah and grew as a result of the Reverend Guterriez's burden to help restore hope to his homeland of Peru. During subsequent fact finding missions to Peru, our Directors were introduced to a growing segment of Peruvian society---Quechua refugees fleeing from the political violence in the interior to the outskirts of Lima. These Quechua refugees are descendants of and speak the ancient language of the Incas.

The Evangelicals among these Quechua refugees are doubly disenfranchised. Being Quechua, these refugees are a cultural minority, and as Evangelicals they are part of the religious minority. Many of these refugees are part of the National Presbyterian Church of Peru. Because of the financial crisis in Peru, the leadership of the church is unable to cope with the severe circumstances its constituency is experiencing. As a result, the orphaned and fatherless among the Presbyterian refugees are in great distress.

These covenant children of our sister church are subjects of great concern among supporters of the Project. To aid these children in distant Peru, a high degree of international cooperation is needed. Providentially, the network of relationships required to render assistance to the children under the Project's care has been established. This network is described later.

#### PROJECT NEHEMIAH VISION

The vision for **Project Nehemiah** has been developed from experiences of those concerned about the situation in Peru, members of the Board who have traveled to Peru, the Project's Board of Advisors in Peru, and the counsel of our Washington Board of Advisors. From all these sources we have developed our vision for assisting the Project's covenant children in Peru and other parts of Latin America. Our vision is as follows:

1. These covenant children will be supported through the network established and maintained by **Project Nehemiah**.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

2. The care that is required is physical, cultural, educational, and spiritual:
  - a. Physically, our vision is to provide the necessities of any healthy, growing child.
  - b. Culturally, our vision is to allow the Project's children to be nurtured in such a way that they maintain full cultural identity with their homeland.
  - c. Educationally, our vision is to provide the Project's children with the resources to function as leaders in their society, their church, and in the world at large.
  - d. Spiritually, our vision is to provide the foundation needed by the Project's children to fully embrace the Reformed Christian faith.
3. To assure the well-being of these children, our vision calls for the recruiting and training of internationals who will dedicate themselves to the cause of the Project's children. These leaders will be recruited by the process of Christian evangelism and discipleship.
4. With physical, cultural, educational, and spiritual care, in addition to the oversight of national leadership, we envision these children emerging as the future Reformed Christian leaders of their homeland. Thus our vision is a long-term one that must be protected over the years to see its future realization in the lives of the Project's children.

The following is an outline of the organizational structure applicable to **Project Nehemiah's** 1992 fiscal year operations:

**Washington Board of Directors:** Responsible for the oversight of the entire Project including the plans and actions of the Executive Director, the Washington Operating Group, Overseas Operating Groups, and conformity to our stated purpose. The following organizations will assist the Board:

- Washington Board of Advisers
- Law Offices of Webster, Chamberlain & Bean

**Washington Operating Group:** This group of paid professionals and volunteers is responsible for the execution of management and financial plans approved by the Board of Directors. Primary responsibilities include:

- Fund Raising Activities
- Corporate Communications
- Mail and Facilities Management

**Over seas Operating Group:** Headed by a trusted field agent (i.e. The Reverend German Santillana in Lima), the operating group is responsible for the operation of **Project Nehemiah's** day time assistance and full time assistance efforts. Operations in this case also means the securing of all "papers" required to operate orphanages and adopted children in

## APPENDICES

the homeland. These operating groups are tasked by the Executive Director and assisted by:

- Homeland Advisory Groups

### BOARD OF DIRECTORS

The following is a brief profile of **Project Nehemiah's** current Board of Directors.

Mrs. Marcia Coats: Marcia is a member of McLean Presbyterian Church (MPC) and is one of the founders of the **Project Nehemiah** vision after traveling to Peru to observe first hand the plight of Evangelical Quechua refugees. Marcia is chairing our current fund raising even (see attached). She is the wife of Senator Daniel Coats (R) of Indiana. Senator Coats is on our Board of Advisors.

Mr. Guy N. Faucheux: Guy chairs the Board and uses his consulting and business skills to assure the organization's success. After traveling to Lima and the interior of Peru, he was convicted of the need to address the Project's vision. Guy is an ordained ruling elder in the PCA and is assisted in this undertaking by his wife, Deanne, who edits the Project newsletter. Both are members of MPC.

Capt. L. L. Jackson, USN (Ret.): Leroy is a deacon at MPC and has been involved throughout his life with a number of overseas mission projects. Leroy brings to the Board his experience as a Washington based consultant and retired military officer. His presence on the Board provides the required coordination between **Project Nehemiah** and the other Mission Committee activities of MPC.

Mr. James A. Jeffrey: Jim is a Board member and treasurer of **Project Nehemiah**. Along with his wife Marie, Jim recently returned from a trip into the mountains of Peru. There he learned first hand about the needs and vision of the Project. As a businessman, Jim applies his accounting and finance expertise to assure efficient operation of the Project. Jim and Marie are members of MPC.

Mr. Edwin W. Keck: Ed is a ruling elder at MPC and has a deep interest in the field of foreign missions. Retired after a distinguished career in government, Ed has devoted himself to worthwhile endeavors such as **Project Nehemiah**. Although retired from government service, Ed keeps a full time schedule as a Washington based consultant, instructor, and board member of other Christian organizations.

Mrs. Valery Moorhead: Valery is a member of MPC and is also one of the founders of the **Project Nehemiah** vision. While travelling in Peru, she witnessed the desperate situation of Evangelicals and subsequently committed herself to the vision the Board all shares. Val chaired last year's fund raising event (see attached). She is the wife of Congressman Carlos Moorehead (R) of California. Congressman Moorhead is on our Board of Advisors.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The Reverend Gerardo Gutierrez: Gerry is currently Missionary-At-Large for the MTW Committee of the PCA. A native of Peru, Gerry's ability to articulate the desperate needs in his homeland has stirred large numbers of people to commit themselves to helping reach Latin America for Christ.

### CURRENT COMMITMENTS

**Project Nehemiah** is presenting providing aid to orphaned and fatherless children in Peru through day time and full time assistance programs.

Day Time Assistance (DTA): In Lima, **Project Nehemiah** is currently providing day time assistance to 108 children (see attachment for names) associated with the National Presbyterian Church. Providing nourishing meals once a week and immediate assistance in life threatening situations, day time assistance takes place at the following Lima locations:

- San Pablo
- Quirio (Chosica)
- Perales

Full Time Assistance (FTA): In the interior of Peru, **Project Nehemiah** has initiated orphanage activity to assist children whose parents have been killed by terrorism in the region. Seven (17) children are currently under the supervision of Ms. Demetria Montes and staff.

On September 14, 1990, full time assistance was started with the arrival of Ruben, Esther, Alejandro, and Rosa. Two days later, Edgar, Paulino, Richard, and Erlinda arrived. Nine of the most recent arrivals are:

1. Teodor Chavez Castillo - 8 year old boy
2. Rufina Romero Figueroa - 12 year old girl
3. Freddy Figueroa Huanaco - 8 year old boy
4. Mariela Mora Quispe - 12-year old girl
5. Maruja Mora Quispe - 10 year old girl
6. Freddy Mora Quispe - 8 year old boy
7. Ruth Milca Mora Quispe - 6 year old girl
8. Wilber Torres Rimachi - 10 year old boy
9. Elisio Torres Rimachi - 12 year old boy

### JOB DESCRIPTION OF EXECUTIVE DIRECTOR

The Executive Director of **Project Nehemiah**, as defined in Article IV of its bylaws, "is responsible for carrying out policy as set by the Board of Directors, for conducting the daily affairs of the Corporation, and for employment of all other employees of the Corporation." Under guidance of the Board of Directors, the Executive Director is directly responsible for the following activities:



## APPENDICES

Through personal evangelism and discipleship develop national leadership to support and project the **Project Nehemiah** vision.

1. Protect the Project's vision through the organization and coordination of corporate activity between the United States and Latin America.
2. Development of the financial resources of the corporation through special fund raising events and the solicitation of grants and individual contributions.
3. Coordination with cooperating organizations such as International Fellowship and McLean Presbyterian Church.
4. International travel to manage the interrelationships among **Project Nehemiah's** international operating groups.
5. Domestic travel to develop both the Project's financial resources and personal support.

### EVALUATION OF WORK PERFORMANCE

The evaluation of the Executive Director's work performance will be conducted by the Board of Directors. Success will be measured by observable growth in relation to our stated purpose. The following are our work performance goals by fiscal year (July 1-June 30):

<u>GOALS</u>	<u>1992</u>	<u>1993</u>	<u>1994</u>	<u>1995</u>	<u>1996</u>
DTA Sites	3	3	4	4	5
DTA Children	200	250	300	350	400
FTA Sites	1	2	2	2	3
FTA Children	25	40	50	50	60
National Leadership	5	10	12	14	16

### BANKING PRACTICE AND RELATIONSHIPS

**Project Nehemiah** currently conducts banking business with the following institutions:

- Crestar Bank of Northern Virginia
  - Money Market Account
  - Corporate Checking Account

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Banco de Credito del Peru  
- Corporate Checking Account

International bank wire used to transfer funds between institutions

### FINANCIAL PLANNING FOR FISCAL YEAR 1992

In its first fiscal year of operation, **Project Nehemiah** will raise of \$85,000. A special fund raising event is currently underway in Northern Virginia (see attached fund raising invitation). To date, we have not initiated our national fund raising effort. We expect that to commence when a full time executive director becomes available to the Project.

### OFFICE AUTOMATION STANDARDS

Administrative duties within **Project Nehemiah** offices will use the following software:

WordPerfect for word processing; DataPerfect for mail list management; and DrawPerfect for graphics.

### ATTACHMENTS

- Articles of Incorporation
- 1990 Highlights
- Day Time Assistance Children
- Fund Raising Literature

## APPENDICES

### ATTACHMENT 8

#### **COOPERATIVE AGREEMENT WHEREBY MISSION TO THE WORLD MISSIONARIES OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA WORK WITH CHURCH RESOURCE MINISTRIES.**

This agreement concerns missionary personnel who are members of the Presbyterian Church in America, as to denomination, but members of both mission organizations.

1. The appointment of the missionary will be subject to the approval of both agencies in accordance with the standards established by each agency.
2. In the event that one agency requests confidential materials gathered by the other, such materials shall be shared with the understanding that the materials shall be kept confidential by that agency.
3. The missionary candidate shall participate in any candidate and training program of Church Resource Ministries as requested in addition to that of Mission to the World.
4. Mission to the World shall be the primary sponsoring agency for financial and prayer support of the missionary. All itineration work within the Presbyterian Church in America shall be coordinated by the Committee on Mission to the World in order that adequate prayer and financial support can be realized.
5. Church Resource Ministries will supervise the securing of visas and make other arrangements necessary for beginning field work.
6. Church Resource Ministries shall be the directing agency in relation to missionary activities on the field. Changes in mutually accepted job descriptions should be made in consultation with Mission to the World.
7. Final discipline as relates to theology and morals rests in the proper church court of the Presbyterian Church in America. Administrative discipline is the prerogative of Church Resources Ministries but it shall be exercised only after consultation with Mission to the World.
8. The Mission to the World missionary will have liberty in the full and free presentation and practice of the whole counsel of God as contained in and understood in the Reformed view, as contained in the Westminster Confession of Faith and the Larger and Shorter Catechism, recognizing that he must also aspect the position of others in an interdenominational setting.
9. While on the field and while traveling to and from the field, the missionary shall be under the jurisdiction of Church Resource Ministries.
10. While on the field, the missionary shall be an integral part of the field staff, sharing equally in privileges and responsibilities as any other member and being subject to the policies and direction of Church Resource Ministries.
11. The missionary's field director will initiate home ministry assignment planning in consultation with Mission to the World and also with Church Resource Ministries.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

12. While on home ministry assignment, the missionary shall be under the jurisdiction of Mission to the World. Among the missionary's home ministry assignment responsibilities, consideration will be given by Mission to the World to assignments, projects, additional study or training requested by Church Resource Ministries. Progress and activity information during home ministry assignment will be provided for Church Resource Ministries.
13. While on home ministry assignment, the missionary will be expected by Mission to the World to carry on a deputation ministry for Mission to the World within the constituency of the Presbyterian Church in America congregations. Each agency shall assume the arrangements and expenses of deputation when the member is doing deputation for either agency. Primary home ministry assignment responsibilities will be within the Presbyterian Church in America under Mission to the World coordination.
14. The missionary will not solicit homeland constituencies of either agency for personal funds or field needs without the permission of the respective agency.
15. The support quota, work budget, etc. of the missionary with Church Resource Ministries will be established by Church Resource Ministries. Mission to the World will receive and receipt the missionary's funds from the Presbyterian Church in America and transfer them monthly to Church Resource to be transmitted to the field by that agency. Church Resource Ministries will inform Mission to the World of funds designated for the missionary from other sources.
16. The missionary shall be under the hospitalization, retirement, and insurance plans provided by Mission to the World. Other financial arrangements shall be as determined by the Church Resource Ministries.

### CHURCH RESOURCE MINISTRIES

\_\_\_\_\_ Title  
\_\_\_\_\_ Title

DATE: \_\_\_\_\_

### COMMITTEE ON MISSION TO THE WORLD, PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

\_\_\_\_\_ Chairman \_\_\_\_\_ Coordinator

DATE: \_\_\_\_\_

## APPENDICES

### CHURCH RESOURCE MINISTRIES

#### DOCTRINAL STATEMENT

- I. God exists and has revealed Himself to man. The Bible is a special expression of this revelation. This revelation also finds its ultimate expression in the incarnation of Jesus Christ. God is spirit and eternally exists in three persons---Father, Son, and Holy Spirit --- indivisible and of one substance.
- II. The Bible, all the books of the Old and New Testament, is Holy Scripture, the inspired Word of God, infallible and inerrant in the original writings. It is fully authoritative and our only absolutely trustworthy guide for faith and life.
- III. We believe that man was created in the image of God; that he sinned, and thereby incurred not only physical death, but also that spiritual death which is separation from God; and that all human beings are born with a sinful nature.
- IV. Jesus Christ is Lord of heaven and earth, preexistent with the Father, God of very God. He is the eternal Word become flesh, conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the Virgin Mary.  
He was crucified, suffered, bled and died. He was buried and three days later rose from the grave victorious over death and the powers of darkness. He ascended to the right-hand of God the Father, where He is glorified as Lord of all.  
He is the only Mediator between God and Man. He is the God-given atonement for the sins of the world, and there is salvation in Him and Him alone.
- V. The Holy Spirit convinces men of sin, effectually calls them, and is the Divine agent by whom men are born into the kingdom of God. He indwells, enlightens, and empowers believers to live in union with Christ.
- VI. Men are accountable for their response to the forgiveness, pardon, and reconciliation offered them in the Lord Jesus Christ. When we trust in Him, we are justified by God and adopted into His family. Failure to believe in Him results in eternal separation from God.
- VII. God's will for believers is for them to exhibit transformed lives evidenced by purity, holiness, and growth in Christ-like character. He desires that they each participate, according to their spiritual gifts, in the task of effectively sharing the Gospel message of salvation with those near and far who have yet to believe in Jesus.
- VIII. The Church consists of all those who have trusted the Lord Jesus Christ. The primary purpose of the Church is to worship God and glorify Him by building up believers and effectively reaching the world with the Gospel of Christ.
- IX. Jesus Christ will return, raise the dead, judge all men, and establish His glorious kingdom.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**CHURCH RESOURCE MINISTRIES  
BOARD OF DIRECTORS  
August 1991**

Rev. Dennis N. Baker  
CBA of Southern California  
2528 West La Palma Avenue  
Anaheim, CA 92801  
(714) 895-5457 (H)  
(714) 828-9400 (W)

General Director  
Conservative Baptist  
Assoc. of South Carolina  
  
(714) 757-2756 (Car)

Dr. J. Robert Clinton  
2175 North Holliston Avenue  
Altadena, CA 91101  
(818) 794-8551 (H)  
(818) 241-9684 (W)

Associate Professor  
School of World Missions  
Fuller Theological Seminary  
Pasadena, CA  
(818) 241-9684 (Fax)

Mr. Greg Fritz  
Caleb Project  
Post Office Box 101239  
Denver, CO 80250-1239  
(303) 347-1044 (W)

CEO, Caleb Project  
Denver, CO

Dr. Judy Lingenfelter  
14119 Avion Drive  
La Mirada, CA 90638  
(213) 941-0602 (H)  
(213) 944-0351, Ext. 5693 (W)

Associate Professor  
Biola University  
School of Intercultural Studies  
La Mirada, CA

Rev. Bill Hay  
228 Crest Drive  
Birmingham, AL 35209  
(205) 871-4366 (H)  
(205) 871-7002 (W)

Chairman, CRM Board  
Senior Pastor, Covenant  
Presbyterian Church  
Birmingham, AL

Mr. Pete McKenzie  
220 West Borromeo  
Placentia, CA 92670  
(714) 528-7608 (H)  
(714) 879-5540 (W)

U.S. Director  
Coral Ridge Ministries  
Fullerton, CA

Dr. Samuel F. Metcalf  
2430 North Harford  
Fullerton, CA 92635  
(714) 524-7513 (H)  
(714) 879-5540 (W)

President, CRM  
Fullerton, CA  
  
(714) 879-6076 (Fax)

## APPENDICES

### APPENDIX L

#### REPORT OF THE NOMINATING COMMITTEE TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

##### I. MINUTES OF NOMINATING COMMITTEE

The General Assembly's Nominating Committee convened at Atlanta, on March 19, 1991. The meeting was called to order by the Chairman, RE Daniel Domin at 1:08 PM. The chair read John 13:1-17, offered a brief devotion on servanthood, and opened a season of prayer.

TE Dr. Paul Gilchrist was asked to explain arrangements and procedures for the committee.

Committee members present were:

TE Carl Bogue, Ascension, 1992  
TE Charles Champion, Calvary, 1991  
RE James Elliot, Central Carolina,  
TE Neil Gilmore, Central Florida, 1992  
RE Dr. Chester Morgan, Grace, 1992  
RE Julian Gibson, Gulf Coast, 1991  
TE Jim Brown, Heritage, 1991  
TE Kerry Hurst, James River, 1992  
RE T. N. Samuel, Jr., Louisiana, 1991  
RE Calvin Beisner, Mid-America, 1992  
RE John High, Mississippi Valley, 1991  
TE William J. Swenson, Missouri, 1992  
TE F. Allan Story, Jr., New Jersey, 1992  
RE Jim Williams, New River, 1992  
RE Earl Witmer, North Georgia, 1992  
TE Mark Fairbrother, Northern California, 1992  
TE Peter R. Vaughn, Northern Illinois, 1991  
TE J. Philip Clark, Pacific, 1991  
RE Stephen Jack, Pacific NW, 1991  
TE Erwin Morrison, Philadelphia, 1991  
TE Timothy Habbershon, Potomac, 1992  
TE Douglass E. Swagerty, South Coast, 1991  
TE Henry Lewis Smith, SE Alabama, 1991  
RE Daniel J. Domin, Southern Florida, 1991  
RE Russell Toms, SW Florida, 1992  
TE Donald Hendricks, Southwest, 1992  
RE Willard Lutz, Susquehanna Valley, 1992  
TE David W. Hall, Tennessee Valley, 1991

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

RE Jack Sullivan, Western Carolina, 1991  
TE Carl Howell, Jr., Westminster, 1992

TE Peter Vaughn was elected clerk due to the illness of Karl Pasch. TE Paul Gilchrist was present as a resource.

The Committee was divided into five sub-committees by the chairman to consider the nominations from the presbyteries. The sub-committee's assignments were:

1. Covenant College, Ridge Haven, Inter-Church Relations
2. Covenant Theological Seminary, IAR, Administrative
3. MNA, Constitutional Business, Investor's Fund
4. MTW, PCA Foundation, Theological Examining
5. CE/P, Standing Judicial Commission

The sub-committees were dismissed to separate meeting places with the Chairman, the Clerk, and Paul Gilchrist available for information.

At 5:30 PM the Committee reconvened. Each sub-committee presented the nominations for the committees for which it was responsible. After handling Covenant College, Ridge Haven, Inter-Church Relations, Covenant Seminary, and IAR the Committee adjourned for dinner.

At 7:30 PM the Committee reconvened to consider the remaining nominations. After voting upon each individual board or committee slate, the entire report, with all nominations was unanimously passed. (See attachment.)

M/S/C The chairman to appoint a subcommittee to bring a recommendation to further proportional presbyterial representation on denominational boards and committees to the 1992 Nominations Committee. The Chair appointed:

RE Jim Williams, New River  
RE Calvin Beisner, Mid America  
TE Neil Gilmore, Central Florida  
RE William Lutz, Susquehanna Valley  
TE Allan Story, New Jersey - chairman  
TE Tim Habbershaw, Potomac

M/S/C The Spring, 1992 meeting date will be March 31 and April 1.

M/S/C The 1992 GA Nominating Committee Chairman will be Neil Gilmore, Central Florida; the clerk will be Allan Story, New Jersey.

The committee was adjourned in prayer at 10:00 PM, March 19, 1991.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ Daniel Domin, Chairman  
/s/ Peter R. Vaughn, Clerk



## APPENDICES

### II. DISTRIBUTION OF COMMITTEE MEMBERS BY PRESBYTERIES

(Exclusive of Class of 1991 and Alternates)

ASCENSION	MTW, CTS
CALVARY	AC, CE/P, MNA, CTS, FD, RH, CCB,
CENTRAL CAROLINA	CE/P, MNA, CC,
CENTRAL FLORIDA	CC,
CENTRAL GEORGIA	AC, CE/P, MNA, CTS, IAR, IFBD, FD, RH, CCB, TH EX
COVENANT	CE/P, MNA, CC, CTS, IAR, FD, TH EX
EASTERN CANADA	
EASTERN CAROLINA	RH
EVANGEL	2-MTW, 3-CTS, IFBD, SJC
GRACE	CE/P, IAR, FD,
GREAT LAKES	CC, 2-CTS, IAR, SJC
GULF COAST	MTW, RH,
HEARTLAND	SJC
HERITAGE	MTW, CC,
ILLIANA	AC
JAMES RIVER	CC, SJC
KOREAN CENTRAL	
KOREAN EASTERN	
KOREAN SOUTHERN	
KOREAN SOUTHEASTERN	
KOREAN SOUTHWEST	
LOUISIANA	IAR
MID-AMERICA	AC, SJC
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY	AC, CE/P, MNA, MTW, CC, TH EX, SJC
MISSOURI	AC, MNA, MTW, 2-CTS, INTCH
NEW JERSEY	CCB, SJC
NEW RIVER	CC
NORTH GEORGIA	AC, MNA, MTW, CTS, 2-RH, SJC
NORTH TEXAS	CC, IAR, CCB, SJC
NORTHEAST	INTCH
NORTHERN CALIFORNIA	
NORTHERN ILLINOIS	CE/P, CCB,
PACIFIC	IFBD, SJC
PACIFIC NORTHWEST	CE/P, MTW,
PALMETTO	2-CE/P, MTW, CC, IAR, RH
PHILADELPHIA	MTW, CTS, INTCH, CCB
POTOMAC	2-CC, CTS, INTCH, IFBD, SJC
SIOUXLANDS	
SOUTH COAST	
SOUTH TEXAS	CTS, SJC
SOUTHEAST ALABAMA	CE/P, MNA, CC, CTS, IFBD
SOUTHERN FLORIDA	CC, IAR, IFBD, 2-FD, TH EX, SJC

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

SOUTHWEST  
SOUTHWEST FLORIDA  
SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY  
TENNESSEE VALLEY  
WARRIOR  
WESTERN CAROLINA  
WESTMINSTER

MNA, SJC  
MNA, CTS  
SJC  
AC, 3-CC, IAR,SJC  
CC, CTS  
CC, RH,SJC

III. NOMINATIONS

ADMINISTRATIVE COMMITTEE

A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

*Teaching Elders:*

*Ruling Elders:*

William C. Hughes, MS Valley Donald J. MacNair, Missouri	Class of 1994 David S. Huggins ,Jr., TN Valley
William A. Fox, Jr., Calvary	Class of 1993 William A. Rocap, Jr., C. Carolina
Grady Love, N. Georgia	Class of 1992 Richard Herbert, Mid-America Scott T. Levy, Illiana
John D. Love, Calvary Charles E. Turner, Southwest	Class of 1991 Robert L. Liken, Philadelphia

Alternates

William H. Moore, IV, Potomac

Chairman of Committee or Board or his designate

B. TO BE ELECTED:

1 TE	Class of 1995	2 REs
1 TE	Alternates	1 RE

## APPENDICES

### C. NOMINATIONS:

L. Roy Taylor, Grace

Class of 1995  
Harold Whitlock, Heritage  
William Bonner, New Jersey

Robert S. Hornick, Gulf Coast

Alternates  
Robert Taylor, Pacific

### D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

RE William Bonner: New Jersey. President of the Quarryville Presbyterian Home. Has good administrative gifts, communicator, teacher; retired as Associate Comptroller of Campbell Soup Co.; was President of Harvey Cedars Conference Center for 32 years; Board of Philadelphia College of the Bible for 12 years; GA Nominations 89-90, Com. of Comm. MTW 89.

TE Robert S. Hornick: Gulf Coast. Pastor of Warrington PCA. Has the gift of administration, is stated clerk of presbytery, on the presbytery examinations com. 82-85.

TE L. Roy Taylor: Grace. Pastor of First PCA of Hattiesburg, MS. As senior pastor has proven abilities in staff supervision, ministry coordination, stewardship promotion, long-range planning, computerization, and building project management. Has served on a com. of comm. each year since the inception of the PCA.

RE Robert Taylor: Pacific. Owns and operates two nursing homes. An excellent administrator; has served presbytery well as moderator and on committees. GA Nominating 90; Covenant Seminary 84, 85, 86; MNA 82, 83; 1989 GA Arrangements Chairman.

RE Harold E. Whitlock: Heritage. Retired DuPont Co. research manager. Hal's specialty has been organizational efficiency, he has gifts of administration and discernment. GA Review and Control 88, 89; Com of comm. on Administration 90.

## COMMITTEE FOR CHRISTIAN EDUCATION AND PUBLICATIONS

### A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

#### *Teaching Elders:*

Paul Settle, Calvary  
Robert Smallman, N. Illinois

#### *Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1994  
Julian Davis, C. Georgia  
Steve Fox, SE Alabama

#### Class of 1993

Norman E. Harper, Grace  
John R. Riddle, Palmetto

Robert D. Rogland, Pacific NW

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Ronald L. Shaw, Palmetto  
James L. Shull, MS Valley

Class of 1992  
Phil Johnson, Covenant  
Barrett Mosbacker, C. Carolina

Glen McClung, W. Carolina

Class of 1991  
Stanley D. Wells, Heartland  
Lewis Hodge, TN Valley

Alan Carter, Evangel

Alternates  
William Huffman, C. Carolina

Advisory Members  
James E. Poteet, Director of Ridge Haven  
Frank Brock, President of Covenant College  
Paul Kooistra, President of Covenant Theological Seminary

B. TO BE ELECTED:

Class of 1995

One TE Two REs

Alternates

One TE One RE

C. NOMINATIONS:

TE J. Alan Carter, Evangel

Class of 1995  
Gary Flye, Southwest  
Richard E. Olsen, Heritage

TE Ross Lindely, Westminster

Alternates  
Rodney A. Andrews, SE Alabama

D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

RE Rodney A. Andrews: SE Alabama. CPA; very knowledgeable and articulate in CE matters, on presbytery CE com. since 83. "I am no big on the 'gift' thing. . . have taught adult SS from a reformed perspective for eight years."

TE J. Alan Carter: Evangel. Pastor, Faith PCA, Birmingham, AL. MA in Christian Education; presbytery CE com. 86 to present; GA Theological Examining alternate 89.

RE Gary S. Flye: Southwest. Senior systems analyst, Newmont Gold Company. Has gifts of teaching and administration; has been active on presbytery committees in both Southwest and Northeast presbyteries. GA Review and Control 87, 88, 89; Nominating 84, 85.

## APPENDICES

TE Ross Lindley: Westminster. Pastor of Midway PCA, Jonesborough, TN. Very active on personal, presbyteial, and GA level in CE. Home school teacher for 9 years, presbytery junior camp director 3 years, presbytery CE com. 82-87, chairman 84-87. GA com. of comm. CE & P 88.

RE Richard E. Olson: Heritage. Medicinal chemist, DuPont Merck Pharmaceuticals. Brilliant young PhD. who loves the Lord and reformed theology. Has taught youth and adult SS, interested in officer education.

### COMMITTEE ON MISSION TO NORTH AMERICA

A. Present Personnel:

*Teaching Elders:*

Harry Reeder, C. Carolina  
W. Wilson Benton, Missouri

*Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1994

John B. White, Jr., N. Georgia  
John Wheeler, Calvary

Class of 1993

Cortez A. Cooper, SE Alabama

R. Arthur Williams, SW Florida  
James C. Turner, C. Georgia

Class of 1992

William N. Whitwer, MS Valley  
Gerald G. Morgan, Southwest

Vacancy  
Authur Rogers, Covenant

Class of 1991

Charles E. McGowan, TN Valley  
Philip D. Douglass, Missouri

Charles McEwen, Evangel

Alternates

Kenneth Smith, New Jersey

John Russell, Covenant

B. TO BE ELECTED:

Two TE

Class of 1995

One RE

One TE

Alternates

One RE

C. NOMINATIONS:

Kenneth A. Smith, New Jersey  
Lewis Ruff, N. California

Class of 1995

Eugene Betts, Philadelphia

Alternates

Andrew Silman, Louisiana

John Jardine, Jr, Heritage

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

- RE Eugene K. Betts: Philadelphia. MD, pediatric anesthesiologist. Administrative gifts, a heart for missions (a missionary child in India 48-60). 10th year as chairman, Missions Commission, Tenth PCA. GA MNA 86-90; co-opted 90, 91.
- RE John Jardine, Jr.: Heritage. Chairman of the board of Chesapeake Utilities Corp. Presbytery church planting com. 90-. Grasp of demographics, leadership, organization, and interpersonal skills.
- TE Lewis A. Ruff, Jr.: No. California. Organizing pastor, Canyon Creek PCA. Frequent assessment center assessor; church planter seminar speaker; good at planting churches. OPC Home Missions 75-82; chairman 82-88; GA co-opted 90-present.
- TE Andrew Silman: Louisiana. Pastor, Plains PCA, Zachary. Gifts of faith, vision, and administration. Presbytery MNA 84-87, chairman 89-.
- TE Kenneth A. Smith: New Jersey. Pastor, Princeton PCA. An evangelist; weekly radio and TV. Presbytery MNA 87; administration chairman 84-89.

### COMMITTEE ON MISSION TO THE WORLD

#### A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

##### *Teaching Elders:*

Robert F. Auffarth, Heritage  
Jerram Barrs, Missouri

Frank M. Barker, Evangel  
Jack B. Scott, MS Valley

R. Thomas Cheely, Evangel  
Thomas E. Ramsay, Pacific NW

Addison P. Soltau, S. Florida

Sanders L. Willson, TN Valley

##### *Ruling Elders:*

##### Class of 1994

Gerald Sovereign, Gulf Coast  
James Wright, Palmetto

##### Class of 1993

Loyd Strickland, N. Georgia

##### Class of 1992

Donald MacKenzie, Philadelphia  
Nelson M. Kennedy, Ascension

##### Class of 1991

J. L. Thompson III, TN Valley  
W. Jack Williamson, SE Alabama

##### Alternates

M. C. Culbertson, North Texas

#### B. TO BE ELECTED:

##### Class of 1995

One TE

Two REs

## APPENDICES

- | One TE  | Alternates  | One RE |
|---|---|--------|
| <b>C. NOMINATIONS:</b>  |   |        |
|   | Class of 1995   |        |
| O. Palmer Robertson, Potomac  | Lyle W. Nilson, Heartland<br>James Banks, W. Carolina |        |
|   | Alternates  |        |
| Benson Cain, C. Florida   | Charles Burns, Heritage                               |        |
| <b>D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:</b>  |   |        |
| RE James Banks: W. Carolina. Teacher and high school administrator. Presbytery MTW com. 6 years, chairman 5 years; organized missions conference 90. GA MTW alternate 85, 86.   |   |        |
| RE Charles W. Burns: Heritage. Retired business manager. Missionary chairman of Faith PCA; treasurer of Radio Amauto; presbytery church planting com. 90, 91.   |   |        |
| TE Benson Cain: C. Florida. Retired missionary to Japan. Nearly 30 years missionary experience, 10 years US pastorate. Presbytery missions com. 70-77 (PCUS); in the PCA since 83; C. Florida MTW chairman 90-.                           |   |        |
| RE Lyle W. Nilson: Heartland. MD. Has been OPC missionary to Eritrea; 2 children have served with SIMA; board member for Cono Christian School; president of the local rescue mission. Various presbytery committees every year since 83. |   |        |
| TE O. Palmer Robertson: Potomac. Pastor of Wallace Memorial PCA. Widely travelled; presbytery MTW 85-90; GA Theological Examining Com. 82-88; MNA alternate 74, 75.   |   |        |

## BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF COVENANT COLLEGE

### A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

#### *Teaching Elders:*

Lonnie Barnes, New River  
Thomas G. Kay, Warrior  
C. Al Lutz, Great Lakes

Allen Mawhinney, C. Florida  
J. Render Caines, TN Valley  
Whaley Barton, Palmetto  
J. Robert Fiol, James River

#### *Ruling Elders:*

##### Class of 1994

Richard C. Chewning, North Texas  
C. H. Crews, Jr., Calvary  
Robert L. Frederick, TN Valley  
Donald E. Rittler, Potomac

##### Class of 1993

Mark Van Gilst, Heritage  
John C. Wright, SE Alabama  
Charles E. Carraher, S. Florida

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### Class of 1992

Frederick Marsh, MS Valley	Kenneth E. Avis, Covenant
John S. McNicoll, W. Carolina	G. Richard Hostetter, TN Valley
Lane G. Adams, Potomac	
Vacancy	Vacancy

### Class of 1991

Arthur Broadwick, Ascension	Robert Butterfield, C. Florida
Robert S. Rayburn, Pacific NW	Myron Dunton, Mid-America
Dale Smith, North Texas	Joel Belz, W Carolina, Chairman
Stephen Leonard, Missouri	

### B. TO BE ELECTED:

#### Class of 1995

Seven Members (TEs or REs)

One may be from other NAPARC denominations

#### Class of 1992

Two members (TEs or REs)

Eligible for 2nd term: Arthur Broadwick, Robert S. Raybutn, Dale Smith

### C. NOMINATIONS:

#### Class of 1995

TE Arthur C. Broadwick, Ascension	RE Hugh O. Maclellan, Sr., TN Valley
TE William S. Barker, Philadelphia	RE Robert Arthur Watts, Northeast
TE Robert S. Rayburn, Pacific NW	RE Robert G. Avis, Missouri
	RE Dwight L. Allen, N. Georgia

#### Class of 1992

TE Robert W. Bowman, C. Georgia	RE James Roberts, SW Florida
---------------------------------	------------------------------

### D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

RE Robert G. Avis: Missouri. Vice Chairman of A. G. Edwards, Inc. Gifts and expertise in finance and management; strong commitment to Christian education.

TE William S. Barker: Philadelphia. church history prof. Westminster Seminary. Dean of Faculty Covenant College, President of Covenant Seminary; superb reformed education. GA Cov. Col. 73-90; Ad Interim Comm. on GA 84-88; Judicial commission 82, 85, 86. Chairman of special presbytery comm. on Divorce 89 - present.

TE Robert W. Bowman: Central Georgia. Assoc. Pastor Independent PC, Savannah. Committee to Covenant College; requested by CC Board; experience as headmaster, DCE. GA Covenant College 86-89.



## APPENDICES

- TE Arthur C. Broadwick: Ascension. Pastor, Providence PCA, McKees Rock, PA. Works with Robinson TWP Christian School; presbytery moderator, MNA comm. chairman, and ministerial relations chairman. GA Covenant College 86-90; Nominating chairman, 83 84; MNA 75, 76.
- RE Hugh O. Maclellan, Sr.: TN Valley. Chairman, finance comm., Provident Life & Accident Insurance Co. Strong interest in Covenant college; has backed his interest with tangible service; a leader in the Chattanooga community; generous supporter of the college. GA Covenant college Board 83-90.
- TE Robert S. Rayburn: Pacific NW. Pastor, Faith PCA, Tacoma, WA. An alumnus of the College; currently Vice-President of the College Board. GA Covenant College 87-91; Theological Examining Committee 84-86. Presbytery Credentials 82-91; Ministerial Relations 88-91; stated clerk 90-present.
- RE James Roberts: SW Florida. Executive Director of Eckerd Foundation. Knowledge of charitable foundations; expertise on possible sources of support; strong commitment to Christian higher education.
- RE Robert A. Watts: Northeast. Engineer and Vice President, Maguire Group, architects/engineers/planners. Knowledge of mechanical and electrical engineering; community college teacher; head of 65 architects/engineers; chairman of Christian school board; wants to attend all meetings.

### BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF COVENANT THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

#### A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

##### *Teaching Elders:*

##### *Ruling Elders:*

##### Class of 1994

Richard P. Ellingsworth, South Texas	Bill Hay, Evangel
Michael N. Malone, Great Lakes	Vernon Pierce, SW Florida
James Reynolds, Missouri	James B. Orders, Jr., Calvary

##### Class of 1993

Richard W. Tyson, Philadelphia	Edward S. Harris, North Texas
William Spink, Jr., Covenant	G. Paul Jones, C. Georgia
	Robert B. Hezlep, Jr., Evangel
	Allen L. Knox, Jr. SE Alabama

##### Class of 1992

Charles Holliday, Jr., Ascension	John E. Spencer, Evangel
Stephen Smallman, Potomac	
James D. Hatch, N. Georgia	
Rodney D. Stortz, Missouri	
John W. Robertson, Warrior	

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### Class of 1991

John Reeves, MS Valley  
Bill Combs, South Texas

Clark Breeding, North Texas  
John J. Reed, Missouri  
Robert Burrows, Missouri  
Lanny Moore, SW Florida

### B. TO BE ELECTED:

#### Class of 1995

Six Members (TEs or REs)

Two may be from NAPARC denominations

Eligible for 2nd term: John Reeves, John J. Reed, Robert Burrows

### C. NOMINATIONS:

#### Class of 1995

TE Hudson Armerding, Susq. Valley  
TE David Alexander, Calvary

RE Robert Burrows, Ascension  
RE Art Stoll, Northern Illinois  
RE Robert E. Morrison, Potomac  
RE John J. Reed, Missouri

### D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

TE David Alexander: Calvary. Pastor of Mt. Calvary PCA. An alumnus of the seminary, vitally interested in its work. Presbytery CE comm. 89-91; Shepherding 85-88; Candidates & Credentials com. 73-83.

TE Hudson T. Amerding: Susquehanna Valley. Vice President of Quarryville Home. Has been President of Wheaton College; on the board of Columbia Seminary and the NAE. Requested by President Kooistra, presbytery concurs.

RE Robert Burrows: Ascension. Owner and CEO of several companies. Gifts of administration, teaching, giving. Requested by the Seminary. GA Covenant Seminary 88-91 (chairman of finance committee).

RE Robert E. Morrison: Potomac. President and Manag. Partner Morrison House Hotel. Gifts include leadership, administration, giving, and hospitality. Presbytery MNA com. Potomac/Delmarva 82-91.

RE John J. Reed: Missouri. Investment banker. Has currently served one year of an unexpired term on the Seminary board. He is a key player in Covenant's investment administration.

RE Arthur C. Stoll: Northern Illinois. Owner of Armin Industries, plastics molding company. Has been on the board from 1964 to 1990; chairman for many years. President Kooistra requested his nomination. Presbytery highly recommends him.

## APPENDICES

### BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF THE INSURANCE, ANNUITY, AND RELIEF FUNDS

#### A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

##### Class of 1994

James E. Shipley, C. Georgia

Dudley M. Barnes, Covenant

William T. Clarke, Louisiana

##### Class of 1993

Earle Morris, Jr., Palmetto

Gordon W. Frost, S. Florida

Thomas J. Stein, Great Lakes

##### Class of 1992

David Jussely, Grace

Ralph Paden, TN Valley

J. Allen Wright, N. Georgia

##### Class of 1991

S. Michael Preg, Jr., Missouri

Ronald Horgan, Mid-America

J. Edmund Johnston, Jr., MS Valley

##### Advisory Member

Paul Gilchrist, Stated Clerk

#### B. TO BE ELECTED:

##### Class of 1995

Three Members (TEs or REs or Deacons)

Eligibility for 2nd term: Michael Preg Jr. Ronald Horgan,

J. Edmund Johnston

#### C. NOMINATIONS:

##### Class of 1995

RE Denny Carew, Southwest

RE Ronald W. Horgan, Mid America

RE John Mardirosian, New Jersey

#### D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

RE Denny Carew: Southwest. Manager of Compensation and Benefits, Current, Inc. for 7 years, with company 17 years. GA com. of comm. IAR 90.

RE Ronald W. Horgan: Mid-America. Lawyer. Has gifts of administration and mercy. Presbytery Church Extension com. 82-90. Has attended every meeting.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

RE John Mardirosian: New Jersey. Project Manager, Penn Mutual. Over 30 years in the insurance business; applies Scripture to life; communications skills.

**BOARD OF TRUSTEES FOR THE INVESTOR'S  
FUND FOR BUILDING AND DEVELOPMENT**

A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

*Teaching Elders*

*Ruling Elders*

Class of 1994

Charles E. Simpson, C. Georgia  
Irv Wicker, SE Alabama

Class of 1993

Manuel Salabaria, S. Florida

Neil Adams, Pacific

Class of 1992

E. Lee Trinkle III, Evangel

Conley Moffett, Potomac

Class of 1991

Robert Wilcox, C. Carolina

In Ho Henry Koh, Korean Eastern

B. TO BE ELECTED:

Class of 1995

Two Members (TEs or REs)

C. NOMINATIONS:

Class of 1995

Robert J. Bailey, MS Valley  
Colin B. Coombs, Pacific

D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

RE Robert J. Bailey: MS Valley. Banker. Has served on 2 GA Judicial comm. as well as the Foundation com. of comm.

RE Colin B. Coombs: Pacific. Certified financial planner; owner, Petra Financial Group, Inc. Nationally recognized in the financial planning community, has served as national president of the Institute of Certified Financial Planners.

APPENDICES

BOARD OF TRUSTEES FOR THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA FOUNDATION

A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

Teaching Elders	Ruling Elders or Deacons
	Class of 1994
Loren V. Watson, Calvary	David B. Sincere, S. Florida
	Class of 1993
Randy H. Kimbrough, Grace	Robert C. Eberst, S. Florida
	Class of 1992
Thomas Kay, Jr., Covenant	Robert C. Ham, C. Georgia
	Class of 1991
	Ralph H. Lord, MS Valley
	R. Larson Mick, TN Valley
	Advisory Member
	Paul R. Gilchrist, Stated Clerk

B. TO BE ELECTED:

Class of 1995  
Two Members (TEs or REs or Deacons)

C. NOMINATIONS:

Class of 1995  
E. Andrews Grinstead, III, New Jersey  
Jean Owens, SW Florida

D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

RE Andrew Grinstead: New Jersey. Consultant. Managing Director Paine Webber 87-90; Director of Corporate Finance Drexel Burnham 86, 87; Vice President and partner Kidder, Peabody & Co. 84-86; Eli Lilly 76-84 GM of Latin American Operations. GA judicial commission 88, 89; several com. of comm.

RE Jean Owens: SW Florida. Attorney (primary practice in federal taxes and estate planning). Presbytery MNA com. 82-84, 90; stated clerk 76-79.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF RIDGE HAVEN

A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

*Teaching Elders:*

Richard O. Smith, N. Georgia

J. Allen Herrington, E. Carolina

Malcolm M. Griffith, Calvary

George W. Long, TN Valley

*Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1995

Howard Hokrein, C. Georgia

Class of 1994

Newton Brooks, Gulf Coast

Don L. Lloyd, W. Carolina

Class of 1993

Lindsey Tippins, N. Georgia

Class of 1992

Royce C. Waites, Palmetto

Class of 1991

Rene Schmidt, W. Carolina

*Advisory Member*

Charles H. Dunahoo, Coordinator of Christian Education and Publications

B. TO BE ELECTED:

Class of 1996

Two Members (TEs or REs)

Eligibility for 2nd Term: none

C. NOMINATIONS:

Class of 1996

Robert F. Brunson, Grace

Milton A. Wendland, SE Alabama

D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

TE Robert F. Brunson: Grace. Pastor of Thomson Memorial PCA, Centreville, MS. Extensive campus and youth ministry experience. Very interested in developing other conference facilities around the PCA.

RE Milton A. Wendland: SE Alabama. Farmer & John Deere dealer. Gifts of administration, compassion, and humility. Has not served on GA boards, but has been effective on bank, YMCA, session, and others.

APPENDICES

ASSEMBLY THEOLOGICAL EXAMINING COMMITTEE

A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

*Teaching Elders:*

*Ruling Elders:*

Robert Reymond, S. Florida

Class of 1993

Bruce Kitchen, C. Georgia

Douglas F. Kelly, MS Valley  
Curtis Crenshaw, Covenant

Class of 1992

John T. DeBardeleben, Philadelphia

Class of 1991

Joseph H. Hall, S. Florida

D. Clair Davis, Philadelphia

Alternates

Roy Gamble, SE Alabama

B. TO BE ELECTED:

One TE

Class of 1994

One RE

One TE

Alternates

One RE

C. NOMINATIONS:

D. Clair Davis, Philadelphia

Class of 1994

Roy Gamble, SE Alabama

R. Laird Harris, Heritage

Alternates

David Miner, New Jersey

D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

TE D. Clair Davis: Philadelphia. Professor of church history, Westminster Theological Seminary. Has not only teaching, but pastoral gifts. OPC Form of Government com. 66-76; OPC Ecumencity 86-88.

RE Roy Gamble, Jr.: SE Alabama. Director of the Layman's Study Center of Montgomery and Bible teacher at Trinity Presbyterian School. Chairman of music and worship com. at Trinity PCA; a faithful, active GA Commissioner.

TE R. Laird Harris: Heritage. Retired professor of Old Testament at Covenant Seminary. GA MTW 86-90. Combines humor, grace, wisdom and knowledge with commitment. Moderator RPCES 56; PCA 82.

RE David Miner: New Jersey. Carpenter. A missionary kid from India; a PhD in philosophy; adjunct professor of systematic theology Columbia Bible School; active in presbytery for more than 10 years. GA judicial commission 88, 89.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

COMMITTEE ON CONSTITUTIONAL BUSINESS

A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

*Teaching Elders*

Roland Barnes, C. Georgia

E. Crowell Cooley, N. Illinois

Rod S. Mays, Calvary

David R. Dively, Great Lakes

Craig Childs, Evangel

*Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1994

Richard Springer, New Jersey

Class of 1993

David C. Lachman, Philadelphia

Class of 1992

Granville Dutton, North Texas

Class of 1991

Donald Campbell, Eastern Canada

*Alternates*

Daniel Domin, S. Florida

B. TO BE ELECTED:

One TE

One TE

Class of 1995

Alternates

One RE

One RE

C. NOMINATIONS:

Craig D. Childs, Sr, Evangel

Paul E. Zetterholm, Mississippi

Class of 1995

Daniel Domin, S. Florida

Alternates

S. A. Miller, Westminster

D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

TE Craig D. Childs, Sr.: Evangel. Pastor, Community PCA, Moody. Has an in-depth knowledge of the *BCO*; presbytery examinations chairman, 86 to present; GA Constitutional Business alternate, 90-91; Judicial Commission (Knoxville).

RE Daniel J. Domin: Southern Florida. Retired elder at Coral Ridge PCA, Ft. Lauderdale, FL. Has gifts of administration and moderation; has been trustee, deacon, and clerk of session; presbytery treasurer and stated clerk; GA



## APPENDICES

Nominating Chairman 90-91; Constitutional Business alternate 90; com. of comm. Judicial Business 89.

RE S. A. Miller: Westminster. Retired organic chemist (Brunswick Company). 30 years an RE; has gifts of wisdom and prayer. Presbytery Shepherding Comm. 84-90.

TE Paul E. Zetterholm: Mississippi Valley. Pastor of Tchula PCA, Tchula, MS, and database analyst for the State of Mississippi. Service as moderator and comm. member as an RE in Central Florida 78-81 and as TE moderator and comm. member in Mississippi Valley 87-90.

### COMMITTEE ON INTERCHURCH RELATIONS

#### A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

##### *Teaching Elders:*

Robert Vasholz, Missouri

K. Eric Perrin, Potomac

Henry L. Smith, SE Alabama

Tim Fortner, Covenant

##### *Ruling Elders:*

Class of 1993

Jack Merry, Northeast

Class of 1992

Michael L. Frey, Philadelphia

Class of 1991

George H. Gulley, Jr., Grace

##### *Alternates*

Wilson Barbee, C. Carolina

##### *Ex-Officio*

Paul R. Gilchrist, TN Valley, Stated Clerk

Carl Wilhelm, North Georgia, MTW

#### B. TO BE ELECTED:

One TE

One TE

Class of 1994

Alternates

One RE

One RE

Eligible for 2nd term: Henry L. Smith, George H. Gulley, Jr.

#### C. NOMINATIONS:

Henry Lewis Smith, SE Alabama

Tim Fortner, Covenant

Class of 1994

William J. Montgomery, Southwest

Alternates

Wilson J. Barbee, C. Carolina

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

RE Wilson J. Barbee: C. Carolina. Real Estate. Moderator of Session during pastoral search; Locust City Council 10 years; Board of Realtors; W. Stanley Medical Center; Stanley County Board of Adjustment; Economic Development Board. GA AC 84-88; Nominating com. 83,84.

TE Tim Fortner: Covenant. Pastor of Lawndale PCA, Tupelo, MS. GA Interchurch Relations 73-77; chairman 74-77; moderated first union talks between PCA, RPCES and OPC; alternate 89, 90.

RE William J. Montgomery: Southwest. Retired Air Force. GA Nominating; many com. of comm.; has attended every GA since 1978; Presbytery administration or judicial business com. every year since 1980.

TE Henry Lewis Smith: SE Alabama. Pastor of First PCA, Prattville, AL. GA Interchurch Relations chairman 87-91; Nominating com. 89-91; MNA 79-82. Presbytery stated clerk 88-present.

## STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION

### A. PRESENT PERSONNEL:

#### *Teaching Elder*

Dewey Roberts, Mid-America  
LeRoy Ferguson III, Potomac  
Robert Stuart, Southwest

#### *Ruling Elder*

##### Class of 1994

Harrison Brown, Susq. Valley  
Frank Horton, MS Valley  
John B. White, Jr., N. Georgia

##### Class of 1993

Robert M. Ferguson, Pacific  
Dominic A. Aquila, S. Florida  
John S. Ragland, South Texas

John E. Spencer, Evangel  
John W. Lane, New Jersey  
William N. Brown, North Texas

##### Class of 1992

David W. Hall, TN Valley  
Morton H. Smith, W. Carolina  
Vacancy

Roy E. Allen, Great Lakes  
Stanley D. Wells, Heartland  
Eugene Friedline, James River

##### Class of 1991

Don K. Clements, New River  
Michael D. Bolus, C. Georgia  
Donald A. Codling, E. Canada

W. Jack Williamson, SE Alabama  
Mark Belz, Missouri  
Dale Peacock, Louisiana

### B. TO BE ELECTED:

Three TEs

Class of 1995

Three REs

## APPENDICES

	Class of 1992	
One TE		None

All members of Class of 1991 are eligible for reelection

### C. NOMINATIONS:

	Class of 1995
Michael D. Bolus, C. Georgia	Mark Belz, Missouri
G. Brent Bradley, Westminster	M. Dale Peacock, Louisiana
Rodney King, New River	George Caler, Ascension

Class of 1992

TE G. Fredric Mau, Warrior

### D. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

- RE Mark Belz: Missouri. Attorney active in pro-life causes. Presently serving on the Standing Judicial Commission.
- TE Michael D. Bolus, Sr.: C. Georgia. Pastor of Thomson PCA, Thomson, GA. Has completed short-term, eligible for re-election. Served as chairman in difficult presbytery judicial case. Desires to serve with strong pastoral concern for peace and unity rather than continual judicial process.
- TE G. Brent Bradley: Westminster. Pastor of Westminster PCA, Kingsport, TN. Gift of discernment and knowledge of our standards. Service on 9 com. of comm. for GA.
- RE George Caler: Ascension. Accountant. Eager to apply the rules of discipline described by *BCO*. GA Nominating com. 78, 79, 89, 90; judicial com. 89, 90. Presbytery committee candidates for church vocations 84-89.
- TE Rodney King: New River. Pastor of Covenant PCA, St. Albans, WV. Very involved in constitutional matters. GA Review and Control 80, 81, 87-89; judicial business 82-87; nominating 78, 79.
- TE G. Fredric Mau: Warrior. Pastor of Woodland Heights PCA, Selma, AL. Dedicated student of doctrine and standards; chairman of media and public relations for the Selma Ministerial Association. Presbytery MTW com. 90, 91; moderator 90. GA several com. of comm.
- RE M. Dale Peacock: Louisiana. Attorney. GA standing judicial comm. 89-91. Administration com. of comm. 90; judicial com. 89. Has a burning desire to see reconciliation between brothers.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

NOMINATING COMMITTEE  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
OF THE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

I Minutes of the Nominating Committee

Chairman Daniel Domin opened with prayer at 5:39 P.M. in room A105B at Briarwood Presbyterian Church, Birmingham, AL.

Committee members present were:

Presbytery

Ascension  
Central Florida  
Eastern Carolina  
Grace  
Gulf Coast  
James River  
Missouri  
New Jersey  
New River  
North Georgia  
North Illinois  
Potomac  
South Florida  
Southwest  
Southwest Florida  
Susquehanna Valley  
Tennessee Valley  
Warrior  
Western Carolina  
Westminster

Commissioner

TE Carl W. Bogue  
TE Neal Gilmore  
RE Dwight S. Monk  
RE Chester (Bo) Morgan  
RE A. Julion Gibson  
TE K.W. Pete Hurst  
TE Bill Swenson  
TE Allen Story  
RE Jim Williams  
RE Earl W. Witmer  
TE Peter R. Vaughn, Secretary  
TE Tim Habbershon  
RE Daniel J. Domin, Chairman  
TE Don Hendricks  
TE Russell D. Toms  
RE Willard H. Lutz  
TE David Hall  
RE Richard Owens  
RE Jack Sullivan  
TE Carl C. Howell, Jr.

MSC to rule two nominations from the floor out of order because of failure to place the nominee in opposition to a nominee of the committee.

ADMINISTRATIVE COMMITTEE

II. MSC that these nominations from the floor are properly in order to place before the General Assembly.

- A. In opposition to RE Robert Taylor, Pacific, Alternate;  
RE Bob Carson, Covenant  
RE William H. Moore, IV, Potomac

## APPENDICES

- B. In opposition to RE Robert S. Hornick, Gulf Coast, Alternate
  - TE Ken Camp, Covenant
  - TE Bruce Howes, Heritage
  - TE Morton Smith, Western Carolina
- C. In opposition to TE L. Roy Taylor, Grace, class of 1995
  - TE Joseph Pipa, Jr, South Coast
- D. In opposition to RE Harold Whitlock, Heritage, class of 1995
  - RE Collins Brent, Covenant

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

- TE Ken Camp, Covenant - pastor, Hickory Wythe Presbyterian Church - capable administrator.
- RE Bob Carson, Covenant - experience on the Presbytery administration committee - experienced businessman and administrator.
- RE Collins Brent, Covenant - President of Superior Boat Works; on the steering committee of American Waterways Shipyard Conference; helped establish a new PCA church in the Mississippi Delta.
- TE Bruce Howes - Heritage - pastor of Heritage Presbyterian Church, New Castle, DE - recording clerk of General Assembly since 1987; Stated Clerk of two different Presbyteries; Chairman of Committee for Commissioners for Administration in 1989; concerned for efficiency and effectiveness of the General Assembly.
- RE William (Bingy) H. Moore, IV, Potomac - self employed business owner for 15 years; current Administrative Committee alternate; review and control, 1983-1984; active and faithful in Presbytery.
- TE Joseph Pipa, Jr, South Coast - director of Advanced Studies at Westminster Theological Seminary, Calif.; Chairman of Christian Education & Publications for 4 years; on Administration Committee on behalf of Christian Education & Publications Committee for 2 years.
- TE Morton Smith, Western Carolina - stated clerk of General Assembly for 16 years; extremely knowledgeable of assembly operations;

### COMMITTEE FOR CHRISTIAN EDUCATION AND PUBLICATIONS

- A. In opposition to RE Richard Olsen, Heritage, class of 1995
  - RE Ralph Mittendorf, Southern Florida
- B. In opposition to TE Ross Lindley, Westminster, Alternate
  - TE Arthur Ames, Southwest
  - TE Dave Bowen, East Carolina
  - TE Don K. Clements, New River

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

- TE Arthur Ames, Southwest - minister of Christian Education; pursuing a D. Min. at Covenant Theological Seminary; taught Christian Education at Sangree de Christa Seminary, CO; Christian school Teacher and school board member.
- TE Dave Bowen, East Carolina - pastor of Church of the Good Shepherd, Chapel Hill, N.C.; extensive discipleship background with Campus Crusade and Navigators.
- TE Don Clements, New River - pastor of Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church, Blacksburg, VA; two previous terms on Christian Education & Publications; two years Chairman; on Executive Committee of the National Christian Educators Association; D. Min. from Gordon Conwell.
- RE Ralph Mittendorf, Southern Florida - Stated Clerk of Presbytery; two previous terms on Christian Education & Publications; trustee of Investor's Fund; steering committee of Vision 2000; served on Administration Committee.

### COMMITTEE ON MISSION TO THE WORLD

- A. In opposition to TE Benson Cain, Central Florida, Alternate  
TE Sanders Willson, Tennessee Valley
- B. In opposition to RE Lyle Nilson, Heartland, class of 1995  
RE Pete Austin, Tennessee Valley
- C. In opposition to RE O. Palmer Robertson, Potomac, class of 1995  
TE Stephen R. Christian, Eastern Canada  
TE Shelton Sanford, Central Carolina

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

- RE Pete Austin, Tennessee Valley - has served as chairman of Committee for Mission to the World.
- TE Stephen R. Christian, Eastern Canada - church planter; lead SIMA groups to the Yucatan in 1988-1989 and 1990; lecturer for the Mayan Presbytery on "Biblical Ministry of Pastor and Elder"; great sensitivity to cross-cultural communication; chairman of Internship Committee, Philadelphia Presbytery 1987-1990.
- TE Shelton Sanford, Central Carolina - pastor in Rock Hill, SC.; has led his church to make a major commitment to Mission to the World; has served on SIMS committee for many years; great heart for missions.
- TE Sanders Willson, Tennessee Valley - current Mission to the World alternate; served for 8 years on SIMA; pastor of Lookout Mountain Presbyterian Church, which supports Mission to the World greatly.

### BOARD OF TRUSTEES FOR THE INVESTOR'S FUND FOR BUILDING & DEVELOPMENT

- A. In opposition to RE Robert Bailey, Mississippi Valley, class of 1995  
TE Taylor McGown, Evangel  
TE John Wingard, Covenant

## APPENDICES

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

- TE Taylor McGown, Evangel - former mortgage banker; first president of Investor's Fund; extensive experience in non-profit securities business.
- TE John Wingard, Covenant- pastor, 1st Presbyterian Church, Water Valley, MS; president of Administration Committee.

### BOARD OF TRUSTEES OF RIDGE HAVEN

- A. In opposition to TE Robert F. Brunson, Grace, class of 1996  
TE Joe Grider, Covenant
- B. In opposition to RE Milton Wendland, Southeast Alabama, class of 1996  
RE Charles G. Parks, Sr., Central Carolina  
RE Chester Curtis, Covenant

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

- RE Chester Curtis, Covenant - retired accountant; has served many presbytery committees.
- TE Joe Brider, Covenant - pastor, 1st Presbyterian Church, Osceola, AR; president Mission to North America Committee.
- RE Charles G. Parks, Sr., Central Carolina - Director of Maintenance for Presbyterian Home of Howfields, NC; Christian Education & Publication 1076-1980; Great Commission Trustee 1977-1980; Nominations Committee 1981-1983; Interchurch Relations 1987-1988 as well as numerous presidents of committees.

### COMMITTEE ON CONSTITUTIONAL BUSINESS

- A. In opposition to TE Craig Childs, Evangel, class of 1995  
TE Carl Brannon, Covenant
- B. In opposition to TE Paul E. Zetterholm, Mississippi, Alternate.  
TE Danny Levi, Grace

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

- TE Carl Brannon, Covenant - pastor, 1st Presbyterian Church, Indianola, MS; on the Board of Directors for Faith Prison Ministries; active in presbytery.
- TE Danny Levi, Grace - pastor 1st Presbyterian Church, Gulfport, MS; expert in constitutional matters.

### COMMITTEE ON INTERCHURCH RELATIONS

- A. In opposition to TE Henry L. Smith, Southeast Alabama, class of 1994  
TE John Owen Butler, Mid-America

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- B. In opposition to RE William J. Montgomery, Southwest, class of 1994  
RE George Gully, Jr., Grace

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

- TE Owen Butler, Mid-America- pastor, Beal Heights Presbyterian Church, Lawton, OK; moderator, Mid-America Presbytery; vision for unity of the biblical faith; "co-operation without compromise".
- RE George Gully, Jr., Grace - lawyer and businessman; was Reformed Seminary's executive secretary for 13 years; is filling out an uncompleted term on the committee.

### STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION

- A. In opposition to TE G. Brent Bradley, Westminster, class of 1995  
TE John Sartell, Covenant
- B. In opposition to TE Rodney King, New River, class of 1995  
TE Paul Kooistra, Warrior
- C. In opposition to RE George Caler, Ascension, class of 1995  
RE W. Jack Williamson, SE Alabama
- D. In opposition to RE M. Dale Peacock, Louisiana, class of 1995  
RE Howard Q. Davis, Covenant  
RE Gerald Sovereign, Gulf Coast
- E. In opposition to TE G. Frederic Mau, Warrior, class of 1992  
TE John Montgomery, Central Florida

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

- RE Howard Q. Davis, Covenant - circuit judge; president of Administrative Committee; active in presbytery.
- TE Paul Kooistra, Warrior - President of Covenant Theological Seminary; previously on Theological Examining Committee.
- TE John Montgomery, Central Florida - organizing pastor, River Oak Presbyterian Church, Orlando, FL; has served on Mission to North America and Investor's Fund; as an executive of C & S Bank.
- TE John Sartell, Covenant - has served effectively as Pastor; Moderator of Presbytery; number of Presbytery committees; is knowledgeable in BCO and Presbyterian procedures.
- RE Gerald Sovereign, Gulf Coast - has served as chairman and member of Committee on Administration and Mission to the World at presbytery and local church level.
- RE W. Jack Williamson, Southeast Alabama - practicing attorney for over 45 years; first moderator of the PCA; first and present chairman of Standing Judicial Commission; chairman of Administration Committee that recommended the Standing Judicial Commission; participated in organizing the PCA and its polity.



## APPENDICES

### III. Other Business

#### A. Committee on Mission to North America

1. Due to a RE vacancy in the Class of 1992 it was MSC that RE John Jardine, Jr., Heritage, be nominated for election.
2. MSC that RE Jim Hanemaayer, Pacific, be nominated for election as an alternate.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

RE Jim Hanemaayer, Pacific - radio broadcast executive; president of Minister, Churches and Candidate Committee; has a good mind; very active in presbytery; a heart for organizing pastors.

#### B. Board of Trustees for the Presbyterian Church in America Foundation

Committee nominee RE Andy Grinstead, New Jersey; having indicated to the committee he was unable to serve, it was MSC that RE John N. Albritton, Southeast Alabama, be substituted.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES FOR NOMINEES FROM THE FLOOR

RE John N. Albritton, Southeast Alabama - trust officer, American South Bank; three previous terms on the Foundation Board; a godly and humble man; highly qualified and very interested in this work.

- C. MSC that RE Daniel Domin and TE Peter Vaughn be appointed a subcommittee to review the final minutes and present this report.
- D. All votes in today's committee meeting were unanimous.
- E. It was moved and seconded to adjourn; the meeting was closed in prayer by TE Neil Gilmour.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ Daniel Domin, Chairman  
/s/ Peter Vaughn, Clerk

# MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

## APPENDIX M

### REPORT OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA FOUNDATION TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

I am very pleased to be able to report to you another year of tremendous growth for the PCA Foundation.

In 1990 the Foundation received new gifts totaling \$2,233,781 from God's people.

During the same period distributions totaling \$2,702,443 were made to various Christian ministries.

I have increased my travel time over this past year in order to pay personal visits to donors and prospects.

During this period of time, RE W. Douglas Haskew, Southeast Alabama Presbytery, and his wife, Neal, joined our staff. They will be serving as our Planned Giving Representatives for the state of Alabama. Doug is a ruling elder in the Briarwood Presbyterian Church in Birmingham, Alabama. We are delighted to have Doug and Neal as a part of our ministry.

We are currently seeking two other couples to serve in the same capacity. Our target regions are the Maryland, Delaware, Pennsylvania, and Virginia area as well as Florida.

These are part-time positions and afford a wonderful ministry opportunity to retired couples.

Our major problem continues to be effectively reaching down to the "grass roots" in our local churches to those individuals who need to understand and utilize the ministry of our Foundation.

Our recommendations to the General Assembly are as follows:

- A. The two regular vacancies on the Board be filled with quality men gifted to lead our ministry.
- B. Approval of our Proposed 1992 Budget.

## APPENDICES

- C. Each local church be encouraged to consider the various ways the Foundation can serve them. Seminars and literature are available to be used to better inform the people regarding more effective management of God's assets.
- D. Each church be encouraged to take full advantage of the Memorial Gift Program offered by the Foundation.

Respectfully submitted,

/s/ John W. S. Hudson, Director  
PCA Foundation

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### APPENDIX N

#### REPORT OF RIDGE HAVEN CONFERENCE CENTER TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

Because Ridge Haven is a place, it may not have the proximity for you to feel that it has any real relevance to you, your church, or your presbytery.

But Ridge Haven is more than a place. It is a ministry.

Like all the committees and agencies of the PCA, Ridge Haven is a ministry - an instrument of God to reach precious souls for Jesus Christ.

Ridge Haven is wide-eyed boys and girls, sitting cross-legged on a grassy knoll, hearing the Word of God applied to their young lives.

Ridge Haven is teenagers, huddled in small groups around an earnest counselor, learning how to say "no" to the soul-destroying sins of our age.

Ridge Haven is single-again men and women, soaking up the love of Christ that He so generously lavishes upon His hurting people.

Ridge Haven is couples - husbands and wives - being drawn closer together in the bonds of commitment to Christ and each other.

Ridge Haven is silver-haired seniors celebrating their eternal inheritance as their minds and souls are bathed in the refreshing and restoring springs of the grace of God.

Ridge Haven is ministry. It is people. And our goal is to provide conferences and retreats and camps and other events at the Center, and at other locations throughout the General Assembly, that will impact our denomination for the Word of God, for the Reformed Faith, and for a more effective proclamation of the Gospel of the world.

Your Conference Center is 902 acres of beautiful mountains encompassing the Conference Center proper, and four adjoining residential areas. The Center can sleep and feed a total of 328 persons. Accommodations range from comfortable bunk beds with thick innerspring mattresses in a dormitory room, to bedrooms with a connecting bath, to bedrooms with a private bath, to apartments completely equipped including dishwasher and fireplace. There is a large cafeteria serving delicious yet moderately priced meals. Small meeting rooms are available for groups of up to 40 persons with a large meeting room capable of seating 300.

There are 4 residential subdivisions in and around the Conference Center already divided into 139 lots. All of the lots are moderately priced averaging less than half

## APPENDICES

what the commercial developments in the area are asking. Already 91 lots have been sold and 18 homes have been completed and occupied. The Christian atmosphere of the community and the naturalness of the environment are controlled by Covenant Agreements to which each lot user must subscribe.

The past year has been an exciting and eventful year for Ridge Haven. Our gracious Lord has blessed the Center in tremendous ways and the prospects for the future are very encouraging.

Edward J. Robeson III, the Administrator for over ten years, retired at the end of August. His accomplishments at Ridge Haven are legendary and he rightfully deserves admiration and gratitude for his faithful service. The Vice President of Development, Dr. James E. Poteet, took over the duties as Administrator effective September 1st.

The Reverend Paul Settle began his duties as Director of Ministries on February 1st as he was welcomed back home. Paul was on the first committee and was one of those responsible for the founding of Ridge Haven. He is filling a most important post now as the ministry of Ridge Haven is growing rapidly and expanding.

There has been a large increase in the number of assembly-wide conferences which minister to PCA'ers from junior age children to senior adults. These conferences now number 22 and are being expanded because of the ever-increasing demand.

The facility has been utilized by a large number of church and youth groups, WIC retreats, presbytery outings, and college seminars and retreats. The overall utilization of the entire facility continues to grow at a remarkable rate. Ridge Haven's purpose is to offer outstanding Christian educational opportunities to all ages and groups in the denomination as well as a wonderful location for refreshment and renewal. The extent in which this is possible is limited only by the present facilities.

There has been a great emphasis on the refurbishment of the buildings and grounds during the past year. The entrance is now well lighted and has an improved sign. There is a new community kitchen and a new craft room. Many of the accommodations have been redecorated and the administrative offices have been expanded.

During the camping season of 1991, permanent counselors, college students well-grounded in the Scriptures, are being hired for the 8-week season. Ridge Haven will have a great opportunity to minister to these twenty young counselors as they minister to their campers.

Significant progress has been made to increase Ridge Haven awareness throughout the denomination. There is a widely-circulated newsletter as well as a property owners' newsletter. Brochures of the camps and conferences have been mailed in greater quantities, and a fine black & white poster has been sent to all the churches.

The religious worship opportunities at Ridge Haven have been strengthened with the new staff pastor. There are daily chapel services with Sunday worship. In addition there is a Tuesday lunch Bible study, a Wednesday night Bible study, and a monthly

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Saturday prayer breakfast. There is a greater emphasis on biblical studies and worship of our Lord, both of which are having a great impact on staff, visitors, and conferees. In order to continue the growth and ministry of Ridge Haven, there is an urgent need for funding. Currently only 300 churches support the Center and, with the individual gifts, is insufficient for the general operating funds.

There are also many specific needs which are not covered by operating funds. They are: (1) improved phone system; (2) new vans and buses; (3) more bedroom facilities; (4) enlargement of the kitchen and dining facilities; (5) air-conditioning for the meeting room; (6) funding for a chapel.

With the increased number of camps and conferences, the increased demand on the facilities, and the maintenance requirements, it is imperative that the General Assembly re-think its obligation to Ridge Haven and promote the opportunities available and the funding requirements.

### RECOMMENDATIONS:

1. That churches and individuals be requested to support the Conference Center of the PCA both with their fervent prayers and funds.
2. That Ridge Haven's 1992 budget be approved as submitted through the Administrative Committee.
3. That all members of the PCA be encouraged to take advantage of the Christian educational opportunities for youth and adults at Ridge Haven.
4. That Dr. James Poteet be approved as Administrator of Ridge Haven Conference Center.

Respectfully submitted,

/s/ Malcolm M. Griffith, Secretary  
Board of Directors

APPENDICES

APPENDIX O

REPORT OF THE STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

Your Standing Judicial Commission held 2 meetings of the full Commission during the past year. At its first meeting of the year on July 24, 1990, twenty-three (23) of its twenty-four (24) members attended. At its second meeting on March 1-2, 1991, twenty (20) members attended. One member, T.E. Dewey Roberts, was absent while on active duty as a chaplain in Saudi Arabia.

\*\*\*\*\*

JUDICIAL CASES

1. Case 90-3 Grace Covenant Church, Blacksburg, VA  
vs.  
New River Presbytery
2. Case 90-4 R.E. Charles E. Chappell  
vs.  
Eastern Carolina Presbytery
3. Case 90-4a T.E. Wallace W. Marshall, Jr.  
vs.  
Eastern Carolina Presbytery
4. Case 90-5 M/M Bryan Melton, et al.  
vs.  
Tennessee Valley Presbytery
5. Case 90-7 T.E. Randy C. Stringer  
vs.  
MS. Valley Presbytery
6. Case 90-8 T.E. David Bowen  
vs.  
Eastern Carolina Presbytery
7. Case 90-9 T.E. Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr.  
vs.  
Grace Presbytery
8. Case 90-10 T.E. Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr.  
vs.  
Grace Presbytery

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Docketed as 90-6 was the memorial from T. E. John E. Warren, Jr. which is dealt with later in this report.

In accordance with the operation manual, each of the above 8 cases was first submitted to a Judicial Panel for hearing and recommended judgment and then submitted to each member of the Standing Judicial Commission along with the recommended judgment and decision of the Judicial Panel. The judgment of the Judicial Panel was approved by vote of the full Commission in every case by an almost unanimous vote (see individual cases). Once the judgment of the Judicial Panel is confirmed by a vote of the full Commission, such judgment cannot be altered without a rehearing of the case by the full Commission (Manual 12.6). Case 90-3, Grace Covenant Church, Blacksburg, VA vs. New River Presbytery was argued before the full Commission. No oral argument before the full Commission was granted in any other case. Request for hearing before the full Commission was requested by a party in Cases 90-9 and 90-10; but the request failed to receive the required votes of at least 4 Commission members and was thus denied.

Under the operation Manual, the reasoning and opinion of a decision may be revised at the full Commission hearings with minor language revisions but more substantive revision may be made only by vote of 2/3rd of these members present and voting or with the concurrence of a majority of the Judicial Panel. The reasoning and opinion sections of each decision were reviewed by the full Commission. It was here that we saw the unity of the Spirit at work. In these discussions there were divergent views and opinions expressed; but we always came up with revisions that met the approval of almost every member. It was a real blessing to see brothers work in the unity of the Spirit.

As of April 15, 1991 the following is the status of the only cases pending before the Standing Judicial Commission, to-wit:

1. Case 91-1 Sandra Lovelace  
vs.  
Northeast Presbytery

**Status:** There is some question in this case as to whether or not a complaint has been properly filed. A Judicial Panel was appointed in March, 1991 to determine if the case is administratively and judicially in order, and if so, to proceed to hear the complaint. The Judicial Panel has met and is seeking documentation from the parties to make a preliminary judgment.

2. Case 91-2 Bruce Nickoley, et al.  
vs.  
Southwest Presbytery

**Status:** The parties have completed the Record of the Case. A Judicial Panel has been appointed to hear the case. On April 9, 1991, the completed Record of the Case was mailed to the Judicial Panel.



## APPENDICES

### 3. Case 91-3 Judicial Reference from Covenant Presbytery under BCO Chapter 41

**Status:** We have been notified that Covenant Presbytery at its stated meeting in March, 1991 voted to refer a matter to the Standing Judicial Commission. This matter relates to actions taken by the Presbytery concerning Grace Presbyterian Church of Germantown, TN and/or its pastor Rev. Daniel R. Morse. In October, 1990, the Standing Judicial Commission received a purported complaint from the Session of Grace Church. In accordance with the operation Manual, the officers of the Standing Judicial Commission reviewed the complaint and found that the complaint was not administratively in order on the grounds that the complaint had not been first presented to Covenant presbytery as provided in BCO 43-2. At the full Commission meeting in March, 1991, a member raised the issue of the correctness of the officers' ruling that the complaint was not administratively in order. By vote of the full Commission, the ruling of the officers was sustained. Now, we have been notified that at its March 1991 Stated Meeting, Covenant Presbytery voted to refer the entire matter to the Standing Judicial Commission. We await the preparation of the Record of the Case. As soon as we receive it, we will proceed.

**WE, THEREFORE,** make the following recommendations regarding these judicial cases, to-wit:

1. That the judgment (Exhibit "A" hereto) in the case of Grace Covenant Church, Blacksburg, VA vs. New River Presbytery (SJC Docket 90-3) be approved.
2. That the judgment (Exhibit "B" hereto) in the case of R.E. Charles E. Chappell vs. Eastern Carolina Presbytery (SJC Docket 90-4) be approved.
3. That the judgment (Exhibit "C" hereto) in the case of T.E. Wallace W. Marshall, Jr. vs. Eastern Carolina Presbytery (SJC Docket 90-4a) be approved.
4. That the judgment (Exhibit "D" hereto) in the case of M/M Bryan Melton, et al vs. Tennessee Valley Presbytery (SJC Docket 90-5) be approved.
5. That the judgment (Exhibit "E" hereto) in the case of T.E. Randy C. Stringer vs. MS. Valley Presbytery (SJC Docket 90-7) be approved.
6. That the judgment (Exhibit "F" hereto) in the case of T.E. David Bowen vs. Eastern Carolina Presbytery (SJC Docket 90-8) be approved.
7. That the judgment (Exhibit "G" hereto) in the case of T.E. Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr. vs. Grace Presbytery (SJC Docket 90-9) be approved.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

8. That the judgment (Exhibit" H" hereto) in the case of T.E. Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr. vs. Grace Presbytery (SJC Docket 90-10) be approved.

\*\*\*\*\*

**PROPOSED BCO AMENDMENTS**

(Full text printed at 19-53, p. 110.)

**REPLY TO GENERAL ASSEMBLY ON JOHN M. WARREN, JR. MEMORIAL**

(Full text printed at 19-48. p. 97.)

**INFORMATION ITEMS**

The Standing Judicial Commission authorized its officers to review the Manual and suggest any clarifications or changes. This review was made and certain changes were recommended based on our experience after 2 years of operation. The Commission made certain revisions, clarifications and changes in an effort to provide clearer, more efficient service. This is an operational not a policy manual and does not require General Assembly approval; but a copy is attached hereto as Exhibit "I" for information to the churches and constituents.

At its March, 1991 meeting the Commission elected as its officers for next year, beginning after the 19th General Assembly, to-wit:

Robert Ferguson - Chairman  
John B. White, Jr. - Vice-Chairman  
Dominic Aquila - Secretary  
John Lane - Ass't Secretary

We urge you to be in prayer for your Standing Judicial Commission as they seek to serve you in this important function in the Lord's work.

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ W. Jack Williamson  
Chairman

## APPENDICES

### EXHIBIT "A"

#### STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

#### GRACE COVENANT PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, BLACKSBURG, VA V. NEW RIVER PRESBYTERY

Judicial Case 90-3

#### **I. A Summary of the Facts**

The Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church of Blacksburg, VA, brought a complaint against the action of the New River Presbytery at its July 29, 1989 meeting.

This meeting of the New River Presbytery adopted the decision of a Judicial Commission of the Presbytery which had sustained two of three specifications of complaint by a member of Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church. The member had complained that the Session erred in permitting a member of the Church to teach youth when he held views which were out of accord with the fundamentals of our system of doctrine. The teacher's expectations were known by the original complainant and by others in the Church, and the exceptions were stated in his statements of beliefs which was submitted as a part of the Church's procedure for a person to be approved as a teacher.

The Presbytery's Judicial Commission found that the views held by the teacher, in particular, his views on creation and theistic evolution were outside the fundamentals of our system of doctrine. The Presbytery concurred with this judgment and referred the case back to the Session for reconsideration with the following instruction:

"Holding the view of beginnings expressed in 'theistic evolution' is contrary to the fundamentals of our system of doctrine taught in the Word of God and our standards. Such a view destroys the basis of such doctrines as the doctrines of sin, of marriage, of salvation, of covenants, and others.

"Therefore such a view cannot be allowed as an exception. Anyone holding such a view must be disqualified from teaching and/or ordination in the church." (see page 20 and also pages 19 to 23 of the Record of the Case).

The Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church submitted a complaint to the Standing Judicial Commission against this action on two grounds:

- a. that the Presbytery "erred in approving a policy that no court could approve a person to a position of authority (including teachers in church-sponsored

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- programs, such as Sunday School) if such person was out of accord with any fundamental of the system of doctrine of the church"; and
- b. that the Presbytery "erred in sustaining the complaint" (see page 6 and also pages 5 to 8 of the Record of the Case).

The Standing Judicial Commission appointed a Panel (Panel #3) to hear the complaint by Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church. The Panel found the Complaint and the Record of the Case to be in order and invited the Parties to submit written briefs. The Panel proceeded to adjudicate the Complaint at a hearing held in Roanoke, VA, on March 21, 1990. At this hearing both parties were represented and presented oral arguments to amplify and explain their written briefs.

The Complainant, at the beginning of the oral hearing, sought to withdraw the first ground of his complaint while maintaining the second. The Panel determined to hear the case as originally submitted rather than try to reconstruct the case and the record of the case to reflect only one ground for the complaint.

Counsel for both parties advised the Panel in oral arguments that this case had generated such hurts and disruption that it was in the interests of both the local Church and the Presbytery that the Panel seek to make dispositions in this case which would not require the parties to rehear or review this case again.

### **II. A Statement of the Issues:**

In considering whether or not to sustain the specification/s of Complaint the Panel considered three issues:

- a. Did the New River Presbytery err in procedure in considering the original complaint?
- b. Did the New River Presbytery err in its application of our standards in this particular case? and
- c. Did the New River Presbytery err in its disposition of the case?

### **III. Judgment of the Case:**

The Panel found that the New River Presbytery did not err in procedures when it considered the original complaint. (Vote 3-0)

The Panel found that the New River Presbytery did not err in its application of our standards in this particular case. (Vote 3-0)

The Panel did not sustain the Presbytery's disposition of this particular case and made the following disposition of the case:

- a) that the case not be referred back to the Church for reconsideration with instructions; (Vote 3-0)
- b) that Grace covenant Presbyterian Church be advised that the teacher who is the subject of the original complaint should not be granted the authority to

## APPENDICES

teach in the Church while he holds exceptions to our doctrinal standards which could reasonably be expected to result in him having to teach in a manner which would be out of accord with the fundamentals of our system of doctrine; (Vote 3-0)

- c) that Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church be commended for developing a process used in the selection of teachers as a result of this case; (Vote 3-0)
- d) that the New River Presbytery through its Commission and Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church should not have left uncorrected the intemperate accusations made by the original complainant against the Session of Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church (pages 36 and 37 of the Record of the Case), and the disruptive and disrespectful tone of written letters which do not appear to promote the peace of the Church (*BCO 57-5*). See pages 44, 57 and 58 of the Record. (Vote 3-0)

### **IV. The Reasoning and Opinion of the Court:**

An examination of the statements of beliefs submitted by the teacher to the Session of Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church discloses that he holds exceptions to such doctrines as the doctrine of inerrancy, the doctrine of creation (in that he holds to the doctrine of theistic evolution), the doctrine of the fall of man, the doctrine of original sin, and the role of confessional standards (see pages 80 to 85 of the Record of the Case).

In oral arguments before the Panel the Counsel for the Complainant advised the Panel that the teacher, who was the subject of the original complaint, was a founding member of the Church and was a very popular member. However, the Session, on previous occasions, had determined that this teacher because of his exceptions to our system of doctrines should not be nominated to an ordained office.

Respondent's Counsel quoting his Brief said that it was not the intention of the New River Presbytery to assert that a person "not holding a fundamental of the system cannot teach or hold a position of authority." (Brief page 3). Rather the point the Presbytery was making was that the number of exceptions in this case (which the Presbytery saw as flowing from his view of theistic evolution) would result in the teacher necessarily having to teach views which were out of accord with the fundamentals of our standards. The Counsel for the Respondent advised the Panel that the Presbytery saw themselves as acting to implement consistently the view expressed by the 14th General Assembly (*MI4GA 14-52, 13, p. 125, see also the Respondent's Brief page 2*).

It is clear to the Panel that the teacher who was the subject of the original complaint holds exceptions to a number of the fundamentals of our system of doctrine and that when all these exceptions are taken together it does appear reasonable for the Presbytery to have taken the view that these exceptions would necessarily result in the teacher teaching views which were out of accord with the fundamentals of our standards.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

A court of the Church may grant to teachers and officers exceptions to our doctrinal standards. However, such exceptions ought not be granted when to the mind of the examining and reviewing courts it might reasonably be expected that for the particular teacher or officer to maintain his personal commitment to his views, the person would of necessity have to teach in a manner which would be out of accord with the fundamentals of our system of doctrine (See *BCO* 34-5, *MIOGA* 10-25, p. 103, and *MIAGA* 14-52, 13, p. 125).

The *BCO* in Chapter 17 provides the "Doctrine of Ordination" for officers in the church.

The *BCO* in Chapter 21 provides for the "Ordination" of Ministers and in Chapter 24 for the "Ordination" of Ruling Elders and Deacons.

The *BCO* in Chapter 7 provides that "the ordination and perpetual classes of office in the church are Elders and Deacons".

For these officers, *BCO* 21-5 and 24-5 provide identical vows that these officers take sincerely receiving and adopting "the Confession of Faith and the Catechisms of the church as containing the system of doctrine taught in the Holy Scriptures", and that if such officer finds himself "out of accord with any of the fundamentals of this system of doctrine" he will make such fact known to the proper Court of the Church.

The *BCO* makes no such requirement for teachers. *BCO* 12-5 provides that the session shall "establish and control Sunday schools and Bible classes".

Therefore, we conclude that the *BCO* does not specifically require the same test for teachers as it does for officers. Each Session is left with the primary responsibility of examining teachers such that there is no corruption of doctrine (8-3) to make its own requirements. We will not attempt to make a check list of such fundamentals or of such requirements. If a matter is properly brought before us relating to any teacher, we will consider that specific case in the light of all the facts; but we make no attempt to set specific requirements for all Sessions.

During the Panel's examination of the Record of the case and during the hearing in oral arguments the Panel became aware of something of the intensity of the passions this case raised. In this context rather than refer the matter back to the local Church the Panel felt the local Church should be advised that the exceptions to our confessional standards taken by the teacher should not be granted. In addition the Panel felt that the Church should be advised of our admiration of this Church's procedure and our recognition of the Church's desire to keep the highest standards for teachers. Lastly the Panel was deeply concerned about the tone and disruptiveness of a number of the statements made by the original complainant.

/s/ TE Robert M. Ferguson, Chairman

/s/ RE Eugene Friedline.

/s/ RE David Hall, Secretary

April 25, 1990

## APPENDICES

### Roll Call Vote on Proposed Judgment:

#### Those who concur:

Dewey Roberts	LeRoy Ferguson III	Frank Horton
Harrison Brown	John W. Lane	Roy E. Allen
John B. White, Jr.	Robert M. Ferguson	David W. Hall
Michael D. Bolus	Donald A. Codling	Dale Peacock
John E. Spencer	William N. Brown	Stanley D. Wells
Eugene Friedline	W. Jack Williamson	Morton H. Smith
Mark Belz	William J. Stanway (by ballot)	

#### Those who dissent:

Dominic A. Aquila	John S. Ragland
Robert Stuart	

NOTE: Opinion written by Robert M. Ferguson as modified by the Full Commission

### WRITTEN BRIEF OF COMPLAINANTS

The essential argument of the complainants is spelled out in the formal complaint itself, especially in the Section entitled "Reasons for the Complaint". To supplement those reasons, we would make the following points:

1. Stricken. Lack of support and irrelevant.
2. The report of the Commission of New River Presbytery in the case of Alder vs. Grace Covenant, approved by the Presbytery, stated that a Session could only grant exceptions to approve a Sunday School teacher if they were not out of accord with any fundamental of the system of doctrine of the church. However, the Commission did not make a specific determination that the teacher in question was out of accord with a 'fundamental' of the system of doctrine. The only implication left by their action was that he was out of accord in the area of creation since he held a view which could be called 'Theistic Evolution'. However, this specific position was not defined by the report of the commission, nor was there any specific identification made of how this view was out of accord with any fundamentals of the system of doctrine. The complainants do not believe that the Presbytery demonstrated in any way that the teacher in question was out of accord with any fundamentals of the system of doctrine.
3. Stricken. Lack of support.
4. It is agreed by the complainants that anyone who holds an exception must not teach or preach concerning the area in which he holds that exception in such a way as to disturb the peace and purity of the church (see *Minutes of GA*, 14-52, 9, pages 125-126). No evidence was received by the Commission of New River

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Presbytery, not did their decision indicate that there was any evidence of such disturbing of the peace by the teacher in question.

5. It appears that there are the following four possible positions to take in granting/not granting exceptions to Sunday School teachers (and other non-officer positions in the church):
  - a. Grant no exceptions whatsoever. (New River Presbytery is clearly on record that this is not their position).
  - b. Grant exceptions only in areas that are not considered to be fundamentals of the system of doctrine. (New River Presbytery acknowledge that this is their position; it is the position of the Complainants that this is the situation with the teacher in question as well.)
  - c. Grant exceptions even in areas considered to be fundamentals. (New River Presbytery states that this cannot not done; however, there are many cases in our Presbytery of churches having granted exceptions to allow people to teach who are out of accord with various fundaments of the system of doctrine, especially Infant Baptism.)
  - d. Grant exceptions to anyone for any reason, including allowing non-Christians to teach.  
Stricken. Lack of evidence.

It is therefore the position of the complainants that New River Presbytery erred in approving a policy that no court could approve a person to a position of authority (including teachers in church-sponsored programs, such as Sunday School) if such person was out of accord with any fundamental of the system of doctrine of the church and that the Presbytery erred in its judgment in sustaining the complaint in the case of Alder vs. Session of Grace Covenant.

**Covenant Presbyterian Church**  
819 Pennsylvania Avenue  
Saint Albans, West Virginia 25177  
Telephone (304) 722-4639

REV. RODNEY T. KING, PASTOR  
Residence (304) 755-7334

February 23, 1990

Dear Sir,

Enclosed you will please find the Brief for the Respondents in Case #3. It has been approved by those appointed by New River Presbytery to represent in before the Commission/Panel.



## APPENDICES

### INTRODUCTION

Fathers and Brethren,

The Complaint against the action of New River Presbytery alleges two specifications of error. It is the contention of the presbytery that:

1. the first specification is contrary to fact.
2. the second is:
  - a. in effect, an appeal from the judgment of a complaint against these same complainants, and therefore not in order.
  - b. the continued disagreement in the judgment the Session (Complainants) erred.

We shall argue that both of these specifications should be denied.

#### REGARDING SPECIFICATION #1

1. The very text of the specification reveals that the policy allegedly adopted is not that which was declared. The Complainants allege that New River Presbytery "erred in approving a policy that no court could approve a person to a position of authority (including teachers . . .) if such a person was *out of accord with any fundamental* of the system of doctrine of the church." [emphasis added] The section of the decision of the commission quoted by the complainants states that a court *may* "approve persons to positions of authority even though they may not hold to the entirety of the system of doctrine *as long as, in the opinion of the court, such exceptions do not strike at the fundamentals of that system.*" [emphasis added] Thus the complaint is against a mythical action.
2. The Presbytery is aware of, and accepts, the positions adopted by the General Assembly (in particular the actions of the Tenth General Assembly, 10-75, III, 25A [p. 103] and the Fourteenth General Assembly, 14-52, 13 [p. 125]) regarding exceptions to the Standards of the Church.
3. The Commission (and the Presbytery) chose its wording very carefully to reflect a significant difference in a view which is "out of accord with the fundamentals" and one which "strikes at the fundamentals". For example, one who denies infant baptism is out of accord with a fundamental of the system; one who believes in baptismal regeneration strikes at the fundamentals of the system. It is acknowledged that any deviation from the system ultimately opposes the system (however indirectly); it must also be acknowledged that some views oppose militantly and directly. The Presbytery would cite the wording of the action of the Tenth General Assembly, 10-75, III, 25A [p. 103], answer #2, paragraph 3: "Any exception to the constitutional standards may have the potential of *striking at the vitals of religion* (see BCO 34-5), even one which some may consider to refer to an obscure or very technical point of doctrine." (emphasis added)

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

4. New River Presbytery has never stated that one not holding a fundamental of the system cannot teach or hold a position of authority. We would refer you to the Minutes of New River Presbytery for July 29, 1989 (page 17 of the Record of the Case), item 46-41. The spokesman for the complainants introduced a motion listing five specific deviations from the standards of the church, which motion was to state that no one holding any of these views could be approved to teach. The motion was overwhelmingly defeated. This action immediately followed the adoption of the report of the Commission, and immediately preceded a request for reconsideration and, failing to obtain said vote, the oral notice of the filing of complaint. Thus the presbytery is on record, and was before the filing of this complaint, as holding a contrary position to that alleged. Conclusion: The specification of error alleged by the Complainants against New River Presbytery is contrary to fact. The alleged action clearly never took place.

### REGARDING SPECIFICATION #2

- A. Its Propriety
  1. The substance of the second "specification of error" is that New River Presbytery erred in its judgment. The supporting rationale of injustice is provided under "A" and of a mistake in judgment under "B" on page 7 of the Record of the Case. These are grounds cited under the provisions for Appeal (*BCO* 42-3).
  2. The "complainants" are the Respondents of the Complaint of Alder vs Session of Grace Covenant Church. The decision of the court was in favor of Alder, and against the original Respondents.
  3. The requested amend asks for a rehearing with conditions, essentially reversing the decision of the Presbytery.
  4. The effect of these factors is that of an Appeal from the decision of New River Presbytery.
  5. According to *BCO* 42-1, Appeal is only allowable in a "judicial case". *BCO* 42-2 refers to those who "have submitted to a regular trial". These references are applicable to the situations of Chapter 32, which refer to charges, witnesses, etc., and are not applicable to Complaints.

Conclusion: Specification #2 is not in order, and should be denied.

Should the Commission disagree with the above argumentation, we would further argue:

- B. The Merits of the Original Decision
  1. New River Presbytery did not initiate the matters within Grace Covenant Presbyterian Church. Complaint was brought to Presbytery by a member disturbed

## APPENDICES

that the specific teacher was approved to teach. The original Complainant had, as the record shows, attempted to resolve the matter apart from judicial action. The initial action of a letter dated November 28, 1988 (pages 36-37 of the Record) reflects previous discussions and disquiet in the congregation (voiced at least to the CE Committee and to the Session, and known to others at some point - see Minutes of the Session, May 8, 1989 [p. 65 of the Record]). Said letter requested transfer of membership, indicating that the matter was significant. These matters alone bring the situation to border on a violation of the Assembly's statements regarding such exceptions as "disturb the peace and purity of the church" (Fourteenth General Assembly, above cited).

2. The Minutes of the Session (January 30, 1989, February 13, 1989, etc.) reveal concern that the teacher should not be approved for teaching. The Session, on January 30, 1989, originally sustained a complaint "that the Session did in fact sin in approving John Tyson as a Sunday School teacher." ( p.48 of the Record) This admission of sin was later nullified by an improper ruling of the Moderator of the Session.
3. The Minutes of the Session declare that Mr. Tyson would not be allowed to teach beyond the school year (indicating continued awareness that his teaching was problematic - see letter of January 15, 1988 [p. 42 of the Record]). At least twice prior to that declaration, the policies of the Session would have required that this teacher not be allowed to teach (see letter of November 28, 1988, p. 36 of the Record). Yet Mr. Tyson continued to teach, bringing into question the fulfillment of the Session's stated resolve.
4. While the Session had obtained a promise that the particular matter of Evolution vs Creation would not be taught by this teacher, he was entrusted with broad teaching responsibilities. Specifically, he was to teach a youth class for the entirety of the school year, and to teach them in the entire spectrum of subjects except the one specifically noted.
5. It was the conclusion of the Presbytery that the evolutionary views held by this teacher (as understood by the Session and the original Complainant) are such as cannot be held in isolation. Several of the inseparably related doctrines are listed in the instruction to the Session: "doctrines of sin, of marriage, of salvation, of the covenants" (Record, p. 11). Therefore, no system of safeguarding could be adequate in these circumstances. Continued broad spectrum teaching would, of necessity, impinge on these cardinal doctrines.
6. The question before the Presbytery was not whether this individual had yet perceptibly taught wrong doctrine. The question was whether the Session had erred in approving one with such views to teach.

Conclusion: Specification #2 should be denied. As the Presbytery Commission stated in its minute explanatory, "... it is opinion of the court that the Session sought with full integrity to deal with the matter..." The history of the actions and communications clearly show, however, that the Session erred.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

EXHIBIT B

STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

CHARLES E. CHAPPELL  
vs.  
EASTERN CAROLINA PRESBYTERY

Judicial Case 90-4

I. A Summary of the Facts

- A. At a called meeting of the Session of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church, Durham, North Carolina, held on June 24, 1989 the following action was taken, to wit:

Motion made by Ed Chappell, second by Charles Spaulding, and passed unanimously that the Session requests Presbytery to appoint a Commission to visit Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church in an effort to solve what appears to be irreconcilable differences between members, officers and the Pastor. (R.C. p.4)

- B. At a Stated Meeting of Eastern Carolina Presbytery on July 15, 1989 the following action was taken, to wit:

# 9. MSP that Presbytery elect by secret ballot a Commission and clothe it with the full power of Presbytery to resolve all matters of conflict at Fuller Memorial Church, Durham... (R.C. p.32)

- C. On August 29, 1989 the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery took the following action, to wit:

- a. (2) The entire Session (the Pastor included) will be temporarily suspended from the ruling authority of their office and the Commission will act as a Session Pro Tem. The Session Pro Tem will assume the decision making duties of the Fuller Session and provide advice, guidance, and additional training to the Fuller Session. The Fuller Session will be expected to meet with the Session Pro Tem and participate in the formation of the agenda and discussion of the issues, but the Session Pro Tem will make the decisions. The Session will be expected to participate in carrying out the decisions of the Session Pro Tem. (R.C. p.6)

- D. Beginning on August 29, 1989, the Fuller Commission did meet and conduct business as the Session of Fuller Memorial Church, in the course of which it

## APPENDICES

accepted the resignations of two ruling elders on November 28, 1989. The Commission did continue to exercise control over the actions of the Fuller Session until June 24, 1990.

- E. The Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery on November 15, 1989 outlined its basis for authority to take this action, to wit:

The basis for the authority of the Presbytery to review and control the Church Session comes from *BCO* 11-4. The first paragraph describes the various spheres of action, from the Session as the innermost sphere to the General Assembly as the outermost, or most inclusive, sphere. The second paragraph deals specifically with the area of review and control. This portion of the basis is very well established, even within our experience herein Eastern Carolina Presbytery.

The second part of the authority comes from the powers of Presbytery listed in *BCO* 13-9. Items from this list that apply are: "to review the records of church Session, redress whatever they have done contrary to order and take effectual care that they observe the constitution of the Church", "to require ministers to devote themselves diligently to their sacred calling and to censure the delinquent", "to condemn erroneous opinions which injure the purity or peach of the Church; to visit churches for the purpose of inquiring into and redressing the evils that my have arisen in them", and "in general, to order whatever pertains to the spiritual welfare of the churches under its care". These items cover the church, the Session, and the minister. (R.C. p.11)

- F. At a Stated Meeting of Eastern Carolina Presbytery on October 21, 1989 the following action was taken, to wit:

# 18. MSP that since Fuller Session is unclear as to why they have been dissolved or suspended by Presbytery's Commission, that the Commission Report to Presbytery at its Winter Stated Meeting the basis for their taking this action.

# 20. MSP that Presbytery approve the Commission's report in the parts and the whole. (R.C. p.34)

- G. On November 28, 1989 the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery took the following action, to wit:

A motion was passed unanimously that, due to the present circumstances, the Commission will exercise its right of review and control and require that at least three members of the Commission (including at least one Teaching Elder and at least one Ruling Elder) be present at each meeting of the Fuller Session, until such time as its is apparent that the Session is operating smoothly. (*BCO* 40, esp. 40-2 and 40-4). (R.C. p.13)

- H. On December 26, 1989 Charles E. Chappell, Complainant, and Charles E. Spaulding, both Ruling Elders of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church, duly and properly filed their complaint against Eastern Carolina Presbytery relating to the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

actions of the Commission particularly those at the Commission Meeting of November 28, 1989. The improper actions cited were as follows:

1. Suspension of the Session (which included the denial of representation of Fuller at the winter meeting of ECP which is contrary to *BCO* 13-1). Only can the Session be suspended after due process has been followed.
  2. Appointing itself Session Pro Tem. Nowhere in the *BCO* is there a mention or definition of a Session Pro Tem and as such is in violation of *BCO* 40-3.
  3. At the meeting of the Commission on November 28, 1989 the Commission acting as the Session Pro Tem accepted the resignations of RE Charles Spaulding and RE Charles Chappell. Since the PCA does not recognize a Session Pro Tem this action was improper and should be declared null and void. Only can the Session of Fuller act on these resignations *BCO* 40-3.
- I. At a Stated Meeting of Eastern Carolina Presbytery on January 20, 1990 the following action was taken, to wit:
- # 24. A motion was made and second that Presbytery concur with and enter into the minutes the interim report of the Commission
- # 26. . . . The complaint from Mr. Chappell was mentioned and the moderator put the question to Presbytery as to its timeliness.
- The question was whether the complaint was in order as to its being presented within 30 days following the court's action.
- # 27. M.S. Passed it be found in order as to timeliness and be distributed to Presbytery.
- # 28. M.S. Passed to table the substitute and read the complaint of Mr. Chappell. The complaint was read by Presbytery.
- # 29. M.S. Passed that the complaint be ruled out of order. Reason: The Committee stated that by a 3-1 vote the Session delegated oversight to the Commission. It was also stated that the "irreconcilable differences" has made the Session virtually incapable of functioning in it's role of oversight in the spiritual affairs of the Church.
- # 31. . . . The moderator ruled the main motion now was the original motion to concur with the report and enter it into Presbytery's minutes. (Original #24) Motion Passed. (R.C. pp.36-37)
- J. From July 15, 1989 through February 12, 1990 the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery held 22 meeting in which it took actions as Session of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church.

## APPENDICES

- K. On January 24, 1990 Complainant, a Ruling Elder of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church, duly and properly filed his complaint against the January 20, 1990 action of Eastern Carolina Presbytery in concurring with and approving the report of the Commission and in ruling his complaint of December 26, 1989 out of order.

### II. Additional Facts Not at Issue in This Case

1. On June 24, 1990 at a called meeting of the corporation of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church, the following action was taken:

Motion was made, seconded and passed that Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church of Durham, North Carolina, Incorporated withdraw from Eastern Carolina Presbytery effective immediately and that the Stated Clerk of the Meeting be directed to inform Eastern Carolina Presbytery of this action.

2. In a letter to the Stated Clerk of Eastern Carolina Presbytery dated June 24, 1990, the Moderator and Stated Clerk of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church stated that the action of June 24, 1990 (1) should not be construed as a withdrawal from the Presbyterian Church in America, and (2) is in accordance with *BCO* 25-11 which "A particular church may withdraw from any court of this body at any time for reasons which seem to it sufficient."

3. On July 25, 1990 a duly called congregational meeting of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church clarified the actions taken at the corporation meeting on June 24, 1990 and the following motion was passed unanimously:

To sustain the action of the congregation at the meeting of June 24, 1990 in withdrawing from Eastern Carolina Presbytery in accordance with *BCO* 25-11.

4. Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church has petitioned Central Carolina Presbytery to be admitted to membership in that Presbytery.
5. On July 7, 1990 a Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery declared that the relation between Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church and Eastern Carolina Presbytery was dissolved effective June 24, 1990, thus also dissolving the relationship between Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church and the Presbyterian Church in America as of that date. Said Commission also required that by July 22, 1990 Fuller Church "cease and desist" from using the name of or reference to "Presbyterian Church in America" in its name, signs, advertising, church stationery, church bulletins and other material.

### III. Statement of the Issues

1. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery, at its meeting of January 20, 1990, properly rule "out of order" the Complaint of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding?

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

2. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery have the authority and power to suspend the members of the Session of Fuller Memorial Church, either temporarily or permanently, without consent of the congregation and without due process?
3. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery or its Commission, have authority and power to constitute itself as a "Session Pro Tem" for Fuller Church and make all decisions therefor?
4. Were the resignations of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding properly approved under *BCO* §24-6 so as to dissolve the official relationship between them and Fuller Church?

### IV. Judgment of The Case

After consideration of the Complaint, it is the judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission that the Complaint should be sustained.

It is the judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission, as follows:

1. Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred at its meeting of January 20, 1990 in ruling the Complaint of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding "out of order".
2. The *Book of Church Order* does not give a presbytery the authority and power to suspend members of a Session without the consent of the congregation and without due process. The Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred in so doing.
3. While the Commission may have believed its replacing the Fuller Session was undertaken with consent (there was no formal vote on the issue), its action had the effect of removing and replacing the Session with one that had not been elected by the Fuller congregation, which action of the Commission exceeded the jurisdiction given by the *Book of Church Order*.
4. Since there is no provision for a "Session Pro Tem" in the *BCO* of the Presbyterian Church in America (*BCO* 11-4) or for officers to be placed in authority over a congregation without its consent, Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Fuller Commission did not have authority to accept the resignations of elders or to act as a Session on other matters; hence RE Chappell and RE Spaulding are still Ruling Elders of that congregation.

### V. The Reasoning And Opinion of the Court

A careful review of the record of this case reveals a great misunderstanding of the power and authority granted by the Constitution to the various courts of the Presbyterian Church in America.



## APPENDICES

*At the heart of the issue are the principles set forth in the Preface to the BCO, II-(7) and (8): "All church power, whether exercised by the body in general, or by representation, is only ministerial and declarative since the Holy Scriptures are the only rule of faith and practice. Since ecclesiastical discipline derives its force only from the power and authority of Christ, the great Head of the Church Universal, it must be purely moral and spiritual in nature." Further, BCO 11-2 provides that: "The jurisdiction of Church courts is only ministerial and declarative."*

Having been invited to help resolve differences between the pastor, members and officers of Fuller Church, the Fuller Commission began its work with great care and diligence. While the intent was noble, its effect was to bring even greater stress to the situation.

At the January 20, 1990 meeting of Eastern Carolina Presbytery an issue was raised regarding the complaint of December 26, 1989 filed by Ruling Elders Chappell and Spaulding against actions by the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery. BCO Section 43-2 provides that a complaint must be filed within thirty days following the meeting of the Court. BCO Section 15-1 deals with Ecclesiastical Commissions and provides that:

. . . (A commission) shall keep a full record of its proceedings, which shall be submitted to the Court appointing it. If the concluding actions of the Commission are approved, it shall become the action of the Court and enter on its minutes. . .

It is our opinion that the 30 day period for filing a complaint does not begin to run until the Court appointing the Commission approved the Commission's actions and enters the same on its minutes. We therefore concur with the action of Eastern Carolina Presbytery which found said complaint in order as to timeliness.

### **A. Right of Local Church to Choose Its Officers**

It is our opinion that the crucial issue in this case is: Can a presbytery, by a Commission or otherwise, go into a local church, depose the Session on a temporary or permanent basis, and take over the control of the local church, without the prior consent of the local congregation? Does PCA Constitution give to a presbytery such authority and power?

We conclude that a presbytery has no such power under the PCA Constitution. We believe that the BCO clearly enunciates a principle that the officers of the local church must be chosen by the people of the local congregation. In the April 1971 issue of "Contact" (an occasional publication of Presbyterian Churchmen United) Dr. Morton Smith wrote an article entitled "BIBLICAL PRINCIPLES OF CHURCH GOVERNMENT". This article begins with the following statements:

Among those things for which Presbyterian Church United States stands is historic Presbyterian polity. We stand for this type of polity because we believe it to be the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Biblical form. In order to refresh our thinking on this subject, let us examine the basic principles regarding church government as they are found in the Bible.

First, we find the office bearers in this Apostolic church were chosen by the people. This is seen at the outset with the selection of Matthias to replace Judas (Acts 1:15-26). It should be observed that Peter did not presume to make this appointment by himself. Also, the selection was made by the 120, and not just by the apostles themselves. This is seen even more clearly in Acts 6, with the selection of the first deacons. The Apostles simply set the necessary qualifications and tasks to be performed, but left the choice up to the people (Acts 6:1-6). The Apostles thus set the pattern of the selection of office bearers by the people. This thus becomes the norm for the Christian church. It is one of those things which Presbyterian polity has preserved.

We believe the *Book of Church Order* has clearly set forth this Biblical principle; and we illustrate with these BCO provisions, to wit:

Preliminary Principle (6): Though the character, qualifications and authority of Church officers are laid down in the Holy Scriptures, as well as the proper method of officer investiture, the power to elect persons to exercise the authority in any particular society resides in that society.

Section 3-1: The power which Christ has committed to His Church vests in the whole body, the rulers and the ruled, constituting it a spiritual commonwealth. This power, as exercised by the people, extends to the choice of those officers whom He has appointed in His Church.

Section 11-3: All Church courts are one in nature, constituted of the same elements, possessed inherently of the same kinds of rights and powers, and differing only as the Constitution may provide. When, however, according to Scriptural example, and needful to the purity and harmony of the whole Church, disputed matters of doctrine and order arising in the lower courts are referred to the higher courts for decision, such referral shall not be so exercised as to impinge upon the authority of the lower court.

Section 16-2: The government of the Church is by officer gifted to represent Christ, and the right of God's people to recognize by election to office those so gifted is inalienable. Therefore no man can be placed over a church in any office without the election, or at least the consent of that church.

Section 24-1: Every church shall elect persons to the offices of Ruling Elder and Deacon in the following manner: . . .

Section 24-6: . . . The Ruling Elder or Deacons, though chargeable with neither heresy nor immorality, may become unacceptable in his official capacity to a majority of the church which he serves. In such a case the church may take the initiative by a majority vote at a regularly called congregational meeting, and

## APPENDICES

request the Session to dissolve the official relationship between the church and the officer without censure.

It is clear to us from these and other provisions of the PCA Constitution that an inalienable right of the local congregation is to be governed by the officers it chooses. When a presbytery, or a commission thereof, either temporarily or permanently, removes the session of a local church and seeks to act as and for the session, it becomes the governing body of the local church without being chosen by the local congregation. This is the error made by Eastern Carolina Presbytery and/or its Commission.

### **B. Nature of Power of Church Courts**

We further conclude that Presbytery and its Commission misinterpreted the meaning of certain provisions of the *Book of Church Order* which they felt gave them the basis and authority for such actions. In the Commission's letter of November 15, 1989 (R.C.p.11), with which the Presbytery later concurred, it was stated that the basis for its actions came in two steps - the right to "review and control" and "the specific powers of Presbytery". It stated:

The basis for the authority of Presbytery to review and control the Church Session comes from *BCO* 11-4.

The second part of the authority comes from certain of the powers of Presbytery listed in *BCO* 13-9. Items from this list that apply are: "to review the records of church Sessions, redress whatever they have done contrary to order and take effectual care that they observe the constitution of the Church", "to require ministers to devote themselves diligently to their sacred calling and to censure the delinquent", "to condemn erroneous opinions which injure the purity or peace of the Church; to visit churches for the purpose of inquiring into and redressing the evils that may have arisen in them", and "in general, to order whatever pertains to the spiritual welfare of the churches under its care". These items cover the church, in Session, and the minister.

These provisions as well as all other provisions in the *Book of Church Order* must be read in the light of the Preliminary Principles set out in the Preface. There it is stated:

The Presbyterian Church in America, in setting forth the form of government founded upon and agreeable to the Word of God, reiterates the following great principles which have governed the formation of the plan: (Then eight such principles are enunciated).

Two of these Preliminary Principles deals specifically with the nature of power granted by the *Book of Church Order* to the Courts of the PCA. They state:

(7) All Church power, whether exercised by the body in general, or by representation, is only ministerial and declarative since the Holy Scriptures are the only rule of faith and practice. No Church judicatory may make laws to bind the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

conscience. All church courts may err through human frailty, yet it rests upon them to uphold the laws of Scripture though this obligation be lodged with fallible men.

(8) If the preceding Scriptural principles be steadfastly adhered to, the vigor and strictness of disciplines will contribute to the glory and well-being of the Church.

Since ecclesiastical discipline derives its force only from the power and authority of Christ, the great Head of the Church Universal, it must be purely moral and spiritual in its nature.

The 15th General Assembly defined the word "power" to mean - the ability to require (force) compliance with the decisions of the courts. (Min. 15th G.A. p.480)

Clearly, these Preliminary Principles state that such power is "only ministerial and declarative" and "must be purely moral and spiritual in its nature".

The remainder of the *Book of Church Order* is consistent in setting forth the nature of church power. We list typical provisions which speak to this issue:

Section 3-2. Ecclesiastical power, which is wholly spiritual, is twofold. . .

Section 3-3. The sole functions of the Church, as a kingdom and government distinct from the civil commonwealth, are to proclaim, to administer, and to enforce the law of Christ revealed in the Scriptures.

Section 3-4. The power of the Church is exclusively spiritual; that of the State includes the exercise of force.

*Thus, all these BCO provisions which Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Commission relied upon for the basis and authority for its action have to be read in the light of this nature and extent of church power as set forth in the Preliminary Principles and other provisions of the BCO. Let us illustrate:*

1. Do the "review and control" sections of the *BCO* give a higher court the power to take over a lower court and "act for" it, if, the lower court does not comply with the higher court's orders or if the higher court thinks the lower court is unable to handle its own affairs? No. The provisions for "review and control" in the *Book of Church Order* are often misunderstood -- particularly the word "control". The 18th General Assembly (1990) amended its Rules of Assembly Operations by removing the word "control" from its designation of its Committee of Commissioners to "review of presbytery records". The review is of the "records" and designed to acquaint the lower court with any mistakes or errors therein. Under the provision for "review", the higher court has no authority to take "control" of the lower court and "act for" it.
2. Similarly, the presbytery powers (*BCO* §13-9) to "visit churches for the purpose of inquiring into and redressing the evils that may have arisen in them" and "in

## APPENDICES

general to order what will pertain to the spiritual welfare of the churches under its care" must likewise be construed as ministerial and declarative. These provisions are not to be construed to give the presbytery power and authority to take over a session or local congregation and "act for" it.

Thus Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Commission failed to properly interpret the power and authority given to it by the Book of Church Order when they found the basis and authority for its action from these provisions of the Book of Church Order.

But this does not mean that a higher court has no authority over a lower court. For instance, *BCO* §40-5 sets out several courses that a Presbytery may take when advised by the records of the Session or by memorial of any important delinquency or grossly unconstitutional proceedings of the Session. Said *BCO* §40-5 is not applicable to this case because (1) Presbytery did not discover an error from "the records of the court" or "by memorial", and if it had been so advised, §40-5 requires that "the first step shall be to cite the court alleged to have offended to appear by representative . . . to show what it has done or failed to do in the case in question". But this §40-5 is an illustration of a multitude of courses that a higher court can take in dealing with a lower court when so advised.

Also, *BCO* §13-9 uses two clauses that illustrate this authority, to wit:

. . . To visit churches for the purpose of inquiring into and redressing the evils that may have arisen in them. . .

. . . In general, to order whatever pertains to the spiritual welfare of the churches under its care. . .

These clauses certainly give a Presbytery authority to point out to a Session any erroneous action it has taken and the courses necessary to correct any errors or problems.

However, any course taken by a higher court in relation to a lower court would have to be in the light of the power and authority prescribed in the *BCO* Preface and related provisions as aforesaid. The course would have to be moral and spiritual, administrative and declarative. It would have to be ecclesiastical rather than civil. As we have written, the issue is not one of authority but of power to force compliance. Jesus Christ is the King and Head of PCA. He is present by His Word and Spirit at each court. The benefits of His offices are effectually applied by the Holy Ghost. Although church courts may err through human frailty, the decision of PCA courts should be given great authority by the constituency, unless one feels bound by his conscience as contrary to Scripture. Since Jesus Christ has established officers in His Church to whom He has bestowed the Keys of the Kingdom, the exercise of this power, which is ministerial and declarative of God's Word and hence essentially spiritual, is an awesome thing. No other authority on Earth compares to it.

So, in PCA, being an ecclesiastically connectional church, there are many courses that a higher court may take when dealing with a lower court, within these limitations

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

set forth in the *BCO*. If the lower court refuses to heed, then the most extreme course that higher court may take is to break fellowship with the lower court. This principle is set out in *BCO* Section 11-2 where, in dealing with individuals members, it is said:

. . . The highest censure to which their authority extends is to cut off the contumacious and impenitent from the congregation of believers. . .

### C. Limited Jurisdiction of Church Courts

Another decision of the Commission, concurred in by Eastern Carolina Presbytery, needs consideration. As shown in the Summary of the Facts, above, on August 29, 1989, the Commission suspended the entire Session from the ruling authority of their office and proceeded to act as a "Session Pro Tem" for the Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church. Although the action provided that the Fuller Session would be expected to participate in carrying out the decisions, it clearly stated that "the Session Pro Tem" would make the decisions. In other words, the "Session Pro Tem" took control of the local church and made the decisions as to his operations in 22 meetings held from July 15, 1989 through February 12, 1990. All parties concede that there is no provision in the Book of Church Order for a "Session Pro Tem". But in the oral argument, the representative for Eastern Carolina Presbytery found the basis for this action as he said:

"There may not be a specific provision for this, but the Commission felt it was within the general principle of Presbyterian Polity and within the powers granted to the Commission by the Presbytery".

As to the basis being "within the general principle of Presbyterian Polity" we would suggest that the Book of Church Order of the Presbyterian Church in America sets out specific policy for this denomination. In Chapter 11 - Jurisdiction of Church Courts - at Section 11-4 it is provided:

Section 11-4. For the orderly and efficient dispatch of ecclesiastical business, it is necessary that the sphere of action of each court should be distinctly defined. The Session exercises jurisdiction over a single church, the Presbytery over what is common to the ministers, Sessions, and churches within a prescribed district, and the General Assembly over such matters as concern the whole Church. The jurisdiction of these courts is limited by the express provisions of the Constitution.

Thus PCA church courts have limited jurisdiction - limited by the expressed provisions of the Constitution. No PCA church court has the power or authority to assume unto itself general jurisdiction to hear and determine anything it deems wise and advisable, unless such jurisdiction is expressly given it by the Constitution. If the *BCO* does not give the court the express right to hear and determine a matter, that court has no power to consider it. Thus when both parties admit that there is no express provision of the Constitution for a "Session Pro Tem", then by that admission we conclude that they admit that Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Commission erred in such action; and we so hold.

## APPENDICES

### **D. Method For Session Member To Resign**

Another issue is raised by the Complainant relating to the resignations of Complainant and Ruling Elder Charles Spaulding from the Session of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church. The Book of Church Order Section 24-6 provides that a Ruling Elder may request resignation from his office. In such a case, the Session shall have a conference with the Ruling Elder and after careful consideration, may, if it thinks proper, accept his resignation and dissolve the official relationship which exists between him and the church. The Commission, acting as Session Pro Tem, accepted these resignations and as basis therefor stated that it felt that the requirements of *BCO* 24-6 had been met. We disagree. As previously concluded, the Commission erroneously assumed the position of "Session Pro Tem"; and such "Session Pro Tem" had no authority to act as the Session of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church. There is no evidence that any session elected by the congregation of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church has acted upon the resignations of these two Ruling Elders. Therefore, we conclude that Ruling Elder Charles E. Chappell and Ruling Elder Charles E. Spaulding are still members of the Session.

### **E. Session Cannot Delegate Its Duties To Presbytery**

When Eastern Carolina Presbytery at its Winter Stated Meeting on January 20, 1990 ruled the complaint of Mr. Chappell "out of order" because the Fuller Session by three to one vote delegated oversight to the Commission, the Presbytery erred. There is no provision in the *Book of Church Order* which permits a Session to delegate its duties as defined by *BCO* § 12-5 to a Presbytery. To do so would violate the unalienable right of the congregation to be governed by officers the congregation chooses, as aforesaid.

### **F. Suspension Must Be By Due Process**

Complainant raises another issue regarding the action of the Commission in suspending members of the Fuller Session from their office. Suspension is a Church Censure under *Book of Church Order* Chapter 30, Rules of Discipline. This is not a case without process under Chapter 38 of the *Book of Church Order*. No Church Censure under *Book of Church Order* Chapter 30 can be imposed without due process. *Book of Church Order* Chapter 33 provides that process against a church member must be instituted before the Session. Thus we conclude that Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Commission erred in this regard in two respects:

1. As before stated, the "Session Pro Tem" was not the duly elected Session of Fuller Presbyterian Church and no Church Censure could be imposed by it.
2. The suspension was attempted without due process.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### G. Ecclesiastical-Civil Power And Authority in PCA

Further opinion is made due to implications from the facts in this case about which we believe we should comment for advice to the whole church.

When Eastern Carolina Presbytery appointed a Commission and clothed "it with full power of Presbytery to resolve all matters of conflict at Fuller Memorial Church", said Presbytery took an ecclesiastical action. The Presbytery could "clothe" its Commission with only those powers it had under the *BCO*. When the Commission sought to suspend the members of Fuller Session and establish itself as a "Session Pro Tem" of Fuller Church, it thought it was taking an "ecclesiastical" action, but it was really taking a "civil" action as defined by the 15th General Assembly. This General Assembly stated:

Accordingly, a reasonable definition of the civil functions of PCA Church Courts is: Any and all matters that ultimately have to be enforced by the civil courts. (Min. 15th G.A. p.481)

The Fourteenth General Assembly also defined civil functions in these words:

Civil authority or civil power means any authority or power that would require the use of civil laws or civil courts to enforce any judgment, decision, or order of a congregation, presbytery or the General Assembly if the person or entity to whom the judgment, decision, or order is addressed refuses to accept, abide by and take such action as may be necessary or appropriate to put into effect, such judgment, decision or order. (Min. 14th G.A. p. 434)

Let us apply these definitions to this case: What if the Session of the local congregation of Fuller Church refused to abide by the decisions of the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery acting as the "Session Pro Tem"? How could the Commission and the Presbytery enforce its decisions relating to the Fuller Session and/or the local congregation if they refused to abide by them? The way that such decisions could be enforced civilly would be for the Commission to go to civil court to seek the assistance of the civil power to enforce its decisions. This would be using the Power of the Sword. Thus, the attempted action of the Commission to act as and for the Session of Fuller Church was a civil action.

It should be remembered that the local church, the presbytery, and the General Assembly are separate civil entities with civil powers. To exist as legal entities in our society, they must be civil entities that can each own its own property, have its own employees, and perform all separate civil functions. In the PCA structure, none of the "civil entities" have any connection with or control over any other "civil entity."

Thus, there is an ecclesiastical connection among its entities with the higher court having ecclesiastical power and authority over the lower courts. This is what makes us Presbyterian and not Congregational in our polity. Also, each entity has certain civil powers. For instance, if General Assembly dismissed a presbytery and if men from churches in that presbytery sought to attend a General Assembly meeting as commissioners, the General Assembly would have the civil power to go to the civil



## APPENDICES

court to seek an injunction enjoining these men from sitting in the meeting. But the higher courts have no civil authority or power of the lower courts. The higher court may not go to a civil court to seek enforcement of its ministerial and declarative decision. This would violate the above stated principle by using the power of the sword to enforce the higher court's ecclesiastical actions taken against a lower court.

An important issue for PCA is: Is there any civil connection between the denomination and its local churches so as to create civil liability for negligence or debts? If there is such a civil connection then all the assets of the PCA may be liable for certain acts of a church court, minister, local church or congregation or for certain acts of an employee of the local church.

In 1985 Missouri Presbytery adopted a "Plan for Church Visitation" for the purpose "to inquire as to the spiritual welfare of the church." As authority the Presbytery cited the above provisions of *BCO* §13-9. The 13th G.A. adopted its Judicial Commission's recommendation to sustain a complaint against the presbytery and cited *BCO* §11-4 that reads in parts - "the jurisdiction of the courts is limited by the express provision of the Constitution". The Commission reasoned that this provision did not require the receiving by a local church of a presbytery committee "without a request or a specific problem in the session or the congregation in question." In our opinion that was a correct interpretation of *BCO* 13-9.

The *BCO* must be read as a whole. It clearly states in many places and in sundry language that the power and authority of church courts is moral and spiritual, ministerial and declarative. Every other provision must be read in the light of that power and authority.

We believe some of the confusion arises in trying to determine whether a matter is ecclesiastical or civil. Again we would remind the Church of the 15th General Assembly's definition of a civil function in the PCA as:

"Any and all matters that ultimately have to be enforced in the civil court. . ."

In conclusion, we wish to commend the members of the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery for their diligence in seeking to resolve a difficult situation at Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church. Although it is our judgment that errors were committed, we are convinced that they were made in a good faith effort to heal the breach in relationships that had developed. We are convinced that these Commission members were doing what they thought was best and, in good faith, what they had authority from the presbytery to do. They gave many long hours of their time in sacrifice for their Lord. We commend them for it. We believe that a reconciliation is possible between Eastern Carolina Presbytery and Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church. We pray that men of good-will may now sit down together as Brothers in Christ, each acknowledging his mistakes, asking forgiveness of each, and seeking to re-establish a relationship to the Glory of God.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

We, the undersigned Dr. Morton H. Smith, John B. White, Jr. and W. Jack Williamson, the Judicial Panel duly appointed to hear the above captioned case, hereby submit our unanimous decision thereon.

Heard September 14, 1990 and signed this 16th day of October, 1990.

/s/ Dr. Morton H. Smith  
/s/ John B. White, Jr.  
/s/ W. Jack Williamson

### VI. Voting On Proposed Judgment

All members concur except Rev. Dewey Roberts who abstains because of his absence as a chaplain in Saudi Arabia. Four members submit the following concurring opinion, to-wit:

The undersigned members of the Standing Judicial Commission respectfully concur with the judgment in this case, but disagree with the inclusion of section G (excepting the final paragraph therein) titled "ECCLESIASTICAL-CIVIL POWER AND AUTHORITY IN PCA." In its opening sentence to this section, the majority state that, due to certain facts, they "believe [they] should comment for advice to the whole church." It is respectfully submitted that the SJC exceeds its jurisdiction when it begins offering "advice." We have been given the authority only to decide judicial cases. BCO 15-4 and RAO 15-1.

To engage in the dicta which is present in section G is a dangerous precedent which will lead us down the ill-advised path of judicial activism. It may deny the parties who are entitled to a proper adjudication of their case the justice they are due. This can happen by injecting ancillary issues and opinions into judicial cases which properly deal with limited issues. The General Assembly may disagree with the "advice" offered and decide against a proper judgment due to its disagreement with the proffered "advice." We must avoid this real possibility.

This otherwise excellent opinion should have limited itself to the issues before it. Regrettably, it did not. For this reason, we respectfully concur in the judgment, without subscribing to all the reasons thereon.

RE M. Dale Peacock  
RE John W. Lane  
RE Stanley D. Wells  
RE Harrison I. Brown

## APPENDICES

Member Donald A. Codling submits the following concurring opinion, to-wit:

The undersigned concurs in the judgment rendered in this case, but rejects certain portions of the reasoning given in part B, and all but the last paragraph of part G, contending that they are not necessary to sustain the judgment, that they do not properly come within the scope assigned to the judicial commission by the General Assembly, and that in some places their reasoning is clearly erroneous.

1. The application in part B of the 15th General Assembly's accepted definition of "power" is clearly wrong, both in the context cited in *BCO*, and in the historical usage in *BCO* at this point. *BCO* declares that the church's power "is ministerial and declarative since the Holy Scriptures are the only rule of faith and practice". Clearly what is being said is that the church has no right to use other standards than Scripture for faith and practice. *BCO* goes on to speak against making "laws to bind the conscience". This has nothing to do with the means in use to enforce the decisions of the court, other than to declare that these means must be founded in Scriptural teaching. This portion of section B involves a grievous misconception of the meaning of *BCO*.
2. In part G, the majority declares, "We believe some of the confusion arises in trying to determine whether a matter is ecclesiastical or civil." But there is nothing to suggest that this question entered any party's head in the case at issue. The confusion was over whether or not the action was authorized in Scripture and *BCO* -- and Presbytery judged that matter wrongly. The attempt to raise the question of whether or not an issue is at some inherent level civil or ecclesiastical is confusing. An action is civil when it is contemplated that civil action be taken to enforce it, ecclesiastical when it is intended to limit enforcement to church action. Any issue can become a civil issue. We have written our rules to try to limit our own litigation and to make it likely that the civil courts will decline to intervene, but while the attempt to enforce an action by resort to civil courts can be forbidden, it can not be prevented. Clearly in this case civil action was not contemplated. In fact, Presbytery's Commission sought a measure of agreement from the session before acting. So this portion is a confusing red herring, not a help.
3. In part G, the reasoning by which the majority concludes that Presbytery's commission's action was civil action is mistaken. It is affirmed that the only action which could be taken to enforce the suspension would be to go to civil court. But there are two perfectly proper, and entirely ecclesiastical actions which could be taken. The first would be to raise charges of contumacy, before session, and deal with individual offenders. If session declined to act, *BCO* 33-1 allows that if two other sessions complain, Presbytery may assume original jurisdiction to deal with individual offenders. The second would be to remove the congregation from the PCA. These are completely ecclesiastical actions which could have been used to enforce the disputed action, if it were not an action contrary to *BCO*.
4. However, even if the reasoning of part G were valid, it should be excluded from the report on the grounds that the judicial commission has not mandate to raise this issue. The majority contends that it is important to warn our church that if higher

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

courts were permitted to take over the lower court, imposing officers without the consent of the people, this would establish precedents which would allow the civil courts to negate provisions in our constitution guaranteeing the property of our local congregations. But the judicial commission has no mandate to give warnings to the PCA of civil consequences of its actions. Its mandate is to try judicial cases, and to seek to resolve them in ways set out in our constitution. By enforcing the constitutional principles which forbid presbytery to impose governors not chosen by the congregation, we prevent the establishment of the harmful precedent. The warning in part G is then not needed.

Furthermore, the warning intruded in part G sets a two-fold precedent that has the potential for much more grievous consequences than any civil court could ever impose upon us. In the first place it sets a precedent of allowing fear of what the world may do to become a basis for our decisions of right and wrong. If it were certain that a particular action would lead to the confiscation by civil power of every church property in the country, it would not be cause for the judicial commission to overturn that action. The judicial commission has authority only to apply the Scripture and the PCA constitution to settle judicial cases placed in its hands. As a church of Jesus Christ we must do what is right, even when the consequence is that we follow him to the cross.

Secondly, it sets a precedent for a judicial commission to begin to legislate by its judgments. It is not possible to escape the reality that in judicial cases the decisions have a certain legislative effect. But this should be minimized by limiting decisions rendered strictly to the issues raised.

For these reasons, the undersigned, concurring in the judgments, would exclude from the supporting reasoning section G (excepting the final paragraph), and the erroneous interpretation of *BCO* Preface II (7) in section B.

/s/ Donald A. Codling

**NOTE:** Opinion written by W. Jack Williamson with concurrence of Dr. Morton H. Smith and John B. White, Jr., all of whom concurred in minor revisions by full Commission.

TO: Standing Judicial Committee, PCA  
FROM: Charles E. Chappell

REFERENCE: CASE # 90-4 CHARLES E. CHAPPELL VS.  
EASTERN CAROLINA PRESBYTERY

In this brief when I refer to something in the case history I will refer to it by date and page number.

## APPENDICES

### ITEM I

This complaint was originally filed with ECP on December 26, 1989, Page 15 and the way it was handled was not very complimentary to our church courts.

First this complaint was not included with the agenda mailed to each commissioner in advance of Presbytery Meeting. The copies of this complaint were held by the Moderator, TE John Warren and were distributed to commissioners only when the question of the complaint came before Presbytery January 21, 1990, Page 37. The reasoning behind this was a question as to timeliness of the filing of the complaint. If only they had taken note of dates on communications between the Complainants and the Commission to Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church they would have seen that the complaint was well within the time limit. The Complainants were not given opening and closing arguments (*BCO* 43-9). Article 29, January 20, 1990 Page 37 that the complaint be ruled out of order because the Commission stated that by a Vote of 3-1 the Session delegated oversight to the Commission. No such vote was ever taken by the Fuller Session. No minutes of the Commission were supplied to the Complainant prior to the hearing on January 20, 1990.

### ITEM 2

On August 29, 1989 Pages 6 & 7 a decision of the Commission with respect to FMPC was handed to each member of the Session of FMPC. While I feel this Item # 2 is the crux of the whole complaint there are other items I will deal with later.

The section in question is A 2 Page 6.

A 2 -- The entire Session (the Pastor included) will be temporarily suspended from the ruling authority of their office and the Commission will act as a Session Pro Tem. The Session Pro Tem will assume the decision making duties of the Fuller Session and provide advice, guidance and additional training to the Fuller Session. The Fuller Session will be expected to meet with the Session Pro Tem and participate in the formation of the Agenda and discussion of the issues, but the Session Pro Tem will make the decisions. The Fuller Session will be expected to participate in carrying out the decisions of the Session Pro Tem.

I do disagree and take exception to the Commission having the authority to take the above action (A 2) basing my reasons on the *BCO* as follows:

1. Preface to the *Book of Church Order* II (6)  
Though the character, qualifications and authority of Church Officers are laid down in the Holy Scriptures, as well as the proper method of officer investiture, the power to elect persons to the exercise of authority in any particular society resides in that society.
2. *BCO* 1-4 The Officers of the Church, by whom all its powers are administered, are according to the scriptures, Teaching and Ruling Elders and Deacons.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

3. *BCO 3-1* The Power which Christ has committed to His Church rests in the whole body, the rulers and the ruled, constituting it a spiritual commonwealth. This power, as exercised by the people, extends to the choice of those officers whom He has appointed in His church.
4. *BCO 4-2* Its officers are its Teaching and Ruling Elders and Deacons.
5. *BCO 4-3* Its jurisdiction, being a joint power, is lodged in the Church Session, which consists of its Pastor, Pastors, its Associate Pastor and its Ruling Elders.
6. *BCO 7-2* The Elders jointly have the government and spiritual oversight of the Church, including teaching.
7. *BCO 11-3* When disputed matters of doctrine and order arising in the lower courts are referred to the higher courts for decision, such referral shall not be so exercised as to impinge upon the authority of the lower court.
8. *BCO 11-4* The Session exercises jurisdiction over a single church.
9. *BCO 12-1* The Church Session consists of the Pastor, Associate Pastor(s) if there be any, and the Ruling Elders of a Church.
10. *BCO 12-5* The Church Session is charged with maintaining the spiritual government of the Church.
11. *BCO 13-1* When the Presbytery meets as a court it shall comprise all Teaching Elders and one Ruling Elder from each congregation (ECP seated TE Ron Morrell but refused to seat a Ruling Elder from the FMPC congregation at the October 21, 1989 Meeting).
12. *BCO 16-2* Therefore no man can be placed over a church in any office without the election, or at least the consent of that church.
13. *BCO 25-11* It is expressly recognized that each local congregation or local church shall be competent to function and to take actions covering the matters set forth herein as long as such action is in compliance with the civil laws with which said local congregation or local church must comply and this right shall never be taken from said local congregation or local church without the express consent of and affirmative action of such local church or congregation.

The commission based their authority on *BCO 11-4* and *BCO 13-9* and on actions that Eastern Carolina Presbytery had taken in the past. After reading *BCO 11-4* over and over I can find no basis for this action. In *BCO 13-9* in cases in which the Session cannot exercise its authority, it shall have power to assume original jurisdiction. At no time was the Session unable to exercise its authority nor did it ever vote to delegate oversight to the Commission as stated in the minutes of Presbytery of January 20, 1990, (page 37) Item #29.

## APPENDICES

### ITEM 3

The action of the Commission to accept the letters of resignation of Charles E. Chappell and Charles E. Spaulding in the Minutes of November 28, 1989, Page 78

This was an improper action since it was taken by the "Session Pro Tem" and since there is no such body defined in the *BCO* it is nonexistent.

The *BCO* 24-6 also states: The Session, after conference with him and careful consideration of the matter, may, if it thinks proper, accept his resignation and dissolve the official relationship which exists between him and the church.

### ITEM 4

The Commission after restoring ruling authority to William C. Wynne, Jr. and Ron Morrell, Minutes of November 28, 1989, Page 78, item #9 did pass a motion to exercise its right of review and control requiring at least three members of the Commission present at each meeting of the Fuller Session. They based this on *BCO* 40-2 and 40-4. No Session is to be controlled by any church court nor does it need any members of a Presbytery Commission present to conduct the business of a church session. *BCO* 40-2 and 40-4 is speaking of the review of the Session Minutes or records on an annual basis or when the higher court requires. The above ruling # 9 on Page 78 if allowed to stand could effectively take the ruling authority away from a local Session as evidenced by the actions taken at the Stated Meeting of the Fuller Session on June 11, 1990.

### ITEM 5

At the Presbytery Meeting of July 15, 1989, Page 32, Item #9 a commission was elected and the quorum for this commission was set at two teaching elders and two ruling elders.

Listed below are dates and page numbers of meetings at which this quorum was not present:

August 21, 1989, Pages 54, 55 & 56  
September 11, 1989, Pages 63, 64 & 65  
September 18, 1989, Pages 66 & 67  
October 9, 1989, Pages 68, 69 & 70  
October 16, 1989, Page 71  
October 30, 1989, pages 72 & 73  
January 9, 1990, Pages 80 & 81

### ITEM 6

There were a number of communications or letters mentioned in the Commission Minutes that were not included in the case history. They are:

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

July 19, 1989 - Page 40 Item 8B a letter from TE Ron Morrell, Pastor of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church in which he outlined his view of the problems

July 19, 1989 - Page 43 Item #21B - Letters from former pastors as to whether similar problems had occurred.

September 24, 1989 - Page 47 Item 15A - Copy of written statements of Mr. & Mrs. W. C. Wynne, Sr., that I hand delivered to TE Andy Homeyer

November 13, 1989 - Page 75 Item 8 - Letter from Charles E. Chappell dated November 11, 1989

### ITEM 7

It was definitely understood by those present in Presbytery at the January 20, 1990 meeting that the actions of this Commission were in violation of the *BCO* as a motion was made, seconded and passed that the Commission draft a revision to the *BCO* for Presbytery to review defining the origin and function for the use of interim sessions

January 20, 1990 - Page #9 Item 33

To sum up this brief I suppose I need to give my opinion as to what effect the above listed actions have had on the Fuller Church. I would say that Fuller was as near to ceasing to be a viable church as I ever remember it in my lifetime. We were not meeting the payment of our bills on time. The building was badly in need of repair. The congregation felt that they were not kept informed by the commission and they were ready for a change. On June 24, 1990 a change was made and definite progress has been made in all aspects since that time.

Respectfully submitted  
/s/ RE Charles E. Chappell  
Presbyterian Church in America



APPENDICES

EXHIBIT C

STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

WALLACE W. MARSHALL, JR.  
vs.  
EASTERN CAROLINA PRESBYTERY

Judicial Case 90-4a

**I. A Summary of the Facts**

- A. At a called meeting of the Session of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church, Durham, North Carolina, held on June 24, 1989 the following action was taken, to wit:

Motion made by Ed Chappell, second by Charles Spaulding, and passed unanimously that the Session requests Presbytery to appoint a Commission to visit Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church in an effort to solve what appears to be irreconcilable differences between members, officers and the Pastor. (R.C.p.4)

- B. At a Stated Meeting of Eastern Carolina Presbytery on July 15, 1989 the following action was taken, to wit:

# 9. MSP that Presbytery elect by secret ballot a Commission and clothe it with the full power of Presbytery to resolve all matters of conflict at Fuller Memorial Church, Durham... (R.C.p.32)

- C. On August 29, 1989 the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery took the following action, to wit:

a. (2) The entire Session (the Pastor included) will be temporarily suspended from the ruling authority of their office and the Commission will act as a Session Pro Tem. The Session Pro Tem will assume the decision making duties of the Fuller Session and provide advice, guidance, and additional training to the Fuller Session. The Fuller Session will be expected to meet with the Session Pro Tem and participate in the formation of the agenda and discussion of the issues, but the Session Pro Tem will make the decisions. The Session will be expected to participate in carrying out the decisions of the Session Pro Tem. (R.C.p.6)

- D. Beginning on August 29, 1989, the Fuller Commission did meet and conduct business as the Session of Fuller Memorial Church, in the course of which it accepted the resignations of two ruling elders on November 28, 1989. The Commission did continue to exercise control over the actions of the Fuller Session until June 24, 1990.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- E. The Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery on November 15, 1989 outlined its basis for authority to take this action, to wit:

The basis for the authority of the Presbytery to review and control the Church Session comes from *BCO* 11-4. The first paragraph describes the various spheres of action, from the Session as the innermost sphere to the General Assembly as the outermost, or most inclusive, sphere. The second paragraph deals specifically with the area of review and control. This portion of the basis is very well established, even within our experience herein Eastern Carolina Presbytery.

The second part of the authority comes from the powers of Presbytery listed in *BCO* 13-9. Items from this list that apply are: "to review the records of church Session, redress whatever they have done contrary to order and take effectual care that they observe the constitution of the Church", "to require ministers to devote themselves diligently to their sacred calling and to censure the delinquent", "to condemn erroneous opinions which injure the purity or peach of the Church; to visit churches for the purpose of inquiring into and redressing the evils that my have arisen in them", and "in general, to order whatever pertains to the spiritual welfare of the churches under its care". These items cover the church, the Session, and the minister. (R.C.p.11)

- F. At a Stated Meeting of Eastern Carolina Presbytery on October 21, 1989 the following action was taken, to wit:

# 18. MSP that since Fuller Session is unclear as to why they have been dissolved or suspended by Presbytery's Commission, that the Commission Report to Presbytery at its Winter Stated Meeting the basis for their taking this action.

# 20. MSP that Presbytery approve the Commission's report in the parts and the whole. (R.C.p.34)

- G. On November 28, 1989 the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery took the following action, to wit:

A motion was passed unanimously that, due to the present circumstances, the Commission will exercise its right of review and control and require that at least three members of the Commission (including at least one Teaching Elder and at least one Ruling Elder) be present at each meeting of the Fuller Session, until such time as its is apparent that the Session is operating smoothly. (*BCO* 40, esp. 40-2 and 40-4). (R.C.p.13)

- H. On December 26, 1989 Charles E. Chappell, Complainant, and Charles E. Spaulding, both Ruling Elders of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church, duly and properly filed their complaint against Eastern Carolina Presbytery relating to the actions of the Commission particularly those at the Commission Meeting of November 28, 1989. The improper actions cited were as follows:

## APPENDICES

1. Suspension of the Session (which included the denial of representation of Fuller at the winter meeting of ECP which is contrary to *BCO* 13-1). Only can the Session be suspended after due process has been followed.
  2. Appointing itself Session Pro Tem. Nowhere in the *BCO* is there a mention or definition of a Session Pro Tem and as such is in violation of *BCO* 40-3.
  3. At the meeting of the Commission on November 28, 1989 the Commission acting as the Session Pro Tem accepted the resignations of RE Charles Spaulding and RE Charles Chappell. Since the PCA does not recognize a Session Pro Tem this action was improper and should be declared null and void. Only can the Session of Fuller act on these resignations *BCO* 40-3.
- I. At a Stated Meeting of Eastern Carolina Presbytery on January 20, 1990 the following action was taken, to wit:
- # 24. A motion was made and second that Presbytery concur with and enter into the minutes the interim report of the Commission
- # 26. . . . The complaint from Mr. Chappell was mentioned and the moderator put the question to Presbytery as to its timeliness. The question was whether the complaint was in order as to its being presented within 30 days following the court's action.
- # 27. M.S. Passed it be found in order as to timeliness and be distributed to Presbytery.
- # 28. M.S. Passed to table the substitute and read the complaint of Mr. Chappell. The complaint was read by Presbytery.
- # 29. M.S. Passed that the complaint be ruled out of order. Reason: The Committee stated that by a 3-1 vote the Session delegated oversight to the Commission. It was also stated that the "irreconcilable differences" has made the Session virtually incapable of functioning in it's role of oversight in the spiritual affairs of the Church.
- # 31. . . . The moderator ruled the main motion now was the original motion to concur with the report and enter it into Presbytery's minutes. (Original #24) Motion Passed. (R.C.pp.36-37)
- J. From July 15, 1989 through February 12, 1990 the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery held 22 meeting in which it took actions as Session of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church.
- K. On February 17, 1990 Complainant, a Teaching Elder in Eastern Carolina Presbytery, duly and properly filed his complaint against the January 20, 1990 action of Eastern Carolina Presbytery in concurring with and approving the report

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

of the Commission and in ruling R.E. Chappell's complaint of December 26, 1989 out of order.

### II. Additional Facts Not At Issue in This Case

1. On June 24, 1990 at a called meeting of the corporation of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church, the following action was taken:

Motion was made, seconded and passed that Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church of Durham, North Carolina, Incorporated withdraw from Eastern Carolina Presbytery effective immediately and that the Stated Clerk of the Meeting be directed to inform Eastern Carolina Presbytery of this action.

2. In a letter to the Stated Clerk of Eastern Carolina Presbytery dated June 24, 1990, the Moderator and Stated Clerk of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church stated that the action of June 24, 1990 (1) should not be construed as a withdrawal from the Presbyterian Church in America, and (2) is in accordance with *BCO* 25-11 which "A particular church may withdraw from any court of this body at any time for reasons which seem to it sufficient."
3. On July 25, 1990 a duly called congregational meeting of Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church clarified the actions taken at the corporation meeting on June 24, 1990 and the following motion was passed unanimously:

To sustain the action of the congregation at the meeting of June 24, 1990 in withdrawing from Eastern Carolina Presbytery in accordance with *BCO* 25-11.

4. Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church has petitioned Central Carolina Presbytery to be admitted to membership in that Presbytery.
5. On July 7, 1990 a Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery declared that the relation between Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church and Eastern Carolina Presbytery was dissolved effective June 24, 1990, thus also dissolving the relationship between Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church and the Presbyterian Church in America as of that date. Said Commission also required that by July 22, 1990 Fuller Church "cease and desist" from using the name of or reference to "Presbyterian Church in America" in its name, signs, advertising, church stationery, church bulletins and other material.

### III. A Statement Of The Issues

1. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery, at its meeting of January 20, 1990, properly rule "out of order" the Complaint of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding?

2. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery have the authority and power to suspend the members of the Session of Fuller Memorial Church, either temporarily or permanently, without consent of the congregation and without due process?
3. Did Eastern Carolina Presbytery or its Commission, have authority and power to constitute itself as a "Session Pro Tem" for Fuller Church and make all decisions therefor?

#### IV. Judgment of The Case

After consideration of the Complaint, it is the judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission that the Complaint should be sustained.

It is the judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission, as follows:

1. Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred at its meeting of January 20, 1990 in ruling the Complaint of RE Chappell and RE Spaulding "out of order".
2. The *Book of Church Order* does not give a presbytery the authority and power to suspend members of a Session without the consent of the congregation and without due process. The Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred in so doing.
3. While the Commission may have believed its replacing the Fuller Session was undertaken with consent (there was no formal vote on the issue), its action had the effect of removing and replacing the Session with one that had not been elected by the Fuller congregation, which action of the Commission exceeded the jurisdiction given by the *Book of Church Order*.

#### V. The Reasoning And Opinion of the Court

A careful review of the record of this case reveals a great misunderstanding of the power and authority granted by the Constitution to the various courts of the Presbyterian Church in America.

At the heart of the issue are the principles set forth in the Preface to the *BCO*, II- (7) and (8): "All church power, whether exercised by the body in general, or by representation, is only ministerial and declarative since the Holy Scriptures are the only rule of faith and practice. Since ecclesiastical discipline derives its force only from the power and authority of Christ, the great Head of the Church Universal, it must be purely moral and spiritual in nature." Further, *BCO* 11-2 provides that: "The jurisdiction of Church courts is only ministerial and declarative."

Having been invited to help resolve differences between the pastor, members and officers of Fuller Church, the Fuller Commission began its work with great care and diligence. While the intent was noble, its effect was to bring even greater stress to the situation.

At the January 20, 1990 meeting of Eastern Carolina Presbytery an issue was raised regarding the complaint of December 26, 1989 filed by Ruling Elders Chappell and Spaulding against actions by the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery. *BCO* Section 43-2 provides that a complaint must be filed within thirty days following the meeting of the Court. *BCO* Section 15-1 deals with Ecclesiastical Commissions and provides that:

. . . (A commission) shall keep a full record of its proceedings, which shall be submitted to the Court appointing it. If the concluding actions of the Commission are approved, it shall become the action of the Court and enter on its minutes. .

It is our opinion that the 30 day period for filing a complaint does not begin to run until the Court appointing the Commission approved the Commission's actions and enters the same on its minutes. We therefore concur with the action of Eastern Carolina Presbytery which found said complaint in order as to timeliness.

#### **A. Right of Local Church to Choose Its Officers**

It is our opinion that the crucial issue in this case is: Can a presbytery, by a Commission or otherwise, go into a local church, depose the Session on a temporary or permanent basis, and take over the control of the local church, without the prior consent of the local congregation? Does PCA Constitution give to a presbytery such authority and power?

We conclude that a presbytery has no such power under the PCA Constitution. We believe that the *BCO* clearly enunciates a principle that the officers of the local church must be chosen by the people of the local congregation. In the April 1971 issue of "Contact" (an occasional publication of Presbyterian Churchmen United) Dr. Morton Smith wrote an article entitled "BIBLICAL PRINCIPLES OF CHURCH GOVERNMENT". This article begins with the following statements:

Among those things for which Presbyterian Church United States stands is historic Presbyterian polity. We stand for this type of polity because we believe it to be the Biblical form. In order to refresh our thinking on this subject, let us examine the basic principles regarding church government as they are found in the Bible.

First, we find the office bearers in this Apostolic church were chosen by the people. This is seen at the outset with the selection of Matthias to replace Judas (Acts 1:15-26). It should be observed that Peter did not presume to make this appointment by himself. Also, the selection was made by the 120, and not just by the apostles themselves. This is seen even more clearly in Acts 6, with the selection of the first deacons. The Apostles simply set the necessary qualifications and tasks to be performed, but left the choice up to the people (Acts 6:1-6). The Apostles thus set the pattern of the selection of office bearers by the people. This thus becomes the norm for the Christian church. It is one of those things which Presbyterian policy has preserved.

We believe the *Book of Church Order* has clearly set forth this Biblical principle; and we illustrate with these *BCO* provisions, to wit:

Preliminary Principle (6): Though the character, qualifications and authority of Church officers are laid down in the Holy Scriptures, as well as the proper method of officer investiture, the power to elect persons to exercise the authority in any particular society resides in that society.

Section 3-1: The power which Christ has committed to His Church vests in the whole body, the rulers and the ruled, constituting it a spiritual commonwealth. This power, as exercised by the people, extends to the choice of those officers whom He has appointed in His Church.

Section 11-3: All Church courts are one in nature, constituted of the same elements, possessed inherently of the same kinds of rights and powers, and differing only as the Constitution may provide. When, however, according to Scriptural example, and needful to the purity and harmony of the whole Church, disputed matters of doctrine and order arising in the lower courts are referred to the higher courts for decision, such referral shall not be so exercised as to impinge upon the authority of the lower court.

Section 16-2: The government of the Church is by officer gifted to represent Christ, and the right of God's people to recognize by election to office those so gifted is inalienable. Therefore no man can be placed over a church in any office without the election, or at least the consent of that church.

Section 24-1: Every church shall elect persons to the offices of Ruling Elder and Deacon in the following manner: . . .

Section 24-6: . . . The Ruling Elder or Deacons, though chargeable with neither heresy nor immorality, may become unacceptable in his official capacity to a majority of the church which he serves. In such a case the church may take the initiative by a majority vote at a regularly called congregational meeting, and request the Session to dissolve the official relationship between the church and the officer without censure.

It is clear to us from these and other provisions of the PCA Constitution that an inalienable right of the local congregation is to be governed by the officers it chooses. When a presbytery, or a commission thereof, either temporarily or permanently, removes the session of a local church and seeks to act as and for the session, it becomes the governing body of the local church without being chosen by the local congregation. This is the error made by Eastern Carolina Presbytery and/or its Commission.

## **B. Nature Of Power Of Church Courts**

We further conclude that Presbytery and its Commission misinterpreted the meaning of certain provisions of the *Book of Church Order* which they felt gave them the basis and authority for such actions. In the Commission's letter of November 15, 1989 (R.C.p.11), with which the Presbytery later concurred, it was stated that the basis for its actions came in two steps - the right to "review and control" and "the specific powers of Presbytery". It stated:

The basis for the authority of Presbytery to review and control the Church Session comes from *BCO* 11-4.

The second part of the authority comes from certain of the powers of Presbytery listed in *BCO* 13-9. Items from this list that apply are: "to review the records of church Sessions, redress whatever they have done contrary to order and take effectual care that they observe the constitution of the Church", "to require ministers to devote themselves diligently to their sacred calling and to censure the delinquent", "to condemn erroneous opinions which injure the purity or peace of the Church; to visit churches for the purpose of inquiring into and redressing the evils that may have arisen in them", and "in general, to order whatever pertains to the spiritual welfare of the churches under its care". These items cover the church, in Session, and the minister.

These provisions as well as all other provisions in the *Book of Church Order* must be read in the light of the Preliminary Principles set out in the Preface. There it is stated:

The Presbyterian Church in America, in setting forth the form of government founded upon and agreeable to the Word of God, reiterates the following great principles which have governed the formation of the plan: (Then eight such principles are enunciated).

Two of these Preliminary Principles deals specifically with the nature of power granted by the *Book of Church Order* to the Courts of the PCA. They state:

(7) All Church power, whether exercised by the body in general, or by representation, is only ministerial and declarative since the Holy Scriptures are the only rule of faith and practice. No Church judicatory may make laws to bind the conscience. All church courts may err through human frailty, yet it rests upon them to uphold the laws of Scripture though this obligation be lodged with fallible men.

(8) If the preceding Scriptural principles be steadfastly adhered to, the vigor and strictness of disciplines will contribute to the glory and well-being of the Church.

Since ecclesiastical discipline derives its force only from the power and authority of Christ, the great Head of the Church Universal, it must be purely moral and spiritual in its nature.



The 15th General Assembly defined the word "power" to mean - the ability to require (force) compliance with the decisions of the courts. (*Min. 15th G.A.* p.480)

Clearly, these Preliminary Principles state that such power is "only ministerial and declarative" and "must be purely moral and spiritual in its nature".

The remainder of the *Book of Church Order* is consistent in setting forth the nature of church power. We list typical provisions which speak to this issue:

Section 3-2. Ecclesiastical power, which is wholly spiritual, is twofold. . .

Section 3-3. The sole functions of the Church, as a kingdom and government distinct from the civil commonwealth, are to proclaim, to administer, and to enforce the law of Christ revealed in the Scriptures.

Section 3-4. The power of the Church is exclusively spiritual; that of the State includes the exercise of force.

Thus, all these *BCO* provisions which Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Commission relied upon for the basis and authority for its action have to be read in the light of this nature and extent of church power as set forth in the Preliminary Principles and other provisions of the *BCO*. Let us illustrate:

1. Do the "review and control" sections of the *BCO* give a higher court the power to take over a lower court and "act for" it, if, the lower court does not comply with the higher court's orders or if the higher court thinks the lower court is unable to handle its own affairs? No. The provisions for "review and control" in the *Book of Church Order* are often misunderstood -- particularly the word "control". The 18th General Assembly (1990) amended its Rules of Assembly Operations by removing the word "control" from its designation of its Committee of Commissioners to "review of presbytery records". The review is of the "records" and designed to acquaint the lower court with any mistakes or errors therein. Under the provision for "review", the higher court has no authority to take "control" of the lower court and "act for" it.
2. Similarly, the presbytery powers (*BCO* §13-9) to "visit churches for the purpose of inquiring into and redressing the evils that may have arisen in them" and "in general to order what will pertain to the spiritual welfare of the churches under its care" must likewise be construed as ministerial and declarative. These provisions are not to be construed to give the presbytery power and authority to take over a session or local congregation and "act for" it.

Thus Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Commission failed to properly interpret the power and authority given to it by the *Book of Church Order* when they found the basis and authority for its action from these provisions of the *Book of Church Order*.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

But this does not mean that a higher court has no authority over a lower court. For instance, *BCO* §40-5 sets out several courses that a Presbytery may take when advised by the records of the Session or by memorial of any important delinquency or grossly unconstitutional proceedings of the Session. Said *BCO* §40-5 is not applicable to this case because (1) Presbytery did not discover an error from "the records of the court" or "by memorial", and if it had been so advised, §40-5 requires that "the first step shall be to cite the court alleged to have offended to appear by representative . . . to show what it has done or failed to do in the case in question". But this §40-5 is an illustration of a multitude of courses that a higher court can take in dealing with a lower court when so advised.

Also, *BCO* 13-9 uses two clauses that illustrate this authority, to wit:

. . . To visit churches for the purpose of inquiring into and redressing the evils that may have arisen in them. . .

. . . In general, to order whatever pertains to the spiritual welfare of the churches under its care. . .

These clauses certainly give a Presbytery authority to point out to a Session any erroneous action it has taken and the courses necessary to correct any errors or problems.

However, any course taken by a higher court in relation to a lower court would have to be in the light of the power and authority prescribed in the *BCO* Preface and related provisions as aforesaid. The course would have to be moral and spiritual, administrative and declarative. It would have to be ecclesiastical rather than civil. As we have written, the issue is not one of authority but of power to force compliance. Jesus Christ is the King and Head of PCA. He is present by His Word and Spirit at each court. The benefits of His offices are effectually applied by the Holy Ghost. Although church courts may err through human frailty, the decision of PCA courts should be given great authority by the constituency, unless one feels bound by his conscience as contrary to Scripture. Since Jesus Christ has established officers in His Church to whom He has bestowed the Keys of the Kingdom, the exercise of this power, which is ministerial and declarative of God's Word and hence essentially spiritual, is an awesome thing. No other authority on Earth compares to it.

So, in PCA, being an ecclesiastically connectional church, there are many courses that a higher court may take when dealing with a lower court, within these limitations set forth in the *BCO*. If the lower court refuses to heed, then the most extreme course that higher court may take is to break fellowship with the lower court. This principle is set out in *BCO* Section 11-2 where, in dealing with individuals members, it is said:

. . . The highest censure to which their authority extends is to cut off the contumacious and impenitent from the congregation of believers. . .

### C. Limited Jurisdiction Of Church Courts

Another decision of the Commission, concurred in by Eastern Carolina Presbytery, needs consideration. As shown in the Summary of the Facts, above, on August 29, 1989 the Commission suspended the entire Session from the ruling authority of their office and proceeded to act as a "Session Pro Tem" for the Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church. Although the action provided that the Fuller Session would be expected to participate in carrying out the decisions, it clearly stated that "the Session Pro Tem" would make the decisions. In other words, the "Session Pro Tem" took control of the local church and made the decisions as to his operations in 22 meetings held from July 15, 1989 through February 12, 1990. All parties concede that there is no provision in the *Book of Church Order* for a "Session Pro Tem". But in the oral argument, the representative for Eastern Carolina Presbytery found the basis for this action as he said:

"There may not be a specific provision for this, but the Commission felt it was within the general principle of Presbyterian Polity and within the powers granted to the Commission by the Presbytery".

As to the basis being "within the general principle of Presbyterian Polity" we would suggest that the *Book of Church Order* of the Presbyterian Church in America sets out specific policy for this denomination. In Chapter 11 - Jurisdiction of Church Courts - at Section 11-4 it is provided:

Section 11-4. For the orderly and efficient dispatch of ecclesiastical business, it is necessary that the sphere of action of each court should be distinctly defined. The Session exercises jurisdiction over a single church, the Presbytery over what is common to the ministers, Sessions, and churches within a prescribed district, and the General Assembly over such matters as concern the whole Church. The jurisdiction of these courts is limited by the express provisions of the Constitution.

Thus PCA church courts have limited jurisdiction - limited by the expressed provisions of the Constitution. No PCA church court has the power or authority to assume unto itself general jurisdiction to hear and determine anything it deems wise and advisable, unless such jurisdiction is expressly given it by the Constitution. If the *BCO* does not give the court the express right to hear and determine a matter, that court has no power to consider it. Thus when both parties admit that there is no express provision of the Constitution for a "Session Pro Tem", then by that admission we conclude that they admit that Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Commission erred in such action; and we so hold.

### D. Session Cannot Delegate Its Duties To Presbytery

When Eastern Carolina Presbytery at its Winter Stated Meeting on January 20, 1990 ruled the complaint of Mr. Chappell "out of order" because the Fuller Session by three to one vote delegated oversight to the Commission, the Presbytery erred. There is no provision in the *Book of Church Order* which permits a Session to delegate its duties

as defined in *BCO* § 12-5 to a Presbytery. To do so would violate the unalienable right of the congregation to be governed by officers the congregation chooses, as aforesaid.

**E. Suspension Must Be By Due Process**

Complainant raises another issue regarding the action of the Commission in suspending members of the Fuller Session from their office. Suspension is a Church Censure under *Book of Church Order* Chapter 30, Rules of Discipline. This is not a case without process under Chapter 38 of the *Book of Church Order*. No Church Censure under *Book of Church Order* Chapter 30 can be imposed without due process. *Book of Church Order* Chapter 33 provides that process against a church member must be instituted before the Session. Thus we conclude that Eastern Carolina Presbytery and its Commission erred in this regard in two respects:

1. As before stated, the "Session Pro Tem" was not the duly elected Session of Fuller Presbyterian Church and no Church Censure could be imposed by it.
2. The suspension was attempted without due process.

**F. Ecclesiastical-Civil Power And Authority In PCA**

Further opinion is made due to implications from the facts in this case about which we believe we should comment for advice to the whole church.

When Eastern Carolina Presbytery appointed a Commission and clothed "it with full power of Presbytery to resolve all matters of conflict at Fuller Memorial Church", said Presbytery took an ecclesiastical action. The Presbytery could "clothe" its Commission with only those powers it had under the *BCO*. When the Commission sought to suspend the members of Fuller Session and establish itself as a "Session Pro Tem" of Fuller Church, it thought it was taking an "ecclesiastical" action, but it was really taking a "civil" action as defined by the 15th General Assembly. This General Assembly stated:

Accordingly, a reasonable definition of the civil functions of PCA Church Courts is: Any and all matters that ultimately have to be enforced by the civil courts. (Min. 15th G.A. p.481)

The Fourteenth General Assembly also defined civil functions in these words:

Civil authority or civil power means any authority or power that would require the use of civil laws or civil courts to enforce any judgment, decision, or order of a congregation, presbytery or the General Assembly if the person or entity to whom the judgment, decision, or order is addressed refuses to accept, abide by and take such action as may be necessary or appropriate to put into effect, such judgment, decision or order. (Min. 14th G.A. p. 434)

Let us apply these definitions to this case: What if the Session of the local congregation of Fuller Church refused to abide by the decisions of the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery acting as the "Session Pro Tem"? How could the Commission and the Presbytery enforce its decisions relating to the Fuller Session and/or the local congregation if they refused to abide by them? The way that such decisions could be enforced civilly would be for the Commission to go to civil court to seek the assistance of the civil power to enforce its decisions. This would be using the Power of the Sword. Thus, the attempted action of the Commission to act as and for the Session of Fuller Church was a civil action.

It should be remembered that the local church, the presbytery, and the General Assembly are separate civil entities with civil powers. To exist as legal entities in our society, they must be civil entities that can each own its own property, have its own employees, and perform all separate civil functions. In the PCA structure, none of such "civil entities" have any connection with or control over any other "civil entity."

Thus, there is an ecclesiastical connection among its entities with the higher court having ecclesiastical power and authority over the lower courts. This is what makes us Presbyterian and not Congregational in our polity. Also, each entity has certain civil powers. For instance, if General Assembly dismissed a presbytery and if men from churches in that presbytery sought to attend a General Assembly meeting as commissioners, the General Assembly would have the civil power to go to the civil court to seek an injunction enjoining these men from sitting in the meeting. But the higher courts have no civil authority or power of the lower courts. The higher court may not go to a civil court to seek enforcement of its ministerial and declarative decision to a lower court. This would violate the above stated principle by using the power of the sword to enforce the higher court's ecclesiastical actions taken against a lower court.

An important issue for PCA is: Is there any civil connection between the denomination and its local churches so as to create civil liability for negligence or debts? If there is such a civil connection, then all the assets of the PCA may be liable for certain acts of a church court, minister, local church or congregation or for certain acts of an employee of the local church.

In 1985 Missouri Presbytery adopted a "Plan for Church Visitation" for the purpose "to inquire as to the spiritual welfare of the church." As authority the Presbytery cited the above provisions of *BCO* §13-9. The 13th G.A. adopted its Judicial Commission's recommendation to sustain a complaint against the presbytery and cited *BCO* §11-4 that reads in parts - "the jurisdiction of the courts is limited by the express provision of the Constitution". The Commission reasoned that this provision did not require the receiving by a local church of a presbytery committee "without a request or a specific problem in the session or the congregation in question." In our opinion that was a correct interpretation of *BCO* 13-9.

The *BCO* must be read as a whole. It clearly states in many places and in sundry language that the power and authority of church courts is moral and spiritual,

ministerial and declarative. Every other provision must be read in the light of that power and authority.

We believe some of the confusion arises in trying to determine whether a matter is ecclesiastical or civil. Again we would remind the Church of the 15th General Assembly's definition of a civil function in the PCA as:

"Any and all matters that ultimately have to be enforced in the civil court. . ."

In conclusion, we wish to commend the members of the Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery for their diligence in seeking to resolve a difficult situation at Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church. Although it is our judgment that errors were committed, we are convinced that they were made in a good faith effort to heal the breach in relationships that had developed. We are convinced that these Commission members were doing what they thought was best and, in good faith, what they had authority from the presbytery to do. They gave many long hours of their time in sacrifice for their Lord. We commend them for it. We believe that a reconciliation is possible between Eastern Carolina Presbytery and Fuller Memorial Presbyterian Church. We pray that men of good-will may now sit down together as Brothers in Christ, each acknowledging his mistakes, asking forgiveness of each, and seeking to re-establish a relationship to the Glory of God.

We, the undersigned Dr. Morton H. Smith, John B. White, Jr. and W. Jack Williamson, the Judicial Panel duly appointed to hear the above captioned case, hereby submit our unanimous decision thereon.

Heard September 14, 1990 and signed this 16th day of October, 1990.

/s/ Dr. Morton H. Smith

/s/ John B. White, Jr.

/s/ W. Jack Williamson

## **VI. Voting On Proposed Judgment**

All members concur except Rev. Dewey Roberts who abstains because of his absence as a chaplain in Saudi Arabia. Four members submit the following concurring opinion, to-wit:

The undersigned members of the Standing Judicial Commission respectfully concur with the judgment in this case, but disagree with the inclusion of section F (excepting the final paragraph therein) titled "ECCLESIASTICAL-CIVIL POWER AND AUTHORITY IN PCA." In its opening sentence to this section, the majority state that, due to certain facts, they "believe [they] should comment for advice to the whole church." It is respectfully submitted that the SJC exceeds its jurisdiction when it begins offering "advice." We have been given the authority only to decide judicial cases. BCO 15-4 and RAO 15-1.

To engage in the dicta which is present in section F is a dangerous precedent which will lead us down the ill-advised path of judicial activism. It may deny the parties who are entitled to a proper adjudication of their case the justice they are due. This can happen by injecting ancillary issues and opinions into judicial cases which properly deal with limited issues. The General Assembly may disagree with the "advice" offered and decide against a proper judgment due to its disagreement with the proffered "advice." We must avoid this real possibility.

This otherwise excellent opinion should have limited itself to the issues before it. Regrettably, it did not. For this reason, we respectfully concur in the judgment, without subscribing to all the reasons thereon.

RE M. Dale Peacock  
 RE John W. Lane  
 RE Harrison I. Brown  
 RE Stanley D. Wells

Member Donald A. Codling submits the following concurring opinion, to-wit:

The undersigned concurs in the judgment rendered in this case, but rejects certain portions of the reasoning given in part B, and all but the last paragraph of part F, contending that they are not necessary to sustain the judgment, that they do not properly come within the scope assigned to the judicial commission by the General Assembly, and that in some places their reasoning is clearly erroneous.

1. The application in part B of the 15th General Assembly's accepted definition of "power" is clearly wrong, both in the context cited in *BCO*, and in the historical usage in *BCO* at this point. *BCO* declares that the church's power "is ministerial and declarative since the Holy Scriptures are the only rule of faith and practice". Clearly what is being said is that the church has no right to use other standards than Scripture for faith and practice. *BCO* goes on to speak against making "laws to bind the conscience". This has nothing to do with the means in use to enforce the decisions of the court, other than to declare that these means must be founded in Scriptural teaching. This portion of section B involves a grievous misconception of the meaning of *BCO*.
2. In part F, the majority declares, "We believe some of the confusion arises in trying to determine whether a matter is ecclesiastical or civil." But there is nothing to suggest that this question entered any party's head in the case at issue. The confusion was over whether or not the action was authorized in Scripture and *BCO* -- and Presbytery judged that matter wrongly. To attempt to raise the question of whether or not an issue is at some inherent level civil or ecclesiastical is confusing. An action is civil when it is contemplated that civil action be taken to enforce it, ecclesiastical when it is intended to limit enforcement to church action. Any issue can become a civil issue. We have written our rules to try to limit our own litigation and to make it likely that the civil courts will decline to intervene, but while the attempt to enforce an action by resort to civil courts can be forbidden, it can not be prevented. Clearly in this case civil action was not contemplated. In

fact, Presbytery's Commission sought a measure of agreement from the session before acting. So this portion is a confusing red herring, not a help.

3. In part F, the reasoning by which the majority concludes that Presbytery's commission's action was civil action is mistaken. It is affirmed that the only action which could be taken to enforce the suspension would be to go to civil court. But there are two perfectly proper, and entirely ecclesiastical actions which could be taken. The first would be to raise charges of contumacy, before session, and deal with individual offenders. If session declined to act, *BCO* 33-1 allows that if two other sessions complain, Presbytery may assume original jurisdiction to deal with individual offenders. The second would be to remove the congregation from the PCA. These are completely ecclesiastical actions which could have been used to enforce the disputed action, if it were not an action contrary to *BCO*.
4. However, even if the reasoning of part F were valid, it should be excluded from the report on the grounds that the judicial commission has no mandate to raise this issue. The majority contends that it is important to warn our church that if higher courts were permitted to take over the lower court, imposing officers without the consent of the people, this would establish precedents which would allow the civil courts to negate provisions in our constitution guaranteeing the property of our local congregations. But the judicial commission has no mandate to give warnings to the PCA of civil consequences of its actions. Its mandate is to try judicial cases, and to seek to resolve them in ways set out in our constitution. By enforcing the constitutional principles which forbid presbytery to impose governors not chosen by the congregation, we prevent the establishment of the harmful precedent. The warning in part F is then not needed.

Furthermore, the warning intruded in part F sets a two-fold precedent that has the potential for much more grievous consequences than any civil court could ever impose upon us. In the first place it sets a precedent of allowing fear of what the world may do to become a basis for our decisions of right and wrong. If it were certain that a particular action would lead to the confiscation by civil power of every church property in the country, it would not be cause for the judicial commission to overturn that action. The judicial commission has authority only to apply the Scripture and the PCA constitution to settle judicial cases placed in its hands. As a church of Jesus Christ we must do what is right, even when the consequence is that we follow him to the cross.

Secondly, it sets a precedent for a judicial commission to begin to legislate by its judgments. It is not possible to escape the reality that in judicial cases the decisions have a certain legislative effect. But this should be minimized by limiting decisions rendered strictly to the issues raised.

For these reasons, the undersigned, concurring in the judgments, would exclude from the supporting reasoning section F (excepting the final paragraph), and the erroneous interpretation of *BCO* Preface II (7) in section B.

/s/ Donald A. Codling



## APPENDICES

**NOTE:** Opinion written by W. Jack Williamson with concurrence of Dr. Morton H. Smith and John B. White, Jr., all of whom concurred in minor revisions by full Commission.

### COMPLAINT OF WALLACE W. MARSHALL, JR.

#### BRIEF

#### I. FACTS

1. June 24, 1989 - The session of Fuller Memorial Church requested Presbytery "to appoint a commission to visit Fuller . . . in an effort to resolve what appear to be irreconcilable differences between the members, officers and the pastor."
2. July 15, 1989 - Eastern Carolina Presbytery established a commission to "resolve" the differences above and to "clothe it with the full power of Presbytery to resolve all matters of conflict at Fuller Memorial Church, Durham."
3. August 29, 1989 - The Commission to resolve the differences at Fuller, after interviewing a number of members, announced to the session the Commission's action to suspend the entire session of Fuller Church from their ruling authority, and install itself as a "Session Pro Tem". Meetings of the Session Pro Tem were not to be open meetings, and disciplinary measures were threatened for any breaches of confidentiality regarding matters discussed at these meetings.
4. January 20, 1990 - The Commission introduced its Interim Report to Presbytery, describing the actions taken regarding Fuller Memorial Church. After a motion to concur with the Commission's Interim Report, a substitute motion was made and seconded that the Presbytery "disapprove the action of the Commission to suspend the session of Fuller Memorial Church (including the pastor) from duties of office and to install itself as a Session Pro Tem as being an action of discipline without process as required by *BCO* 33-1 and 32-2, and that notice of this action to disapprove the Commission's action be conveyed to the Congregation of Fuller Memorial Church together with Presbytery's apology." The substitute motion was soon tabled while Mr. Chappell's complaint was introduced and ruled out of order. After the substitute to disapprove the Commission's action was lifted from the table, another substitute motion was moved and seconded to receive the Commission's report "as information" only. However, this motion failed. Afterwards, the moderator ruled that the original motion was on the floor to approve the Commission's report, and the motion passed. Thus, the Presbytery concurred with and approved the Commission's actions without exception.
5. Complaint is now made against the approving action of Presbytery in regard to the actions of the Commission to (1) suspend the session of Fuller Church from their ruling authority, and (2) install itself as the church's ruling body.

## II. ISSUES

1. In approving the actions of the Commission, Presbytery became a full party to the unconstitutional overturning of the authority of the Fuller session, and that not by way of appeal or any complaint to the Presbytery concerning any action of the Fuller session. The Preliminary Principles of the *BCO* affirm the long standing Presbyterian government principle that Church power is only ministerial and declarative.
2. A local congregation has the right to be governed by its own elected officers. In approving the action of the Commission, Eastern Carolina Presbytery gave its approval to the practice of a higher court taking over a lower court. A parallel in civil government would be a higher court suspending the judges of a lower court and taking over the functions of the lower court.
3. In the case at hand, the Commission performed an act of discipline in removing the session from their ruling authority without process. No elder was charged--let alone convicted -- of any offense against the Word of God. Ordination recognizes the perpetual calling of Almighty God to the office of elder, and those thus ordained cannot be suspended or removed from that sacred office unless convicted of an offense against the Word of God for which such suspension or removal is clearly warranted.
4. The Commission has no authority to suspend the ruling elders in any case because they are subject to the jurisdiction of the session, except in cases of appeal, which was not the case in this instance.
5. If the action of the Commission and the approving action of Presbytery are allowed to stand, churches may well be in fear of a Presbytery takeover when beset by some trouble in the church. Ministers also may well fear that should their ministries be the occasion of trouble, their reputations may be blighted by a suspension or other prejudicial action without ever being convicted of an offense.
6. In the short debate on the floor of Presbytery, one elder stated that there was no need to "approve" the Commission's action because "the Commission is Presbytery". This remark would be consistent with the constituting motion for the Commission to "clothe it with the full power of Presbytery". It must be emphasized that a commission's action is not Presbytery's until it is approved by the constituting body. A commission may be clothed with judicial power, but it cannot act with the full power of Presbytery.

## III. ARGUMENT

1. The action of the Commission to suspend the session without due process was a violation of the congregation's right to be governed by its own elected officers unless removed by due process for offenses against the Word of God, or be

## APPENDICES

otherwise removed in their official duties to a particular church by a majority vote of the congregation (*BCO* 24-6). Further, this action violates the basis principle affirmed in the *BCO* that "All Church power, whether exercised by the body in general, or by representation, is only ministerial and declarative since the Holy Scriptures are the only rule of faith and practice." (Preface, I. (7))

2. There is no provision in the *BCO* for a "Session Pro Tem"; neither does the form of government of the Presbyterian Church in America give the Presbytery or its commission any authority to take over a congregation by installing its own members as a session.
3. Suspension from office is an act of discipline (*BCO* 30-3), which cannot be imposed unless a charge is made out or an investigation reveals a strong presumption of guilt (*BCO* 32-2; 31-2).
4. The Commission had no authority to suspend the ruling elders in any case because original jurisdiction in relation to church members, including ruling elders, pertains exclusively to the Session (*BCO* 31-1). Further, process against church members must be entered before the Session, except in cases of appeal (*BCO* 33-1), which was not the case in this instance.
5. For Presbytery to clothe a commission "with the full power of Presbytery to resolve all matters of conflict" (p. 6 Minutes July 15, 1989) is a violation of *BCO* 15-1 and -2, which specify limited powers of a commission.

/s/ Wallace W. Marshall, Jr.  
August 29, 1990

# MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

## EXHIBIT "D"

### STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

BRYAN MELTON, ET AL.

V.

TENNESSEE VALLEY PRESBYTERY

Judicial Case 90-5

#### **I. Summary of the Facts**

The essential facts of this case, pertinent to this complaint, are not in dispute. The complainants are members of Westminster Presbyterian Church (WPC) located in Chattanooga, Tennessee, which church is within the bounds of the Tennessee Valley Presbytery. The respondent is the Tennessee Valley Presbytery (TVP).

During 1988 and 1989, the Session of WPC deliberated regarding the future of the church, recognizing a dwindling active membership and resultant financial difficulties, including the difficulty of hiring a regular full-time pastor. TE Harold Borchert was engaged by the church to serve as interim pastor in May, 1989, agreeing to serve in that capacity until the end of the year.

An informational congregational meeting was held on October 22, 1989, at which the financial condition of the church was discussed. TE Borchert presided. Various options were debated, the final of which was the possibility that WPC could merge with New City Fellowship (NCF), another Chattanooga PCA congregation. Another informational meeting was held on November 12, leading to a "congregational and corporate" meeting on November 19, 1989. RE Richard I. Smith, president of the corporation initially presided at this meeting, and presented this motion from the Session:

that the corporation known as Westminster Presbyterian Church of Chattanooga, Incorporated, be dissolved by a conveyance of its assets and property to the corporation known as the New City Fellowship of the Presbyterian Church in America, Incorporated, after first providing for any corporate deficit. That in consideration of the transfer of its assets and property, the aforementioned New City Fellowship shall contribute the sum of Three Hundred Thousand Dollars (\$300,000) toward the establishment of a trust fund for the continuation and perpetuation of the existing worldwide mission fund of Westminster Presbyterian Church. The trust fund shall also be the resource for a pension to be paid to one long-term employee of the Westminster Church.

Upon reading the motion, TE Borchert chaired the meeting. After considerable debate, the motion passed by two votes, 25 to 23. No request for recount nor any other motion challenging the vote count appears in the record. However, subsequent to that meeting,

## APPENDICES

on November 29, a written request was made to the Session by various members of WPC "...that the Session call another congregational meeting to vote on the resolution and/or to formally rescind the failed resolution." Because the letter was signed by more than one-fourth of the congregation, the Session called a congregational meeting for December 10, 1989.

At the meeting held on December 10, moderated by TE Borchert, a motion was made to rescind the actions of the meeting of November 19th. After discussion, a standing vote was taken: 18 votes to rescind the action of 11/29; 27 votes against. In addition to these 45 votes cast by standing vote, 12 "proxies" were presented (Record, pp. 118-129), but the moderator and the Session ruled that proxy voting was not permitted. The record does not disclose that these proxies were cast, so it is not possible to determine whether some or all of them would have been cast "aye" or "nay" if they had been allowed.

Apparently a timely written complaint was filed pursuant to Chapter 43, *BCO*, with the WPC Session, challenging, among other things, the Session's ruling on December 10 and the resultant dissolution of WPC and the transfer of the property to NCF. On December 29, 1989, the Session denied the complaint. The present complainants, Mr. Bryan Melton, Mrs. Bryan Melton, and Mrs. JoAnn Davis, filed a complaint with the Tennessee Valley Presbytery. A presbytery commission was appointed to hear the complaint, and after full hearing, voted 5-0 to deny the complaint (Record, pp. 8-14). Presbytery approved the Commission's report.

Subsequently, by letter of February 23, 1990, Mr. and Mrs. Bryan Melton and Mrs. JoAnn Davis filed a complaint with the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly. It is that complaint that is before this panel of the Standing Judicial Commission.

### **II. Statement of the Issues**

The issues raised in the 2/23/90 complaint are three: (1) that the TVP commission erred in ruling that the WPC session was correct in disallowing proxy voting at the 12/10/89 congregational meeting; (2) that if the proxy votes had been counted at the 12/10/89 meeting, the minutes and the vote count of the 11/19/89 meeting would have been changed, reversing the outcome of the 11/19 vote; and (3) that the TVP commission erred in ruling that a secret ballot was not required at the 12/10/89 meeting under *BCO* 24-4.

Issues (1) and (2) of the complaint are related, being wholly dependent upon the issue of proxy voting, and will be considered as one issue.

### **III. Judgment of the Case**

It is the judgment of the court that Issues (1), (2) and (3) of the complaint be denied.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### IV. Reasoning and Opinion of the court

Issues (3) will be considered first. The complainants argue that the congregational vote on 12/10/89, on the motion to rescind the action of the 11/19/89 meeting, was required to have been by secret ballot, in accordance with 24-4 of the *BCO*. That section, which is part of the chapter entitled "Election, Ordination and Installation of Ruling Elders and Deacons" reads as follows:

The voters being convened, the Moderator shall explain the purpose of the meeting and then put the question: "Are you now ready to proceed to the election of additional Ruling Elders (or Deacons) from the slate presented?" If they declare themselves ready, the election may proceed by private ballot without nomination. In every case a majority of all the voters present shall be required to elect.

It is important to note that the subject and scope of this provision is limited to the election of ruling elders and deacons; it has no applicability to congregational votes on other matters, such as the issue before the WPC congregation on 12/10/89. Furthermore, the language of 24-4 is permissive, not mandatory, regarding the employment of the private ballot. There was no *BCO* requirement that the vote be taken by secret ballot in this case, and this portion of the complaint should thus be denied.

We now move to consider the primary issue in the complaint: *were the moderator and the session required to accept proxy votes at the 12/10/89 meeting of the congregation?*

The complainants argue that proxy voting should have been permitted, because of the provision of civil law, in the Tennessee Code Annotated, Chapter 57, "NONPROFIT CORPORATIONS--MEMBERS' MEETINGS AND VOTING," which reads as follows:

**48-57-205. Proxies.** -- (a) Unless the charter or bylaws prohibit or limit proxy voting, a member may appoint a proxy to vote or otherwise act for the member by signing an appointment form either personally or by an attorney-in-fact. ...

The corporate charter of WPC, adopted on May 5, 1949, provides in part that "[in all elections each member to be entitled to one vote, either in person or by proxy, and the result to be determined by a majority of the votes cast." No provision exists in the charter permitting voting by proxy in meeting of the membership, apart from the election of officers. The record discloses no bylaws, and the complainants, in the hearing before the panel, stated that WPC had never adopted bylaws.

While WPC apparently did not adopt its particular set of bylaws, it is clear that WPC had adopted, and made itself subject to, the *Book of Church Order* of the Presbyterian Church in America, upon its entrance into the denomination. The *BCO*, to the extent it touches the issues of this case, are WPC's bylaws. Additionally, it is clear

## APPENDICES

from the record that the congregation of WPC used and appealed to *Robert's Rules of Order*, to determine parliamentary procedure (Record, pp. 36-56), and to that extent, *Robert's Rules of Order* had the effect of bylaws in governing the parliamentary procedure to be followed by the WPC congregation. *Robert's Rules of Order, Newly Revised* (1981 Edition), under which the congregation of WPC was conducting its meetings, states with regard to absentee voting, at p. 355:

It is a fundamental principle of parliamentary law that the right to vote is limited to the members of an organization who are actually present at the time the vote is taken in a legal meeting. Exceptions to this rule must be expressly stated in the bylaws. Such possible exceptions include: (a) voting by mail, and (b) proxy voting. An organization should never adopt a bylaw permitting a question to be decided by a voting procedure in which the votes of persons who attend a meeting are counted together with ballots mailed in by absentees, since in practice such a procedure is likely to be unfair. (emphasis added)

At page 360, *Robert's Rules* states:

Proxy voting is not permitted in ordinary deliberative assemblies unless the laws of the state in which the society is incorporated require it, or the charter or bylaws of the organization provide for it. Ordinarily it should neither be allowed nor required, because proxy voting is incompatible with the essential characteristics of a deliberative assembly in which membership is individual, personal, and non-transferable.

In a stock corporation, on the other hand, where the ownership is transferable, the voice and vote of the member is transferable, by use of a proxy. But in a non-stock corporation, where membership is usually on the same basis as in an unincorporated, voluntary association, voting by proxy should not be permitted unless the state corporation law -- as applying to non-stock corporations -- absolutely requires it.

Tennessee law does not absolutely require proxy voting, but allows adoption of particular rules prohibiting or limiting proxy voting. We believe that by WPC's adoption and adherence to *Robert's Rules of Order*, those rules operated as WPC's parliamentary bylaws, thus prohibiting proxy voting at the December 10 meeting. The moderator of the meeting and the session acted properly in disallowing those votes.

Not only did the session and the moderator act properly in disallowing these proxies, but they also acted fairly. The complainants stated unequivocally in oral argument before this panel that voting by proxy had never been allowed, as a matter of practice, at WPC, prior to this meeting. The clear expectations of the members of the congregation, going into the 12/10/89 meeting, was that proxy voting was not allowed. To permit the introduction of proxy voting for the first time in the 40-year history of the church, without a clear understanding on the part of all the membership prior to the meeting that proxies could be solicited and voted at the meeting, would obviously transgress Biblical principles of brotherly love, deference, and honor (Rom. 12:9 ff; II

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Pet. 1:7). It may be that adherence to such Biblical principles would not always be an expectation within all charitable organizations, but it must be so in our churches. Tennessee law recognizes that church bodies may differ with some state requirements, and provision has been made for such differences, where they exist (see 48-67-102). It is the panel's opinion that to have permitted proxy voting at the 12/10/89 meeting would have been such a radical departure from the accepted practice and expectations of the membership of WPC so as to amount to fundamental unfairness, and thus violative of the religious doctrine of the PCA.

Complainants desire to have this court, the highest church court in the PCA, reverse and set aside the action of the congregation and session of a local church. It is their desire that either Presbytery or General Assembly interpret civil law and ecclesiastical rule in such a way as to reverse what the local congregation determined to do in dissolving the local church and transferring its assets. We believe this is contrary to the intent of *BCO* Chapter 25. Local congregations are free, in the PCA, to dispose of their property as they see fit, without interference from the higher courts of the church, whose authority is not civil but moral and spiritual in nature and administration. Higher church courts cannot impose some other rule upon that church.

Dated this 12th day of June, 1990

/s/ Mark Belz  
/s/ Joe Reynolds  
/s/ Michael D. Bolus

#### IV. Voting On Proposed Judgment

22 members concurred with the Judgment and Decision. 2 members disqualified themselves. Request by a party for review by full Commission was denied as such request failing to receive the required 4 members affirmative vote.

**NOTE:** This opinion was written by Mark Belz with concurrence of Joe Reynolds and Michael D. Bolus, member of Judicial Panel.



## APPENDICES

### EXHIBIT "E"

STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

RANDY C. STRINGER  
VS.  
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY PRESBYTERY

CASE NO. 90-7

#### I. Summary of the Facts

On June 2, 1989, Mississippi Valley Presbytery (MVP) tried and convicted Randy C. Stringer on a number of charges. MVP inflicted the censures of deposition and indefinite suspension from the Sacraments on Mr. Stringer. While no formal notification was sent to Mr. Stringer (who had moved to Chattanooga by the time of the trial), he became aware of the censures by a regular mailing of MVP to its members.

On June 9, 1989, the stated clerk of MVP wrote the session of First Presbyterian Church, Chattanooga, TN, to request that it receive Mr. Stringer into membership according to *BCO* 46-8. On October 12, 1989, the clerk of session of First Presbyterian Church, Chattanooga, responded that Mr. Stringer would be received into membership if he requested reception. As it turned out, Mr. Stringer and his family did not remain in Chattanooga. They moved to Florida where Mr. Stringer secured employment.

On October 18, 1989, Robert C. Duhs, chairman of the Advisory Committee of MVP, wrote Mr. Stringer. This letter stated: (1) the action of MVP of June 2, 1989, (2) MVP's desire to see his repentance, and (3) inviting Mr. Stringer to appear at the next meeting of MVP or to send a written statement of his progress toward repentance.

MVP made attempts to contact Mr. Stringer through other sources; the Stated Clerk of the Presbytery of Central Florida and Mr. Stringer's father-in-law.

At the regularly stated meeting of MVP on February 20, 1990, MVP took action to excommunicate Mr. Stringer from the fellowship of the church according to *BCO* 36-7.

It is this action of MVP that Mr. Stringer is appealing.

#### II. Statement of the Issue

The basic issue raised in this appeal is this: did MVP follow the proper procedures of the *Book of Church Order* in excommunicating Mr. Stringer?

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### III. Judgment of the Case

It is the judgment of this court that MVP did not follow the proper procedures of the *Book of Church Order*. This court, therefore, sets aside the decision of MVP to excommunicate Mr. Stringer and remands the case to MVP for proper action according to *BCO* 46-8.

### IV. Reasoning and Opinion of the Court

It is the opinion of this court that after MVP inflicted the censure of deposition on Mr. Stringer, that the provision of *BCO* 46-8 should have been followed, namely, "...it (Presbytery) shall assign him to membership in some particular church, subject to the approval of the Session of that church."

MVP, in fact, did vote to assign him, according to *BCO* 46-8, to First Presbyterian Church, Chattanooga (see letter of June 9, 1989 from Stated Clerk of MVP to the church). However, this action was never effectuated. MVP should have continued its search to find a church, within or without its geographical area, that would have received Mr. Stringer. In essence, assigning Mr. Stringer to a particular church was the only action MVP should have contemplated subsequent to its censure "to depose him without excommunication".

*BCO* 13-2 stated, "A minister shall be required to hold his membership in the Presbytery within whose geographical bounds he resides..." A minister is a member of the regional church (Presbytery) as long as his credentials are in order. If his credentials are voluntarily surrendered (divestiture) or removed (deposition), his membership is to be transferred or assigned to a particular church. This is the rationale for the action a Presbytery must take according to *BCO* 46-8. Since Mr. Stringer was deposed from office, he was no longer a minister of the Church, and as such no longer a ministerial member of Presbytery. He should have been assigned to a particular church in order to come under the spiritual care of a Session.

It is MVP's responsibility, then, to assign Mr. Stringer to a particular church, subject to approval of Session of that church (*BCO* 46-8). This assignment does not necessarily require Mr. Stringer's concurrence or his application for membership in a church. The assignment is a part of the disciplinary process. The Session of that church would assume the responsibility for his spiritual care. It would fall to that Session to encourage Mr. Stringer's repentance so that the censure of indefinite suspension from the Sacraments could be lifted. All further action with reference to Mr. Stringer would fall to that Session.

In remanding this case to MVP, it is this court's opinion that MVP should take no other action but to assign Mr. Stringer to a particular church according to *BCO* 46-8.

## APPENDICES

Dated this 27th day of November, 1990.

/s/ Dominic Aquila

/s/ Roy Allen

/s/ John Ragland

### V. VOTING ON PROPOSED JUDGMENT

All members concurred in this judgment and decision with the exception of Rev. Dewey Roberts, who was serving as a chaplain in Saudi Arabia, Frank Horton who was disqualified as a member of Ms. Valley Presbytery and Dr. Morton H. Smith who filed his dissent as follows:

The undersigned dissents from the decision of the Judicial Commission in the case of Randy C. Stringer versus Mississippi Valley Presbytery.

First, it should be observed that the Presbyterian system of government is the Biblical system, and must therefore be workable for all situations arising in the Church. When a Presbytery fails to understand the system, and thus fails to use in properly, then the system appears to be unusable. The Presbytery of Mississippi Valley should be admonished by the Assembly for its failure to handle this matter properly, thus resulting in a confused decision of the Assembly's Judicial Commission.

The Presbytery had full right to depose the complainant. It should have then followed the *BCO* 46-8 and assigned him to a church roll. Though it is true that the Book does not specify that this must be a church within the bounds of the Presbytery, it is obvious that the assignment of membership cannot be to any church outside of the jurisdiction of the Presbytery. Thus the Presbytery was in error in seeking to assign the complainant to a Church outside of the bounds of the Presbytery.

When the First Presbyterian Church of Chattanooga, TN, indicated that they would receive the complainant if he came before the Session and requested reception, they were not accepting him as assigned to them, which was their perfect right to do. The Presbytery then continued to hold the complainant's membership, and should have sought a church within its bounds to whom it might assign Mr. Stringer. In the meanwhile, his membership was still held by the Presbytery, just as a presbytery holds the membership of individual members of mission churches prior to their becoming organized congregations.

When it became apparent that Mr. Stringer was acting in a rebellious way, refusing to respond to communications from the Presbytery, then the Presbytery had full right to move to the additional censure of excommunication on the ground of contumacy. The Presbytery erred in not notifying him that this would be the consequence of his continued refusal to respond to their letters. He should have been formally cited to appear to answer the charge of contumacy, with the warning given that failure to respond could result in excommunication.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The Assembly should return the matter to the Presbytery of Mississippi Valley, with the instruction that Mr. Stringer be assigned to a congregation within its bounds. If no congregation in the bounds of the Presbytery is willing to accept the assignment, then he should be notified that the Presbytery expects that he will seek membership in a church in the Presbytery where he is living, and that the Presbytery be notified of this reception immediately. If he refuses to do this, the Presbytery should treat him as it would a member of a mission, and deal with his contumacy, after due citation and trial.

/s/ Morton H. Smith  
Member of the Judicial Commission  
March 6, 1991

**NOTE:** This opinion was written by Dominic Aquila with concurrence of Roy Allen and John Ragland, members of the Judicial Panel, with minor revisions by full Commission.

## APPENDICES

### EXHIBIT "F"

#### STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

T.E. DAVID E. BOWEN  
VS.  
EASTERN CAROLINA PRESBYTERY

CASE NUMBER 90-8

#### I. Summary of the Facts

- A. 1/9/88. The Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd, Chapel Hill, North Carolina (hereafter referred to as TCGS) examined congregational nominees for Church Office according to *BCO* 24-1 and unanimously agreed that three nominees could still "sincerely receive and adopt the Confession of Faith and Catechisms of this church as containing the system of doctrine taught in the Holy Scriptures" while taking exception personally to WCF 28-4 (and WLC 166B, WSC 95B) concerning the baptism of infants and believers. (These three men had been previously examined in April, 1987 by a Commission of Eastern Carolina Presbytery (hereafter referred to as ECP) and not approved to stand for election.)
- B. 1/17/88. The congregation of TCGS had the opportunity to question the officer candidates in a special Sunday evening meeting.
- C. 1/24/88. By a majority vote, the congregation elected the three men in question to the office of Elder or Deacon. Eighteen members of the congregation of TCGS signed a complaint against the Session's action in allowing the exceptions of the three men who had personal reservations about the scriptural basis for infant baptism. The complaint also alleged that four men should have been disqualified from officer candidacy because they were out of conformity with the standards concerning the extent of the atonement.
- D. 2/12/88. The Session of TCGS responded to the complainant, defending its action.
- E. 2/24/88. Thirteen members of the Congregation of TCGS signed a complaint against the Session's action and sent to ECP.
- F. 4/16/88. At its spring Stated Meeting, ECP heard the complaint against the Session of TCGS according to *BCO* 43-8,9 and rendered the following judgment.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

1. The action of the Session of TCGS in approving the men named in the complaint to stand for election as church officers was sustained.
  2. The pastor and Session of TCGS were requested to spend a year of intensive training of the men named in the complaint.
  3. Infant baptism and limited atonement are necessarily fundamentals of the "system of doctrine" (*BCO* 254-5-2), and it is not appropriate for Sessions to require a stricter standard of subscription for ruling elder candidates than for diaconal candidates and for teaching elders than for ruling elders. These declarations were then phrased as questions and sent by way of reference to the General Assembly's Committee on Judicial Business.
- G. 6/9/88. The General Assembly ratified the following advice of the Committee on Judicial Business: "Declined to answer the request for advice, because there is no matter pending before the lower court (*BCO* 41-1). Notation: If there has (sic) been a matter before the court, this commission (sic) would have instructed ECP that 'limited atonement'...and 'infant baptism'....are required doctrinal standards for all church officers."
- H. 7/16/88. At its Summer Stated Meeting ECP declared that after the one-year training period called for by Presbytery, the men named in the complaint adjudicated by Presbytery on 4/16/88 should be examined by the Candidates and Examinations Committee of Presbytery concerning their views. Further, "if any of the men be found to be not in conformity with the constitutional standards of the PCA, at that time, that they be required by ECP to resign their office."
- I. August, 1988 - May, 1989. The pastor and Session of TCGS hosted a course for those named in the complaint concerning the distinctives of Reformed Theology.
- J. 4/19/89. Presbytery decided to defer the report of its Candidates and Examinations Committee concerning the men named in the complaint adjudicated by ECP on 4/16/88 until the Summer Stated Meeting.
- K. 7/15/89. At its Summer Stated Meeting ECP requested that RE Robert Byrd (one of the men named in the complaint of 4/16/88) write out his views on infant baptism and present them to the Candidates and Examinations Committee within three months. They Presbytery suspended him from office "due to his neglect in having his children baptized," such suspension to remain in effect "until Presbytery is satisfied that his views are in conformity with the constitutional standards of the PCA." Presbytery also declared that Deacon Bruce Harrod (another man named in the original complaint) "may not be reinstated as a Deacon of the church until his views on infant baptism and particular atonement conform to the constitutional standards of the PCA."

## APPENDICES

(Mr. Harrod had rotated off of active service according to the rotation system adopted by the church when its first deacons were elected in January, 1988.)

- L. 10/21/89. At its Fall Stated Meeting ECP asked the Session of TCGS (rather than ECP's Candidates and Examinations Committee) to examine Mr. Byrd's written views on baptism and to report to the Winter Stated Meeting of Presbytery its action with regard to Mr. Byrd, together with the rationale for this action.
- M. 12/4/89. The Session of TCGS voted unanimously to reconfirm its confidence in Mr. Byrd's suitability for the office of Ruling Elder in the PCA.
- N. 1/8/90. The Session of TCGS adopted reports from one of its Teaching Elders and one of its ruling Elders explaining the reasoning of the court in its judgment concerning Mr. Byrd and sent them to ECP.
- O. 1/20/90. At its Winter Stated Meeting, prior to any discussion of the Session of TCGS's judgment or rationale concerning Mr. Byrd or any action on that judgment, ECP Presbytery by a simple majority of those present and voting, rescinded and expunged from its minutes, its action of 4/16/88 sustaining the Session of TCGS in the complaint brought against it. The moderator's rulings that this motion to rescind and expunge was in order and that it would pass by a simple majority of those present and voting were challenged from the floor, but upheld by vote of Presbytery. Additionally, Presbytery annulled the elections and ordinations of the men named in the 4/16/88 complaint.
- P. 2/16/90. TE David Bowen, Pastor of TCGS, complained against Presbytery's actions of 1/20/90.
- Q. 4/21/90. In its Spring Stated Meeting, ECP sustained certain procedural irregularities cited in TE Bowen's complaint but then acted again to rescind its action of 4/16/88 and to reverse its judgment on the complaint made at that time. Presbytery again annulled the election and ordination of those named in that complaint, with one possible exception which it referred to its Candidates and Examinations Committee for evaluation. Further, Presbytery accused the Session of TCGS of "an inadequate view of submission to the brethren in a creedal and connectional church." Finally, ECP requested the Session to invite a committee of Presbytery to address the congregation of TCGS the next day.
- R. 4/21/90. In a meeting called for the purpose, the Session of TCGS invited Presbytery to send a committee to address the congregation.
- S. 4/22/90. ECP's committee came to the congregational meeting already scheduled for the purpose of calling two new ministers to the church, but elected not to address the congregation at that time. They were invited back for 5/6/90.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- T. 5/6/90. ECP's committee explained its actions concerning TCGS and its rationale for those actions to the congregation at a meeting called for that purpose and for the purpose of electing new officers.
- U. 5/17/90. TE Bowen complained against Presbytery's action in annulling the ordinations of local church officers two years after the fact without a trial.

### II. A Statement of the Issues

- A. Does *Book Of Church Order* 43-10 give a higher court the right to annul the election, ordination and installation of officers after they have assumed and have functioned in their office?
- B. Is Infant Baptism properly considered a 'fundamental of the system of doctrine' of the Presbyterian Church in America (*BCO* 21-5-2 and 24-5-2)?
- C. Is Limited Atonement properly considered a 'fundamental of the system of doctrine' of the Presbyterian Church in America (*BCO* 21-5-2 and 24-5-2)?

### III. Judgment of the Case

- A. The Commission sustains the complaint that Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred in its actions of January 20, 1990, (*ROC* p.31-32) and of April 21, 1990, (*ROC* p. 50) wherein the Presbytery acted to rescind its action of April 16, 1988. This April 16, 1988, action of Presbytery denied a complaint from local church members against the Session for approving nominees for elder and deacon. The January 20, 1990, and April 21, 1990, actions of Presbytery sought to rescind this former action of Presbytery, to sustain the Complaint of the local church members, and to annul the election, ordination and installation of these church officers.
- B. The Commission affirms the judgment of Eastern Carolina Presbytery in that Infant Baptism (*WCF* 28-4) and Limited Atonement (*WCF* 3-3, 8-5 and 11-4) are to be considered fundamentals of the system of doctrine and that there can be no exceptions given in the case of officers in the church.

### IV. Reasoning and Opinion of the Court

- A. The Commission recognizes that the above judgment means that the men in question in the case are still in fact officers of the Church of the Good Shepherd, while at the same time they are out of accord with fundamentals of the system of doctrine of the PCA. Accordingly, we give the following advice to Eastern Carolina Presbytery:



## APPENDICES

1. That Eastern Carolina Presbytery consider giving the following advice to the Church of the Good Shepherd:
    - a) Since it has been affirmed that Infant Baptism and Limited Atonement are fundamentals of the system of doctrine, any officers out of accord with either of these doctrines should be allowed to voluntarily resign and demit their office without censure, or
    - b) Failing (a) above, the Session may consider initiating process as provided in *BCO* Chapters 29-32.
  2. That if the actions advised in (1) above are not satisfactorily completed, then the Presbytery could consider a multitude of options, among them being:
    - a) Seeking to deal with these issues in the Church of the Good Shepherd and among its officers in a pastoral manner by offering training, counsel, and pastoral advice in a multitude of ways; or,
    - b) Assuming original jurisdiction and authority in the matter provided process is begun against those officers as provided in *BCO* 33-1; or,
    - c) In the event all these matters fail and the Presbytery feels that the issue is one of such magnitude that it cannot continue fellowship with this church, then taking action in accordance with *BCO* 13-9(f) to dissolve the relationship of the Church with Eastern Carolina Presbytery.
- B. In addition to the above advice, the Commission also offers the following words of encouragement:
1. To the men in The Church of the Good Shepherd whose views are in question, to continue to study the doctrines of the Church so that they may eventually be able to receive and adopt all the fundamentals of the system of doctrine.
  2. To the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd, to remain as open as possible to allow those not in accord with all of the fundamentals of the system of doctrine to utilize their gifts in every appropriate way, short of serving in office.
  3. To Eastern Carolina Presbytery, to continue in their desire to maintain the standards of the church and in continuing to grow in their efforts to conform to proper practice.
- C. The Commission sets forth the following reasons and opinions in support of the judgments.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

1. That *BCO* 43-10 does not give a higher court the right to annul the actions of election, ordination and installation of officers in a church after the fact:

On January 9, 1988 certain congregational nominees were examined by the Session and unanimously approved as qualified to be elected as Elders and Deacons. On January 17, 1988 the congregation questioned the nominees. On January 24, 1988 the congregation, by majority vote, elected these men to such offices.

On January 24, 1988 some members filed a Complaint against the Session for approving these men as qualified nominees.

On February 12, 1988 the Session took an action which amounted to denial of the members' Complaint.

Sometime shortly thereafter these men were ordained and installed as Elders and Deacons of TCGS.

On February 24, 1988 some members complained to ECP against the Session's action of February 12th in denying their Complaint.

At its meeting on April 16, 1988 ECP heard the members' Complaint and took the following action:

"The action of the Session of TCGS in approving the men named in the Complaint to stand for election as church officers was sustained" (ROC, page 21, item 18a).

The effect of this presbytery action was to deny the Complaint of the local church members against their Session. These Elders and Deacons took upon themselves the duties of their offices after their election, ordination and installation. After this April 16, 1988 action by ECP, there was no pending judicial procedure and no pending administrative or judicial process against these Elders and Deacons in any church court.

On April 21, 1990 ECP took an action to rescind its actions of April 16, 1988 (over 2 years previous) to sustain the action of the Session in approving the nominees and denying the Complaint of some members of the local congregation. The Presbytery then took affirmative action to:

- (1) Sustain the Complaint against the Session; and,
- (2) Annul the officers' elections, ordinations and installations.

We hold that in taking these actions on April 21, 1990, ECP erred. *BCO* 24-6 provides in part: "Ordination to the offices of ruling elder or deacon is

## APPENDICES

perpetual....nor can any person be degraded from either office but by deposition after regular trial...."

The latter portion of *BCO* 24-6 and *BCO* 24-7, 24-8, 24-9 deal with matters by which "the official relationship" of a ruling elder or deacon with a particular congregation may be dissolved. In each of such cases under these *BCO* provisions, the ruling elder or deacon remains in such office but his active relationship with that particular Session or Diaconate is dissolved. The only method for deposing a ruling elder or deacon from his office is by process under the Rules of Discipline of the *BCO*. In the instant case these men had been ordained and serving for over 2 years without any administrative or judicial proceedings pending against them. Thus the only method by which they could have been deposed was by judicial process.

In addition, we hold that ECP erred in its parliamentary procedure of attempting to "rescind and expunge from the records" an action taken 2 years previously. Roberts Rules of Order Section 34 provides that a motion to rescind is not permissible when:

"....the action involved has been carried out in a way which it is too late to undo...." and,

"....something has been done, as a result on the main motion, that it is impossible to undo" and, "....a person has been elected to office, and the person was present or has been officially notified of the action...."

It is our judgment that these rules are applicable to this case. Thus, at the presbytery meetings of January 10, 1990 and April 21, 1990, the motions "to rescind" the presbytery's action of April 16, 1988 were out of order under the above quoted Roberts Rules of Order.

Finally, we note an action of ECP taken at its July 15, 1989 meeting (ROC p. 29, item 26). Here an action was taken that "Ruling Elder Robert Byrd, Good Shepherd Church....be suspended from office...." We point out that "suspension" is a Church Censure under *BCO* Chapter 30, Rules of Discipline. This instant case is not a case without process under *BCO* Chapter 38. No Church Censure under the *BCO* Chapter 30 can be imposed without due process. *BCO* Chapter 33 provides process against a church member must be instituted before the Session. Thus, we conclude that ECP erred in taking this action to suspend a ruling elder of a local church. This and related issues were more fully discussed in our opinion in the case of Charles E. Chappel vs. Eastern Carolina Presbytery, docket number 90-4. We adopt and reaffirm the applicable principles enunciated in the opinion in that case.

2. That Infant Baptism (WCF 28-4) and Limited Atonement (WCF 8-5 and 11-4) are to be considered as 'fundamentals of the system of doctrine':

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- a) **General Discussion:** Before entering the specific discussions concerning Infant Baptism and Limited Atonement, some general discussion of the reasons and opinions is in order. To begin with it must be recognized that while all doctrines are true, not all doctrines are alike. The Westminster Confession of Faith, Chapter I, Section VII states: "All things in Scripture are not alike plain in themselves, nor alike clear unto all: yet those things which are necessary to be known, believed, and observed for salvation, are so clearly propounded, and opened in some place of Scripture or other, that not only the learned, but the unlearned, in a due use of the ordinary means, may attain unto a sufficient understanding of them."

This statement makes the first division of doctrines for us: those doctrines 'necessary to be known, believed, and observed for salvation,' and those other doctrines 'not necessary....for salvation.' Clearly everyone who professes to be a Christian and seeks to join the Church should be in agreement with these 'necessary to salvation' doctrines.

All other doctrines taught in the Bible, while not 'necessary to salvation,' are still true. It must be recognized, however, that evangelical Christians in different denominations and faith groups would differ as to which doctrines are in fact taught. Each of these denominations and faith group, some in a formal way and others in a less formal way, but nevertheless real, have produced 'systems of doctrines.' These are systematized formulations of the various doctrines taught which more often than not in history have taken on clear identities.

For instance: There is a system of doctrine taught in the Westminster Confession of Faith. It is sometimes referred to as 'Calvinism,' but more correctly should be referred to as 'the Reformed Faith' or 'Reformed doctrine.' Other systems of doctrine would be those of Roman Catholicism, Lutheranism, , Arminianism, Dispensationalism, etc. Each denomination and faith group will have a system of doctrine to which it adheres.

The question then arises: does every officer in the Presbyterian Church in America have to adhere to every doctrine which makes up the 'system of doctrine' taught in the Westminster Confession of Faith. There has been a clear practice and understanding in the PCA from its inception, based on historical precedence in other Presbyterian denominations, that some of these doctrines which are 'not necessary for salvation' are 'fundamentals of the system of doctrine' and others are not such 'fundamentals.'

For instance, there has always been great leeway in approving men for office in the PCA who hold differing views of eschatology. Surely the Westminster Standards teach a view of the end times, and not all Pre-

## APPENDICES

millennialists and Amillennialists and Post-millennialists are in accord with what is taught. However, the church has allowed men to become officers and remain in good standing even though they hold differing views.

The same thing could be said for the subject of divorce. The Westminster Confession of Faith, XXIV-6 states that 'nothing but adultery, or such willful desertion as can no way be remedied by the Church, or civil magistrate, is cause sufficient of dissolving the bond of marriage.' It has been recognized that some may differ with the teaching of the standards and believe that only adultery is 'cause sufficient' for a divorce. The church has always allowed both points of view to be held without prejudice.

Other doctrines in which the PCA has granted a measure of freedom are: in the area of creation, where some may hold to a literal six, 24-hour day for God's creative acts, and others may hold to a form of 'age-day' creation; in the area of worship, where some would hold that WCF XXI-5 of the Confession lists those elements of worship which God has instituted and believe that other elements are improper, including the singing of anything but psalms, while others would allow for the singing of hymns and spiritual songs in worship; and others.

Having examined these illustrations of doctrines that are in fact taught in the Scriptures and contained in the system we are calling 'the Reformed faith,' it should now be clear that there are some doctrines in the system of doctrine in which men may hold differing opinions. However, there are also some doctrines which are 'fundamental' to the system of doctrine. This is what is in view in the Second Ordination Vow (*BCO* 21-5,2 and 24-5,2). What is in view here is the fact that among those doctrines that constitute the 'system of doctrine,' some are deemed to be so crucial and important to the system that to deny or be out of accord in any of these 'fundamental' doctrines is tantamount to denying or being out of accord with the entire system.

Nowhere does the constitution of the church define specifically which doctrines are to be considered 'fundamental.' That judgment is left to the individual courts of the church. It is in cases such as the one before the commission that decisions are reached as to which doctrines must be considered by the church to be 'fundamentals.'

This leaves us with the following understanding that we can divide all doctrines into three different categories:

Category I: Doctrines that are 'necessary for salvation.'

Category II: Doctrines that are a part of the 'system of doctrine' and are 'fundamental' to that system.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Category III: Doctrines that are a part of the 'system of doctrine' but are NOT 'fundamental' to that system.

In order to be a member of a PCA church, one must be in accord with all doctrines that fall into Category I; which is to say, one must be a Christian. To be out of accord with any of these doctrines makes one ineligible for church membership.

In order to be an officer in a PCA church, one must be in accord with all doctrines that are fundamental to the system of doctrine we are calling 'the Reformed Faith.' To be out of accord with any of these doctrines makes one ineligible for church office, although still in good standing as a member of the church.

With this background we are now ready to proceed to the sections of the decision which support the judgment that both Infant Baptism and Limited Atonement are to be considered as 'fundamentals of the system of doctrine' (e.g., Category II doctrines).

- b) **Infant Baptism:** The baptism of infants has historically been the practice of the church since the days of the Apostles. Clearly it was the practice of the early church which continued into the Roman Catholic church. But it was also the consistent view of the Reformers, 'unanimously and without exception,' according to Herman Bavinck, the celebrated Dutch theologian. It has only been in relatively more recent years that part of the church has broken from this practice in any great numbers.

The essential argument for infant baptism, presented in a very brief, summary form, goes as follows: Children of believers are heirs of the promises of God and are to be considered as part of the church, the covenant family (Matthew 19:13ff, Acts 2:39, 1 Corinthians 7:14). There is but one covenant of grace, administered differently in the Old Testament and the New Testament (Galatians 3:6-18). In the Old Testament, the sign and seal of admission to the covenant family was circumcision, which was given to both adults and children (Genesis 17, Romans 4:11). In the New Testament, baptism replaces circumcision as the sign and seal of entrance into the covenant family (Matthew 28:18-20, Galatians 3:26-29, Colossians 2:11-12). Therefore baptism is rightly administered to both adults and children.

Of primary importance to the present case is not so much whether the doctrine of Infant Baptism is taught in the Scriptures or not, but rather should it be considered a 'fundamental of the system of doctrine' (Category II) or can it be left to ones conscience (Category III). It is the opinion of the Commission that it must be considered a fundamental.

## APPENDICES

While many people refer to the doctrinal position of the Presbyterian Church in America, as spelled out in the Westminster standards, as 'Reformed Theology' or 'the Reformed faith' (which will be discussed in the section on Limited Atonement), it is also proper, and may in fact be best, to refer to our system of doctrine as 'Covenant Theology.' M. E. Osterhaven is the author of the article on Covenant Theology in the Evangelical Dictionary of Theology, Walter Elwell, Editor (Baker, 1984), from which the following quotation is taken: "The doctrine of the covenant was one of the theological contributions that came to the church through the Reformation of the sixteenth century. Undeveloped earlier, it made its appearance in the writings of Zwingli and Bullinger, who were drive to the subject by Anabaptists in and around Zurich. From them it passed to Calvin and other Reformers, and was further developed by their successors, and played a dominant role in much Reformed theology of the seventeenth century when it came to be known as covenant, or federal, theology...."

"The Covenant of Grace has been made by God with mankind. In it he offers life and salvation through Christ to all who believe....From eternity the Father has given a people to the Son; to them was given the promised Holy Spirit so that they might live in fellowship with God. Christ is the mediator of the covenant of grace inasmuch as he has borne the guilt of sinners and restored them to a saving relationship to God. He is mediator....in the sense of having fulfilled all the conditions necessary for procuring eternal salvation for his people. Thus Hebrews 7:22 calls Jesus the 'surety' or 'guarantee' of the new covenant, which is better than that which came through Moses...."

"Although the covenant of grace includes various dispensations of history, it is essentially one. From the promise in the garden (Genesis 3:15), through the covenant made with Noah (Genesis 6-9), to the day that the covenant was established with Abraham, there is abundant evidence of God's grace. With Abraham a new beginning is made which the later, Sinaitic covenant implements and strengthens. At Sinai the covenant assumes a national form and stress is laid on the law of God. This is not intended to alter the gracious character of the covenant, however (Galatians 3:17-18), but it is to serve to train Israel until the time would come when God himself would appear in its midst. In Jesus the new form of the covenant that had been promised by the prophets is manifest, and that which was of a temporary nature in the old form of the covenant disappears (Jeremiah 31:31-34, Hebrews 8)."

This brief description of Covenant Theology shows us that the theme of the Covenant of Grace is to be recognized as the essential unifying theme of all of Scripture. Each system of doctrine finds some theme around which to understand the Scriptures. Lutherans use the theme of the tension between Law and Grace. Roman Catholics use the theme sacrament. Dispensationalists use the theme of various, different

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

dispensations by which they divide the scriptures, not only into time periods but also into varieties of application and authority.

In Covenant Theology, the Scriptures are seen as one unified revelation of God to man, with the principles of the Covenant being the same in both the Old and New Testament. This is why Reformed churches have placed so much importance on the sign and seal of entrance into the special covenant relationship that the Lord's people have with their Covenant God. Since there is no 'breaking' or 'division' of the revelation into separate parts, but rather there is a unity of the Covenant of Grace, what one therefore looks for is the continuity of the sign and seal. While the sign and seal of admission to the covenant is changed from circumcision to baptism, there is no reason to believe or accept any understanding that the recipients of this sign should be changed. Children are still understood, by Jesus and by Paul, to be recipients of the promises of the covenant and therefore to be recipients of the sign and seal.

Chapter VII of the Westminster Confession of Faith is the section of the church standards that spells out the significance of the Covenant of Grace to the entire system of doctrine. This chapter follows immediately the chapters on creation and the fall, and precedes everything concerning the person and work of Christ and the application of redemption. It thus stands as an essential part of the system of doctrine. So much so that it is proper, and as stated previously, perhaps even helpful, to refer to Reformed Theology as Covenant Theology.

Since the theme of the Covenant is so essential to the entire system of doctrine, it follows that the doctrines pertaining to Baptism as the sign and seal of admission to the covenant is also an essential doctrine. To seek to separate the issue of the baptism of infants from the remainder of the doctrines of baptism and of the covenant would have the affect of removing the place of children from being in the church and from being heirs of the promises of God. This would, of course, be inappropriate and un-Biblical. It is for these reasons that Infant Baptism must be considered as a 'fundamental of the system of doctrine.'

- c) **Limited Atonement:** The term 'Limited Atonement' arises from the historical context of the decisions made by a synod meeting of representatives of the Reformed Church of the Netherlands held at the town of Dort, with the final judgment being made on April 22, 1619. This synod was called to deal with a number of theological issues that had been raised by followers of a then-deceased minister in the Reformed Church of the Netherlands named Jacob Arminius. These followers of Arminius, known as 'Remonstrants' held to five particular doctrinal views which were believed by many in the church to be out of accord with the system of doctrine known as the Reformed Faith. The



## APPENDICES

Synod of Dort confirmed that all five of these doctrinal positions were in fact contrary to the confessional standards of the church.

Through the years these five doctrines (the ones affirmed by the Synod of Dort, in opposition to the ones presented by the Remonstrants) have taken on several un-official names. They are frequently referred to as the 'Five Points of Calvinism.' It must be noted that 'Calvinism' is another name for the system of doctrine we have been referring to as the Reformed Faith. However, it must also be noted that 'Calvinism' contains many more than just these five points--these were simply the five points at dispute in the Synod of Dort.

Because of the setting of this particular controversy in the Netherlands, a tradition soon developed which gave titles to these five doctrines which would form the acronym 'T-U-L-I-P.' The five titles which make up this acronym are:

- T - Total Depravity
- U - Unconditional Election
- L - Limited Atonement
- I - Irresistible Grace
- P - Perseverance of the Saints

It is the "L" in "TULIP" that is under discussion in this particular judicial case; thus the judgment refers to it by the title 'Limited Atonement.'

When examining the doctrine in question, both in its historical and Biblical context, it soon becomes clear that the word 'Limited' is not the best title for the doctrine. In brief summary, it was the position of the Remonstrants that Christ's atonement was not only 'in itself and by itself sufficient for the redemption of the whole human race, but has also been paid for all men and for every man...." In other words, the Remonstrants held to a view that could properly be categorized as a 'universal atonement'- 'for all men and for every man....'

In denying the view of the Remonstrants, the Synod of Dort affirmed that while 'the death of the Son of God....is of infinite worth and value, abundantly sufficient to expiate the sins of the whole world,' yet it was the '....most gracious will and purpose of God the Father that the quickening and saving efficacy of the most precious death of His son should extend to all the elect....; that is, it was the will of God that Christ by the blood of the cross....should effectually redeem out of every people, tribe, nation, and language, all those, and those only, who were from eternity chosen to salvation...." (emphasis added.)

The Synod of Dort did not use the word 'limited' in its decisions, but rather used words such as 'certain' and 'definite.' It would probably be most helpful to think of the doctrine under discussion as that of 'definite

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

atonement' or 'particular atonement,' but historically the popularity of the acronym 'TULIP' has made this re-titling very difficult.

It was the position of the Remonstrants at the Synod of Dort that all five of these doctrinal issues were bound together. They referred to these doctrines as "concerning predestination, and the points annexed to it." This is important to note historically, because the Biblical arguments in support of 'particular atonement' are closely tied to the other four points at dispute at Dort.

The question at stake in this issue, simply put, is "For whom did Christ die?" Some would look at verses such as 1 John 2:2, which reads: "He (Jesus) is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not only for ours but also for the sins of the whole world.", and come to the conclusion that Christ died for all men. But clearly in Romans 11:12, Paul uses the word 'world', speaking of Israel in this way: "But if their transgression means riches for the world, and their loss means riches for the Gentiles, how much greater riches will their fullness bring?" In this verse Paul uses 'world' and 'Gentiles' synonymously, in contrast to Israel. Certainly when we come upon the word 'world' in the Bible, we cannot assume that it always, necessarily means every person in the world.

The question is not whether God deals with every person in the world in some special way. Unbelievers in this world enjoy benefits that flow from the fact that Christ died and was raised from the dead. Christ has dominion over all the world. The question is more narrow than that. It is "On whose behalf did Christ offer himself a sacrifice?" It is "Whom did He reconcile to God?" It is "In whose place did He suffer death?" At stake in this question is the nature of what Christ set out to accomplish. Some may say that His death made the salvation of all men possible. And there is nothing wrong with saying that. But that is not the question. What we cannot say is that he came to actually save all the world. Rather, he came to secure the salvation of all those whom God the Father had eternally chosen.

Those who would teach that there is a 'universal atonement' (i.e., the extent of the atonement applies to everyone in the world) would, to be completely logical, come to the conclusion that all men finally will be saved. Otherwise, if some people for whom the atonement was intended to apply were not saved, then the atonement is to that degree ineffective.

There are at least two essential arguments from Scripture supporting the doctrine of definite atonement. The first comes from Romans 8:31-39. It is clear in verse 31 that Paul, by the use of the pronoun 'us,' is speaking of Christians, of those who have been redeemed. We see this from the preceding context of verses 28-30. Then in verse 32 he adds the word 'all.' "He who did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all....." (emphasis added). The 'all' here is no broader than the 'us;' it is still

## APPENDICES

referring to those who are indeed Christians. In fact, in verse 33 Paul parallels the term 'those whom God has chosen' with 'us all.' Throughout this passage it is clear that Paul is applying the benefits of the atonement to those who have been unconditionally elected by God.

The second argument is based on the fact that those for whom Christ died have themselves also died in Christ. Not only does the Bible speak to the fact that Christ died for believers, but in many places it speaks to the fact that believers have died in Christ. We find this in Romans 6:3-11, 2 Corinthians 5:14-15, Ephesians 2:4-7, and Colossians 3:3. Looking briefly just at 2 Corinthians 5:14, we see: "...we are convinced that one died for all, and therefore all died." Paul's proposition is clear: all for whom Christ died, also died in Christ.

This becomes significant for our current issue because Paul also says that all who died in Christ are also raised to life with Him. Romans 6:4-5: "We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life. If we have been united with him like this in his death, we will certainly also be united with him in his resurrection."

The point here is this: Those for whom Christ died are those who die in Christ. Those who die in Christ are those who are raised in Christ. Therefore those for whom Christ died are those who are raised in Christ. This means that only those who are raised in Christ are those for whom Christ died. And certainly not everyone in the world is raised in Christ. It logically follows then that not everyone in the world can be called someone for whom Christ died.

The above discussion is, by necessity, quite brief. For those who would like to gain more detailed exegetical and logical argument are encouraged to read John Murray's *Redemption Accomplish and Applied* and Benjamin B. Warfield's *The Plan of Salvation*. Also, the volume edited by Peter Y. DeJong, *Crisis In The Reformed Churches*, gives an excellent historical overview of these issues.

Having briefly set forth the Biblical evidence in support of the doctrine we have been calling 'Limited Atonement' or 'Definite Atonement' we must now turn our attention to why it is fundamental to the system of doctrine. Why should this doctrine not be considered as a Category III doctrine for which there is room for a variety of views and beliefs.

This takes us back to the very point that there are 'systems of doctrines.' One of those systems is known by the name 'Arminianism,' taken from the name of the original theologian in the Netherlands whose views were brought to the Synod of Dort by the Remonstrants, Jacob Arminius. The Armenian system and the Reformed system of doctrine are mutually

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

exclusive. One views the application of redemption from the human point of view, understanding that man is able to assist in his own salvation, rejecting the fact that God has deliberately chosen those who should be saved, and teaching that the atonement was intended for all men.

In contradistinction to this, the Reformed faith views the application of redemption from God's point of view, affirming that man is dead in the trespasses of his sins and is totally incapable of even cooperating in his own salvation, and that, apart from God's gracious and effectual calling, he would be totally lost. The Remonstrants, those who initially presented the arguments of Arminianism to the church court known as the Synod of Dort, saw how totally connected these doctrines were.

They form a system. One either adheres to the system of the Reformed Faith; or one adheres to the system of Arminianism. Thus Limited Atonement (as well as the other four points of T-U-L-I-P) must be considered fundamental to the system of doctrine. While many godly Christian people do not accept these doctrines, it does not necessarily diminish their essential faith in Christ nor their ability to worship and serve, to a limited degree, in the church. However, since officers in the PCA must take a vow to receive and adopt a system of doctrine, only those who can affirm the doctrines of Infant Baptism and Limited Atonement should be found eligible for office upon examination of their views.

### V. VOTING ON PROPOSED JUDGMENT

All members concurred in this judgment and decision with the exception of Rev. Dewey Roberts, who abstained as he was serving as a chaplain in Saudi Arabia. Members Robert D. Stuart and Dominic A. Aquila filed a joint concurring opinion, and Dr. Morton H. Smith and Stanley D. Wells filed a joint concurring opinion. These concurring opinions follows:

#### CONCURRING OPINION 1

**CONCURRING OPINION  
CASE 90-8  
T.E. DAVID E. BOWEN  
EASTERN CAROLINA PRESBYTERY**

We concur in the judgment and opinion of Case 90-8 and offer the following as a concurring opinion.

## I. **Infant Baptism**

Infant Baptism is not an isolated issue. It is integrally tied to the definition of covenant and church.

Baptism is a sign and seal of the Covenant of Grace. It points to and signifies the essence of God's covenant provisions. While the sign has no efficacy in and of itself, it does have significance because of what it represents. God gave an external sign as a perpetual indicator of His covenant; we are obligated to use it and acknowledge its significance.

Covenant theology has understood the scripture to teach that there is one covenant of grace spanning both testaments. The initiatory sign of the covenant was circumcision in the old covenant and baptism in the new covenant (Gen. 17:9ff.; Col. 2:9-12). Covenant theology has also understood the scripture to teach that the proper subjects for the initiatory sign were of two classes: (1) adults who grew up outside of the covenant promises, come to faith, and then receive the sign of the covenant (as Abraham); and (2) children of parents in the covenant, who receive the sign of the covenant in infancy and then are called to faith (like the children of Abraham) (Rom. 4:9-12).

In the old covenant both classes of subjects were circumcised. In the new covenant both classes are baptized. While the form of the sign administered is different, the significance and subjects remain the same in both covenant administrations.

Flowing out of this view of the covenant is the definition of the visible church with regard to membership. The visible church is comprised of all who profess Jesus Christ along with their children (Confession of Faith XXV.2). By virtue of their parents' profession children of believers come under the provisions of the covenant with its attendant blessings and curses. Children of believing parents are, in a sense, minority members of the church; citizens of it but without the full privileges of majority status (Robert L. Dabney, Lectures in Systematic Theology, page 794). These children are to be called to remember their unique status so that they can by faith appropriate the promises and blessings of the covenant. In essence, they are to be led to Christ as they are being led in Christ.

The covenant and the church, by definition, include professing Christians and their children. To deny the sign of baptism to children of believers contradicts this definition and is contrary to the system of doctrine taught in the Westminster Confession of Faith. Because this understanding of the covenant and the church is as essential part of the system of doctrine taught in the Confession, ordained officers in the Presbyterian Church In America must receive and adopt this understanding. No exception to infant baptism should be allowed since it is a part of a greater whole.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### II. Limited Atonement

The doctrine of Limited Atonement is tied not only to the nature and extent of the atonement but also to the definition of the nature and extent of the fall. The effect of the fall on man's nature and ability is an important determinant in understanding the atonement.

The fall left man either healthy, sick or dead with regard to his nature and ability. If he is healthy, then man can respond to God on his own merit because he is basically healthy in spirit. Christ's atonement is more an example of selflessness than propitiation. If he is sick, then man needs help but he can also help himself. Christ's atonement makes salvation possible, but man can accept it or reject it. If man is dead, then he is totally incapable of doing anything in himself to save himself. Christ's atonement is the means of securing salvation for the sinner, who left to himself would have no hope.

The Confession understands the scripture to teach the latter - the fall left all people spiritually dead, separated from God, and totally unable to come to God on their own (Confession of Faith VI. 2). Because of sinners' condition, salvation is completely of God's purpose of grace - from election to glorification. At no time is the will of man a determinant to salvation; his will is tied to his nature which is disposed to sin and not God (Confession of Faith (VI. 4, 5; IX. 3).

Having elected sinners to salvation in Christ (Rom. 8:29-30; Eph. 1:4-6), God fulfills this electing plan with a definite atonement. Christ's death on the cross is a part of God's plan for redeeming a people to Himself. Christ died for the elect, an innumerable host of sinners, who left to themselves would never make a choice for salvation. Christ's death secures salvation for the elect; apart from this work of grace there would be no salvation (Confession of Faith III. 6; X. 1).

Because of the Confession's view of sin and its effect in sinners, electing grace, of which limited or definite atonement is a part, is a necessary part of the system of doctrine taught in the Confession. Ordained officers in the Presbyterian Church In America must receive and adopt definite atonement as an essential part of the system of doctrine taught in the Confession. This is not a teaching to which an exception can be made.

Dated this 1st day of March, 1991.

/s/ Robert D. Stuart

/s/ Dominic A. Aquila

### CONCURRING OPINION 2

The undersigned members of the Permanent Judicial Commission submit this concurring opinion to the Case of TE David E. Bowen versus Eastern Carolina Presbytery. They are totally in agreement with the judgment of the Commission that

## APPENDICES

the doctrines of Infant Baptism and of Limited Atonement are "to be considered fundamentals of the system of doctrine and that there can be no exception given in the case of officers in the church," but they believe the section of reasoning and opinion regarding subscription may serve to weaken the Church's understanding of the meaning of subscription to the Standards, and thus submit the following reasoning and opinion regarding subscription.

The Tenth General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America stated, "When an officer of the Presbyterian Church in America subscribes to the Confessional Standards, he is declaring them to be the confession of his faith with reference to doctrine, worship, and government, recognizing that the Word of God written is the only infallible, inerrant, unamendable rule of faith and practice." (*MIOGA*, 10-75, III, 25, p. 103) The vow reads, "Do you sincerely receive and adopt the Confession of Faith and the Catechisms of this Church, as containing the system of doctrine taught in the Holy Scripture . . ." (*BCO* 21-5, 24-5). We thus receive and adopt the Confession and Catechisms, which define the system of doctrine that we believe is taught in Scripture. We are not subscribing to an undefined system of doctrine to be determined by the individual, or by the session or presbytery. It is true that we allow for the possibility of "scruples" or "exceptions" that the individual ordinand is required to declare to the ordaining court. It is the duty of the court to determine whether this scruple or exception strikes at the "fundamentals of the system of doctrine." If it does, then the court must judge the candidate ineligible for ordination in this Church.

In response to a question as to whether a man may "be lawfully received/ordained/installed within the Presbyterian Church in America who rejects either implicitly or explicitly any of the following doctrines, and if so, which?

- a. Any of the so-called 'five points of Calvinism.'
- b. Sabbath observance as set forth in the Confession.
- c. Baptizing only once."

the Assembly wisely answered, "it would be unwise improper, and unconstitutional for the General Assembly to determine abstractly apart from the proper processes afforded by our constitutional Standards what would disqualify a man from holding office in the Presbyterian Church in America." (*MIOGA*, p. 103)

What we have in this case is the application of the proper judicial processes, and the judgment that the doctrines of infant baptism and of the limited atonement are necessary for every officer (teaching elders, ruling elders and deacons) to hold in order to be able to serve as officers in the PCA. The general argumentation of the Commission showing that both of these doctrines are an essential part of the system of doctrine taught in the Confessional standards of the Church is valid.

The argumentation of the Commission regarding subscription, however, goes beyond what the Church has previously done when it defines the system of doctrine as the Reformed Faith. The designation "Reformed Faith" is not sufficiently defined. Some understand it to refer only to the five points of Calvinism. Others include Covenant Theology, as the Commission has done. Warfield, on the other hand, said,

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

"Calvinism is Christianity come into its own" seeing it as embracing all of Biblical Christianity. This is the thrust of the second ordination vow, affirming all of the Confession and Catechisms as containing the Biblical system of doctrine. The Presbyterian Church in America has refrained from trying to define the system as anything other than the doctrines taught in the Confession and Catechisms, as seen in the above citations from the Tenth General Assembly. To accept the argument of the Commission may be interpreted as defining the system as something less than the full teaching of the Confessional Standards. The undersigned agree that the Reformed Faith is the system of doctrine set forth in the Westminster Standards, but they understand the Reformed Faith as inclusive of the whole of Biblical teaching on matters of both faith and practice. If anything less than this is intended by the Commission, then this limiting of the system to less than all of the doctrines taught in the Confession and Catechisms is an improper amending of the Constitution of the Church.

The Tenth General Assembly said, "Any procedure of setting forth or compiling a list of essential or nonessential doctrines would, in effect, amend the standards by an unconstitutional method. The *Westminster Confession of Faith and Catechisms* are already held by our church as 'standard expositions of the teaching of Scripture in relation to both faith and practice' (BCO 29-1) and all officers and candidates for office in the Presbyterian Church in America are required to adopt our standards sincerely and without mental reservation (WCF 22-4) as faithful expositions of Bible truth." To define the fundamental system as the Reformed Faith, if this is taken to mean anything less than all of the teachings of the Confession and Catechisms, is to "amend the standards by an unconstitutional method," just what the Tenth General Assembly says should not be done.

March 6, 1991

/s/ Morton H. Smith  
/s/ Stanley D. Wells

**NOTE:** This opinion was written partially by Dr. Don K. Clements and partially by W. Jack Williamson with concurrence by John E. Spencer, as members of the Judicial Panel. Minor revisions were made by full Commission.

### THE BRIEF OF TE DAVID A. BOWEN DECEMBER 28, 1990

#### I. A Summary of the Facts

- A. 1/09/88 The Session of the Church of the Good Shepherd examined congregational nominees for Church Office according to BCO 24-1 and unanimously agreed that three nominees could still "sincerely receive and adopt the Confession of Faith and Catechisms of this church as containing the system of doctrine taught in the Holy Scriptures" while taking exception



## APPENDICES

- personally to WCF 28-4 (and WLC 166B, WSC 95B) concerning the baptism of infants of believers.
- B. 1/17/88 The congregation had the opportunity to question the officer candidates in a special Sunday evening meeting.
- C. 1/24/88 Eighteen members of the congregation signed a complaint against the Session's action in allowing the exceptions of the three men who had personal reservations about the scriptural basis for infant baptism. The complaint also alleged that four men should have been disqualified from officer candidacy because they were out of conformity with the standards concerning the extent of the atonement.
- D. 2/12/88 The Session responded to the complainants, defending its action.
- E. 2/24/88 Thirteen members of the congregation signed a complaint against the Session's action and sent it to Eastern Carolina Presbytery.
- F. 4/16/88 At its spring Stated Meeting Eastern Carolina Presbytery heard the complaint against the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd according to *BCO* 43-8,9 and rendered the following judgment.
1. The action of the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd in approving the men named in the complaint to stand for election as church officers was sustained.
  2. The pastor and Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd were requested to spend a year of intensive training of the men named in the complaint.
  3. Infant baptism and limited atonement are necessarily fundamentals of "the system of doctrine" (*BCO* 24-5-2), and it is not appropriate for Sessions to require a stricter standard of subscription for ruling elder candidates than for diaconal candidates and for teaching elders than for ruling elders. These declarations were then phrased as questions and sent by way of reference to the General Assembly's Committee on Judicial Business.
- G. 06/09/88 The General Assembly ratified the following advice of the Committee on Judicial Business: "Declined to answer the request for advice, because there is no matter pending before the lower court (*BCO* 41-1). Notation: If there has [sic] been a matter before the court, this commission [sic] would have instructed the Eastern Carolina Presbytery that 'limited atonement'...and 'infant baptism'...are required doctrinal standards for all church officers."
- H. 7/16/88 At its Summer Stated Meeting Eastern Carolina Presbytery declared that after the one-year training period called for by Presbytery, the men named in the complaint adjudicated by Presbytery on 4/16/88 should be examined by the Candidates and Examinations Committee of Presbytery

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

concerning their views. Further, "if any of the men be found to be not in conformity with the constitutional standards of the PCA, at that time, they be required by ECP to resign their office."

- I. August, 1988 - May, 1989 The pastor and Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd hosted a course for those named in the complaint concerning the distinctives of Reformed Theology.
- J. 4/19/89 Presbytery decided to defer the report of its Candidates and Examinations Committee concerning the men named in the complaint adjudicated by Presbytery on 4/16/88 until the Summer Stated Meeting.
- K. 7/15/89 At its Summer Stated Meeting Presbytery requested that RE Bob Byrd (one of the man named in the complaint of 4/16/88) write out his views on infant baptism and present them to the Candidates and Examinations Committee of Presbytery within three months. Then Presbytery suspended him from office "due to his neglect in having his children baptized," such suspension to remain in effect "until Presbytery is satisfied that his views are in conformity with the constitutional standards of the PCA."

Presbytery also declared that Deacon Bruce Harrod (another man named in the original complaint) "may not be reinstated as a deacon of the church until his views on infant baptism and particular atonement conform to the constitutional standards of the PCA." [Mr. Harrod had rotated off of active service according to the rotation system adopted by the church when its first deacons were elected in January, 1988.]

- L. 10/21/89 At its Fall Stated Meeting, Presbytery asked the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd (rather than Presbytery's Candidates and Examinations Committee) to examine Mr. Byrd's written views on baptism and to report to the Winter Stated Meeting of Presbytery its action with regard to Mr. Byrd, together with the rationale for this action.
- M. 12/04/90 The Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd voted unanimously to reconfirm its confidence in Mr. Byrd's suitability for the office of ruling elder in the PCA.
- N. 1/08/90 The Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd adopted reports from one of its teaching elders and one of its ruling elders explaining the reasoning of the court in its judgment concerning Mr. Byrd and sent them to Presbytery.
- O. 1/20/90 At its Winter Stated Meeting, prior to any discussion of the Session's judgment or rationale concerning Mr. Byrd or any action on that judgment, Eastern Carolina Presbytery, by a simple majority of those present and voting, rescinded and expunged from its minutes, its action of 4/16/88 sustaining the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd in the complaint brought against it. The moderator's rulings that this motion to rescind and expunge

## APPENDICES

was in order and that it would pass by a simple majority of those present and voting were challenged from the floor but upheld by vote of Presbytery. Additionally, Presbytery annulled the elections and ordinations of the men named in the 4/16/88 complaint.

- P. 2/16/90 TE David Bowen, Pastor of The Church of the Good Shepherd, complained against Presbytery's actions of 1/20/90.
- Q. 4/21/90 In its Spring Stated Meeting, Eastern Carolina Presbytery sustained certain procedural irregularities cited in TE Bowen's complaint but then acted again to rescind its action of 4/16/88 and to reverse its judgment on the complaint made at that time. Presbytery again annulled the election and ordinations of those name in that complaint, with one possible exception which it referred to its Candidates and Examinations Committee for evaluation. Further, Presbytery accused the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd of "an inadequate view of submission to the brethren in a creedal and connectional church." Finally, Presbytery requested the Session to invite a committee of Presbytery to address the congregation of The Church of the Good Shepherd the next day.
- R. 4/21/90 In a meeting called for the purpose, the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd invited Presbytery to send a committee to address the congregation.
- S. 4/22/90 Presbytery's committee came to the congregational meeting already scheduled for the purpose of calling two new ministers to the church, but elected not to address the congregation at that time. They were invited back for 5/6/90.
- T. 4/22/90 Presbytery's committee explained its actions concerning The Church of the Good Shepherd and its rationale for those actions to the congregation at a meeting called for that purpose and for the purpose of electing new officers.
- U. 5/17/90 TE Bowen complained against Presbytery's action in annulling the ordination of local church officers two years after the fact without a trial.

## II. A Statement of the Issues

- A. THE PROCEDURAL ISSUE: Can a court of the church annul the election, ordination, and installation of church officers two years after the fact without a trial?
- B. THE THEOLOGICAL ISSUE: Is infant baptism necessarily (i.e., always and everywhere) fundamental to the system of doctrine taught in the Holy Scriptures (such that a man who fails to accept that doctrine, be he ever so godly and gifted, can never serve as an officer in the PCA)?

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- C. THE POLITICAL ISSUE: May a presbytery assume original jurisdiction over a local church in the selection or discipline of that church's officers (apart from the procedure specified in *BCO* 33-1 or the exception specified in *BCO* 13-9)?

### III. The Relief I Seek

- A. That RE Bob Byrd be immediately reinstated as an active elder at The Church of the Good Shepherd.
- B. That the judgment of Presbytery on 4/16/88 sustaining the action of the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd in allowing these particular men to run for office be upheld and that the judgment of Presbytery on that same day deciding that infant baptism and limited atonement are necessarily fundamentals of the system of doctrine be denied.
- C. That the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd and not the Candidates and Examinations Committee of Eastern Carolina Presbytery (or Eastern Carolina Presbytery as a whole or as a commission) be upheld as the court of original jurisdiction for the evaluation of candidates for local church offices and for the discipline of current ruling elders and deacons just as Presbytery is for teaching elders, unless the provision of *BCO* 33-1 be invoked.

In short, I seek negative answers to each of the questions posed above in my statement of the issues. I shall now argue my case on each question seriatim.

### IV. Arguments

- A. Our *Book of Church Order* explicitly states that "ordination for the offices of ruling elder and deacon is perpetual,...nor can any person be degraded from either office but by deposition after regular trial" (*BCO* 24-6). At the time of the original complaint to Presbytery in April, 1988, Presbytery could have rescinded the Session's actions in approving, ordaining and installing these men (*BCO* 43-10), but Presbytery voted instead to sustain the Session's action. Two years later Presbytery cannot rescind those elections, ordinations and installations without a trial. In fact, the motion to rescind should have been declared out of order not only based on the *BCO* but also on Robert's Rules of Order, which states that the motion to rescind is not in order when a person has been elected to office and notified of the result (RRQ, paragraph 34).

The 1990 version of Eastern Carolina Presbytery wants so badly to overturn what the 1988 version did (a version which included two churches who have now left the denomination amid charges of tyranny against this Presbytery) that they are willing to stretch the rules of operation to accomplish their task. The Presbytery sincerely believes that no one can ever be a PCA officer who does not believe in infant baptism. The intensity of that belief, however, can never justify unfair procedure. The right thing must not be done in the wrong way. If Presbytery believes that Bob Byrd should not be allowed to serve as a

## APPENDICES

ruling elder because of doctrinal error, two Sessions of the Presbytery should have requested Presbytery to assume original jurisdiction in a doctrinal trial with deposition from office as its object (*BCO* 33-1). But Presbytery did not follow the procedure specified in our *Book of Church Order*. Bob Byrd should be reinstated as a ruling elder of The Church of the Good Shepherd until such time as he may be convicted of severe doctrinal error by the judicial process we have all approved in our ordination vows.

B. I do not believe Bob Byrd should be deposed from the office of ruling elder because of severe doctrinal error. I do believe that he is in error in one part of his view of baptism, but I do not believe, in his case, that the error is so severe as to disqualify him from office in the PCA, and that for two reasons.

1. In the case of Bob Byrd, the commitment to believer's baptism is not the tip of an iceberg which must necessarily wreck the whole system of doctrine taught in the Holy Scriptures. Members of The Church of the Good Shepherd and of Presbytery have argued that failure to believe in infant baptism is symptomatic of Arminianism and dispensationalism. "Baptists want to contribute something to their salvation of their own free will and that's why they insist on conversion preceding the sacrament (just as they insist on conversion preceding regeneration.) Baptists also stress the discontinuities between the testaments and not only consequently lose infant baptism on the analogy with circumcision but also the Sabbath and the moral law generally."

After careful and extended examination I can confidently say that Mr. Byrd is not an Arminian. He is an articulate defender of the five points of Calvinism by any standard (seminary-trained teacher elder standard as well as PCA ruling elder standard). I know some Baptists whose believers' baptism commitment is symptomatic of latent Arminianism, but Mr. Byrd is not one of them.

As for the charge of a deeper dispensationalism wreaking havoc on the system of doctrine, Mr. Byrd denies that he is a dispensationalist. Certainly one's definition of dispensationalism becomes crucial on this question. At least Mr. Byrd is very critical of the standard exposition of dispensationalism offered by Charles Ryrie in *Dispensationalism Today*. He affirms the continuing validity of the moral law in the new covenant. He does not believe that the efficacy of the sacrament is tied to the moment of its administration. He accepts the validity of infant baptism though he personally believes they are "irregular."

Nevertheless, I suspect he is something of a dispensationalist. He does see more discontinuity between the testaments than I see and than our PCA doctrinal standards see. But other PCA teaching elders ordained by Eastern Carolina Presbytery do too! I am a relatively strict Sabbatarian; however, I asked Presbytery if I could take exception to the Westminster view of the Sabbath as inappropriate for recreation. I was granted that

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

exception, as have been a majority of the other teaching elders who have joined this Presbytery since I have been part of it. At the same meeting of Presbytery at which I was received, another brother was received who argued far beyond my exception to the standards, namely that Sunday was not the Sabbath but the Lord's Day, the Old Testament Sabbath having been fulfilled in Christ (i.e., Calvin's view). He was allowed to hold his exception to the Confession and the Catechisms and still affirm that he "sincerely received and adopted" them "as containing the system of doctrine taught in the Holy Scriptures." Why is he not open to the charge of dispensationalism for holding to more discontinuity between the testaments than our standards allow?

Actually our denomination has always, from its roots in the sixteenth century until today, acknowledged that there is some discontinuity between the testaments reflected in the sacraments. Whereas the physical children of Israelite homes participated in the Passover celebration from infancy, we have barred our children from receiving the Lord's Supper (the substance of the new covenant in Christ's blood of which the Passover in the old covenant was the shadow) until such time as they can intelligently receive it in credible faith of their own. We have justified this discontinuity by means of Paul's explicit teaching in I Corinthians 11:27-29 that "the ignorant . . . ought to be kept from that sacrament . . . until they receive instruction (WLC 173). Question 177 in the Larger Catechism explicitly states that the Lord's Supper differs from baptism in that in the case of the former it is to be administered "only to such as are of years and ability to examine themselves."

At the 1988 General Assembly in Knoxville, TN some eminent teaching elders of the PCA argued that paedocommunion was consistent with Scripture and should be allowed in the church. They were voted down. That Assembly also directed "that those ruling and teaching elders who by conscience of conviction are in support of the minority report concerning paedocommunion be notified by this Assembly of their responsibility to make known to their Presbyteries and sessions the changes of their views since their ordination vows" (*M16GA* 16-30, p. 120). The consensus of opinion informing this action was that Presbyteries would allow this exception, even to teaching elders who are charged with administering the sacraments, but they should still formally receive liberty to hold their exception.

In the PCUS, from which I came into the PCA, paedocommunion was a liberal vs. conservative issue. The arguments advanced there for adoption of paedocommunion jeopardized the very heart of the gospel, undermining the clear Scriptural insistence that children of the covenant need to be circumcised in heart and need to place their personal faith in the promises and covenant obligations of God. After my initial shock over hearing evangelical Presbyterian leaders arguing for paedocommunion, I realized that such a position need not necessarily mean

## APPENDICES

that one was denying the necessity of personal faith and conversion for salvation. Presbyteries and sessions must hear each man's arguments on a case by case basis.

By way of analogy I contend that if teaching elders, who are custodians of the sacraments in our polity, can be allowed to believe privately in the acceptability of infant communion while publicly supporting the received practice of the church, how much more ought ruling elders, who are not custodians of the sacraments in our polity, be allowed to believe privately in believer's baptism while publicly supporting the received practice of the church. Paedo-communion is to my mind a potentially dangerous practice in the church than is believer's baptism. If we can tolerate error on this doctrine of the proper subjects of the Lord's Supper in certain carefully examined cases, how much more ought we to tolerate error concerning the proper subjects of baptism in certain carefully examined cases.

2. My second reason for supporting Mr. Byrd's suitability for office in the PCA despite his exception to our standards concerning infant baptism is that he has held and will continue to hold his exception humbly and quietly without disturbing the peace of the church. Most "Baptists" cannot tolerate the paedo-baptist position. They believe they must insist on their doctrine of "believers baptism only" because only believers baptism is true baptism. Mr. Byrd does not share this view. There are many cases in which I would not approve a man's candidacy for office in the PCA if he did not subscribe to infant baptism, because I would fear that the man in question would feel constrained to propagate his view and thereby jeopardize the unity and peace of the church. I have no such fears in Mr. Byrd's case. Our *Book of Church Order* says there are doctrinal errors such as may warrant deposition, "but errors ought to be carefully considered, whether they strike at the vitals of religion and are industriously spread, or whether they arise from the weakness of the human understanding and are not likely to do much injury" (BCO 34-5). Mr. Byrd has errors of the latter sort only, as well as great gifts and godliness.
- C. The political issue is closely related to the procedural one I have already argued under "A" above; however, there is more than a question of proper parliamentary procedure involved in this case. The deeper issue at stake concerns biblical church policy. Does the power of the church extend from the local church up to the General Assembly (and even on to ecumenical councils) or does the power of the church inhere first and foremost in the General Assembly and trickle down? The issue is not whether lower courts must submit to the review of higher courts but rather whether lower courts have rights vis a vis higher courts. "When...disputed matters of doctrine and order arising in the lower courts are referred to the higher courts for decision, such referral shall not be so exercised as to impinge upon the authority of the lower courts" (BCO 11-3).

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

I believe Eastern Carolina Presbytery erred on this point when in July, 1988, it committed examination of The Church of the Good Shepherd officers to its Candidates and Examinations Committee rather than to the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd. I simply ask this Panel to concur with the judgment of the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records that on January 20, 1990, Eastern Carolina Presbytery "failed to comply with *BCO* 31, 32, 33 with regard to original jurisdiction" (*M18GA* 18-79, p. 179). (I would also add July 16, 1988, July 15, 1989 and April 21, 1990.) I believe it is Presbytery's errors in this regard that have driven two churches from its fold (in Jacksonville and Durham, NC) since the time this case first came to Presbytery.

In conclusion I ask this Panel of the Permanent Judicial Commission to redress the wrong done to RE Bob Byrd on April 20, 1990, and to reinstate him in office at The Church of the Good Shepherd. Further I ask that this Panel restore to the Session of The Church of the Good Shepherd the biblically allowed latitude in officer selection which other Sessions and Presbyteries in the PCA enjoy, being confessional but also permitting exceptions to the confession as spiritual wisdom dictates. Finally, I ask you to instruct Eastern Carolina Prebytery more clearly in biblical polity so that the relative jurisdictions of the various church courts are more strictly observed. I do not deny that higher courts have the authority to redress wrongs committed in lower courts (in fact I am asking the General Assembly to do just that), but I do deny that higher courts have the authority to act for lower courts when the lower courts are competent to act for themselves.



## APPENDICES

### EXHIBIT "G"

#### STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

VAUGHN E. HATHAWAY, JR.  
VS.  
GRACE PRESBYTERY

JUDICIAL CASE NO. 90-9

#### DECISION OF THE JUDICIAL PANEL

The Judicial Panel designated to hear and conclude the complaints above, met, pursuant to notice duly given pursuant to Paragraph 7.7 of the General Rules of the Standing Judicial Commission at 1:00 p.m. Central Standard Time in the offices of Daniel, Coker, Horton and Bell, P.A., 111 East Capitol Street, Jackson, Mississippi. Panel members present were: Ruling Elder Frank C. Horton, Chairman, Teaching Elder Robert D. Stuart, and Ruling Elder William N. Brown, II, Secretary.

Present representing respondent was TE Randy Kimbrough. Complainant, TE Vaughn Hathaway did not appear in person or by representative, his presence having been excused on the basis of reasons duly communicated to the Chairman of the Panel.

Briefs of the Complainant and of the Respondent were in hand.

The hearing was opened with prayer by TE Robert D. Stuart. The determination of a quorum having been made, and the records having been read by the members of the Panel, the Panel proceeded to consideration of complaint 90-9.

#### JUDICIAL CASE NO. 90-9

##### **I. A Statement of the Facts**

Relevant facts in the above complaint are as follows:

1. That at Session meetings April 10, 1989, November 13, 1989, and December 11, 1989, Complainant requested that the Session of Waynesboro Presbyterian Church institute disciplinary procedure against seven members of the congregation who had not attended services for a period in excess of one year.
2. That on December 20, 1989, Complainant, at a special meeting of the Session, filed a Complaint with the Session for its failure to act on his request

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

for the failure to act on his request for the institution of disciplinary procedure.

3. Complaint was filed with the Presbytery on January 9, 1990.
4. The Commission entered its findings after hearing testimony on April 10, 1990. The report of the Judicial Panel was approved at a meeting of Grace Presbytery on May 8, 1990.
5. Complaint was filed with the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly of Presbytery Church in America on June 6, 1990.

### II. A Statement of the Issues

1. Did the Presbytery err in finding that the failure of the Clerk of Session to send the record of the case forward in accordance with *BCO* 43-6 fail to result in prejudice to the Complainant?
2. Did the Presbytery err in failing to find that the Court had been circularized contrary to *BCO* 43-2?
3. Did the Commission err in this application of the procedure prescribed by *BCO* 46-5?
4. Did the Presbytery err in approving the conclusion of the Commission and in application of the provision of *BCO* 32-20?
5. Specification 5, as stated by Complaint, fails to constitute a specific grounds for complaint only advances arguments to support the Complainant's position.

### III. Judgment of the Case

It is the judgment of the Judicial Panel that:

1. Specification 1 of the Complaint, although technically sound, resulted in no prejudice to the Complainant since the record reflects that full opportunity to present the Complaint were afforded him at all times.
2. Specification 2 of the Complaint is denied. It appears from the record that the fact that copies of the Commission's record before the Presbytery, reasonably were to be considered as part of the record.
3. Specification 3 of the Complaint is denied.
4. Specification 4 of the Complaint is denied.

## APPENDICES

5. Specification 5 consists of assertions of the Complainant and his conclusions as to the correct interpretation of the Constitution of the PCA and not a matter of substance.

### IV. Reasoning

The essential substance of the Complaint, in Judicial Case 90-9, is the failure of the Session of Waynesboro Presbyterian Church to institute disciplinary procedures against seven members of the church who had failed to attend services for more than a year. The other specifications are merely ancillary thereto. The Presbytery found that the Session "had been and have since been in contact with most of the delinquent members and had reason to believe that most can be returned to the fold and that action at that time and at this time would be counter-productive and not in the best interest of the church."

While the proper exercise of discipline is one of the marks of a faithful church, the application thereof must needs be left, in some measure at least, to the discretion of the local church through its Session. What mitigating circumstances there may have been as to the individual's failure in attendance does not appear in the record.

/s/ Robert D. Stuart  
/s/ William N. Brown  
/s/ Frank C. Horton

### V. Voting on Proposed Judgment

20 members concurred in the judgment and decision. Rev. Dewey Roberts abstained as he was on active duty as a chaplain in Saudi Arabia. Dr. Morton H. Smith and Rev. Leroy Ferguson, III dissented but filed no written dissent. Dr. William J. Stanway was disqualified as being a member of Grace Presbytery.

**NOTE:** This opinion was written by Frank C. Horton with concurrence by the other members of the Judicial Panel. Minor revisions were made by the full Commission with consent of the Judicial Panel. A concurring opinion was filed by two members as follows:

### **CONCURRING OPINION IN JUDICIAL CASE NO. 90-9, VAUGHN E. HATHAWAY, JR., V. GRACE PRESBYTERY**

The undersigned members of the Standing Judicial Commission respectfully concur with the judgment in this case, but for reasons not stated in the majority opinion. In this case the complainant correctly called upon the Session to exercise church discipline upon several members who had not attended church in over a year. For reasons not in the record, these members were in clear violation of their solemn vows before God and men "to support the church in its worship and work to the best of [their] ability." *BCO 57-5*.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

As acknowledged by this Commission in our report tendered to this General Assembly in Case No. 6, Memorial from John M. Warren, Jr., discipline has two recognized senses: 1) administrative or pastoral and 2) judicial. The proper exercise of biblical discipline has as its ends the "general edification of the church, and the spiritual good of offenders themselves." BCO 27-3. Not every act of discipline requires an official act or the initiation of process. Often the loving admonition or rebuke of a brother in Christ who cares for his fallen brother will be sufficient discipline. See, e.g., Proverbs 17:10 and Matthew 18:15. However, it is very clear that discipline must be exercised and always in a "spirit of gentleness." Galatians 6:1. This is not a "suggestion" from a Sovereign Lord who blesses faithfulness and punishes disobedience; it is a mandate.

The PCA must never forget that the one who disciplines is the one who truly loves. See, e.g., Proverbs 13:24. It is a dispensation of mercy and love from a tender God to his precious children whose salvation was bought at a terrible price. We must always exercise this act of love in obedience to our Lord's commands.

The majority opinion correctly states, "while the proper exercise of discipline is one of the marks of a faithful church, the application thereof must needs be left, in some measure at least, to the discretion of the local church through its Session." Upon reviewing the record before us, one might believe that this particular Session was unwilling to exercise its biblical and constitutional mandates to exercise discipline. However, the complainant stated on the second page of his complaint that "the session postponed consideration, until January, 1990," on the recommendation that discipline should be initiated, The Session did not refuse to exercise discipline; they chose once more to delay implementation. Our charge to judge one another with charity requires us to believe that our brothers will do what they are called to do, until we are required to believe otherwise.

Considering the tumultuous period in the life of this church when the Session was last asked to initiate discipline, one cannot say that the Session abused its discretion in not following its biblical mandate to initiate discipline at that particular time. For that reason, the facts in this record do not support the complaint. Therefore, we respectfully concur in the judgment.

RE M. Dale Peacock  
TE Robert D. Stuart

### A BRIEF SUBMITTED TO THE STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION ADJUDICATING JUDICIAL CASE 90-9 AND 90-10 VAUGHN E. HATHAWAY, JR. vs. GRACE PRESBYTERY

The Commission appointed by Grace Presbytery to hear these two complaints consisted of three ruling elders and three teaching elders. From the first, it was the expressed will and prayerful concern of each member of the Commission that we maintain a posture that would be conducive to the best interests of both the complainant and the congregation of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church.

## APPENDICES

To this end, we sought to do more than merely interpret the constitutional standards of the Presbyterian Church in America. Rather, we sought to give each side the benefit of our collective experience as fellow elders, while appreciating the wisdom of our standards.

### JUDICIAL CASE 90-9

You should have adjudication of the complaint on page 11 of your notebook. In addition to the points made there, I would like to offer the following matters in response to the Complaint to General Assembly found on page 7:

1. The Commission of Grace Presbytery did not regard the absence of the complete record of the case to be by deliberate design on the part of the clerk of the session. This oversight posed only a temporary delay and was inconsequential to our findings.
2. The Commission of Grace Presbytery was not circularized by the respondent, as we understood *BCO* 43-2. While it is true that the responses were circulated and ready by the Commission, the minutes (p. 27 paragraph 5) show that this was a decision of the Commission. Furthermore, *BCO* 43-9 states that, prior to hearing the opening arguments of the two parties, "all the papers bearing on the complaint" should be read. The Commission's understanding, therefore, was that we were acting in accord with the *BCO* when we read the responses without first hearing an oral argument from the Complainant.
3. The Commission of Grace Presbytery affirms in its finding #1 that "our vows are made before God and therefore should be taken seriously." As we heard the evidence, however, we determined that the best interests of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church could be served by delaying the enforcement of *BCO* 46-5.
4. See # 3 above.
5. The sentence that begins, "In fact, the Session has acted unconstitutionally . . ." "raises points that were not before us as a Commission. As to the first sentence, the Commission strongly believed that, as RE R. B. Gustafson was the duly elected Respondent for the Session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church, he at no time misrepresented the interests or the actions of his Session.

I would conclude this first brief by informing the members of the Standing Judicial Commission that the findings of the Commission of Grace Presbytery were overwhelmingly endorsed by a vote of the Presbytery at its stated meeting of May 8, 1990. At least 90% voted to approve the work of this Commission. Speaking for the Commission, I would pray that, for the sake of both the Complainant and the Respondent (including the congregation of the Waynesboro

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Presbyterian Church), you would uphold the findings of the Commission of Grace  
Presbytery.

November 27, 1990

Respectfully submitted,  
/s/ TE Randy H. Kimbrough  
Respondent for Grace Presbytery

Vaughn Hathaway  
1401 Bonita Avenue  
Opelika, Alabama 36801-3805

Date: November 29, 1990

To: Judicial Panel Adjudicating Case 90-9  
Presbyterian Church in America  
From: TE Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr.

SUBJECT: WRITTEN BRIEF OF JUDICIAL CASE 90-9

Background of Complaint

After individual pastoral ministry to several members of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church had been unsuccessful in restoring them to active participation, and under the procedures of *Book of Church Order* 46-5, which states:

"When a member of a particular church has willfully neglected the church for a period of one year, or has made it known that he or she has no intention of fulfilling the church vows, the Session should exercise proper discipline by deleting such names from the church roll, but only after the procedure described in 27-5 has been followed."

The Session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church refused to take up the proper steps leading either to restoration or excommunication, if necessary, under the provisions of *Book of Church Order* 27-5, which states:

"Scriptural law is the basis of all discipline; because it is the revelation of God's Holy will.

Proper disciplinary principles are set forth in the Scriptures and must be followed. They are: (a) instruction in the Word, (b) individual's responsibility to admonish one another (Matthew 18:15, Galatians 6:1), (c) if the admonition is rejected, then the calling of one or more witnesses (Matthew 18:16), (d) if rejection persists, then the Church must act through her court unto admonition, suspension, excommunication and deposition . . . Steps (a) through (d) must be followed in proper order for the exercise of discipline."

## APPENDICES

### Summary of Facts:

1. April 10, 1989, the Session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church took no action on a recommendation of the pastor (complainant) that the procedures of *Book of Church Order* 46-5 be followed regarding certain members of the church. (p. 31, circled numbers in the Record)
2. May 8, 1989, complainant presented the Session a protest for taking no action on the recommendation. (p.32)
3. June 12, 1989, the Session objected to the protest, promised to reconsider its position on church discipline and granted complainant permission to withdraw the protest (for the sake of amendment). (p.33)
4. The complainant, complying with the Session's request provided materials on church discipline. (pp. 34, 35, 36)
5. November 13, 1989, complainant presented an amended protest. (p. 39)
6. December 11, 1989, the Session postponed consideration of complainant's recommendation that procedures of *Book of Church Order* 27-5 be instituted in regard to certain named members. (p.42)
7. December 17, 1989, complainant hand delivered a complaint, dated December 16, 1989, against the Session for postponing consideration of the recommendation to institute process.
8. December 20, 1989, at a special meeting called in part to consider the complaint, the Session took no action on the complaint. Complainant gave notice of his intention to complain to Grace Presbytery. (p.43)
9. January 3, 1990, at a special meeting, the Session elected a respondent. (p.47)
10. January 9, 1990, Grace Presbytery found the complaint in order and elected a commission to adjudicate the complaint. [Minutes of Grace Presbytery, attachment 1]
11. January 11, 1990, the Stated Clerk of Grace Presbytery [who is also the complainant] confirmed in writing telephone conversations of January 10, 1990, and January 11, 1990, with the Clerk of Session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church regarding the clerk's refusal to submit the record of the case in accordance with *Book of Church Order* 43-5, on the advice of the respondent. [attachment 2]
12. January 11, January 23 and February 6, 1990, the commission met to adjudicate the complaint. (p.7)
13. January 11, 1990, Session's respondent circularized the commission in violation of *Book of Church Order* 43-2. (p. 55)

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

14. May 8, 1990, the commission's report that the complaint was not sustained was adopted by Grace Presbytery. (p.16)
15. May 8, 1990, complainant gave notice of intention to complain to General Assembly and Presbytery elected respondent (p. 50)
16. June 6, 1990, complainant filed complaint with the General Assembly.

### Statement of Complainant

Fathers and Brethren:

I pray your indulgence as the argument of the complainant is presented. It is a matter of great consequence to carry a complaint originating in a session to the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church, especially when the complaint has not been sustained by the Presbytery. Neither, however, are the keys of the kingdom of heaven to be considered a small matter.

*The Manual of Presbyterian Law for Officers and Church Members* (p. 279) emphasizes the "paramount importance" of the powers of the office of ruling elder.

". . . Especially is it to be emphasized, that ruling elders constitute the majority of members in those judicatories of the Church which possess primarily the power of opening the Kingdom of heaven to penitent and closing it to impenitent sinners. . . This is one of the most extensive powers vested in Church officers, and also one involving gravest responsibility both to the Church and the Church's great Head."

This complaint arises out of the unwillingness of the Session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church, after long and patient admonition and exhortation on the part of the complainant to undertake the process of discipline demanded by the Word of God and the Constitution of the Presbyterian Church in America. The evidence, if process had been instituted by the Session, would have shown that seven members of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church had deliberately absented themselves from the regular worship of the church for a period of more than one year for a variety of unbiblical reasons, which according to Scripture is a sin for which there is no more sacrifice but rather a certainty of judgment (Hebrews 10:19-29); and that among these seven there were two who had also absented themselves because of their opposition to the adoption by the General Assembly of the report on Masonry and another who had absented himself because he had in scandalous fashion obtained an unbiblical divorce from his wife and had unbiblically married another who had obtained an unbiblical divorce from her husband.

The complainant prays that his complaint will be sustained on two bases: (1) errors of procedure committed by the commission of Presbytery prejudicing the judgment of the commission and the Presbytery; and (2) errors of substance in the findings of the commission.



## APPENDICES

The commission committed errors of procedure prejudicing the judgment of the commission and the Presbytery:

- a. the commission omitted certain matters of fact from its report to Presbytery; and
- b. the commission afforded a written response prepared by the session's respondent unconstitutional standing.

Complainant will concede that the omitted facts themselves might not have affected the final determination of the commission or of the Presbytery. Nevertheless, when taken together with the other errors of procedure and substance, this error is not insignificant. The omission, at the least, implies that complainant may have been impatient in working with the session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church.

It was not until complainant had read the minutes of the commission that he learned that a written response prepared by session's respondent was afforded a standing in the adjudication of the complaint that is contrary to the constitution. The minutes of the commission show that the response was afforded the same constitutional standing as the complaint and that in executive session prior to the hearing of the complaint, the commission read the response in conjunction with the complaint.

The commission should have rejected the response on the ground that it is, at the least, a violation of *Book of Church Order* 43-2, as an attempt to circularize the court.

The commission should also have rejected the response because, secondly, on the basis of subsequent testimony and the record of the case, it was proved that it pretends to be something that it is not. While each numbered statement begins with the words "The session . . .", prior to its writing, the session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church did not hold any regular or special meeting. The Session of the church never either by motion or concensus adopted any of these statements. Therefore, while the response pretends to be the position of the Session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church and to be clothed with sessional authority, it is entirely the fabrication of the respondent.

The commission erred in its findings: (1) in accepting in the face of evidence to the contrary the statement of the respondent that "the Session had been, and have since been, in contact with most of the delinquent members . . ."; and (2) in assetting, contrary to the constitution and to the history of the case, that sufficient time to deal with delinquent members...is not in conflict with our vows."

The respondent failed to produce any evidence that the Session had even attempted to contact the delinquent members. In fact, it was, in part, a reason of the complaint that contacting the members is what the Session was unwilling to do. It was unwilling as a Session and as a matter of record to contact any of the delinquent members scripturally or constitutionally to obtain from them reports regarding their conduct or reasons for refusing to fulfill their church vows. [see attachment 3. This shows the Session's unwillingness to comply either with Scripture or the constitution in regard to church discipline. Also, this communication was not delivered to all the delinquent members.]

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The evidence presented by the complainant and the respondent further demonstrated that the greatest concern of the Session, on the ground that it was "counterproductive and not in the best interest of the church" was not "the glory of God, the purity of His Church, (or) the keeping and reclaiming of disobedient sinners," but what would affect the financial condition of the church.

The findings of the commission fail to take into consideration the provisions of *Book of Church Order* 32-20, which serve in effect as a statute of limitations nor the fact that the matter complained against had its origins more than ten months before the complaint was filed with the presbytery and nearly a year by the time the complaint was adjudicated. If the Session had shown at any time prior to these times, its willingness to comply with Scripture and the constitution by fulfilling their ordination vows, the complaint would not have been necessary.

Finally, it is to be granted that church discipline is controversial, but it cannot be denied that punitive discipline in the church of Jesus Christ is taught and mandated by the Scriptures. It may even be conceded that the fact that the triune God has committed to fallible men such as we are the responsibility of carrying out church discipline - "to bind on earth what will be bound in heaven, . . ." (Matthew 18:18) - is a marvel too wonderful and awesome to comprehend. Nonetheless, He has chosen so to do just that.

It is not complainant's purpose to prove that such discipline is mandated by the Scriptures. As elders in the Presbyterian Church in America, you know these things to be true.

It is complainant's purpose to pray that you will sustain the complaint because of the errors committed by the lower court and because the evidence shows that the Session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church was, and remains to be, unwilling to exercise biblical church discipline to bring about true restoration or to advance the kingdom of Christ by seeking the purification of His church.

/s/ Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr.  
Pastor

Date: November 29, 1990

### ATTACHMENT 1

#### 17.66.2 CONSTITUTIONAL QUESTIONS COMMITTEE

The committee recommended that the two complaints entered by TE Hathaway be heard by the Presbytery. An amendment that a commission of three TE's and three RE's be appointed by the Moderator to adjudicate the complaints was offered and seconded. The question was called. The amendment was adopted. The recommendation as amended was adopted.

## APPENDICES

### ATTACHMENT 2

Grace Presbytery  
Presbyterian Church in America  
Post Office Box 84  
Waynesboro, Mississippi 39367  
January 11, 1990

Mr. Emory E. McKay  
Post Office Box 453  
Waynesboro, Mississippi 39367-0453

Dear Mr. McKay:

Grace to you and peace from God our Father and Christ Jesus the Lord!

I am sorry that I had to trouble you the afternoons of yesterday and today, when I knew that you were weary from the extreme medical treatment you are receiving. My telephone contacts were necessitated by the fact that Grace Presbytery's commission appointed to adjudicate the two complaints against the session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church is scheduled to meet this evening at 6:30 at the Covenant Presbyterian Church in Laurel.

I called you yesterday at the suggestion of Dr. Norman Harper, convener of the commission, to inquire about the "record of the case." It is your responsibility as clerk of the session to file with the clerk of the presbytery a copy of this "record." *Book of Church Order* paragraph 43-6 states:

"It shall be the duty of the clerk of the lower court to file with clerk of the higher court, not more than thirty (30) days after receipt of notice of complaint, a copy of all the proceedings in connection with the complaint including the notice of complaint and supporting reasons, the response of the lower court, if any, and any papers bearing on the complaint..."

You told me that you would meet with Mr. R. B. Gustafson, Jr., to put the record together and deliver it to me this morning.

When this morning passed and I did not hear from you, I called to see if the record was coming. You told me that Mr. Gustafson had already submitted the necessary papers to Dr. Harper. I stated my hope that the papers were the record for otherwise the matters might not be heard this evening.

I am writing to confirm the fact of the telephone conversations mentioned above, the content of the conversation, and the *BCO* requirements.

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

May the Lord grant you strength to bring healing to you shortly.

Sincerely, in Christ the King!  
/s/ Vaughn E. Hathaway, Jr., Pastor  
Stated Clerk

cc: Mr. R. B. Gustafson, Jr.  
Dr. Norman A. Harper  
file

ATTACHMENT 3

WAYNESBORO PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH  
P. O. BOX 862  
Waynesboro, MS 39367

April 3, 1990

CERTIFIED MAIL  
NO. P337 507 315

MR. D  
ROUTE 6- BOX 5 (HWY 84E)  
WAYNESBORO, MS 39367

Dear D:

As you may not know, on Jan. 9, 1990, at the stated meeting of Grace Presbytery a Complaint was made against the Session of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church (WPC) for failure to follow Paragraph 46-5 of the *Book of Church Order (BCO)* of the Presbyterian Church in America (PCA), of which the WPC is a member. This Paragraph states that under certain conditions a members name should be deleted from the church roll. One of these conditions is that a member who has not attended our church for a period of over one year should have their name deleted from the church roll.

Our desire is that you resume attendance and become an active member in fellowship with other members of the church. However, in order to comply with the requirements of the *Book of Church Order* we must have an indication of your intention to resume attendance and become an active member or have your name deleted from the roll.

Please sign one copy of this letter in one of the spaces provided below to express your intention and return same to us in the enclosed self addressed envelope and we will take the appropriate action. If you do not sign and return one copy of this letter on or before

APPENDICES

April 12, 1990, we will consider your choice to be No. 2 hereinbelow and your name will be removed from the church roll. If you have any questions call me at 735-2731.

Yours in Christ,

WAYNESBORO PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH

By: R. B. Gustafson, Jr., Interim Clerk

1. It is my intention to resume attendance and become an active church member in the near future and I do not want my name deleted from the church roll.

Signed \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

2. It is not my intention to continue as a member of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church and my name should be deleted from the roll.

Signed \_\_\_\_\_ Date \_\_\_\_\_

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**EXHIBIT "H"**

STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

VAUGHN E. HATHAWAY, JR.

VS.

GRACE PRESBYTERY

JUDICIAL CASE NO. 90-10

**DECISION OF THE JUDICIAL PANEL**

The Judicial Panel designated to hear and conclude the complaints above, met, pursuant to notice duly given pursuant to Paragraph 7.7 of the General Rules of the Standing Judicial Commission at 1:00 p.m. Central Standard Time in the offices of Daniel, Coker, Horton and Bell, P.A., 111 East Capitol Street, Jackson, Mississippi. Panel members present were: Ruling Elder Frank C. Horton, Chairman, Teaching Elder Robert D. Stuart, and Ruling Elder William N. Brown, II, Secretary.

Present representing respondent was TE Randy Kimbrough. Complainant, TE Vaughn Hathaway did not appear in person or by representative, his presence having been excused on the basis of reasons duly communicated to the Chairman of the Panel.

Briefs of the Complainant and of the Respondent were in hand.

The hearing was opened with prayer by TE Robert D. Stuart. The determination of a quorum having been made, and the records having been read by the members of the Panel, the Panel proceeded to consideration of complaint 90-10.

**JUDICIAL CASE NO. 90-10**

**I. A Statement of the Facts**

Relevant facts in the above Complaint are as follows:

A Complaint, Judicial Case 90-10, was forwarded to the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly along with Complaint in the matter of Judicial Case 90-9.

1. At a Stated Meeting on October 6, 1989, the Session of Waynesboro Presbyterian Church agreed that, in light of the decline in giving by the members of the Church, the Treasurer would "compile two financial reports based on the giving of the church by families: One report was to identify the families by name; the second not identifying the families; and make the reports available to the members of the Session."

## APPENDICES

2. This action was omitted from the Minutes of its October 6, 1989, meeting but incorporated in the Minutes of the Stated Meeting of the Session of November 13, 1989.
3. At the November 13, 1989, meeting of the Session it was "agreed that they (members of the Session) would pick up their own copies of R.E. Gustafson's office." \*

\* It is noted that the parties agree that the date in the specification of error should be 10/16/89. Such error, however, was without prejudice.

4. At the November 13, 1989, meeting a Petition was presented to the Session from 21 members of the congregation, seeking a congregational meeting to consider the request to Grace Presbytery for a dissolution of the pastoral relation with Complainant in view of the financial condition of the Church.
5. At a special meeting of the Session on December 3, 1989, the Session refused to make copies of the financial reports available to the Complainant.
6. On December 11, 1989, the Session met and called a congregational meeting for December 24, 1989, to act on "a Petition to Dissolve the Pastoral Relation of Pastor Vaughn Hathaway effective December 31, 1989, and release the Church from any obligation under the terms of the pastor's call after that date."
7. On December 16, 1989, the Complainant filed a Complaint with the Clerk of Session against the refusal of the Session to furnish the Complainant with a copy of the financial reports prepared by the Treasurer for members of the Session.
8. At a congregational meeting on December 24, 1989, the congregation, by secret ballot, voted to "release the Church from any obligation under the terms of the pastor's call after that date (12/31/89)."
9. On January 3, 1990, Complaint was made to Grace Presbytery against the action of the Session in refusing to furnish him with a copy of the financial report.
10. The Commission appointed by Grace Presbytery to consider the Complaint entered its findings on April 10, 1990, denying the Complaint.
11. The action of the Commission was approved by Grace Presbytery on May 8, 1990.
12. Complaint of the action of Grace Presbytery was filed with the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly, Presbyterian Church in America, on June 6, 1990.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### II. A Statement of the Issues

There is only one relevant issue:

1. Did Grace Presbytery err in denying the Complaint against the Session for failing to furnish the Complainant with a copy of the financial reports as authorized by the action of the Session on October 6, 1989?

### III. Judgment of the Case

1. As in Judicial Cases 90-9, Complaint is made of the alleged failure of the Clerk of the Session to forward in a timely manner a record of the case as required by *BCO* 43-6 and against the alleged circularization of the Court contrary to *BCO* 43-2. The rationale for denying these aspects of the case is set forth in this Panel's Judgment in Judicial Case 90-9.
2. Specification 3 of the Complaint is denied.
3. Specification 4 of the Complaint is denied.
4. Specification 5 of the Complaint is denied.
5. Specification 6 is sustained but has become moot by virtue of the termination of Complainant's relation with the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church.

### IV. Reasoning

The Panel, as to Specifications 1 and 2, adopts its reasoning set forth in its report as Judicial Case 90-9. This Panel finds no significant error in the Commission Statement of Fact as set forth in Specification 3 and hence the Commission's findings were properly considered on the basis thereof.

No citation of any constitutional prohibition against the findings of the Commission is cited by the Complainant nor found by this Panel.

Section 12-1 *BCO* provides that "the Church Session consists of the Pastor, Associates Pastor(s) if there be any, and the Ruling Elders of the Church . . ." Section 12-2 provides that the "the Pastor is, by virtue of his office, the moderator of the Session." Section 12-5 sets forth the power, responsibilities and function of the Session and nowhere, except in its designation of the Pastor as the moderator by virtue of his office, makes any distinction between the responsibilities and duties of the members of the Session in the exercise of those obligations. When the Session of Waynesboro Presbyterian Church authorized the compilation of the two financial reports and, by its action made these reports available for "members of the Session." the Complainant, as



## APPENDICES

the Pastor of the Church and member of the Session, had a right to be furnished with copies thereof. Allusion is made to the fact that none of the other members of the Session elected to pick up copies of the reports. This, in no way, alters or diminishes the right of the Complainant herein, as a member of the Session, to exercise his own judgment as to whether or not he would secure the reports for himself. It would appear beyond dispute that under the provisions of the Book of Church Order the Complainant should have been provided, as he requested, with these reports.

It is to be noted, however, that the relationship of the Complainant to Waynesboro Presbyterian Church has been terminated. Hence, the Complainant is no longer a member of the Session of that church and, not being a member thereof, has no right, at this time, to have access thereto. Thus, the Complaint of the refusal to be furnished with such copies has become moot.

/s/ Robert D. Stuart  
/s/ William N. Brown  
/s/ Frank C. Horton

### VOTING ON PROPOSED JUDGMENT

20 members concurred in the judgment and decision. Rev. Dewey Roberts abstained as he was on active duty as a chaplain in Saudi Arabia. Dr. Morton H. Smith and Rev. LeRoy Ferguson, III dissented but filed no written dissent. Dr. William J. Stanway was disqualified as being a member of Grace Presbytery.

**NOTE:** This opinion was written by Frank C. Horton with concurrence by the other members of the Judicial Panel. Minor revisions were made by the full Commission with consent of the Judicial Panel.

### A BRIEF SUBMITTED TO THE STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION ADJUDICATING JUDICIAL CASE 90-9 AND 90-10 VAUGHN E. HATHAWAY, JR. vs. GRACE PRESBYTERY

The Commission apointed by Grace Presbytery to hear these two complaints consisted of three ruling elders and three teaching elders. From the first, it was the expressed will and prayerful concern of each member of the Commission that we maintain a posture that would be conducive to the best interests of both the Complainant, and the congregation of the Waynesboro Presbyterian Church.

To this end, we sought to do more than merely interpret the constitutional standards of the Presbyterian Church in America. Rather, we sought to give each side the benefit of our collective experience as fellow elders, while appreciating the wisdom of our standards.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### JUDICIAL CASE 90-10

I have already spoken to the points numbered 1 and 2 on page 15, the Complaint to the General Assembly.

3. The Complainant is correct. There is an error in the statement of facts on page 19. As I understand it, the date given on point 1 should be October 16, 1989, not November 13, 1989.

Under point 2, instead of "at this same meeting", the date November 13, 1989, should appear.

4. We fail to see how the Commission's findings would have been any different, even taking these corrections into account.
5. The findings cite numerous occasions from the minutes of the Waynesboro Session when the Complainant showed a general awareness of the financial state of the church. He was as informed as any other member of the Session.
6. Page 32 of the minutes of the Commission for January 23, 1990, reveal that, since, in reality, none of the elders of the Waynesboro Session elected to acquire copies of the financial reports, the Complainant was not denied a privilege afforded to the rest of the Session.

Again, I would remind the members of the Standing Judicial Commission that the findings of the Commission of Grace Presbytery were overwhelmingly endorsed by a vote of the Presbytery. At least 90% voted to approve the work of this Commission. Speaking for the Commission, I would urge you to uphold these findings.

Respectfully submitted

/s/ TE Randy H. Kimbrough  
Respondent for Grace Presbytery

November 27, 1990

## APPENDICES

### MANUAL FOR STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION (Revisions as adopted 03-01-91)

#### PREFACE

This Manual is subordinate to the Rules of Discipline of the *Book of Church Order* and the Rules of Assembly Operation. If there is any conflict between the provisions of this Manual and said Rules of Discipline or Assembly Operation, the Rules of Discipline or Rules of Assembly Operation shall take precedence.

#### GENERAL RULES

##### 1. MEMBERSHIP

- 1.1 Membership shall be determined by the General Assembly in accordance with *BCO* 15-4.

##### 2. OFFICERS AND THEIR DUTIES

- 2.1 Officers of the Commission shall be elected from its membership and shall be a Chairman, Vice-Chairman, Secretary and Assistant Secretary.
- 2.2 These officers shall be elected annually to take office at the adjournment of the General Assembly.
- 2.3 After a member has served in the same office for three consecutive years, he is not eligible for election to the same office in the fourth year, but later may be elected to serve in the same office.
- 2.4 The Chairman shall preside at meetings and perform other duties assigned by the Commission.
- 2.5 The Vice-Chairman shall assist the Chairman and in his absence or incapacity shall fulfill his duties.
- 2.6 The Secretary shall maintain the records of the Commission and perform other duties assigned by the Commission. He shall send a copy of the Manual to each new member of the Commission appointed by the General Assembly, and he shall also send copies of any outstanding cases and papers presently before the Commission.
- 2.7 The Assistant Secretary shall assist the Secretary and in his absence or incapacity shall fulfill his duties.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 3. MEETINGS

- 3.1 The annual stated meeting of the Commission shall be set for the first Friday and Saturday of the month of March in each year, at which the Officers for the year following the adjournment of the next General Assembly shall be elected. A second stated meeting of the Commission shall be set for the third Friday and Saturday of October in each year. This second stated meeting may be cancelled if a majority of the Officers determine there is insufficient business to justify the meeting. Other business to be considered shall be governed by the procedure set out in Section 3.3 of this Manual.
- 3.2 All qualified members of the Commission (as defined in Section 4.3), including officers, shall be entitled to vote on any matter before the Commission.
- 3.3 In addition to the stated meetings specified in 3.1, the Officers on the Commission may call a meeting at any time upon AT LEAST 30 days' notice. The call of the meeting shall specify the business to be considered at the meeting, and no other business may be considered except by an affirmative vote of three-fourths of those present and voting, which in no case shall be less than 13 affirmative votes of members of the commission. The Officers may amend the call for the consideration of additional business if notice thereof is mailed to the Commission members no less than 14 days before the date of the meeting. If at least four Commission members request, in writing, a called meeting, the Chairman and Secretary shall issue a call, within 10 days from receipt of the request. Such call shall specify the business to be considered at the meeting.
- 3.4 Action by the Commission upon a proposed decision by a Judicial Panel shall ordinarily be handled by mail (Sections 12.7, 12.8, and 12.9). If under the Rules a review by the full Commission of a proposed decision by a Judicial Panel is required, the Officers shall place it on the docket at the next meeting.
- 3.5 The expenses incurred by the Commission, its panels, and its members shall be borne by the Administrative Committee of General Assembly. All expenses (including travel expenses) incurred by a party or by the witnesses called by that party shall be borne by that party.

### 4. QUORUM

- 4.1 A quorum for the transaction of business at any meeting of the Commission shall be 13 qualified members, composed of at least 5 teaching elders and at least 5 ruling elders.
- 4.2 For votes by mail, the quorum shall be at least 75% of the qualified members, which shall be not less than 13 qualified members and which shall include at

## APPENDICES

least 60% of the teaching elders and at least 60% of the ruling elders. (Note the special voting rules in Sections 12.8 and 12.9 of this Manual).

- 4.3 A "qualified" member under these Rules is any member of the Commission who is not disqualified by virtue of any of the following:
- (a) Being a party to the case.
  - (b) Being a relative of a party, in first and second degrees of consanguinity by blood or marriage.
  - (c) Having expressed an opinion on the merits of the particular case. However, a member is not disqualified merely because he has previously expressed an opinion on theological issues or matters of church doctrine or government involved in the case. Nor is a member disqualified if he expresses an opinion on the Case to another member of the Commission or Judicial Panel after the Record of the Case has been completed. After the Record of the Case has been completed, all the facts in the Case have been determined. Forming an opinion is one of the functions of the Commission or Judicial Panel. A member's opinion should not be conclusive until he hears the oral arguments; but it is perfectly proper for members of the Commission or Judicial Panel to discuss the facts of a Case with another brother to get his wisdom and insight.
  - (d) Being a member of a Court which is a party to the case.
  - (e) Having recused himself for any reason.
- 4.4 A quorum for the transaction of business at any meeting of a Judicial Panel appointed hereunder shall be the number of the members of the Judicial Panel appointed as principals.

## 5. THE RECORD OF THE CASE

- 5.1 The record of the case is prepared under the authority of the Commission, or if a panel is appointed, under the authority of a panel.
- 5.2 The record of the case shall contain such information as will permit the Commission and a Panel to properly consider a Judicial Case and prepare a report under Section 12 of this Manual.
- 5.3 The record of the case shall for the purposes of a case before the Commission include:
- (a) The papers which *BCO* 32-18 requires the lower court to submit to the higher court, including:

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- (1) the minutes of the trial before the lower court (including the charges, answers, citations and returns);
  - (2) all transcribed testimony actually taken before the lower court;
  - (3) all acts, orders and decisions of the lower court;
  - (4) the judgment of the lower court (with any accompanying notes, reasons, or comments);
  - (5) a copy of the notice of appeal or complaint against the decision of the lower court along with the reasons for that appeal or complaint, if any such reasons shall have been filed with the lower court.
- (b) Other documents relevant to the case before the lower court as will enable the Commission to consider the case and prepare its report under *BCO* 15-5 and Section 12 of this Manual.
- (c) Where testimony, evidence or arguments presented before a lower court were not transcribed and included as part of the record of the case under Section 5.3.(a) above and a party wishes to have such testimony, evidence or arguments included in the record of the case, such testimony, evidence or arguments shall only be received as a part of the record of the case when all the parties stipulate in writing agreeing to that specified testimony, evidence or arguments being so included.
- (d) Additional new testimony as is relevant to the case as it was heard before the lower court and is presented under the provisions of Section 13.4 of these Rules.
- 5.4 The Secretary of the Commission shall arrange for a copy of the record of the case to be sent:
- (a) To the members of the Commission, if the case is to be heard by the Commission, or to the members of the Judicial Panel and to the alternate members of the Judicial Panel, if the case is to be heard by a Judicial Panel; and
  - (b) To all the parties to the case.
- 5.5 The parties shall have the right to examine the record of the case before the case is heard by the Commission or by a Panel, as the case may be. Corrections to the record of the case may be submitted as follows:
- (a) If a party objects to the record as being incorrect or defective, such party shall notify the Secretary of the Commission within 10 days of receipt of such record of the case. Any party so objecting shall specify, in writing, the alleged defects and suggestions for the corrections that should be made. Such party shall send a copy of the objections and suggested corrections to the other party to the case. Failure to lodge a timely

## APPENDICES

objection to the record of the case will constitute acceptance of the record of the case by the parties.

- (b) If the other party shall agree to the suggested corrections, such corrections shall be reduced to writing, stipulated to by the parties and made a part of the record of the case. Such stipulation shall be mailed to the Secretary of the Commission not more than 20 days after the parties' receipt of the record of the case.
- (c) If the parties do not agree on the correction, the hearing will be postponed, and the Secretary of the Commission shall remit the record of the case to the Clerk of the lower court, together with the party's objections and suggested corrections. The Clerk of the lower court shall reply promptly to these objections.
- (d) If the Clerk of the lower court refuses these objections and certifies to the correctness of the record of the case as submitted, the Secretary of the Commission shall submit the matter to the Commission or to the relevant Judicial Panel which may consider proof of the error as submitted by the party, hear arguments of the parties, and make a decision as to whether in fairness and justice the record of the case should be corrected.

### 6. ADMINISTRATIVE PROCEDURE

- 6.1 When a Judicial Case is submitted to the Commission, the Chairman and the Secretary shall make an initial determination as to whether the case is administratively in order.
  - (a) A case is administratively in order if the relevant provisions of *BCO* 41, 42, and 43 have been followed and the initial documents for the record of the case have been submitted in accordance with Section 5.3(a) above.
  - (b) A case is judicially in order when a Panel or the Commission determine that the relevant provisions of *BCO* 41, 42, and 43 have been followed and the documents for the record of the case are in order in accordance with Section 5.3 above.
- 6.2 If a case is initially found not to be administratively in order, the Secretary shall contact the relevant parties or clerks and request that the case be put in order.
  - (a) If a case cannot be put in order within the Rules of Discipline of the *BCO* and the requirements of this Manual, or
  - (b) If the parties fail to put the case in order within 30 days after notification under this Section of the Manual, then the officers of the Commission may make a determination that "the case not be found in order" and take

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

no further action in relation to the case other than to recommend to the next meeting of the Commission that the case be dismissed on the ground that the case was not found in order.

- 6.3 At any time after a judicial case has been submitted to the Commission, the parties to the case may submit a written brief.
- (a) A written brief shall be limited to argument of issues and evidence raised and set forth in the record of the case. It may include a statement of the relief requested by the party, the party's arguments in favor of the relief requested, and any other matters which the party feels will assist the Commission in reaching a verdict.
  - (b) Written briefs, if submitted, shall be received no later than 10 days prior to the date specified by the Chairman of the Judicial Panel under Section 7.7 of this Manual, or by the Chairman of the Commission under Section 8.3 of this Manual, as the case may be.
  - (c) Failure to file a brief by a party shall not be considered to be an abandonment of the case.
- 6.4 When the case is administratively in order, the Officers shall determine whether the case is of such significance that it should be heard by the full Commission or submitted to a Judicial Panel. Ordinarily, it will be submitted to such a Judicial Panel.
- 6.5 If it is determined that the case should be heard by the full Commission, a full copy of the record of the case shall be sent to each member and a meeting called as provided in Section 3.3 of this Manual.
- 6.6 If it is determined that the case should be heard by a Judicial Panel, the Officers shall immediately appoint such a Judicial Panel. Ordinarily, such appointees should be those qualified members who are geographically closest and/or have easiest access to the place where the case arose, always taking into consideration the maintaining of a balance of teaching and ruling elders. Ordinarily, the only discretionary authority to modify this geographical/easy access rule will be in the case in which an appointee disqualifies himself for any reason set out in Section 4.3 of this Manual.

## 7. JUDICIAL PANELS

- 7.1 Ordinarily, a Judicial Panel should consist of three qualified members of the Commission, which should include at least one teaching elder and one ruling elder. In more serious cases, larger panels may be appointed with an approximately equal balance between teaching and ruling elders.



## APPENDICES

- 7.2 At least one ruling elder and at least one teaching elder shall be named as alternates for each Judicial Panel. An alternate will not be expected to attend the meeting of the Judicial Panel unless he is needed to meet the quorum.
- 7.3 When a Judicial Panel is appointed, one member thereof shall be designated as "Convener." The Convener may make initial contact with the parties:
- (a) to obtain information for the initial meetings of the Panel,
  - (b) to answer initial questions by the parties,
  - (c) to encourage the parties to seek a reconciliation and an agreed determination of the case which, unless the parties withdraw the case, shall only become the determination of the case with the consent of the Panel, and
  - (d) to answer questions of the parties concerning the preparation and submission of written briefs.
- 7.4 Within 10 days after reception of the record of the case, the Convener shall call a meeting of the Judicial Panel members. This first meeting may be held by telephone conference call. At this first meeting, the Judicial Panel shall organize itself by:
- (a) The election of a Chairman.
  - (b) The election of a Secretary.
  - (c) The selection of a tentative time and place for hearing the case.
  - (d) Such other organizational matters as would speed the time of hearing without prejudicing the rights of any of the parties.
- 7.5 Not earlier than thirty days after the receipt of the record of the case under Section 5.4 above, and subject to the requirements of Section 5.5 above, the Chairman of the Panel may call a second meeting of the Judicial Panel members, which meeting may also be held by a telephone conference call. This second meeting may form part of the first organizational meeting of the Panel referred to under Section 7.4 above if the requirements of Section 5.5 have been waived by the parties and the Panel members agree. The purpose of this second meeting shall be to determine if the case is judicially in order and ready for hearing. This review shall include:
- (a) That the case was timely filed as provided in *BCO* 42 and 43.
  - (b) In the case of a complaint, that the complaint was first filed with the Court whose act or decision is alleged to be in error (*BCO* 43-2).
  - (c) That a ground or reason has been specified as required by *BCO*.
  - (d) That the case is submitted in respectful language.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- (e) That the parties have complied with the Rules of Discipline of the *BCO*.
  - (f) That the record of the case appears to be complete and sufficiently documented.
- 7.6 If the Judicial Panel determines that a case is not judicially in order, the Panel shall return the case to the Secretary of the Commission, with reasons for refusing the case. The Secretary shall then notify the parties and give them an opportunity to cure the defect, if it can be cured within the Rules of Discipline of the *BCO* and the requirements of this manual. If significant defects are not cured within 30 days then the Panel may make a determination that "the case not be found in order" and take no further action in relation to the case other than to recommend to the next meeting of the Commission that the case be dismissed on the ground that the case was not found in order. If the decision of the Panel is not confirmed by the Commission, the Commission will reinstate the case. If the defects are cured within 30 days, the case will be reassigned to the Judicial Panel.
- 7.7 When the Judicial Panel determines that the case is judicially in order, the Chairman of the Judicial Panel shall take the following actions:
- (a) Set a time and place for a hearing of the case, making every reasonable effort to obtain such time and place as may be agreeable to all parties. This hearing may be held by telephone conference call if all the parties and panel members agree.
  - (b) Notify all parties of such time and place of hearing by letter with return receipt requested. Such notice shall be posted not less than 30 days prior to the date of hearing. Such 30 day period may be shortened by the agreement, in writing, of the parties to the Case.
  - (c) Notify all parties of their right to submit written briefs, which briefs shall be filed no later than 10 days prior to the hearing date, except in the case of a judicial reference (see Section 9). If a party elects to submit a written brief, ten copies thereof shall be submitted to the Chairman of the Judicial Panel, who shall immediately mail a copy to each party, panel member and alternate panel member. The additional copies are required so that there will be sufficient copies in case of multiple parties or of a larger judicial panel appointed under Section 7.1.
  - (d) Notify all parties of their right to represent themselves or to be represented at the hearing in accordance with *BCO* 32-19, 42-10 or 43-5, as the case may be.
  - (e) Remind the Panel members of their duty to prayerfully and carefully consider the case before them in light of Scripture, our Constitution and

## APPENDICES

the Record of the Case with a solemn admonition to disregard all evidence not in the record (*BCO* 32.18).

7.8 At the time and place set for a hearing of the case, the Chairman shall call the Judicial Panel to order and proceed as follows:

- (a) Prayer shall be offered by a member of the Judicial Panel.
- (b) A quorum shall be certified.
- (c) A determination of the fact that all Judicial Panel members have fully read the record of the case. No further action shall be taken until it has been determined that all the Panel members have fully read the record of the case.
- (d) The Chairman shall enjoin the members to recollect and regard their high character as judges of a court of Jesus Christ and the solemn duty in which they are about to engage (*BCO* 32-12).

### 8. HEARING BY THE FULL COMMISSION

8.1 Where it is determined under Section 6.4 of this Manual that a Judicial Case should be heard by the full Commission, the officers of the Commission shall first determine whether the case is judicially in order and ready for hearing. This review may be done by a telephone conference call and shall include:

- (a) That the appeal was timely filed as provided in *BCO* 42.
- (b) That the appeal is submitted in respectful language.
- (c) That the parties have complied with the Rules of Discipline of the *BCO*.
- (d) That a ground of appeal has been specified as required by *BCO* 42-3.
- (e) That the record of the case appears to be complete and sufficiently documented.

8.2 If the officers of the Commission determine that the appeal is not judicially in order, or is incomplete or inadequate for the appeal to be heard, the Secretary of the Commission shall return the appeal to the Clerk of the lower court from which the appeal was filed with reasons for refusing the appeal. The Secretary of the Commission shall likewise notify the appellant and the appellee. Each party so notified may seek to cure the defects, if it can be done within the Rules of Discipline of the *BCO* and the requirements of this manual. If significant defects cannot be cured within 30 days of such notice, then the officers may make a determination that "the case not be found in order" and take no further action in relation to the case other than to recommend to the next meeting of the Commission that the case be dismissed

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

on the ground that the case was not found in order. If the decision of the officers is not confirmed by the Commission, the Commission will re-instate the case. If the defects are cured within 30 days, the case will be reassigned to the Commission.

- 8.3 If it is determined that the appeal is judicially in order, the Chairman of the Commission shall take the following actions:
- (a) Set a time and place for a hearing of the appeal, making every reasonable effort to obtain such time and place as may be agreeable to both the appellant and appellee.
  - (b) Notify the appellant and the appellee of such time and place of hearing by letter with return receipt requested. Such notice shall be posted not less than 30 days prior to the date of hearing.
  - (c) Notify the appellant and the appellee of their right to submit written briefs, which briefs shall be filed no later than 10 days prior to the hearing date. If a party elects to submit a written brief, 30 copies thereof shall be submitted to the Secretary of the Commission, who shall immediately mail a copy thereof to each member of the Commission and to each party.
  - (d) Notify both appellant and appellee of their right to represent themselves or to be represented at the hearing in accordance with *BCO* 32-19 or 42-10, as the case may be.

### 9. PROCEDURE FOR HEARING A JUDICIAL REFERENCE CASE (*BCO* CHAPTER 41)

- 9.1 The only reference which the Commission may entertain is the reference of "a Judicial Case with request for its trial and decision by the higher court" (*BCO* 41-3).
- (a) Where such a reference is received by the Secretary of the Commission, a determination shall be made under Sections 6.1 of this Manual as to whether or not the case is administratively in order.
  - (b) If the case is found to be administratively in order, the officers of the Commission shall determine whether or not the Commission should accede to the request of the lower court (*BCO* 41-5), remembering the admonition of *BCO* 41-5 that "in general it is better that every court should discharge the duty assigned to it under the law of the church."
  - (c) Where the officers decide that the Commission should not accede to the request of the lower court to hear the case, the question shall be placed

## APPENDICES

on the docket of the next stated or called meeting of the Commission for final determination.

- (d) Where the officers of the Commission decide that the Commission should hear the case, the officers shall make a determination under Section 6.4 of this Manual of whether or not the case should be heard by the full Commission or by a Panel.
- 9.2 A Judicial Case referred to and accepted by the Commission under Section 9.1 above shall be heard de novo.
  - 9.3 The Clerk of the lower court making the reference shall submit to this Commission all documents which should become a part of the record of the case.
  - 9.4 The lower court making the reference shall assist this Commission as provided in *BCO* 41-6.
  - 9.5 The Commission, or a Judicial Panel thereof, shall be organized as in any other case, except the trial of such a case shall be conducted under the General Provisions Applicable To All Cases Of Process as set out in *BCO* 32, and in accordance with rules of evidence as set out in *BCO* 35.
  - 9.6 The testimony of the witnesses in any case so referred and accepted shall be taken and transcribed as part of the record of the case. (Note the provisions of *BCO* 41-6)
  - 9.7 The parties shall be responsible for the notification and expenses of their own witnesses. When a party requests that a witness be cited to testify, the Chairman of the Commission or Judicial Panel shall promptly cite, by personal service or by certified mail, the witness to appear and testify as provided in *BCO* 32-4.
  - 9.8 When the trial hearing is convened the following procedures will apply:
    - (a) The opening proceedings set out in Section 7.8 of this Manual shall be followed, and at the close of the proceedings prayer shall be offered in accordance with Section 13.2 of this Manual.
    - (b) The requirements of *BCO* 32 shall apply.
    - (c) The procedures of *BCO* 32-15 shall be followed, namely:
      - (1) The Chairman shall charge the court.
      - (2) The indictment shall be read, and the answer of the accused shall be heard;
      - (3) The witnesses for the prosecutor and then those for the accused shall be examined.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- (4) The arguments of the parties shall be heard:
    - (A) the Prosecutor, then
    - (B) the Accused, and
    - (C) the Prosecutor shall close.
  - (5) The roll shall be called and the members of the Commission may express their opinion in the case.
  - (6) Since there is no higher court of appeal to which written briefs may be submitted, each party may submit a written brief in accordance with Section 9.9 through 9.11 below. Subject to Sections 9.9 through 9.11 below, or if the parties state to the court that they all waive their rights to submit written briefs in accordance with Sections 9.9 through 9.11:
    - (A) The vote shall be taken; and
    - (B) The verdict shall be announced and the judgment entered on the record.
- (d) The record of the case and the report of the Panel or Commission shall be prepared in accordance with the relevant provisions of this Manual.
- 9.9 The Commission, or Judicial Panel, shall notify each party that each may submit a written brief within 10 days after the close of the hearing. Failure to submit a written brief by a party shall not be construed as an abandonment of the case by such party.
- 9.10 At the close of the hearing, the Commission or Judicial Panel may go into closed session and consider the merits of the case. If the parties waive their rights to submit written briefs, the court may proceed to vote and reach a verdict as provided for in Section 9.8 (c) (6) above.
- 9.11 Unless the parties waive their rights to submit a written brief, no decision shall be made until the 10 day period for filing briefs shall have expired. If briefs are filed, copies shall be sent to all members of the Commission or Judicial Panel, as the case may be. Then the Chairman shall convene the Commission or Judicial Panel where further discussion of the case may take place. This may be done by telephone conference call. After discussion, the vote shall be taken on each issue.
- 9.12 After a decision has been reached, the Chairman shall designate a member voting with the majority to prepare a written decision. Any member may submit a concurring opinion which shall be appended to the decision.
- 9.13 Any member dissenting from the majority may submit a written dissent, which shall be appended to and reported with the majority opinion.

## APPENDICES

### 10. PROCEDURE FOR HEARING AN APPEAL (*BCO* CHAPTER 42)

10.1 At the hearing of an Appeal the following procedures will apply whether heard by a Judicial Panel or by the full Commission:

- (a) The opening proceedings set out in Section 7.8 shall be followed, and at the close of the proceedings prayer shall be offered in accordance with Section 13.2.
- (b) The procedures of *BCO* 42-8 shall be followed, by:
  - (1) The Chairman ascertaining that the record of the case has been read by all the parties and the members of the Panel or Commission
  - (2) The arguments of the parties being heard:
    - (A) with the Appellant's opening argument, then
    - (B) with the Respondents argument, and
    - (C) with the Appellant's closing argument
  - (3) The Panel or Commission shall then go into closed session to discuss the case and consider the merits of the case.
  - (4) Subject to Section 10.2 below:
    - (A) The vote shall be taken on each specification; and
    - (B) The verdict shall be announced and the judgment entered on the record.
- (c) After the hearing shall have been opened and the initial requirements of *BCO* 42-8 met, but before any arguments of the parties have been presented the members of the Panel or Commission shall have the opportunity to question the parties on any matter before the court.
- (d) A party shall have a maximum of 30 minutes to argue his case before the Panel or Commission (and in the case of the Appellant, this 30 minutes is inclusive of both his opening and closing arguments).
- (e) At any time during which a party is presenting an argument to a Panel or the Commission, a member of the Panel or Commission may ask questions of that party; the time taken for such questions shall not form a part of the argument time of the party questioned.
- (f) The record of the case and the report of the Panel or Commission shall be prepared in accordance with the provisions of Section 12 of this Manual.

10.2 After the hearing has been concluded, the Commission or the Judicial Panel, as the case may be, shall go into closed session and discuss the merits of the case. After the discussion, the vote shall then be taken without further debate, on each specification, in this form:

"Shall this specification of error be sustained?"

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The decision may be to affirm the lower court's decision, in whole or in part. If the lower court's decision is not sustained, the decision will be to:

- (a) Reverse the lower court's decision, in whole or in part; or,
- (b) Render the decision that should have been rendered; or,
- (c) Remand the case to the lower court for a new trial.

10.3 After a decision has been reached, the Chairman shall designate a member voting with the majority to prepare a written decision. Any member(s) may submit a concurring or dissenting opinion which shall be appended to the decision.

### 11. PROCEDURE FOR HEARING A COMPLAINT (*BCO* CHAPTER 43)

11.1 At the hearing of a Complaint the following procedures will apply whether the Complaint be heard by a Judicial Panel or by the full Commission:

- (a) The opening proceedings set out in Section 7.8 shall be followed, and at the close of the proceedings prayer shall be offered in accordance with Section 13.2.
- (b) The procedures of *BCO* 43-9 shall be followed, by:
  - (1) The Chairman ascertaining that the record of the case has been read by all the parties and the members of the Panel or Commission.
  - (2) The arguments of the parties being heard:
    - (A) with the Complainant's opening argument, then
    - (B) with the Respondents argument, and
    - (C) with the Complainant's closing argument.
  - (3) The Panel or Commission shall then go into closed session to discuss the case and consider the merits of the case.
  - (4) Subject to Sections 11.2 and 11.3 below:
    - (A) The vote shall be taken; and
    - (B) The verdict shall be announced and the judgment entered on the record.
- (c) After the hearing shall have been opened and the initial requirements of *BCO* 43-9 met, but before any arguments of the parties have been presented the members of the Panel or Commission shall have the opportunity to question the parties on any matter before the court.
- (d) A party shall have a maximum of 30 minutes to argue his case before the Panel or Commission (and in the case of the Complainant, this 30 minutes is inclusive of both his opening and closing arguments).
- (e) At any time during which a party is presenting an argument to a Panel or the Commission, a member of the Panel or Commission may ask



## APPENDICES

questions of that party; the time taken for such questions shall not form a part of the argument time of the party questioned.

- (f) The record of the case and the report of the Panel or Commission shall be prepared in accordance with the provisions of Section 12 of this Manual.
- 11.2 After the hearing has been concluded, the Commission or the Judicial Panel, as the case may be, shall go into closed session and discuss the merits of the complaint. After the discussion, the vote shall then be taken without further debate, as to what disposition should be made of the complaint. The decision may be to affirm the lower court's decision, in whole or in part. If the lower court's decision is not sustained, the decision will be to:
- (a) Annul the whole or any part of the action of the lower court against which the complaint has been made; or,
  - (b) Send the matter back to the lower court with instructions for a new hearing.
- 11.3 After a decision has been reached, the Chairman shall designate a member voting with the majority to prepare a written decision. Any member may submit a concurring or dissenting opinion which shall be appended to the decision.

## 12. DECISIONS AND JUDGMENTS

12.1 Each decision ordinarily shall be in the following format:

- (a) A summary of the facts.
- (b) A statement of the issues.
- (c) The judgment.
- (d) The reasoning and opinion of the court.

12.2 Judgments of the Standing Judicial Commission are binding on the parties until approval or disapproval by the General Assembly, unless one-fourth or more of the qualified Commission members, eligible and voting, consent to delay until action of the General Assembly.

12.3 Judicial decisions approved by the General Assembly shall be binding and conclusive on the parties. Judicial decisions are to be given due and serious consideration by the Church and its lower courts when deliberating matters related to such action, and may be appealed to in subsequent, similar cases as to any principle which may have been decided (*BCO 14-7*).

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- 12.4 Each decision of the Commission and a Judicial Panel shall show the name of the member who wrote the opinion, together with the names of all members as to their concurrence, dissent, abstention or disqualification.
- 12.5 Proposed and recommended decisions of a Judicial Panel are not binding on the parties, but the Secretary of the Judicial Panel shall mail the parties a copy of the panel's proposed decision and inform the parties of their right to request a review hearing before the full Standing Judicial Commission. If any party desires review by the full Commission, such request must be mailed to the Secretary of the Commission within 10 days after the receipt of the proposed decision.
- 12.6 When a Judicial Panel has reached a decision in a case, the Secretary of the Judicial Panel shall prepare a full report of the case and mail the same to the Secretary of the Commission. This report shall include the following:
- (a) The record of the case.
  - (b) The proposed and recommended decision.
  - (c) Any written briefs of the parties.
  - (d) An audio tape or transcript of the oral arguments of the parties.
  - (e) A copy of the minutes of the meetings of the Judicial Panel.
  - (f) Any concurring or dissenting opinion of a panel member.
  - (g) Any dissenting panel member's request for review by the full Commission, appending reasons therefor.

Minor language revisions in the reasoning and opinion of the decision may be made by the full Commission without a rehearing of the Case. More substantive revisions may be made by the full Commission on a 2/3 vote of those Commissioners present and voting or with the concurrence of a majority of the Judicial Panel. The judgment of the Case, however, cannot be altered without a rehearing of the Case by the full Commission.

- 12.7 After the Secretary of the Commission has been advised regarding any party's desire for review by the full Commission pursuant to Section 12.5, he shall immediately forward a copy of:
- a. the proposed and recommended decision, as well as
  - b. the written briefs of the parties to each member of the Commission, and shall make available to each member of the Commission a copy of the full report of the Case (or portions thereof) upon request, which request must be posted within 10 days after receipt of said proposed and recommended decision.

## APPENDICES

- 12.8 If no member of the Judicial Panel hearing the case shall have requested review by the full Commission (Section 12.6 (g)), the Secretary of the Commission shall include in the mailing required under Section 12.7 a ballot for voting on the proposed decision. This ballot shall have a place for each member to indicate his concurrence, dissent, abstention or disqualification. Each member of the Commission shall complete and return such ballot to the Secretary of the Commission within 20 days of the date of the receipt of the Secretary's mailing under Section 12.7. If any member fails to return such ballot within said 20 days, or shall return the ballot without completing it, that member's vote shall be recorded as a concurrence in the decision of the Judicial Panel.
- 12.9 If a party to a Judicial Case shall have made a request for review by the full Commission, the Secretary of the Commission shall also include in the mailing under Section 12.7 a separate ballot which shall have a place for each member to indicate his vote in favor of or against such request. Each member of the Commission shall complete and return such ballot to the Secretary of the Commission within 20 days of the date of the receipt of the Secretary's mailing under Section 12.7. If any member fails to return such ballot within said 20 days, or shall return the ballot without completing it, that member's vote shall be recorded as a vote against the request for review of the case by the full Commission.
- 12.10 A review of the case by the full Standing Judicial Commission shall be had only in the following circumstances:
- (a) Where, within 20 days of the receipt of the Secretary's mailing under Section 12.7 at least four qualified members of the full Commission shall request, by the ballot indicated in Section 12.9 or by separate written notice to the Secretary of the Commission, that the case be reviewed by the full Commission; or
  - (b) Where a voting member of the Judicial Panel hearing the case shall so request under Section 12.6 (g); or
  - (c) Where any member of the Standing Judicial Commission shall file written request for such full review within [10] 20 days of the receipt of the Secretary's mailing under Section 12.7, and the officers of the Standing Judicial Commission shall thereafter, by majority vote, approve such request.
  - (d) Where a party's request is granted under Section 12.9.
- 12.11 When review by the full Commission is granted pursuant to Section 12.10 (a), (b), (c) or (d), the Secretary of the Commission shall immediately notify the parties to the case and all members of the Commission. If voting on the proposed decision of the Judicial Panel has not been completed, it shall be suspended. The Chairman and Secretary of the Commission shall

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

immediately call a meeting of the full Commission as provided in Section 3.3. Upon such meeting of the Commission, review shall be only on the report of the Judicial Panel, but the Commission will allow oral arguments by the parties not to exceed 30 minutes for each side, with the party against whom the decision of the Judicial Panel was rendered having the right to open and close the argument. At such hearing before the Commission, after the review and any oral arguments, the members shall go into closed session and discuss the merits of the case, and then shall vote on the proposed and recommended decision and judgment of the Judicial Panel with any ballot returned by a member absent at the meeting of the full Commission being counted as the vote of that absent member.

12.12 Upon such review by the full Commission, if the proposed and recommended decision of the Judicial Panel is not adopted, the Chairman of the Commission shall designate a member voting with the majority to prepare a written decision. Any member may submit a concurring or dissenting opinion which shall be appended to the decision.

12.13 A copy of the final decision and judgment in any case shall be immediately mailed by the Secretary of the Commission to all the parties in the case.

### 13. MISCELLANEOUS

13.1 A member of the Standing Judicial Commission should refrain from consulting or advising in any judicial matters that might conceivably come before this Commission, except in a case where such member is a party.

13.2 Any meeting of the Commission or a Judicial Panel shall be opened and closed with prayer.

13.3 All proceedings before the Commission or a Judicial Panel thereof shall be tape recorded and may be transcribed. The tape recordings in a case shall be kept by the Secretary of the Commission until the case has been finally determined by the General Assembly, and then such tape recordings may be destroyed.

13.4 If at any time while a judicial reference, appeal or complaint is before the Commission, or a Judicial Panel thereof, a party asserts that new evidence has been obtained, said new evidence shall be received as a part of the Record of the Case, only when all parties stipulate in writing agreeing to the new evidence. If the parties cannot agree to this stipulation, and the party presenting the new evidence insists that it is material to the case, the proceedings shall be suspended and the matter docketed at the next meeting of the Commission or Panel. At that next meeting, the Commission or Panel may decide:

(1) To admit or refuse the new evidence and proceed with the case; or,

## APPENDICES

- (2) To remand the case to the lower court for a rehearing.

In the case where the parties cannot agree to stipulation, and where the interests of justice will not be inhibited, the Commission or Panel in exercising its discretion under this section, shall ordinarily remit the case back to the lower court for rehearing of this new evidence.

- 13.5 All issues before the Standing Judicial Commission, or a Judicial Panel thereof, shall be decided by a majority vote of those qualified members voting. Voting shall be by written ballot or roll call. There shall be no proxy voting.

### 13.6 (A) ABANDONMENT

If an appellant, complainant or party initiating a case referred to the Commission fails to appear, in person or by a qualified representative, after receiving proper notice, at any meeting of the Standing Judicial Commission, or a Judicial Panel thereof, such party shall be deemed to have abandoned the case. The Secretary of the Commission, or a Judicial Panel thereof, as the case may be, shall immediately notify the party that the case has been dismissed because of the failure to appear, and the party shall have 10 days from the receipt of such notice to present, in writing, a satisfactory explanation of the failure to appear and prosecute the case. If the explanation is deemed sufficient by the officers of the Commission, or members of the Judicial Panel, the case shall be reinstated and reset for another hearing; otherwise, it shall stand abandoned and dismissed.

### (B) WAIVER OF RIGHTS TO APPEAR

Any complainant or appellant may upon a showing of good cause waive his right to appear before the higher court and present oral argument. This waiver shall be accomplished by a written notice to the higher court, mailed not less than 14 days prior to the scheduled hearing, stating the reasons for the waiver. A complainant's or an appellant's waiver has no effect upon the other party's right of appearance.

The higher court, if it fails to find good cause for the waiver, may refuse to accept a waiver of appearance. If the requested waiver is rejected by the higher court, it shall promptly notify the complainant or the appellant, as the case may be. The complainant or the appellant shall then be required to appear before the higher court at the scheduled time and place.

Failure to so appear shall constitute an abandonment of the case by that party, unless within 10 days after the date of the scheduled hearing that party provides satisfactory explanation of the failure to appear. If this explanation is deemed sufficient by the higher court and if the higher court believes the interests of justice will be served thereby, the case shall be reset for another hearing. If no further hearing is required, the case may be decided forthwith. If the party's explanation for not appearing is not deemed sufficient by the higher court, the case shall stand abandoned and dismissed.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- 13.7 When a judicial case is committed to the Standing Judicial Commission, the Secretary of the Commission shall immediately mail a copy of this manual to all parties to the case.

### 14. REPORTS

- 14.1 The Standing Judicial Commission, or a Judicial Panel thereof, shall prepare a full report of its proceedings, which, after preparation, shall be read and approved by the members thereof.

- 14.2 The Standing Judicial Commission shall make a full report of each case directed to the General Assembly, which report shall consist of the following:

- (a) A summary of the facts.
- (b) A statement of the issues.
- (c) The written briefs of the parties.
- (d) Any recommended judgment of a Judicial Panel.
- (e) The reasoning and opinion of the Standing Judicial Commission.
- (f) The judgment of the Standing Judicial Commission.
- (g) Any concurring and/or dissenting opinion of any member of the Standing Judicial Commission.

- 14.3 A copy of the full report (see Section 14.2) of each case sent by the Standing Judicial Commission to the General Assembly shall be mailed to the Clerk of Session of each church in the PCA. No decision of the Standing Judicial Commission shall be considered by the General Assembly unless such report has been mailed to the Clerk of Session of each church in the PCA at least 30 days prior to the meeting of the General Assembly. If such a report is included in the Handbook for Commissioners, this shall be considered a sufficient mailing for those churches receiving the General Assembly Handbook provided the mailing is at least 30 days prior to the meeting of the General Assembly.

### 15. AMENDMENTS, USE AND DISTRIBUTION OF MANUAL

- 15.1 This manual may be amended at any meeting of the Standing Judicial Commission called as provided in Sections 3.1 or 3.3 of this Manual. An affirmative vote of at least 16 members will be required to adopt a proposed amendment.

## APPENDICES

- 15.2 This manual is a solemn covenant among the current members of the Standing Judicial Commission. If any member feels that this manual has been violated in any case, such member may file a written objection citing the alleged violation. This written objection shall be included by the Secretary in the report of the case to the General Assembly filed under Section 14.2.
- 15.3 A copy of this manual, together with all revisions and amendments, shall be mailed to the Stated Clerk of each Session and each Presbytery in the PCA.

APPENDIX P

AD INTERIM COMMITTEE ON  
MARRIAGE, DIVORCE, AND REMARRIAGE  
TO THE NINETEENTH GENERAL ASSEMBLY  
OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA

INTRODUCTION

Due to the need for guidance regarding pastoral care of persons affected by divorce or severe marital crisis, the 16th General Assembly appointed the Ad Interim Committee to prepare a report which would include, but not be limited to, the following:

- a) A re-examination of biblical teaching concerning grounds for divorce and remarriage. The committee shall ask whether the Westminster Confession Chapter 24.6 is more lax or more restrictive than Scripture, and shall suggest any revisions to that article of the Confession it deems appropriate. In particular, the committee shall address the question, whether a Christian may have other legitimate grounds for divorce, besides desertion by an unbelieving spouse, or adultery (for example, inveterate physical abuse, marital rape or other sexual abuse, attempted murder, or equally serious violations of the marriage covenant).
- b) Recommend guidelines and resources for pastoral care and counsel of couples with marital difficulties, persons considering divorce or remarriage after divorce, divorced persons, and children and other family members affected by divorce." (1988 General Assembly, Overture #12)

This report represents the findings of the Committee. Having considered carefully the request of the General Assembly, the Committee divided its research into three parts. First, it was asked to consider whether the Confession is more lax or more restrictive than Scripture, and whether any revisions to the Confession would be appropriate at this time. Chapter 1, Historical Perspective on Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage, focuses on the conclusions reached by the Westminster Divines and the diversity of views present in that day. Most of the issues debated today were debated then with a broad range of answers, and the writings of the Puritan and Continental Divines provide an interesting parallel to today's breadth of views in the PCA.

Second, the Committee was asked to consider whether there could be other legitimate grounds for divorce besides "desertion by an unbelieving spouse" or "adultery," namely, such harmful actions as inveterate physical abuse, attempted murder, etc. Chapter 2, Scriptural Perspective on Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage, seeks to address this issue by reexamining those passages of Scripture that deal with divorce and remarriage. In the past, countless such studies have been made. There are



## APPENDICES

no new scriptures to which we may appeal for answers. Whatever answers there are in Scripture will be based on those passages already studied by so many, and especially on the interpretation of two major passages, Matthew 19:9 with its "exception clause," and I Corinthians 7:10-15 with its details regarding "desertion." This is the heart of the debate. Can the "sexual immorality" (*porneia*) of Matthew 19:9 be understood to include a variety of forms of sexual sin, or must it be limited only to one sexual offense? Can "desertion" of I Corinthians 7 be understood to include such harmful actions as physical abuse and attempted murder, or must it be limited only to an unbelieving spouse leaving the house of a believer?

Actually, the Committee was not totally pleased with the wording of the request, "whether a Christian may have other legitimate grounds for divorce..." as though the task of the committee would be to find if there were other legal ways out of a marriage. It is better to view Matthew 19:9 not as providing a ground for divorce but rather an exception to the principle of the permanence of marriage. Also, as the report will show, the "desertion" of I Corinthians 7 was not a ground for divorce, but rather an actual incidence of divorce. Considerable thought has been given to the meaning of "sexual immorality" and "desertion," and the findings of the Committee need to be pondered carefully in the light of the entire chapter on Scripture.

Third, the Committee was asked to provide guidelines and resources for the PCA in its pastoral care and counsel of all parties affected by marital difficulties, divorce, or remarriage. Ruling and teaching elders will find this third chapter very helpful as they seek to minister to people in these situations, and as they establish policy and procedures for the churches. Many excellent insights and suggestions are given to help in this most difficult pastoral task.

The format of the report is a basic one. The initial Outline serves as a summary of the content of the report, and as an aid in finding the Committee's statements on specific issues. Please be careful to read the Committee's specific statements in the context of the whole report. Then three chapters follow dealing with the three parts of the report. Finally, in the Conclusion, a summary of our findings is stated, and it is followed by a series of specific recommendations to the General Assembly. We have sought to make the report readable and usable for all members of the PCA, and trust that it will bring glory to God.

### Committee Members

TE Andrew Boswell  
South Florida Presbytery

TE George Knight  
South Florida Presbytery

TE Paul B. Fowler, **Chairman**  
South Florida Presbytery

Dr. Diane Langberg, Advisor  
Philadelphia Presbytery

RE Joe Breese Johnson  
TN Valley Presbytery

TE Robert Rayburn  
Pacific NW Presbytery

RE Terry Jones  
Missouri Presbytery

TE Robert Stuart  
South Florida Presbytery

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY'S REPORT ON MARRIAGE, DIVORCE, AND REMARRIAGE

#### OUTLINE

##### CHAPTER 1

#### HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE ON MARRIAGE, DIVORCE, AND REARRIAGE

- I. The Westminster Confession on Divorce and Remarriage
- II. The Witness of the Early Church
- III. The Original Intent of the Confession
- IV. The Views of Three Prominent Puritan Divines
  - A. William Perkins (1558-1602)
  - B. William Gouge (1575-1653)
  - C. William Ames (1576-1633)
- V. The Conclusion of the Westminster Divines
- VI. The Views of Two Prominent Continental Divines
  - A. Theodore Beza (1519-1605)
  - B. Samuel Maresius (1599-1673)
- VII. Conclusion

##### CHAPTER 2

#### SCRIPTURAL PERSPECTIVE ON MARRIAGE, DIVORCE, AND REARRIAGE

- I. Issues Concerning Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage
  - A. What our denominational heritage has said about marriage
  - B. What our denominational heritage has said about divorce and remarriage
  - C. What views may be found today within the evangelical-reformed community regarding divorce and remarriage
    - 1. No divorce, no remarriage
    - 2. Strictly limited grounds for divorce, and for remarriage
    - 3. Broader ground for divorce, and for remarriage
  - D. Are we to understand that Scripture indeed allows for divorce?
    - 1. Divorce was permitted in Scripture
    - 2. Divorce dissolved a marriage in Scripture
  - E. Does the evidence that divorce ends marriage mean that God looks favorably at divorce? Malachi 2:13-16

## APPENDICES

- II. Consideration of Major Scripture Passages
  - A. Deuteronomy 24:1-4
    - 1. Is Moses giving a command to divorce?
    - 2. What does the phrase "some indecency" mean?
    - 3. Modern interpreters differ
    - 4. Proceeding to the New Testament passages
  - B. Matthew 5:31-32
    - 1. The rabbinic perversion of Deuteronomy 24
    - 2. Jesus' correction of the rabbinic perversion
    - 3. Interpretations influenced by the context of Matthew 5, the Sermon on the Mount
  - C. Luke 16:17-18
  - D. Matthew 19:3-9 [Mark 10:2-11]
    - 1. The context of Matthew 19:3-8
    - 2. Divorce and remarriage in Matthew 19:9
    - 3. The exception clause of Matthew 19:9
      - a. The authenticity of Jesus' words
      - b. The scope of the exception clause
      - c. The meaning of *porneia*
      - d. Is *porneia* ever used with an even broader meaning?
      - e. What are the current interpretations of *porneia*?
        - View #1: *porneia* refers to sexual unfaithfulness before marriage
        - View #2: *porneia* refers to unfaithfulness in marriage, not restricted to sexual sin
        - View #3: *porneia* refers to sexual unfaithfulness in marriage
      - f. Guidelines for applying the meaning of *porneia*
  - E. I Corinthians 7:10-15
    - 1. Instruction to spouses both of whom are believers, verses 10-11
    - 2. Important insights into verses 10-11
    - 3. Instruction to a spouse married to an unbeliever, verses 12-15
    - 4. Applying Paul's instruction about desertion today
    - 5. Some concluding thoughts about remarriage, I Corinthians 7:39

### CHAPTER 3 PASTORAL PERSPECTIVE ON MARRIAGE, DIVORCE, AND REMARRIAGE

- I. Prevention of Marital Problems
  - A. Statement of prevention rationale
  - B. Guidelines for prevention
  - C. Suggested outline for pre-marital counseling
  - D. Resources
- II. Pastoral Care and Counsel of Couples with Marital Difficulties
  - A. Understanding the couple
  - B. Guidelines for marital counseling

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- C. Practical considerations
  - D. Resources
- III. Discipline As It Pertains to Couples Considering Divorce
- A. Guidelines for discipline issues
    1. The local church's responsibility to become involved
    2. How does the local church become involved?
    3. What if both spouses will talk with an elder?
    4. What if one spouse refuses to talk with an elder?
      - a. For the spouse who will talk with an elder
      - b. For the spouse who will not talk with an elder
    5. What if the elders pursue formal discipline?
  - B. Resources
- IV. Pastoral Care and Counsel of Those Seeking Remarriage
- A. Understanding the person seeking remarriage
  - B. Guidelines for remarriage
  - C. Concerns of those in the congregation who have been divorced
  - D. Practical considerations for ministering to those contemplating remarriage
  - E. Resources
- V. Pastoral Care and Counsel of the Children of Divorced Parents
- A. Understanding the child of divorced parents
  - B. Practical considerations for ministering to those contemplating remarriage when children are involved
  - C. Resources
  - D. Addendum: "Ceremony for Recognition of Children at Remarriage"
- VI. The Church's Ministry to the Separated and Divorced
- A. Understanding the separated and divorced
  - B. Guidelines for ministry
  - C. Resources

## CONCLUSION

- I. A Summary of the Findings of the Committee
- II. Recommendations to the 19th General Assembly of the PCA

CHAPTER 1

HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE ON MARRIAGE, DIVORCE AND REMARRIAGE

I. The Westminster Confession on Divorce and Remarriage

The 16th General Assembly (1988) of the Presbyterian Church in America appointed a study committee to reexamine the biblical teaching on divorce and remarriage and to ask whether the Westminster Confession of Faith is more lax or more strict than Scripture on this issue and to propose any revisions deemed appropriate.<sup>1</sup>

The assertions of the Confession to be queried are the following:

In the case of adultery after marriage, it is lawful for the innocent party to sue out a divorce: and after the divorce to marry another, as if the offending party were dead. (24.5)

Although the corruption of man be such as is apt to study arguments unduly to put asunder those whom God hath joined together in marriage, yet, nothing but adultery, or such wilful desertion as can no way be remedied by the church, or civil magistrate, is cause sufficient of dissolving the bond of marriage. (24.6)

It is not the first time in this century that the teaching of the Confession on divorce has been reviewed by an American Presbyterian church body. The Presbyterian Church in the U.S. A. in 1953 adopted a revised chapter on marriage and divorce, and the Presbyterian Church in the U.S. followed with a revision of its own in 1959. The latter was subsequently adopted by the Evangelical Presbyterian Church in 1984; it is currently being reviewed by that church's standing committee on theology at the request of the 9th General Assembly (1989).

Is the Confession too strict or too lax? Or is it just right? The mid-century studies cited above apparently found it too strict, but more recently it has come under attack by some evangelicals for being too lax. William Heth and Gordon Wenham in particular are critical of the Westminster position, which they call "the Erasmian view" inasmuch as "the exegetical tradition started by Erasmus and amplified by Luther and the other Reformers was confirmed by the above sections [24.5-6] in this Confession of Faith."<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Minutes of the Sixteenth General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America*, 1988, p. 41.

<sup>2</sup> William A. Heth and Gordon J. Wenham, *Jesus and Divorce: The Problem with the Evangelical Consensus*, Nashville, 1984, p. 83. The Westminster position is also implicitly criticized by J. Carl Laney in *The Divorce Myth: A Biblical Examination of Divorce and Remarriage*, Minneapolis, 1981.

## II. The Witness of the Early Church

The Heth-Wenham thesis is that Erasmus departed from the uniform teaching of the early church that remarriage following divorce for any reason was adulterous, a view which they defend as exegetically sound. It may be noted here that what they call "the early church view" is more accurately "the final Augustinian view". As late as 413 Augustine wrote: "Nor is it clear from Scripture whether a man who has left his wife because of adultery, which he is certainly permitted to do, is himself an adulterer if he marries again. And if he should, I do not think that he would commit a grave sin." <sup>3</sup> Augustine's definitive position according to which such a man would be an adulterer appears six years later in *de Conjugliis adulterinis*. <sup>4</sup>

It is by no means certain that Heth and Wenham adequately represent the teaching of the early church. According to Jesuit scholar Theodore Mackin in his massive *Divorce and Remarriage*, "Christian writers on the subject of adultery, divorce and remarriage, beginning in the middle of the second century and continuing at least until Augustine...never call the following persons adulterers: (1) A husband who remarries after dismissing an adulterous wife. (2) A husband who remarries after being abandoned by his wife. (3) A woman who marries a man in either of these two cases." <sup>5</sup>

Moreover, the Augustinian view was never adopted by the Eastern churches, all of which permitted divorce and remarriage. Mackin summarizes the discipline of the Byzantine Church in the thirteenth century as follows:

When a marriage is indissoluble this comes of its being a sacramental marriage of two Christians. But even this indissolubility yields to divine dispensation as this was expressed by Christ in the exceptive clause recorded in Matthew 5:32 and 19:9...In the circumstances envisioned by the Matthean passages the Church was thought to be authorized to separate the spouses, to dissolve their marriage in the name of and by the authority of God . . . *Porneia* in the exceptive clause was taken to designate adultery; dismissal was taken to designate the dissolution of the marriage.

But the adultery warranting dismissal and dissolution was understood to be not the only cause, but to be only a sample and a point of departure for other and equivalent causes. It was taken as self-evident that other crimes are possible to spouses that injure their marriages with equal or greater severity. Abortion and attempted murder of the spouse were only two of these. <sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>3</sup> Augustine, *On Faith and Works*, trans. Gregory J. Lombardo, New York, 1988, ch. 19 (35) p. 43.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid*, note 198, p. 98.

<sup>5</sup> Theodore Mackin, *Divorce and Remarriage*, New York, 1984, p. 172

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid*, p. 373.

## APPENDICES

The historic difference between the Roman Catholic and the Eastern Orthodox churches on the doctrine of divorce persists down to the present day.<sup>7</sup> Thus, while Erasmus should be given his due for his exegetical contribution to the discussion, to label the view which permits remarriage following divorce for just cause "Erasmian" is misleading.

In any case, of more immediate concern than the question of historical antecedents is the question of what the Confession actually teaches, especially with respect to "desertion" as a second ground for divorce alongside adultery. To judge whether the Westminster position is too strict or too lax, we must first determine what it is. This may not be entirely simple.

### III. The Original Intent of the Confession

It is a sound principle that constitutional documents should be interpreted according to their original intent. For creeds and confessions to function as subordinate norms, they must be read according to the grammatico-historical method of interpretation. Confessional subscription is not to anything the words can be taken to mean, but rather to the *discourse meaning* of the text.<sup>8</sup>

The Westminster divines took up the question of marriage and divorce in 1646, the year the Confession was completed (apart from the proof texts requested by Parliament). The minutes record the following actions. The committee assignment was made February 23. The report on marriage was presented June 17 and debated August 3-4. The report on divorce was presented August 10 and debated September 10-11. The proposed chapter "Of Marriage and Divorce" as a whole was debated November 9, and the section on wilful desertion was recommitted. The committee reported back the next day, and, following further debate on wilful desertion, the Assembly on November 11 adopted the chapter "Of Marriage and Divorce" as we now know it.<sup>9</sup>

It is of interest that none of the antecedent Reformed confessions in the British Isles -- neither the Scots Confession (1560) nor the Thirty-Nine Articles of the Church of England (1563) nor the Irish Articles of Religion (1615) - include a statement on

---

7 Cf. Gregor Larentzakis, "Marriage, Divorce and Remarriage in the Orthodox Church," *Theology Digest* 26 (1978) pp. 232-234. The *discipline* of the Roman Catholic church is another matter. See Joseph P. Zwack, *Annulment Your Chance to Remarry within the Catholic Church*, New York, 1983.

8 The term *discourse meaning* points us back to the event of the utterance or act of writing which is contextually informed and determinative for meaning". Peter Cotterell and Max Turner, *Linguistics and Biblical Interpretation*, Downers Grove, Illinois, 1989, p. 69.

9 *Minutes of the Session of the Westminster Assembly of Divines*, ed. Alexander F. Mitchell and John Struthers, Edinburgh, 1976, pp. 190, 244, 262-264, 266, 279-280, 299, 300. Unfortunately, George Gillespie's fuller *Notes of Debates and Proceedings of the Assembly of Divines and Other Commissioners at Westminster*, Edinburgh, 1846, records only from February 1644 to January 1645. Similarly, John Lightfoot's *Journal of the Proceedings of the Assembly of Divines* is limited to the calendar years 1643-1644.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

divorce, and the articles on marriage in the latter two documents focus narrowly on the question of a celibate clergy. According to the Thirty-Nine Articles:

Bishops, priests, and deacons are not commanded by God's law either to vow the estate of single life or to abstain from marriage. Therefore it is lawful also for them, as for all other Christian men, to marry at their own discretion as they shall judge the same to serve better to godliness. (32)

The parallel affirmation in the Irish Articles of Religion is only slightly broader.

For the preservation of the chastity of men's persons, wedlock is commanded unto all men that stand in need thereof. Neither is there any prohibition by the Word of God but that the ministers of the Church may enter into the state of matrimony: they being nowhere commanded by God's law ...[remainder repeats the Thirty-Nine Articles verbatim]. (64)

Taking into account also the Reformed confessions on the continent, the only Reformed creed to contain any reference to divorce prior to the Westminster Confession is the First Helvetic Confession (1536), which in its teaching on marriage includes a word for the civil government:

We contend that marriage has been instituted and prescribed by God for all men who are qualified and fit for it and who have not otherwise been called by God to live a chaste life outside marriage. No order or state is so holy and honorable that marriage would be opposed to it and should be forbidden. Since such marriages should be confirmed in the presence of the Church by a public exhortation and vow in keeping with its dignity, the *government* should also respect it and see to it that a marriage is legally and decently entered into and given legal and honorable recognition, *and is not lightly dissolved without serious and legitimate grounds* (27); emphasis added.<sup>10</sup>

Although the Westminster articles on divorce are without confessional precedent in the Reformed churches, they are understandable given the historical circumstances of the Westminster Assembly. By the Solemn League and Covenant (1643) both Assembly and Parliament were sworn to preserve and extend "the reformed religion" and to "endeavor to bring the Churches of God in the three kingdoms [Scotland, England, and Ireland] to the nearest conjunction and uniformity in [that] religion" (1st vow). As its dual title indicates, the Solemn League and Covenant was a political instrument as well as a religious commitment. At its heart lay "the conviction that the unity of a society inheres in its religion and church."<sup>11</sup>

---

<sup>10</sup> The Second Helvetic Confession (1566), although silent on divorce, is unique in making this proposal: "Let lawful courts be established in the Church, and holy judges who may care for marriages, and may repress all unchastity and shamefulness, and before whom matrimonial disputes may be settled." (29)

<sup>11</sup> John H. Leith, *Assembly at Westminster: Reformed Theology in the Making*, Richmond, 1973, p. 59.



## APPENDICES

Given the conception of a religiously unified society and the intimate connection between church and state that obtains under such circumstances, it is not surprising to find the social institution of marriage among the articles of religion addressed by the Westminster Confession. The Assembly no doubt judged that the unity of both church and society would be well-served by a confessional exposition of the doctrine of marriage, including the biblical grounds for its dissolution, a controversial issue in 17th century Britain.<sup>12</sup> The Scottish Parliament, already in 1573, had enacted legislation which allowed divorce for desertion.<sup>13</sup> With Anglo-catholics, on the one hand, still arguing that marriage was indissoluble, and Milton, on the other, lobbying for divorce on grounds of incompatibility, the question could hardly be ignored as it was bound to have an effect on the civil law.<sup>14</sup>

As it turned out, Parliament did not take the "humble advice" of its assembled divines on this issue but omitted the paragraphs on divorce in its authorized edition of the Confession published in 1648. The Savoy Declaration (1658) also chose to do without them, so it has fallen to the Presbyterian churches to wrestle with their confessional status.

Between the rigorous Anglican view and the relaxed view of Milton the Westminster position on divorce might seem to be a golden mean, but it was not adopted for any reason other than that it was believed to be biblical.

### IV. The Views of Three Prominent Puritan Divines

#### A. William Perkins (1558-1602)

Remarriage following divorce for adultery had long been permitted by English Puritan divines. The exegesis of the exceptive clause in Matthew given by William Perkins (1558-1602) is typical:

By *fornication*, Christ meaneth not every sin of that kind, but only the sin of *adultery*; or that which is greater in that kind, namely *incest*... The exception belongs to the whole answer of our savior Christ, denying

---

12 Cf. James Turner Johnson, *A Society Ordained by God: English Puritan Marriage Doctrine in the First Half of the Seventeenth Century*, Nashville, 1970. A useful discussion, but unaccountably it does not include the Westminster Confession.

13 *Marriage and Divorce: A Report of the Study Panel of the Free Church of Scotland*, Edinburgh, 1988, p. 28. "These two causes for the termination of marriage [adultery and desertion] ... remained the only two grounds for divorce in Scotland until 1938 when cruelty, incurable insanity, sodomy and bestiality were added by Act of Parliament" (p. 28). More radical legislation was enacted in 1976 and 1977 (p. 5).

14 John Milton, *The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce: Restor'd to the Good of Both Sexes from the Bondage of Canon Law and Other Mistakes ... to the Parliament of England with the [Westminster] Assembly*, 2nd ed., London, 1644. The 1st edition was published in 1643; both editions, along with Milton's other divorce tracts, are included in *Complete Prose Works of John Milton*, vol. 2, 1643-1648, ed. Ernest Sirluck, New Haven, 1959.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

divorce, save only for adultery; and permitting no marriage after divorcement, save only where divorce is for adultery. <sup>15</sup>

Although he is expounding the Sermon on the Mount, Perkins brings in I Corinthians 7:15. Desertion of a believer by an unbeliever is not viewed as a second *ground* for divorce, but it is nevertheless another circumstance which results in the dissolution of the marriage.

The malicious or wilfull departing of the unbeliever, doth dissolve the marriage; but that is no cause of giving a bill of divorce: only adultery causeth that. Here the believer is a mere patient, and the divorce is made by the unbeliever, who unjustly forsaketh, and so puts away the other. <sup>16</sup>

With respect to I Corinthians 7:10-11, where both marriage partners are believers, Perkins says: "The Apostle speaketh of departure, and putting away, for other causes than adultery; as for hatred, dislike, etc., which indeed are not sufficient causes of divorce, and therefore they that separate thereupon, ought not to marry."<sup>17</sup>

Perkins' *definitive* treatment of desertion is found in his *Christian Oeconomie*. He begins with a definition: "Desertion is when one of the married folks upon a wilful and obstinate mind of their own head departeth from the other without a just and necessary cause." <sup>18</sup> He then discusses "sundry cases".

**Case 1:** "Suppose that an husband which is an unbeliever or a heretic in the foundation, of his own accord, upon detestation of true religion, quite forsakes the believing wife, and denies any more to dwell with her: what is to be done?" The answer is relatively straightforward: "All good means must be used to bring the infected [sic] party to repentance; and when none will succeed, but the case remaineth desperate, then marriage is dissolved on his part, and the believing wife is free to marry another." <sup>19</sup>

**Case 2:** "What if there fall out a desertion between two married folks, which are both believers?" The answer here is more complicated:

The faulty person, who is the cause of his desertion, is to be forced by course of civil, and ecclesiastical censure to perform his, or her duty. Upon which

---

<sup>15</sup> William Perkins, *A Godly and Learned Exposition of Christ's Sermon on the Mount: Preached in Cambridge by that Reverend and Judicious Divine M. William Perkins. Workes*, Cambridge, 1618, vol. 3, p. 69. Perkins specifically rejects contagious and incurable disease and attempted murder as grounds for divorce.

<sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 70-71.

<sup>18</sup> William Perkins, *Christian Oeconomie: Or, A Short Survey of the Right Manner of Erecting and Ordering a Family According to the Scriptures*, trans. Thomas Pickering. *Workes*, Cambridge, 1618, vol. 3, p. 687.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*

## APPENDICES

proceeding if he remain obstinate and perverse in will; the other must in patience, and earnest prayer unto God, wait the time, until his mind may be changed, and he be made to relent by the order of the Magistrate. But if one of them, by just occasion of fear, be compelled to depart from the other: and cannot return again without apparent danger of life; in this case they are not bound to return; but the delinquent party is to remain solitary, till they be instructed and made willing to do their duties: and in the meanwhile, the party innocent must be resolved that God hath called him or her to a single life.

Again, be it that the one is resolutely unwilling to dwell with the other, and thereupon flies away without any fault of the other: if the thing after a long space be sufficiently known before-hand, and all probable means have been used, to reclaim the guilty person; yea, being called he doth not personally appear before the judge, to yield a reason of the fact; after public and solemn declarations made, *the Minister upon such desertion may pronounce the marriage to be dissolved.* For he that upon malice flieth away from his mate, is to be holden in the same terms as with an unbeliever, who departs upon detestation of religion, and the service of God, I Timothy 5:8. <sup>20</sup>

Although the deserting partner in this instance is a professed believer, his or her malicious abandonment of a Christian marriage puts the deserter in the category of an unbeliever so far as the question of dissolution is concerned. Perkins does not say that a sentence of excommunication must precede the pronouncement of dissolution, though such apparently was required by an Act of the Scottish Parliament in 1573 allowing divorce on grounds of desertion. <sup>21</sup>

Perkins next takes up "malicious dealing" as a sub-category of desertion. Although it follows Case 2 (Christian marriages), it is actually a refinement of Case 1 (mixed marriages). Once again he begins with a definition:

Like unto *desertion* is malicious and spiteful dealing of married folks one with the other. *Malicious dealing* is, when dwelling together, they require of each other intolerable conditions ... Here it may be demanded, what a believer should do, who is in certain and imminent danger, either of loss of life, or breach of conscience, if they both abide together.

If [this danger is] from a stranger, then the husband either takes upon him the defence of his believing wife, or not; if he doth, then she ought to abide with him. If not, she may depart and provide for her own safety. Again, if the husband

---

<sup>20</sup> *Ibid*, pp. 687-688; emphasis added.

<sup>21</sup> According to the study panel of the Free Church of Scotland cited earlier: "The procedure required by the Act was surprisingly elaborate: the civil authorities were to make every effort to apprehend the deserter and oblige him to return to his wife and home; if they failed, they were to declare him an outlaw. They were then to notify the ecclesiastical authorities who, if also unsuccessful, were to excommunicate him. The marriage could be ended by divorce provided the deserted spouse had always shown willingness 'to adhere' ... i.e. to have the deserter back and to continue the marriage." *Marriage and Divorce*, p. 39.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

threateneth hurt, the believing wife may flie in this case; and it is all one, as if the unbelieving man should depart. For to depart from one, and drive one away by threat, are equipollent.<sup>22</sup>

Perkins is aware that this goes beyond the strict terms of I Corinthians 7:15 and anticipates an objection: "It is alleged, that if this be so, then the believing wife forsakes the unbelieving husband, which she may not do." He answers: "She forsakes him not finally, but leaves him for a time. Again, the desertion is not made by the person, which giveth place for the time, but by him in whom is the cause of the desertion."<sup>23</sup>

By introducing the category of "malicious dealing" Perkins shows his willingness to draw inferences from the biblical text in order to make application to additional circumstances not directly addressed in Scripture. In this instance, however, he appears to have fallen short of drawing out the full implications of this position. Although "malicious dealing" is like wilful desertion to the point of being "equipollent", it nevertheless justifies only temporary separation of a believer from an unbeliever, not full divorce. The remaining question is whether Perkins would countenance divorce by the innocent party should the malicious dealing continue and the temporary separation, of necessity, continue indefinitely.<sup>24</sup>

**Case 3:** "When the husband is perpetually absent from the wife, what is to be done?" Wilful absenteeism, which is often the modern meaning of "desertion" in marriage contexts, is placed under the principles already discussed by Perkins. This is another example of this esteemed Puritan theologian's ability to apply the Word of God as circumstances require.

### B. William Gouge (1575-1653)

Of the Westminster divines who published works on marriage, the most important is William Gouge who chaired the Assembly's committee on divorce. Gouge's *Domesticall Duties* first appeared in 1622; a second and third edition followed in 1626 and 1634. His position on grounds for divorce is succinctly stated in opposition to "the error of the papists": "Concerning *adultery*, we deny not, but that it giveth just cause of divorce: but withall we say (as we have good warrant from Christ's words) that it is the only cause of just divorce".<sup>25</sup>

---

<sup>22</sup> *Christian Oeconomie*, p. 688.

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>24</sup> J. I. Packer judges Perkins to have permitted divorce *and* remarriage to the innocent spouse in the case of desertion and that desertion was understood by him 'to cover all behavior that nullified the matrimonial relationship in practice', such as the imposition of intolerable conditions. He further links Perkins' view with that already developed by some of the continental reformers and suggests that 'most' Puritans followed Perkins in these opinions. *A Quest for Godliness: The Puritan Vision of the Christian Life*, Wheaton, 1990, p. 269.

<sup>25</sup> William Gouge, *Of Domesticall Duties Eight Treatises*, 3rd ed., London, 1634, vol II, ii, P. 16.

## APPENDICES

Although adultery provides just cause for divorce, it does not in itself dissolve the marriage. On the question of pardoning adultery upon repentance of the guilty party Gouge counsels, "Though it be not meet in this case to impose it as an inviolable law upon the innocent party to retain the delinquent because of repentance (for we have no direct and strict warrant for it) yet I doubt not but they may so do, if they will, and that without just exception to the contrary they ought so to do." <sup>26</sup>

The second treatise devotes a section to desertion, which begins with a rather wordy definition:

The vice contrary to matrimonial unity is *desertion*, when one of the married couple through indignation of the true religion, and utter detestation thereof, or some other cause, shall apparently renounce all matrimonial unity, and withdraw him or herself from all society with the other, and live among infidels, idolaters, heretics, or other such persecutors, as a faithful Christian with safety of life, or a good conscience, cannot abide among, and though all good means that can be thought to be used to reclaim the party so departed, yet nothing will prevail, but obstinately persisteth in renouncing all matrimonial fellowship. <sup>27</sup>

This does not mean, as Perkins taught, that the innocent party is free to remarry. Citing I Corinthians 7:15 ("A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases") Gouge comments, "By bondage he meaneth matrimonial subjection (by reason whereof neither of the married persons have power of their own body, but one of the others)." In other words, the innocent party is free from the obligation of conjugal relations and need not seek after the delinquent party; yet the marriage is not wholly dissolved. Gouge is aware of other Reformed interpretations of the Pauline release, but he does not feel it is incumbent upon him to deal with the exegesis because the problem is remote.

In many reformed Churches beyond the seas desertion is accounted so far to dissolve the very bond of marriage, as liberty is given to the party forsaken to marry another; and it is also applied to other cases than that which is above mentioned: as when an infidel, idolater, or heretic shall depart from one of the true religion for other causes than hatred of religion: or when both man and wife having lived [sic] as idolaters among idolaters, one of them being converted to the true faith, leaveth his abode among idolaters, and goeth to the professors of the true faith, but can by no means get the other party to remove: or where one of the true religion shall depart from another of the same profession, and will by no means be brought to live with the party so left, but openly manifesteth peremptory obstancy [sic]; the matter being heard and adjudged by the magistrate, the marriage bond may be broken; and liberty given to the party forsaken to marry another. *But because our church hath no such customs, nor our law determined such cases, I leave them to the custom of other churches.* <sup>28</sup>

---

<sup>26</sup> *Ibid*, p. 6.

<sup>27</sup> *Ibid*, p. 3.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

One could wish that Gouge had published a post-Assembly volume on *How My Mind Has Changed*. Perhaps the Scottish commissioners pointed out that divorce for desertion not only had the approval of Reformed churches beyond the seas but also parliamentary authorization (since 1573) in one of the three island kingdoms now in solemn league and covenant.

### C. William Ames (1576-1633)

Further it is of considerable importance to note that among other English Puritans not only could support be found for the opinion that divorce for desertion conferred the right of remarriage upon the innocent party, but apparently also for the opinion that this desertion could occur as well by the imposition of intolerable conditions as by actual departure. William Ames, certainly a representative Puritan Divine (one English edition of his celebrated *Marrow of Divinity* was printed 'by order from the honorable House of Commons'), speaks to the question in his *Conscience with the Power and Cases Thereof*.<sup>29</sup> After first affirming the indissolubility of marriage, he begins his discussion of divorce.

A.3. Nevertheless, it is not so indissoluble, but that upon such cause, as God approveth to bee just it may be dissolved. For that indissolubility was not instituted for the punishment, but the comfort of the innocent and doth admit some exception, in which God ceaseth to joyne them. Matthew 19:6, 9.

A.4. 'There is not any just cause of making, a divorce approved in Scriptures, besides adultery and the like horrid impurities, whereby it comes to passe, that two remaine no longer one flesh but divided; and so the faith of Wedlock, is directly violated; Matthew 5:31 and 19:9.

After ruling out contagious disease as a ground of divorce in the following paragraph, he takes up desertion.

A.6. 'An obstinate desertion, although in the party deserting, it containeth no just cause of making a divorce, yet it makes a faire cause for the party deserted, after the triall of all other meanes in vaine, to suffer a divorce, I Corinthians 7:15.

A.7. 'A voluntary and spontaneous absence, if it bee beyond the time appointed and continued by deceit, is of the same nature, with a professed desertion.

A.8. 'The great danger, which one party may bee in by the cruelty of the other, or by any other manifest meanes of cohabitation [sive aliunde manifesto emineat ex cohabitatione], may bee just cause of retiring for a time, so to provide for his owne safety and security, but not for an absolute desertion, unlesse first hee bee deserted. For if one party drive away the other with great fierceness and cruelty, there is cause of desertion, and hee is to bee reputed the deserter. But if hee obstinately

---

28 *Ibid*; emphasis added.

29 ET: 1639, pp. 208-209.

neglect, that necessary departure of the other avoyding the eminent danger, hee himselfe in that playeth the deserter.'<sup>30</sup>

The passage is not a model of clarity in either its original Latin or English translation, but, taking the words in their simple sense, Ames seems to be acknowledging that such a desertion as can absolve the innocent partner of any remaining obligation to the marriage can consist of the imposition of intolerable conditions as well as of physical departure *per se*. This interpretation gathers strength from the fact, to be elaborated below, that such a point of view was well established among reformed authorities on the continent where Ames' professional career was largely spent.

## V. The Conclusion of the Westminster Divines

It may be fairly assumed that the works of Perkins, Ames, and Gouge were widely known by the Westminster divines. It is by no means an easy thing to determine whose opinion would have carried a greater weight with the 'typical' delegate to the Assembly. It is therefore not at all clear how the divines as a whole may have understood desertion or, for example, whether they would have regarded unremedied physical abuse as tantamount to desertion, as justification for divorce, and, if so, for remarriage.

As it is, no record of the substance of the Assembly's debate on desertion is extant. The official minutes record the original resolutions and their disposition by the Assembly. With respect to adultery, the Assembly debated the divorce and remarriage clauses separately and adopted both. The resolutions on desertion proved to be more controversial.

If either of the married persons forsake their yokefellow, and by no means that can be used by the party forsaken, or friends, or magistrate, will be reduced[i.e., brought back or restored], after sufficient time set down by the magistrate, and made known to the party that so desireth, it is lawful for the innocent party to marry another.

---

<sup>30</sup> It is interesting that in his Marrow, dating from nearly the same period as his Conscience, Ames says only this on divorce [ET: 1968, p. 320]: 'Adultery is most truly and essentially opposed to marriage, for by its very nature it breaks the bond and covenant of marriage. It is the proper and just cause of divorce, which cannot be said of any other sins although they be more grievous. A just divorce dissolves the very bond of marriage.' Ames is not excluding desertion here. Rather, in all likelihood, with many other reformed authorities, he is distinguishing between adultery as the sole legitimate 'ground' of divorce and desertion in which the innocent party is the passive victim, the one who is divorced. A comparison of the two passages may suggest that the precise construction of desertion was considered a detail of the doctrine and ethics of divorce and, therefore, would be omitted in briefer accounts. The larger consensus, primarily negative on divorce and adamant as to the general indissolubility of the marriage vows, could be simply stated with an appeal to the dominical statement.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Wilful and obstinate desertion of one married party giveth just cause to the other, after all means used to reduce [i.e., to bring back or restore] the offending person, to sue out a divorce and for liberty to marry another.<sup>31</sup>

When the report was debated on September 10-11, the first of these paragraphs was waived and the second adopted, along with the statement, "Other causes of divorce between two parties lawfully married besides these the Scriptures do nowhere allow." But when the chapter as a whole came before the Assembly on November 9, the second paragraph was recommitted. According to a familiar pattern, the committee was "the brethren that did except against that clause".<sup>32</sup> The brethren are not named, but the final recension (24.6) is thought to reflect Scottish influence in particular.<sup>33</sup>

The Confession as finally adopted does not restrict desertion as just cause for divorce to mixed marriages, a point observed at some length by John Murray in his widely-circulated *Divorce*.<sup>34</sup> This appears to have been intentional. The Assembly after all was advising the parliament of a commonwealth in which professed Christian belief was the norm. Had the Assembly meant to affirm that desertion was a just cause for divorce only when an unbeliever deserted a believer, unambiguous language was readily available. The fact that I Corinthians 7:15 was later appended as a "proof-text" is not decisive for recovering the intent of 24.6. The Confession was written to stand on its own and the text cited in this instance may be given rather to substantiate the *principle* than the one-and-only *circumstance* of its application.

### VI. The Views of Two Prominent Continental Divines

The larger Reformed Church shared the Westminster Assembly's general conclusions touching marriage and divorce, though, no doubt, many would have stated the general consensus to suit a broader or more strict construction of it. W. Geesink<sup>35</sup> offers this summary from his Dutch Reformed perspective:

'The Reformed recognize only two grounds of divorce, namely adultery and desertio malitiosa religionis causa (I Corinthians 7:15), which then is expanded to desertion in a broader sense. Concerning the ground of adultery they were all in agreement. Regarding desertio malitiosa one finds only here and there a wavering.'

---

31 *Minutes of the Sessions of the Westminster Assembly*, p. 280.

32 *Ibid.*, p. 299.

33 *Marriage and Divorce*, pp. 39-40.

34 John Murray, *Divorce*, Philadelphia, 1953, pp. 76-77. Originally published in the *Westminster Theological Journal*, 1946-49; reprinted by Presbyterian and Reformed, 1961. Murray concluded that "the proposition respecting wilful desertion in the Confession is not sufficiently guarded and delimited so as to confine itself to the teaching of the apostle in this passage."

35 *Gereformeerde Ethiek*, vol. 2, Kampen, 1931, p. 284.



## APPENDICES

### A. Theodore Beza (1519-1605)

Geesink refers to Beza as a representative of this consensus. Beza himself, whom Milton characterized as 'one of the strictest against divorce'<sup>36</sup> devoted a separate treatise to the subject.<sup>37</sup> Concerning desertion, once having established that the innocent party may remarry (Beza also solves the difficulty of reconciling I Corinthians 7 with Matthew 19 by maintaining that only adultery is a 'ground' of divorce, Paul's remarks regarding desertion dealing instead with the case of the innocent party who is the passive victim of another's unjustified divorce), he considers 'desertion in the broader sense'.

'... we know him also to be a deserter who does not refuse cohabitation, but obstinately demands impious conditions.' [p. 94]

It is asked whether the faithful in turn may desert the unfaithful? ... in no way is that to be permitted ... (he refers again to Paul's argument in I Corinthians 7 and to the fact that the faithful spouse sanctifies the unfaithful). But, I repeat what I said shortly before, namely that he appears the deserter not only who positively refuses a mutual living together, but also who demands intolerable conditions from the faithful [spouse], such as if the unfaithful spouse absolutely compels the faithful to attend the abominable Mass, in a word any doing or enduring of something altogether against the obligation of piety. From this, therefore, another question occurs: what should the faithful [spouse] do when indeed cohabitation is not denied, but either hazard of life is incurred or something is either to be done or endured against the true religion. I respond that these two distinctions are to be observed. First, either the unfaithful [spouse], whether intentionally or unwittingly, persecutes the faithful spouse, or the persecution arises from some other direction. If the former, the faithful spouse really has a suitable excuse for shunning her domestic enemy for no other reason than that she should consider her life and conscience, and I would decide in this case nothing other than if the unfaithful spouse himself had departed for another. To depart from someone and to drive the other away by threats or force are the same thing. But if such persecution should assail [the faithful spouse] from some other direction, the faithful spouse should act at length more moderately than if she should cherish an enemy in her home and bosom. Nor is it to be doubted that if the unfaithful spouse should attend the faithful with conjugal love, should provide for her life in every way, in this case the faithful spouse rather should bear whatever you will than that is should be her duty to abandon the unfaithful spouse. But if the unfaithful spouse does not care as is right that the faithful spouse is in peril, no one does not see, I

---

<sup>36</sup> *Tetrachordon: Expositions upon the foure chief places in Scripture, which treat of Mariage, or nuliities in Mariage*, (1645) *Complete Prose Works*, vol. 2, p. 227.

<sup>37</sup> *De Repudiis et Divortiiis, Tractationes Theologiae*, vol. 2, Geneve, 1582. The section of the essay devoted to divorce is pp. 83-109.

think, not only that he is a deserter, but also that he may be shunned with a good conscience as a traitor.' [pp. 96-97] <sup>38</sup>

**B. Samuel Maresius (1599-1673)**

Samuel Maresius,<sup>39</sup> certainly a representative reformed divine from the general period of the Westminster Assembly, provides a summation which includes the broader construction of desertion and that without any indication that this was particularly controversial.

'The legitimacy of divorce is established, such that the offended party acquires the right to make new [marriage] vows, for only two causes in the new covenant, even if civil laws and some erudite today think it right to allow more, namely Adultery, as Christ says ... Matthew 5:32; 19:9 and Malitiosa Desertio ... (the brother or sister is not bound in such a case, viz. that he should remain unmarried) I Corinthians 7:15. But such desertion is taken to be not only a determined and permanent withdrawal from the marital home and companionship, but an obstinate denial of the obligations of marriage, by intolerable cruelty putting life at hazard for the present, or from either treacherous or naked force, by the acceptance of a mistress, and whatever, by analogy, is equivalent to or greater than this desertion. If, however, a spouse ... should only go over to the enemies (i.e. religious?) or desert the true religion, he is not by this to be considered guilty of this malicious desertion which severs the bond of marriage, if only the other spouse is able to cohabit with him with a clear conscience.'

**VII. Conclusion**

It is by no means an easy task to determine the extent to which these continental opinions would have been regarded as similar to or distinct from that of English Puritanism in general. Beza was widely read and appreciated in the period before the Westminster Assembly. Plainly, Beza and Maresius go beyond Gouge and perhaps somewhat beyond Perkins (cf. footnote 24). The extent to which, if any, their

---

38 Bullinger speaks similarly in the final chapter of his *The Christian State of Matrimonye*, trans. Miles Coverdale, 1541. After speaking to the Lord's permission of divorce, of the duty of married persons to 'diligently eschew all occasions of divorce' and to 'know that they must prove a painful medicine if they will have divorce to be their comfort,' of the many cases which are no justification for divorce, of the importance of not leaving the issue to the private judgment of the individuals involved, of the importance of not acting quickly but of attempting 'all manner of reconciliation' and deferring the divorce' while there is hope of amendment and unity, and of the right of lawfully divorced people to remarry, he directs his attention to what constitutes a 'right occasion of divorce.' Regarding Christ's naming adultery he writes: 'With the which no doubt he hath not excepted like and greater occasions but understood and comprehended them therein. For the holy Apostle also did leave infidelity as an occasion of divorce.' Referring to the Roman emperors Constantine and Justinian, who allowed divorce for such things as murder and poisoning, he continues: 'Every reasonable man then confides that God did ordain wedlock for the honesty and wealth of man and not for his main and destruction.'

39 *Systema Breve Universae Theologiae*, 1659, pp. 631-632.

## APPENDICES

viewpoint differed from that of Ames is more difficult to determine.<sup>40</sup> There is certainly reason to believe that the divines at Westminster would not have been unappreciative of the reputation which the Genevan Consistory had gained in defense of betrothed and married women.<sup>41</sup>

In summary, it is difficult to state with precision the extent of the latitude which may have existed within the Puritan consensus on divorce and remarriage, the importance which may or may not have been attached to differences of interpretation such as in the application of the Pauline privilege to other cases, or the extent to which the Puritan position, in general, was different from that of continental divines such as Beza and Maresuis. It is to be admitted that none of the Puritan works surveyed states the case for 'desertion in the broader sense' as bringing with it the right of divorce and remarriage in as summary a way as did the continental divines. Nevertheless, available evidence warrants caution in proposing a single interpretation or application of the Confession's phrase "such wilful desertion as can no way be remedied."

In any case, it is important to note both the broad agreement and the narrow scope both of identifiable disagreement and of remaining questions. The entire Reformed church held that marriage vows were generally indissoluble, that only a few vicious crimes against the marital covenant constituted grounds for divorce, that many alleged grounds lacked Biblical justification, that incompatibility was by no means a ground of divorce, that every effort was to be made to preserve a marriage and that divorce was always an unwelcome extremity, that adultery conferred upon the innocent party the right of divorce and remarriage, and, that, in certain extreme cases, the innocent victims of marital abandonment are released from their obligations to the marriage. Possible,

---

40 Geesink judges Ames' discussion to be in practical agreement with the Reformed consensus. *Gereformeerde Ethiek*, vol. 2, p. 285.

41 G. Lewis, 'Calvinism in Geneva in the time of Calvin and of Beza (1541 - 1605),' ed. M. Prestwich, *International Calvinism 1541 - 1715*, Oxford, 1986, p. 49. "The Consistory dealt with . . . notorious drunkards, adulterers, and bullies, with guardians who had misappropriated the inheritance of their wards, with forced betrothals between grown men and girls under age, and with ill-treated and deserted wives. Not for nothing was it known (with approval or derision?) as "le paradis des femmes.""; The interesting case of Galeazzo Caraccioli provides some indication of the flexible way in which cases would be handled in Calvin's Geneva. Caraccioli, marquis of Vico, nephew of the head of the Roman inquisition and later Pope Paul IV, married to Victoria Caraffa, the daughter of a duke, and himself appointed chamberlain by Charles V, became interested in protestantism through the preaching of Peter Martyr Vermigli and his witnessing of the persecution of Italians under the inquisition. Eventually, after an inward struggle, he converted. In peril of the inquisition he abandoned his estates and family and came to Geneva in June, 1551. There he won the respect of Calvin, who later dedicated his commentary on I Corinthians to him, and became a citizen. His wife remained behind in Italy and at a later meeting at Vico in 1558 he failed to persuade her to follow him, with their nine children, though there was deep affection on both sides. Calvin then attempted to arrange for their reunion in a place where both he and his wife could exercise their religion, but she declined. After this the Council pronounced the marriage dissolved and in 1560 Caraccioli remarried. J. T. McNeil, *The History and Character of Calvinism*, Oxford, 1954, p. 184.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

though still strictly circumscribed, constructions of marital abandonment and whether in such cases a right of remarriage is conferred on the innocent spouse seem genuinely details of interpretation, differences concerning which could be tolerated within the consensus. So far as the narrow question of confessional interpretation and subscription is concerned, the evidence suggests to us that they should remain so.

CHAPTER 2

SCRIPTURAL PERSPECTIVE ON MARRIAGE, DIVORCE, AND REMARRIAGE

I. Issues Concerning Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage

A. What our denominational heritage has said about marriage

There has been a general consensus among Reformed believers regarding the nature and purpose of marriage. It is reflected in this statement of the RPCES General Synod Minutes of May 18, 1973:

"Marriage is the unique one-flesh relationship of a man and woman joined together by God in a union that He wills to be both permanent and exclusive, binding the couple to each other in a life-long companionship of common life and conjugal love. (Gen. 2:23-24, Matt. 19:4-8, Rom. 7:2-3)."<sup>1</sup>

Scripture uses covenantal language to describe marriage: "The Lord has been witness between you and the wife of your youth to whom you have been faithless, although she is your companion and your wife by covenant" (Mal. 2:14; cf. Prov. 2:17). When Scripture says that a man shall "cleave" to his wife (Gen. 2:24), it is using a covenantal term used elsewhere to express the way the Israelites were to cleave with affection and loyalty to the Lord (Deut. 10:20; 11:22; 13:4; 30:20; Josh. 22:5; 23:8). Marriage is often used as an analogy in the Old Testament of God's covenant relation with Israel and in the New Testament of Christ's relationship with the Church. This covenantal relation between man and woman was intended by God to be loving, loyal and permanent.

Consequently, according to those same General Synod minutes: "It is the duty of husband and wife to maintain the unity and integrity of their marriage of cohabitation and coition. (Cf. Larger Catechism, Q.138). Should separation occur, reconciliation is to be sought. (1Cor. 7:10-11)."<sup>2</sup>

B. What our denominational heritage has said about divorce and remarriage

In light of our view of marriage, it seems incongruous to talk about divorce and remarriage. Nevertheless, most of us would likely agree with most, if not all, of this statement of the General Synod Minutes:

---

1 "Report of Study Committee on Divorce and Remarriage," Documents of Synod: Study Papers and Actions of the Reformed Presbyterian Church, Evangelical Synod - 1965-1982, Paul R. Gilchrist, ed., New Castle, 1982, p.200.

2 *Ibid.*

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

"Divorce is therefore always an abnormality arising out of human sinfulness. It was tolerated in the civil legislation of the Old Testament, but the Mosaic provision was given only 'for the hardness of your hearts.' (Deut. 24:1-4, Matt. 19:3-8). The civil legislation took into account in this matter the insubordination to the will of God characteristic of unbelieving Israel.

"In the New Testament Jesus calls his people to faithfulness to the original will of God for marriage as expressed in the creation ordinance. (Matt. 5:31, 32, 19:3-8). The apostle Paul presses this teaching of our Lord upon the early Christian community, (I Cor. 7:10-11). The original ideal of marriage is to be maintained by the people of God in this age of the fullness of God's saving blessing.

"This is not to say that divorce is never sanctioned in the New Testament. But it is only sanctioned in circumstances of grave infidelity -- adultery and willful, irremediable desertion (Matt. 5:32, 19:9; I Cor. 7:15. Cf. Confession of Faith, XXIV, v-vi). These are definitive actions that strike the exclusiveness of the marriage bond, malicious desertion its permanence. Both radically affect the one-flesh union and so provide 'cause sufficient of dissolving the bond of marriage.

"The 'innocent party' [i.e., offended party] in such circumstances is free to remarry...Scripture does not forbid the remarriage of the 'guilty party' in such cases. Where there is genuine conversion, evidenced by sincere and heart-felt repentance and faith in Christ, the church, after providing pastoral counseling and instruction in the biblical teaching concerning marriage, may approve remarriage in the Lord."<sup>3</sup>

### **C. What views may be found today within the evangelical-reformed community regarding divorce and remarriage**

The above paragraphs taken from the RPCES General Synod Minutes of 1973 represent the consensus of our tradition on the questions of divorce and remarriage. However, in our day a variety of views have presented themselves and may be grouped in the following way.

#### **1. No divorce, no remarriage**

Some believers argue that there are no legitimate divorces at all and only death dissolves the marriage bond. The exception clause in Matthew is characteristically interpreted in one of two ways.

**View #1:** It refers to premarital unchastity during betrothal. If the betrothed proved unfaithful during that period or was discovered on the first night of

---

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 200-201.

## APPENDICES

marriage not to be a virgin, then the contract could be broken. (Cf. J. Dwight Pentecost, J.M. Boice).<sup>4</sup>

**View #2:** It refers to unlawful incestuous marriages, i.e., marriages within the prohibited degrees as proscribed in Leviticus 18:6-18. (Cf. Laney, C.C. Ryrie).<sup>5</sup>

Gordon Wenham holds a slight variation of this view. Jesus' exception clause permitted divorce in the sense of separation, but marriage is a permanent relationship whether we get a divorce or not. In God's eyes a divorced person is still married to the former spouse. Thus remarriage following divorce for any reason constitutes adultery. The only option for a divorced person is to be reconciled or to remain single.<sup>6</sup> Common to all these views is the assumption that remarriage after divorce is not allowed.

### 2. Strictly limited grounds for divorce, and for remarriage

Closer to the general consensus among Reformed believers is the view that the Bible neither condones nor commands divorce, but rather permits and regulates divorce due to sin. However, a person can divorce only for adultery and separation of an unbelieving spouse. In the words of the Westminster Confession of Faith: "...nothing but adultery, or such wilful desertion as can no way be remedied by the church or civil magistrate, is cause sufficient of dissolving the bond of marriage" (24:6).<sup>7</sup>

John Stott and John Murray are among those who insist that such permission is given only in negative and reluctant terms. According to Stott:

"Only if a person divorces his partner on the ground of marital unfaithfulness is his remarriage not adulterous. Only if the unbeliever insists on leaving is the believer not bound."<sup>8</sup>

Common to all those who hold this view is the idea that these same limited grounds would be legitimate for remarriage too.

---

4 J. Dwight Pentecost, *The Words and Works of Jesus Christ*, Grand Rapids, 1981, pp. 354-358. J. M. Boice, "The Biblical View of Divorce," *Eternity*, Dec. 1970, pp.19-21.

5 J. Carl Laney, *The Divorce Myth: A Biblical Examination of Divorce and Remarriage*, Minneapolis, 1981, pp. 71-78. C. C. Ryrie, *The Place of Women in the Church*, New York, 1958, pp. 43-48. See also William A. Heth and Gordon J. Wenham, *Jesus and Divorce: The Problem with the Evangelical Consensus*, Nashville, 1984, pp. 154-160.

6 Gordon Wenham, *The Biblical View of Marriage and Divorce*, No. 3, *New Testament Teaching*, "Third Way", London, Nov. 17, 1977, pp. 7-9.

7 *The Confession of Faith*, Brevard, North Carolina, 1983, p. 69. (Chapter 24.6).

8 John Stott, *Involvement, Vol. 2, Social and Sexual Relationships in the Modern World*, Old Tappan, NJ, 1985, p. 177. Cf. John Murray, *Divorce*, Philadelphia, 1961, pp. 20-21.

### 3. Broader grounds for divorce, and for remarriage

Still other believers hold the view that the major verses under question, Matthew 19 and I Corinthians 7, should be interpreted with more latitude.

- a. David Atkinson holds that there are sins other than fornication which may by their gross and persistent nature break the marriage covenant just as much as fornication, and are therefore grounds for divorce.<sup>9</sup>
- b. Greg Bahnsen argues that porneia (fornication) in Matthew 19 involves more than sexual immorality; it should be interpreted as including any violations of the essential commitments of the marriage covenant, including spousal abuse or the refusal to provide protection and sustenance necessary for daily living.<sup>10</sup>
- c. David Clowney believes that the New Testament writers were not intending to give us an exhaustive list of exceptions for divorce; we should view the texts on divorce as examples of breaking the marriage covenant and seek to apply the examples to particular situations such as persistent physical abuse, attempts on the life of a spouse, and so forth.<sup>11</sup>

These views differ from the liberal Protestant view of "no fault" divorce, or divorce on merely humanistic grounds such as "incompatibility." As Clowney writes: "To seek to multiply such exceptions would be perverse, and precisely contrary to the intention of the Lord and his apostles."<sup>12</sup> Common to these views is the idea that appropriate grounds for divorce would allow for remarriage.

#### D. Are we to understand that Scripture indeed allows for divorce?

##### 1. Divorce was permitted in Scripture

It must be conceded, writes John Murray, that divorce was practiced. Such practice is found in many passages of Scripture (Lev. 21:7, 14; 22:13; Nu. 30:9(10); Deut. 22:19, 29; 24:1-4; cf. Isa. 50:1; Jer. 3:1; Ez 44:22), and under certain circumstances proves to be "permanently valid and inviolable...It is also conceded that divorce was permitted or tolerated" and 'the penalty of civil or ecclesiastical ostracism was not attached to it.' But it is very necessary to distinguish, continues Murray, "between this sufferance or toleration, on the one hand, and divine approval or sanction,

---

9 David Atkinson, *To Have and To Hold*, Grand Rapids, 1979, Chapter 5, pp. 134 ff.

10 Greg Bahnsen, "Theses of Divorce and Spousal Abuse," Unpublished paper.

11 David Clowney, "An argument for the conclusion that abuse could provide biblically legitimate grounds for divorce," Unpublished paper.

12 *Ibid.*



on the other...Permission, sufferance, toleration was granted. But underlying this very notion is the idea of wrong."<sup>13</sup>

To say that God intended for marriage never to be broken does not mean that the marriage union is unbreakable. In some instances, God breaks it by death. For Paul specifically says that the surviving spouse is free to remarry again (I Cor. 7:39, cf. Rom. 7:2f.). Moreover, younger widows are even encouraged to do so (I Tim. 5:14; cf. I Cor. 7:8-9).

In other instances, divorce was mandated by law. Witness the occasion where divorce was legislated upon failure to provide food or clothing due to sexual relations (Ex. 21:10-11). Actual divorces were required when the post exilic people of God had married foreign women and they "put them away" (Ezra 9-10; Neh. 9:2; cf. 13:23ff.).

## 2. Divorce dissolved a marriage in Scripture

That divorce was more than a separation in Scripture is noted by Charles Hodge:

"Divorce is not a mere separation...Divorce annuls the marriage contract so that the parties are no longer man and wife. They stand henceforth to each other in the same relation as they were before marriage."<sup>14</sup>

A study of the terms for divorce in Scripture support the view that divorce is not merely a separation. The Old Testament term for divorce which occurs in the phrase "bill of divorce" (Deut. 24; Isa. 50:1; Jer. 3:8) means "to cut off, to hew off" (*kerithuth*). Other Old Testament words are used which mean to "expel, put away" (*garash*) or to "dismiss, send away, let go, put away" (*shalach*). The New Testament has similar words in the Greek which mean the same thing: "to set free, release, dismiss, send away" (*apoluo*), "to separate, divide" (*chorizo*), and "to let go, send away" (*aphiemi*). The notion of severance or of being cut off is implied within the contextual use of these terms, and it would be difficult to argue that the terms do not connote a total break in marital obligations.

A strong argument may be made as well from customs in Jesus' day. Christ allowed for a bill of divorce to be given in the case of *porneia*. The essential text of such a bill of divorce recorded in the Mishnah is, "Lo, thou art free to marry any man." The Mishnah goes on to record the wording of Rabbi Judah: "Let this be from me thy writ of divorce and letter of dismissal and deed of liberation, that thou mayest marry whatsoever man thou wilt."<sup>15</sup> Whether or not this was the divorce bill text envisioned by Deuteronomy 24:1 is not germane. Christ was commenting on current custom and application of that law. In other words, in Jesus' day, divorce carried with it the right to remarriage, and that would have been understood in their discussions.

---

<sup>13</sup> Murray, *Divorce*, pp. 8-9.

<sup>14</sup> Charles Hodge, *Systematic Theology*, Vol. III, London, 1961, p. 391.

<sup>15</sup> *Gitin* 9:3.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

It is clearly God's will that marriage be permanent. But it is obviously possible that marriage can be broken. Loraine Boettner clarifies this for us by providing a delightful illustration apparently written by Dr. Geerhardus Vos:

"We may have on our parlor table a beautiful and costly vase. It ought to be handled carefully. It ought not to be broken. It was not made to be smashed; it was made to exist as a thing of beauty and grace. But it is not impossible to break it. And if a member of the family breaks it through carelessness, or in a fit of temper smashes it deliberately, there is nothing to do but sweep up the broken fragments and dispose of them. We will not say, 'This vase was not intended to be broken; therefore it is impossible to break it; the vase is unbreakable; therefore in spite of the fact that it lies in shattered fragments on the floor, we will not throw it away; we will keep it forever.' No one would say that about a broken vase; yet that is substantially the argument of those who say that the marriage bond is 'indissoluble' and unbreakable."<sup>16</sup>

### **E. Does the evidence that divorce ends marriage mean that God looks favorably at divorce?**

Scripture speaks unmistakably about God's repugnance at divorce. One passage is quite clear about this.

#### **Malachi 2:13-16**

13) "And this is another thing you do: you cover the altar of the LORD with tears, with weeping and with groaning, because He no longer regards the offering or accepts it with favor from your hand. 14) Yet you say, 'For what reason?' Because the LORD has been a witness between you and the wife of your youth, against whom you have dealt treacherously, though she is your companion and your wife by covenant.

15) But not one has done so who has a remnant of the Spirit. And what did that one do while he was seeking a godly offspring? Take heed then, to your spirit, and let no one deal treacherously against the wife of your youth.

16) 'For I hate divorce,' says the LORD, the God of Israel, 'and him who covers his garment with wrong,' says the LORD of hosts. 'So take heed to your spirit, that you do not deal treacherously.'"

In this profound passage, Malachi is pointing out one of the reasons why God has withheld His blessing from Israel. Skillfully using a question-and-answer method, Malachi points out that the people were weeping and wailing at God's altar because He was no longer responding to them. Yet the people ask, "Why doesn't God respond?" Malachi is not afraid to point his finger at the cause: "Because the LORD has been a witness between you and the wife of your youth, against whom you have dealt treacherously..." (In verses 10-12, Malachi had just accused them of marrying foreign

---

<sup>16</sup> Loraine Boettner, *Divorce*, Nutley, NJ, 1972, p. 13.

## APPENDICES

women. Apparently they were doing so by divorcing their wives, a practice not unknown to Christians today.)

Notice how God calls their divorces "dealing treacherously," a verb which is repeated three times in these four verses. Twice he refers to the divorced woman as "the wife of thy youth," appealing no doubt to the heart of the husbands. Malachi goes on to refer to the first wife as "your companion and your wife by covenant." The term companion does not simply refer to a 'partner' or 'associate,' terms which denote a rather loose relationship. Rather, it is an intense term meaning 'knit together' and connotes an unusually close joining or bonding. It fits in beautifully with the picture of Genesis 2:24, and the term "Covenant of Companionship" describes perfectly the marriage covenant.

Malachi then reminds them that what they have done in putting away their wives is contrary to what would be done by the true Israelite who has the remnant of the Spirit. So, "take heed then, to your spirit, and let no one deal treacherously against the wife of your youth."

Then come those powerful words, "For I hate divorce," which is the translation of the NASV. There is no doubt that God hates divorce, for the entire context of this passage conveys the truth that the LORD views it as an act of treachery. But there is a major problem of translation with this verse, a problem the NASV is aware of, for a marginal note reads: "Lit., He hates." A more straightforward translation of the Hebrew, confirmed by the LXX, reads:

"If [anyone] hating [his wife] divorces [her],  
Says the LORD God of Israel,  
Then violence covers his garment,  
Says the LORD of hosts."

Dr. David C. Jones makes a most compelling case for this translation, based on a careful analysis of both the Hebrew and the Greek LXX. Does this mean that God does not hate divorce? Not at all, for as Dr. Jones points out in his concluding paragraph:

"Finally, so far from weakening the Lord's protest against marital infidelity, the prophetic word against divorce is rendered more forceful by being more definite. Divorce for 'hatred' is a radical breach of fidelity; it is 'violence' against the companion to whom one has been joined in marriage. It therefore stands condemned by the God of justice, mercy, and truth."<sup>17</sup>

## II. Consideration of Major Scripture Passages

As we begin our exposition of Scripture, we should remember that every passage becomes a battle ground for every view. Our purpose will be in each passage first to provide a clear explanation of what the passage teaches, and second to show how different views interpret that passage.

---

<sup>17</sup> David C. Jones, "Malachi on Divorce," *Presbyterian: Covenant Seminary Review*, 15 (1989), pp.1-6.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### A. Deuteronomy 24:1-4

1) "When a man takes a wife and marries her, and it happens that she finds no favor in his eyes because he has found some indecency in her, and he writes her a certificate of divorce and puts it in her hand and sends her out from his house, 2) and she leaves his house and goes and becomes another man's wife, 3) and if the latter husband turns against her and writes her a certificate of divorce and puts it in her hand and sends her out of his house, or if the latter husband dies who took her to be his wife, 4) then her former husband who sent her away is not allowed to take her again to be his wife, since she has been defiled; for that is an abomination before the Lord, and you shall not bring sin on the land which the Lord your God gives you as an inheritance."

#### 1. Is Moses giving a command to divorce?

Many assume the KJV translation of verse 1, "When a man hath taken a wife, and married her, and it come to pass that she finds no favour in his eyes, because he hath found some uncleanness in her: **then** let him write her a bill of divorcement..." This translation makes it sound like Moses is commanding divorce.

However, that is not the best translation. A careful analysis of the intended structure of this lengthy sentence in Hebrew is crucial for a proper understanding. The first three verses are all part of a compound protasis (or conditional part of the sentence), while the fourthly verse contains the apodosis (or consequence). In other words, we should understand the passage in this way: "If a man divorces his wife, and if he gives her a certificate, and if she leaves and remarries, and if her second husband divorces her or dies, **then** her first husband may not marry her again." Thus we learn:

**Lesson #1:** Moses is not instituting divorce in this passage. He deals only indirectly with divorce and remarriage, and his main purpose is to prohibit the reunion of partners after divorce and remarriage has taken place.

**Lesson #2:** Deuteronomy is in some sense trying to regulate divorce in what appears to be a situation which has gotten out of hand. Divorce appears as an established custom which is neither commanded nor condoned in this passage.

This is in agreement with the rest of Mosaic Law. Mosaic Law takes the custom of divorce for granted (Lev. 21:7, 14: 22:13; Nu. 30:9; Dt. 22:19, 29); it does not institute divorce, but regulates it to limit and preclude its abuse. In two cases in Scripture, the right of divorce for the offended spouse is withheld, viz. where a man slanders his newly-married wife as unchaste, or seduces her before marriage (Dt. 22:19, 29).

#### 2. What does the phrase "some indecency" mean?

Does "some indecency" refer merely to a personal dislike of the husband, or to a biblically shameful act justifying the permission for a divorce? Can a word study give us an exact nuance on which we can all agree?

## APPENDICES

The Hebrew words are *erwath dabar*. They are translated in the KJV as "some uncleanness," and in the NIV as "something indecent." *Erwath* is commonly translated "nakedness," and is used in Old Testament contexts of shameful exposure, indecency, or improper behavior having to do with sex.<sup>18</sup> *Dabar* is simply translated as "something" or "thing" in this context. Hence, the literal translation would be "nakedness of the thing."

The term *erwath* used alone clearly had a prominent sexual nuance. That illicit sexual sin is intimated in Deut. 24 seems probable due to two Old Testament passages which use Deut. 24:1-4 as a basis. The first passage is Jeremiah 3:1ff:

"God says, If a husband divorces his wife, and she goes from him, and belongs to another man, will he still return to her? Will not that land be completely polluted? But you are a harlot with many lovers; yet you turn to Me, declares the Lord...[Jeremiah 3:8-9 expands]...And I saw that for all the adulteries of faithless Israel, I had sent her away and given her a writ of divorce, yet her treacherous sister Judah did not fear; but she went and was a harlot also. And it came about because of the lightness of her harlotry, that she polluted the land and committed adultery with stones and trees."

The second passage is Isaiah 50:1, where we read:

"Thus says the Lord, Where is the certificate of divorce, by which I have sent your mother away? Or to whom of My creditors did I sell you? Behold, you were sold for your iniquities, and for your transgressions your mother was sent away." Comparing these passages with Deut. 24, the "indecency" would appear to be a heinous sin, one which would involve sexual immorality.

However, the uses of *erwath* in Scripture are not limited to sexual immorality. It can also refer to perversity (1 Sam. 20:30), to a dishonor for authority (Ezra 4:14), and to public shame (Isa. 20:4). The exact phrase *erwath dabar* occurs elsewhere only in Deut. 23:14 where it refers to human excrement left in Israel's camp, an uncleanness that would repulse God.

This broader use of *erwath* introduces us to a major problem in the divorce and remarriage controversy. It is the same problem we face when we attempt to define the Greek term *porneia* in Jesus' exception clause (Matt. 19:9). It is very difficult to come to a consensus on the precise distinction or subtlety of "some indecency."

It was difficult in Jesus' day. The school of Shammai regarded it as adultery, whereas the school of Hillel saw it as referring to anything that displeased the husband. Likewise, today, some wish to attribute a narrower, and others a more broad, meaning to *erwath dabar*. This divergence of views may be seen by comparing prominent current interpretations of Deuteronomy 24:1-4.

---

18 F. Brown, S. R. Driver, and C. A. Briggs, *Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament*, Oxford, 1962, p. 789.

### 3. Modern interpreters differ

William A. Heth and Gordon J. Wenham in their book, *Jesus and Divorce*, contend that the first three verses are really secondary to the main thrust of the passage which is verse four. Knowing the precise nuances of *erwath dabar* is not that important. The fact that the first husband legally divorced his wife is acknowledged and the second marriage is also considered legal. The crux of the law is that the wife's remarriage to her first husband is forbidden! Why? Because the "one-flesh" bond of their first marriage was never really dissolved by their legal divorce and remarriage. Consequently, were the wife to remarry her first husband, she would have committed a form of incest, which in Lev. 18 we are told is an abomination to the Lord and defiles the land. Therefore, conclude Heth and Wenham, Deut. 24 does not allow a "dissolution divorce" in which remarriage can take place.<sup>19</sup>

Jay Adams in his book, *Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage in the Bible*, holds that Deut. 24:1-3 (the protasis) tells of a wife who finds "no favor" in her husband's eyes because of "some indecency" he finds in her. So the husband hands her a bill of divorce, going through a genuine divorce proceeding which in effect annulled her marriage obligations to him and set her free to marry another man, which she does. Yet the text goes on to say that she cannot remarry her first husband because she has been "defiled" and it is an abomination to the Lord and would bring sin on the land. Clearly, the judgmental language, used elsewhere in such contexts as Lev. 18, supposes gross sexual sins among the people. She was "defiled" apparently due to her entrance into the second marriage, not wrong in itself, but wrong when following a bad divorce. Why was it a bad divorce? Because "some indecency" was interpreted broadly by the husband and the divorce was not biblically justified.<sup>20</sup>

John Murray in his book, *Divorce*, begins his discussion of the meaning of "some indecency" by saying: "It has to be admitted that it is exceedingly difficult if not precarious to be certain as to what the 'unseemly thing' really was." He concludes that there was no evidence to show that in Deut. 24 it refers to adultery or an act of sexual uncleanness. On the other hand, he is not willing to agree with Hillel's loose interpretation. Murray concludes that it refers to something very shameful: "While falling short of illicit sexual intercourse it may well be that the indecency consisted in some kind of shameful conduct connected with sex life. Or it may have been some other kind of impropriety worthy of censure on the part of the husband."<sup>21</sup>

This variety of interpretation reminds us that precious little can be gained from a study of Deut. 24:1-4. It was precisely because of its vagueness that it was being debated in Jesus' day. In any case, what we have here is the regulation of divorce, not its institution or encouragement. Moreover, the broad weight of the evidence seems to

---

19 Heth and Wenham, *Jesus and Divorce*, pp. 106-111.

20 Jay E. Adams, *Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage in the Bible*, Grand Rapids, 1980, pp. 60-69.

21 John Murray, *Divorce*, pp. 9-16.

favor a generally sexual connotation for *erwath dabar*, although it is very difficult to conclude with any certainty. We can't imagine that anyone's view is going to rest on the interpretation of this particular passage. The real issue centers on an interpretation of the New Testament passages.

#### 4. Proceeding to the New Testament passages

All three synoptics provide us with Jesus' own teaching on marriage, divorce and remarriage. The passages vary in precise detail, but they do not present contradictory views of what Jesus taught. They complement each other, and provide a broader picture of what Jesus taught than if we had only one passage.

We will first examine Matthew 5:31-32, and then Luke 16:18. Matthew 19:3-12 and Mark 10:2-11 will be considered jointly. Once we have looked at all the passages in the Gospels, we will return to consider the exception clauses in Matthew and the meaning of *porneia* (sexual immorality). Then we will proceed on to consider 1 Corinthians 7.

#### B. Matthew 5:31-32

31) "And it was said, 'whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of dismissal;' 32) but I say to you that everyone who divorces his wife except for the cause of unchastity, makes her commit adultery; and whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery."

#### 1. The rabbinic perversion of Deuteronomy 24

Jesus is not quoting Deuteronomy 24 verbatim, but is stating a misleading abbreviation or distortion of that passage in the oral teaching of the Pharisees. This oral teaching gives the impression that divorce was readily permissible; all one had to do was to go through the formality of handing over a certificate of divorce. (Jewish sources confirm that divorce was relatively easy to obtain.)

It seems likely that Jesus is quoting the teaching of the school of Hillel, that school which taught a more lax view of divorce. For them, marriage was viewed as a contract that could be broken. By focusing on the steps taken in obtaining a divorce, they had sidestepped the intent of the law, that divorce for unwarranted reasons is wrong.

#### 2. Jesus' correction of the rabbinic perversion

Jesus responds to the distorted view of the rabbis by first saying that "*everyone who divorces his wife except for the cause of unchastity makes her commit adultery...*" Then he adds, "*and whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery.*" Concerning his response, we make these observations.

First, there is the presence of an exception clause, "*except for the cause of unchastity.*" Because this clause is at the center of debate, we have reserved for a later section the discussion of what it means and how it is to be applied. However, at

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

present we may point out the obvious, that if a man divorces his wife "for the cause of unchastity," he is not thereby "making her commit adultery." For she has already done so and he is free from that charge.

**Second**, because the verb "to commit adultery" is an aorist passive infinitive, some scholars prefer to interpret the clause "stigmatizes her as an adulteress" (even though it is not so).<sup>22</sup> But that view is to be rejected. The NIV "causes her to become an adulteress," or the NASV "makes her commit adultery" (which we are using) provides a more natural translation. The aorist passive form serves simply to accent the fact that she is the victim.

**Third**, the question naturally arises, "How is the divorced wife caused to commit adultery?" By divorcing his wife, the man is virtually forcing her to be remarried. The plight of the divorced wife was often desperate in Jesus' day, and divorce would inevitably lead to remarriage if there was any possibility. But how would that be called adultery? The clear implication is that the wife would be having sexual relations with a person other than the one with whom she ought to be having sex. It would constitute marital unfaithfulness. While the divorce from a human point of view did break the former marital obligations, from God's point of view it never should have happened. In other words, when there is no biblical warrant to be in a divorced state, those who bring about that divorce are causing their partners to commit adultery.

**Fourth**, the emphasis of Jesus' statement, therefore, is on the guilt of the husband who divorces his wife for an unbiblical reason. For he is being held responsible for creating a situation in which she cannot remarry without committing adultery. Some suppose that the real problem was not the divorce itself, but that to which the divorce led, the remarriage of the wife. But this text underlines the husband's responsibility for the act. He victimizes her, and causes her to be an adulteress. The stigma she bears and the position into which she is placed have been imposed on her by the sin of the husband who initiates and executes the divorce. (Today, wives initiate divorces regularly, and the same principle applies to them as well.)

**Fifth**, Jesus goes on to say that "*whoever marries a divorced woman commits adultery.*" Jesus' words indicate what happens when humans break up a marriage without the warrant of the exception clause. His words are related to that fact alone and do not deal with the status of the divorced woman when her previous husband remarries (see elsewhere in our study).

**Sixth**, we simply point out that the emphasis in this text should not be on the fact that there is an exception, but rather that there is only one exception. There is only one legitimate reason why the husband may be considered as not sinning by putting away his wife. As John Murray points out, "Preoccupation with the one exception should never be permitted to obscure the force of the negation of all others."<sup>23</sup> Nor are we led

---

<sup>22</sup> For example, R. C. H. Lenski, *Interpretation of St. Matthew's Gospel*, Columbus, 1932, pp. 226 ff. For an extensive analysis of the use of the verb *moicheo* (to commit adultery) in this passage, see John Murray, *Divorce*, p. 21, n. 2.



to believe that a husband is "obliged" to divorce his wife in the case of sexual immorality. All that the text says is that if he does divorce her for that reason, he is not implicated in the sin of causing her to commit adultery.

### 3. Interpretations influenced by the context of Matthew 5, the Sermon on the Mount

Some have argued that, because of the immediate context of the Sermon on the Mount, our text is a "hard saying" of Jesus, and as such is to be understood as "haggadic argumentation" - a statement intended to shock Jews out of their complacency over divorce, and not as halakic, prescriptive instruction. For example, just prior to this passage in Matt. 5:29, Jesus talks about plucking out the right eye that causes one to sin. That was not meant to be taken as a literal legal prescription, they say, but as a deliberately shocking statement intended to challenge existing attitudes. Then they insist that the same is true of the divorce statement.<sup>24</sup>

Our response is that although Jesus was concerned about the spirit of the law in Matthew 5, he clearly seems to be setting his own authoritative commentary and guidelines over against the legal prescription of the oral tradition. He obviously desires not just to affect their attitudes, but also to govern their external behavior. He was discouraging divorce in the strongest terms as a specific form of behavior.

Others hold that, since Jesus' statement on divorce occurs in the Sermon on the Mount, we must interpret it as being more stringent than the views of the scribes and Pharisees. For Jesus had said, "... unless your righteousness surpasses that of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall not enter the kingdom of heaven" (Matt 5:20). They argue that if Jesus were allowing for remarriage after divorce for adultery, then Jesus "would be siding with the conservative school of Shammai which allowed divorce only in the case of adultery," and, if so, then "Jesus' teaching did not rise above that of Shammai and the Pharisees, contrary to His usual pattern...[as] Christ customarily rebuked the superficiality of the Pharisees with His own more stringent interpretation of the Law."<sup>25</sup> According to this point of view, therefore, Jesus' teaching was more stringent by not allowing for remarriage.

In response, we would point out that Jesus' statement that their righteousness must exceed that of the scribes and Pharisees is not necessarily taken to mean that their standards must in every instance be more stringent. As David Jones notes:

"Jesus' interpretation of the Law is not invariably more stringent than that of the Pharisees. Indeed, sometimes the opposite is the case. Responding to the Pharisees' stringent interpretation of the fourth commandment, Jesus twice reproves them for failure to incorporate into their hermeneutic the principle of

<sup>23</sup> John Murray, *Divorce*, p. 21.

<sup>24</sup> For example, M. J. Down, "The Sayings of Jesus About Marriage and Divorce," *Expository Times*, 95.11 (1984), p. 333.

<sup>25</sup> Laney, *The Divorce Myth*, pp. 67-68.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Hosea 6:6: 'I desire mercy, not sacrifice' (Mt. 9:13, 12:7)...Rigorous standards are not necessarily righteous; it is not godly to be more strict than God.<sup>26</sup>

Moreover, in the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus is **not** saying that the great concern the Pharisees displayed for the details of observance was okay as far as it went, it just didn't go far enough; therefore they must supplement it by going further. Rather, as John Murray explains in his book *Principles of Conduct*:

"What Jesus is saying is that the righteousness of the scribes, notwithstanding its meticulous adherence to the minutiae, does not begin to qualify for the kingdom of heaven; it has no affinity with the demands of the kingdom of heaven. This is so not because the kingdom of heaven does not demand righteousness, not because it is indifferent to the minutiae of divine prescription, but because the demands of the kingdom of heaven are far greater than anything that ever enters into the conception of the scribes and Pharisees. They have not begun to reckon with the demands of the kingdom of heaven. Paradoxically, it was their concern for detail that led them to miss the whole genius of kingdom righteousness; the detail was not the detail of divine prescription. They made void the law of God by their own traditions."<sup>27</sup>

Murray concludes that "the righteousness that exceeds that of the scribes and Pharisees is therefore that of character and behavior," not that of extending the details.<sup>28</sup>

### C. Luke 16:17-18

17) "But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away than for one stroke of a letter of the Law to fail. 18) Every one who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery; and he who marries one who is divorced from a husband commits adultery."

The context of Luke 16:18 is similar to that of Matthew 5:32. Jesus has just charged the Pharisees with hypocrisy, as those "who justify yourselves in the sight of men, but God knows your hearts..."(v.15). He states that not even one stroke of the Law will fail (v.17), implying this to be the case in spite of their lax attitudes to the Law. Then he applies this to their view of divorce.

The divorce text of Luke 16:18 is quite similar to that of Matt. 5:32, except that whereas the latter passage reads "everyone who divorces his wife except for the cause of unchastity makes her commit adultery," Luke reads "everyone who divorces his wife

---

<sup>26</sup> David C. Jones, in his paper submitted to the Eighteenth General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America as part of the Ad-Hoc Committee on Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage, entitled, "The Westminster Confession on Divorce and Remarriage," p. 25.

<sup>27</sup> John Murray, *Principles of Conduct*, Grand Rapids, 1978, pp. 155.

<sup>28</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 156

and marries another (*heteros*) commits adultery." Matthew speaks only of a divorce which causes the wife to commit adultery, but Luke speaks of a man divorcing and remarrying thereby himself committing adultery. Also, Luke omits the exception clause.

How do we understand the differences? First, we do not believe Jesus is contradicting himself. Luke 16:18 serves to clarify and reinforce Jesus' teaching in Matt. 5:32. According to Matt. 5:32, when a man divorces his wife but does not remarry, he is not committing adultery, but he is to be held accountable for causing his wife to commit adultery if she remarries. But in Luke 16:18, if a husband divorces his wife and then remarries, he is committing adultery.

Apparently divorce in Jesus' day was an act which frequently had as its object the removal of the wife to make room for another woman. This was the problem Moses was facing in Deut. 24 (cf. Ex. 34:11-16; Deut. 7:1-5), Ezra was facing in Ezra 9-10 (cf. Neh. 10:30; 13:23-30), and Malachi was facing in Mal. 2:10-17. It is at the heart of the problem we face today. In divorcing their wives to make room for others, they had made the Law of God void.

#### D. Matthew 19:3-9 [Mark 10:2-11]

3) "And some Pharisees came to Him, testing Him, and saying, 'Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any cause at all?' 4) And He answered and said, 'Have you not read, that He who created them from the beginning MADE THEM MALE AND FEMALE, 5) and said FOR THIS CAUSE A MAN SHALL LEAVE HIS FATHER AND MOTHER, AND SHALL CLEAVE TO HIS WIFE; AND THE TWO SHALL BECOME ONE FLESH? 6) Consequently they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let no man separate.' 7) They said to Him, 'Why then did Moses command to give her a certificate and divorce her?' He said to them, 'Because of your hardness of heart, Moses permitted you to divorce your wives; but from the beginning it has not been this way. 9) And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife, except for immorality, and marries another commits adultery.'"

There is no need to consider Matthew 19 and Mark 10 separately. The primary phrase in question, "except for immorality," is found in Matt. 19:9 and is omitted in Mark. Other differences between the two passages are secondary and do not demand separate analyses.<sup>29</sup> Therefore we have chosen simply to consider the exception clause in its Matthean context.

##### 1. The context of Matthew 19:3-8

When the Pharisees asked Jesus, "*Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any cause?*", they were attempting to entrap him.<sup>30</sup> In the process, however, they revealed

---

<sup>29</sup> For a discussion of the differences, cf. David Atkinson, *To Have and To Hold*, pp. 110-111.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

some assumptions of their own. By beginning with "Is it lawful," they revealed that they viewed marriage and divorce merely as a matter of legislation. By ending their question, "for any cause," they betrayed a lax approach to divorce, an approach more in keeping with the school of Hillel. Josephus, himself a divorcee and a Pharisee, writes:

"He that desires to be divorced from his wife for any cause whatsoever, (**and many such causes happen among men,**) let him in writing give assurance that he never will use her as his wife any more, for this means she may be at liberty to marry another husband, although before this bill of deliverance be given she is not to be permitted to do so."<sup>31</sup> (Bold print, ours.)

These are the same assumptions we find so prevalent in today's world.

Jesus responded by asking incredulously if they had not read Genesis 1:27 and 2:24. These verses, Jesus said, show that God joined (literally, "yoked together") the two spouses, that they are now one flesh, and therefore no one should be party to their separation lest he be found guilty of rebelling against God.

The Pharisees then challenged him: "*Why then did Moses command to give her a certificate and divorce her?*" If God's best is "no divorce," why did Moses provide for divorce? And if Moses provided for divorce, does that not conflict with what Jesus had just said?

Jesus' reply is of paramount importance as he explains the connection between Moses' concession following the Fall and God's intention for marriage in Creation. "*For the hardness of your heart Moses permitted you to divorce your wives, but from the beginning it was not so.*" Two contrasts of view may be discerned in this saying of Jesus.

First, whereas the Pharisees alleged that Moses commanded (*eneteilato*) divorce, Jesus said Moses permitted (*epetrepse*).<sup>32</sup> Permission denotes allowance or sufferance without in the least implying approval or command. The Pharisees chose to view this divine concession as divine approval and a legal basis of divorce. It suited their purposes. But Jesus said, "from the beginning it was not so."

---

30 The question the Pharisees asked was a bit of rabbinic casuistry. If Jesus sided with Hillel, the Pharisees could charge Jesus with moral laxity. If he sided with Shammai, Jesus could be reproached for his own friendly treatment of sinners, it could be too strict for many of his followers, and his statement could be given to Herod who had imprisoned John the Baptist for the same views. If Jesus should reject both and declare himself as totally against divorce, they could charge him with contradicting the Law of Moses (i.e., Deut. 24).

31 Flavius Josephus, *Antiquities of the Jews*, Book 4, Chapter 8, as published in *The Works of Flavius Josephus*, trans. W. Whiston, Philadelphia, p. 141. For a discussion of the Jewish schools of thought as to what constituted proper grounds to divorce, see David Atkinson, *To Have and To Hold*, pp. 106-110.

32 For an insightful discussion of the supposed discrepancy between Matthew 19:7-8 and Mark 10:3-4 concerning who used the word "permitted," see John Murray, *Divorce*, pp. 43 ff.

Second, whereas the Pharisees spoke of grounds for divorce, Jesus said the real culprit was their "hardness of heart" (*sklerokardia*). This is a term often used of Israel's stubbornness and rebellion against the will of God (Cf. Dt. 10:16; Jer. 4:40). Whenever Israel failed to believe and obey God, it was due to their hardness of heart. By implication, according to Jesus, this too is the cause behind divorce. When people fail to believe and obey what God has clearly communicated about marriage in Creation, it is their "hardness of heart" that is at fault.

## 2. Divorce and remarriage in Matthew 19:9

Jesus concludes by enjoining that whoever divorces his wife for any reason except for immorality and marries another, commits adultery. Setting aside for the moment the exception clause, if we pull together his teaching from Matthew 5:32; Luke 16:18; and Mark 10:11, we find "all the bases are covered":

Mt. 5:32: a man who divorces his wife makes her to become an adulteress (when she marries again); a man who marries a woman who has been divorced commits adultery

Mt. 19:9: a man who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery;

Mk. 10:11: a man who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery against her; and a woman who divorces her husband and marries another commits adultery;

Lk. 16:18: a man who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery; a man who marries a woman divorced from her husband commits adultery.

The point is, if a divorce takes place which has no sanction from God, then any new union which follows is an adulterous act, being unlawful. Not only is the act of divorce itself sinful, apart from remarriage, but the act of remarriage after an illegitimate divorce is judged contrary to the will of God. As we have stated above, the reason an unbiblical divorce can cause adultery is that God does not honor such a divorce. Following such a divorce, remarriage constitutes marital unfaithfulness. From God's point of view, they should still be married to their original partner.

Concerning the adultery involved in remarriage following an unbiblical divorce, we understand that the consummation of the new union through intercourse is an adulterous act because it is God's intention that the prior marriage not be broken. This adulterous act, while breaking the old union, establishes a new relationship which must now stand on its own.

## 3. The exception clause of Matthew 19:9

"And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife, except for immorality, and marries another commits adultery."

The presence of the "exception clause" in Matthew 19:9 has caused endless debate among scholars. The discussion has generally centered around three major questions: the authenticity of the clause as the words of Jesus; the scope of the exception clause;

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

and the meaning of the *porneia* (the Greek term translated "immorality" in the NASV). The first two questions can be handled quickly for our purposes, whereas the third question needs more careful consideration.

### a. The authenticity of Jesus' words

Many commentators try to argue that the exception clause is not original with Jesus, and that Matthew or another editor of the Gospel inserted it at a later time. They contend that Jesus would not have allowed for exceptions and would have branded all divorces as contrary to the will of God. After all, they argue, look at the absolute form of Jesus' statements in Mk. 10:11-12 and Lk. 16:18.

As a denomination that believes in the inerrancy of Scripture, we take the position that if the exception clause belongs to the genuine text of Matthew's gospel (and our textual apparatus strongly confirms this fact),<sup>33</sup> then it is truly the *logion* of our Lord. Second, its omission by Mark and Luke is not sufficient ground for rejecting it as an authentic saying of Jesus. Their silence could be due to their taking the clause for granted. Both pagan and Jewish culture took adultery as a ground for divorce for granted. It was not in dispute. Third, we reject the notion that God's Word presents us with conflicting views of what Jesus taught, which would be the case if Matthew 19 is set over against Mark 10 and Luke 16. Fourth, the Greek text includes the emphatic "I" (*ego*), "And I say unto you." What follows would naturally all be attributed to Jesus. This was indeed Matthew's intention, and Matthew was there as an eyewitness. For these reasons, the burden of proof rests on those who with critical presuppositions would take these words from Jesus' lips. The exception clause cannot be sidestepped in this way as unimportant for one's interpretation.

It is also interesting to recall in this connection Jeremiah 3:8, where Yahweh is said to divorce Israel for her spiritual adultery (idolatry): "I gave faithless Israel her certificate of divorce and sent her away because of all her adulteries." If God himself can properly divorce his bride because of adultery, then, given Christ's unqualified adherence to the authority of the Old Testament, it seems difficult to conclude that Jesus would not have had similar words on his own lips.

### b. The scope of the exception clause

A major debate has revolved around the scope of the exception clause. Does "except for immorality" refer only to divorce, or to both divorce and remarriage in this passage? The Roman Catholic Church, and more recently Heth and Wenham, have held that the phrase refers only to divorce. According to Heth and Wenham:

"The construction of Matthew 19:9 basically indicates that we are dealing with two conditional statements, one that is qualified and one that is unqualified or absolute:

1. A man may not put away his wife **unless** she is guilty of adultery.

---

<sup>33</sup> John Murray, *Divorce*, pp. 47-51, deals in depth with the question of textual evidence for the authenticity of these words of Jesus.

## APPENDICES

2. Whoever marries another after putting away his wife commits adultery. Or, to paraphrase the idea in another way: "Putting away for reasons other than unchastity is forbidden; and remarriage after every divorce is adulterous."<sup>34</sup>

According to John Murray, the sentence cannot be subdivided in that way. there is only one subject ("whoever"), and one main verb ("commits adultery"), and the ruling thought is of the husband committing adultery because he both divorces and remarries another woman. So the unity and coordination of the entire sentence demands that the exception clause relate to both divorce and remarriage.<sup>35</sup>

We agree with John Murray. It is difficult, and indeed strained, to restrict the exceptive clause to divorce (*apoluse*) and not extend it also to remarriage (*gamese allen*). It is questionable grammatically to interpret Matthew 19:9 as two conditional statements, as Wenham does. Moreover, the question is logical, not grammatical. Divorce by definition entailed the right to remarry, as we have noted previously; and Jesus is locating the committing of adultery not simply in the act of remarriage, but in the fact that someone has divorced his wife for an inadequate reason and has then remarried.

### c. The meaning of *porneia*

The heart of the debate centers around the meaning of *porneia*, often translated fornication. Our first step must be to survey its uses in both the Old and New Testaments.

*Porneia* and its cognates serve to translate the Hebrew word *zannah* and its cognates. According to the Arndt and Gingrich *Lexicon*, *porneia* may be translated "prostitution, unchastity, fornication," and may be used "of every kind of unlawful sexual intercourse." Examples include the harlotry of a married woman (Hos. 2:2), incest (1 Cor. 5:1), or even homosexuality (Jude 7).<sup>36</sup>

Of particular importance is the fact that *porneia* (fornication) is on occasion used interchangeably with *moicheia* (adultery; its Hebrew equivalent is *nahaph*). Examples of this can be found in the Greek translation of the Old Testament in the parallel clauses of Hosea 2:2, and in Jeremiah 3:1, 2, 6, 8 where a married adulteress is divorced because of her fornication. In Ezekiel 23, God tells the story of two women who committed fornication both before and after marriage; in this extended passage fornication is clearly used to speak both of sexual sin leading to adultery, and of

---

34 Heth and Wenham, *Jesus and Divorce*, p. 117.

35 John Murray, *Divorce*, p. 40. Thomas Edgar provides one of the strongest cases against this view of Heth and Wenham, arguing that their view is both grammatically and logically impossible. Edgar argues his case in his contribution to *Divorce and Remarriage: Four Christian Views*, ed. H. Wayne House, "Divorce and Remarriage for Adultery or Desertion," Downers Grove, 1990, pp. 156-162.

36 William F. Arndt and F. Wilbur Gingrich, *A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament and Other Early Christian Literature*, Grand Rapids, 1957, pp. 699-700.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

adultery as its effect. That *porneia* can refer to adultery on the part of a married spouse is best seen in a quotation from the apocryphal Sirach 23:22,23: "So it is with a woman who leaves her husband and provides an heir by a stranger (*porneia*)."

However, even though these two terms may be used interchangeably, they are not to be equated. Otherwise, why the two terms, both in Hebrew and Greek? Why would they be carefully distinguished in verses such as Hebrews 13:4b ("...for fornicators and adulterers God will judge") and Matthew 15:19 ("For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications...")? If the two terms are to be distinguished, how do they differ?

The answer is: whereas adultery refers to the marital unfaithfulness, fornication is broader and can encompass all sexual sin including adultery. As the logicians and linguists would say, 'adultery' is not part of the **intention** of *porneia*; it is part of its **extension**. *Porneia* is a class, and within the class you may have a number of specific sins which may be referred to like adultery or homosexuality or prostitution.<sup>37</sup>

Some scholars hold that *porneia* is referring to incest. They argue that this is its meaning in 1 Corinthians 5:1 and in Acts 15:20.<sup>38</sup> First we should note that not that many commentators agree that Acts 15:20 is referring to incest.<sup>39</sup> In the particular case of 1 Cor. 5:1, it seems quite clear that *porneia* is used here as a class (sexual immorality) which includes incest as one of its referents (its extension). Note how the passage reads: "It is actually reported that there is sexual immorality (*porneia*) among you, and sexual immorality of such a kind as does not exist even among the Gentiles, that someone has his father's wife."

The basic significance of *porneia* in the New Testament may be seen in 1 Cor 7:2, "But because of immoralities..." (*porneias*); the plural points to various immoral acts. The commands to "flee immorality" (1 Cor. 6:18), and "abstain from immorality" (1 Thess. 4:3), naturally refer to sexual sin in general. These are clear examples of its basic use. Thus we conclude that *porneia* is a term that refers to sexual immorality in general, and that within this general classification it may refer to a number of specific sins, depending on its context. Moreover, we choose to translate *porneia*, "sexual immorality," since the term fornication in today's English may refer to sexual sins committed only by the unmarried, and since sexual immorality communicates better the broad nature of this sin.

---

37 In the words of David C. Jones (*Op. Cit.*, p. 21), "*Porneia* is the general term for all illicit or immoral sexual intercourse. The specific form may sometimes be indicated by the context. If payment of wages is involved, it is *prostitution*. If it involves close relatives, it is *incest*. If it involves persons of the same sex, it is *homosexuality*. If it involves an unmarried couple, it is *unchastity*. If it involves a married person outside of marriage, it is *adultery*."

38 See above, note 5.

39 For an excellent refutation of the view that Acts 15:20 is referring to incest, see Thomas Edgar, "Divorce and Remarriage for Adultery or Desertion," pp. 177-187.



## APPENDICES

### d. Is *porneia* ever used with an even broader meaning?

We must note that *porneia* has a figurative use as well. In the Old Testament, there are several prophetic passages which use the analogy of *porneia* extensively to picture Israel's marital (or sexual) unfaithfulness to God. These passages picture Israel as Hosea clearly delineates it as an unfaithful wife wandering away from God her husband (cp. for example Hosea 1:2). Jeremiah 3 speaks of how treacherous Israel was in going up "on every high hill and under every green tree, and she played the harlot there" (*porneuo*). Ezekiel 16 and 23 speak of Israel "multiplying her harlotries" and even "paying her lovers" for fornication.

Because *porneia* is used to designate Israel's unfaithfulness to God her husband in acts of idolatry and other sins, therefore by extension other figurative use also designates other acts of sin and unfaithfulness to God (cf. Numbers 14:33; Isaiah 1:21; and Hebrews 12:16), since that covenanted relationship is still in view. Furthermore, this figurative use of *porneia* is extended even further in the New Testament to describe the rebellion of sinful humanity in the defilements and abominations represented by the "Great Harlot" (Rev. 17:4; 19:2).

### e. What are the current interpretations of *porneia*?

From our prior discussion, it is clear that *porneia* has a very common literal meaning which is "sexual immorality." This is its **intensive** sense, and its **extensive** sense can include such sexual sins as adultery, homosexuality, prostitution, and incest. It is also clear that *porneia* is used figuratively in Scripture of spiritual betrayal on the part of God's people.

The issue is, what does *porneia* mean in Matthew 19:9? We may group current interpretations under three headings:

#### **View #1: *porneia* refers to sexual unfaithfulness before marriage**

Some scholars hold that *porneia* refers to a sexual sin separate from marital unfaithfulness. They prefer to view Jesus as totally against divorce and remarriage. Therefore, *porneia* in Matthew 19:9 could not refer to adultery or any kind of sexual sin within marriage. One such view identifies *porneia* with premarital unchastity during the Jewish engagement period. Thus Jesus would be allowing divorce if the bride was found unfaithful during that period, and they would never have entered into conjugal relations. Another such view is to identify *porneia* with incestuous marriages. In this case Jesus would merely be nullifying a marriage which was unlawful to begin with.

How are we to evaluate this view? A number of compelling reasons stand against our accepting this view. First, the context of Matthew 19:9 is about marriage and divorce, not about invalid unions. The Old Testament texts about which Jesus and the Pharisees were speaking (Genesis 1-2, Deut. 24) refer to marriage, not the engagement period. To suppose that Christ would have introduced matters having to do with the engagement period, matters governed by separate legislation and concerning which

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

there was no controversy, when the issue being discussed was marriage and divorce, seems out of place.

Second, *porneia* is never specifically used in Scripture of unchastity during the betrothal period, and is used only once in a context clearly having to do with incest (1 Cor. 5:1). Although *porneia* could be referring to both of these sexual sins, it would not be understood as referring to either one of them unless the context encouraged such an interpretation. No encouragement is seen in the context by this committee.

Third, there are incidents in Scripture of *porneia* being used of adultery. To assume that *porneia* does not have to do with marital unfaithfulness in a passage discussing marriage and divorce is to assume too much.

Finally, the whole strength of this interpretation is drawn from the assumption that divorce with remarriage does not exist in the Bible. This is to beg the argument.

### **View #2: *porneia* refers to unfaithfulness in marriage, not restricted to sexual sin**

This second understanding of *porneia* comes from those who wish to view the term in both its literal and figurative senses. They argue, since the use of *porneia* has not been restricted to sexual sins only, but has also been used in the figurative sense of covenant breaking, neither should the grounds for divorce be restricted to sexual sins alone. Hence, *porneia* may refer to all the ways in which profound unfaithfulness can destroy the covenant of marriage. They also may view "desertion" in I Cor. 7 as included in their definition of *porneia* in Matthew 19. These are sins which undermine the foundations of the marriage covenant.

How may we evaluate this view? It is undeniably true that *porneia* occurs in Scripture in a figurative sense. This view also has the apparent advantage of satisfying the supposed conflict with I Cor. 7:15 by seeing desertion as a subset of *porneia*.

In response, we may first observe that in a passage where *moicheia* (adultery) is used in a literal sense, it would be expected that its corresponding term *porneia* (sexual immorality) would also be used in the same literal way. There would need to be compelling contextual evidence to take it in its figurative use, particularly in a passage that is talking about the literal sexual dimension of being one flesh. Moreover, there is no explicit use of *porneia* in Scripture for sins within the human marriage relation other than sexual.

Second, in Matthew 19, Jesus is speaking against the backdrop of easy divorce. In doing so, he was trying to restrict divorce. That he was successful in being restrictive is clear in the amazement of the disciples to Jesus' words (19:10) and in Jesus' response to them that implies that they have understood his comments correctly (19:11-12). This context suggests a narrower use of *porneia*, that it should not be interpreted in a way that could open it up to all sorts of grounds for divorce.

## APPENDICES

Third, if desertion were a subset of *porneia*, then in 1 Corinthians 7:10-11 Paul would be denying to the divorced spouse what Jesus would be allowing, namely divorce on the grounds of *porneia*.

Fourth, we note that in Scripture Jesus only uses *porneia* in the literal sexual sense. This seems to be the most natural sense of the term in Matthew 19:9. The burden of proof rests clearly with those who would take *porneia* to include the figurative sense in this passage.

### **View #3: *porneia* refers to sexual unfaithfulness in marriage**

The third understanding of *porneia* is the classical view, that it refers to sexual sins committed by one within the marriage relationship. Some prefer to interpret *porneia* as the equivalent of adultery. Others prefer to view it as encompassing any kind of sexual immorality while married. It could cover adultery, prostitution, incest, homosexuality, lesbianism and bestiality, all those vices which would have called for the death penalty in the Old Testament.

How are we to evaluate this view? One might object, "If Jesus meant adultery, why didn't he use the specific term for adultery?" But the strengths of this view vastly outweigh any difficulties that may be raised.

First, the literal sense of *porneia* seems to fit most naturally into the context (see above, first observation under View #2). No wonder this has been the classical interpretation for some 2000 years.

Second, the context of Matthew 19 is the breaking of the marriage covenant, divorce. Since sexual sins violate the "one flesh" principle of marriage, thereby radically breaking the unity and exclusivity of marriage, this understanding of *porneia* as "sexual immorality" fits with Jesus granting it as the one exception for breaking the marriage bond and being free to marry again.

Third, the fact that *porneia* was chosen, and not *moicheia*, suggests that it was meant to cover more than adultery alone in its strictest sense. Sexual sins of a married person such as having sex with an unmarried person, homosexuality, incest, and prostitution would be included.

### **f. Guidelines for applying the meaning of *porneia***

We agree that *porneia* refers to "sexual immorality." But sexual immorality could be understood to include all kinds of sexual sins such as inordinate lust, pornography, or masturbation. To be sure, these are sins that impinge against the one-flesh relationship, but they do not necessarily break it.

We ask then, "What does Jesus mean by *porneia* in this passage as a grounds for divorce?" We believe Jesus intended *porneia* to be understood in a more limited way, as referring to those external sexual actions which would clearly break the one-flesh principle of marriage. The whole passage centers on a marriage relationship and the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

exception focuses on an act that may become the reason for a divorce. Therefore, we must distinguish between those sexual sins that clearly break the one-flesh union and those that don't. Adultery, homosexuality, lesbianism, bestiality, and incest are clear examples of sexual immorality that break the one-flesh union.

Other acts of sexual immorality do not as clearly serve to break the one-flesh relationship. One might argue that pornography and masturbation per se are not grounds for divorce; but if a person becomes so dependent on them that they become a substitute for fulfilling the conjugal rights of the spouse, then they could be understood to break the one-flesh union. Other examples of habitual sexual sin could be cited. But all of these are unclear cases, and judgment will have to rest with the Session in their application of biblical principles.

The guiding principle should be whether the sexual sin does indeed break the one-flesh relationship. Some sexual sins may hurt the marriage union without necessarily breaking it. But when that sexual sin becomes externalized in such a way that it becomes a substitute for the one-flesh relation with one's spouse, then the Session may judge it as being *porneia*.

### E. 1 Corinthians 7:10-15

These verses are referring to two distinct groups of persons. Verses 10-11 presuppose both partners are believers, and Paul is applying a saying of Jesus which bears directly on that situation. Verses 12-15 address a mixed marriage situation where one of the spouses has become a Christian, and Paul speaks to this issue himself.

#### 1. Instruction to spouses both of whom are believers,

##### Verses 10-11:

10) "But to the married I give instructions, not I, but the Lord, that the wife should not leave her husband 11) (but if she does leave, let her remain unmarried, or else be reconciled to her husband), and that the husband should not send his wife away."

Paul tells the Christian wife not to "leave" (*chorizo*) her Christian husband, and likewise tells the husband not to "send away" (*aphiemi*) his wife. The critical point here is that Paul is telling them not to "divorce" each other. He uses Greek words which in this context are referring to divorce, not separation as we know it. According to Gordon Fee in his carefully documented commentary:

"Much has been made of the use of the verb 'to separate oneself from' [*chorizo*], in distinction from the verb used in vv. 12-13, 'to divorce' [*aphiemi*]. But that probably reflects our own urgencies for greater precision. Divorce in Greco-Roman culture could be 'legalized' by means of documents; but more often it simply happened. In this culture divorce was divorce, whether established by a document or not. Either the man sent his wife away (= 'divorce' in the sense of v.12), or else either of them 'left' the other (= 'to

## APPENDICES

separate')...Ordinarily when the wife `divorces' she simply leaves her husband ('is separated' from him); the same verb is used in v. 15 of a pagan partner of either sex who leaves, and occurs regularly in the papyri for mutual divorce (agreeing to `separate from each other'). On the other hand, a man ordinarily `divorced' his wife (sent her away'); nonetheless in v.13 the wife can do the same."<sup>40</sup>

We tend to interpret verses 10-11 in terms of modern day separation rather than divorce. But the Bible does not deal with the idea of separation as a "half-way house" step as we know it. Perhaps the Biblical writers were so committed to the permanence of marriage that they did not want to study ways to effect temporary separation. But more likely, it was the fact that separation in first century society was *de facto* divorce. That these verses are clearly referring to divorce is evidenced by the fact that the believing wife is called "unmarried" (*agamos*) in verse 11.

Paul goes on to say that for the two Christian spouses who divorce, there are only two options. They are to remain unmarried, or better still, be reconciled. (This is consistent with Jesus' prohibition against remarriage within the church [Mt. 5:31, Lk. 16:18].) The change of verb tenses emphasizes the direction of Paul's thinking. The wife is to remain unmarried (present tense, continuous action), or she is to be reconciled (aorist tense, accomplished action) to her husband. The believer must always remain in a position to be reconciled. Marriage to another would preclude reconciliation. Paul then goes on in verse 11b to say what is true of the wife is also true of the husband.

### 2. Important insights into verses 10-11

Three important points should be noted. **First**, Paul presents this instruction in the form of a command (*paraggello*) and appeals to the authoritative teaching of Jesus. This is one of the rare instances in Paul's writings where he appeals directly to Jesus. We should not suppose that Paul lacks authority, but rather that Paul is seeking to add as much force as possible to his admonition. In other words, this instruction is not just good advice. Married believers should not divorce.

**Second**, Paul is acknowledging that improper divorces may in fact occur. This is the burden of the Greek construction which may be interpreted, "if for any reason this condition may possibly occur." Paul is not giving a right to divorce. He is recognizing that divorce may happen, and says that in such cases the wife may not use her present unmarried condition as an opportunity to marry someone else. This is the penalty for a sinful divorce. If she has the desire to get married, it must be to her former husband. It is striking that Paul didn't say, "you have to get back together again." Paul clearly recognizes that in certain cases the marriage will not be restored.

**Third**, it is remarkable that Paul should focus on the wife seeking a divorce; his remarks about the husband almost seem like an afterthought. In Jewish culture a woman was generally not allowed to divorce her husband, although in Greek culture women could do so. Why would women believers in Paul's day be seeking divorce

---

40 Gordon D. Fee, *The First Epistle to the Corinthians*, Grand Rapids, 1984, pp. 193-194.

from believing husbands? Perhaps it was due to misguided beliefs that ascetic practices or the refusal of sexual relations in those "last days" was a righteous response (cf. 7:1ff, 29ff, etc.). We are not sure of the exact reasons. But whatever the background, the reasons appear to be opposite those given in our own culture. Today women and men often divorce for the express purpose of marrying someone else. But Paul does not allow remarriage in this instance, because this would in effect be adultery, and because the norm of Christians is to be reconciled.

### 3. Instruction to a spouse married to an unbeliever,

#### Verses 12-15

- 12) "But to the rest I say, not the Lord, that if any brother has a wife who is an unbeliever, and she consents to live with him, let him not send her away.
- 13) And a woman who has an unbelieving husband, and he consents to live with her, let her not send her husband away.
- 14) For the unbelieving husband is sanctified through his wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified through her believing husband; for otherwise your children are unclean, but now they are holy.
- 15) Yet if the unbelieving one leaves, let him leave; the brother or the sister is not under bondage in such cases, but God has called us to peace."

These verses presuppose a mixed marriage. Although Paul would not allow an already-professing Christian to marry an unbeliever (7:39; 2 Cor. 6:14-7:1; cf. Ezra 10:10), in these verses he forbids a Christian to initiate a divorce with an unbeliever. The present tense prohibition, *me aphieto*, seems to suggest that some were in the process of doing so, and he wanted it stopped. Perhaps believers were using their spouse's unbelief as an excuse for getting a divorce, or perhaps believers thought that marriage with an unbeliever somehow contaminated them. But Paul argues the opposite here. It is not the believer who is defiled, but the unbeliever who is sanctified, as well as the children of that union. Therefore, if the unbelieving spouse "is well-pleased to dwell together with" the believing spouse, then the believer must not resort to divorce.

The church needs to face squarely the implications of this. Paul does not make self-fulfillment the law of marriage, and is perfectly willing to require someone to remain in a marriage that will be painfully difficult. Here is a woman going to heaven, married to a man going to hell. Here is a woman who prizes above all things the Word and the ways of the kingdom of God, and here is a man who considers those things to be irrelevant, uninteresting, and unimportant. He cannot satisfy or encourage her in any of those areas. In the dimensions of her life which are most precious to her and are most profoundly important to her, her husband is not only positively no help, but very often is an interference, a frustration. And yet, Paul says she must stay.

This accent on "no divorce" is consistent with verses 10-11. However, Paul introduces an exception: "if the unbelieving one leaves." In that case the believer is to "let him leave." The verb is in the imperative mood. Paul may be viewed here as

## APPENDICES

giving the spouse permission, or he may be saying this as an admonition with more force. We should note that Paul immediately proceeds to say, "the brother or sister is not bound" and "God has called us to peace." These three ingredients seem to suggest that Paul is recommending, if not ordering, such a separation.

Again, the verb "leaves" (*chorizo*) is referring to divorce. Herein lies an interesting point. Paul is referring to a situation in which the deserted spouse is the passive victim of the unrighteous termination of a marriage. This suggests that what we have here is not another ground for divorce, but from the perspective of the offended spouse, a *fait accompli*. We are reminded that there are various views attempting to reconcile the desertion of 1 Corinthians 7 with the *porneia* (sexual immorality) of Matthew 19. Some hold that desertion is simply an additional ground for divorce; Jesus was not giving us an exhaustive list. Others hold that desertion is simply a subset of *porneia*, *porneia* being a term which has broader connotations than illicit sexual sins. But it seems reasonable to argue that Paul views desertion as the destruction of the marriage which the Christian spouse was unable to prevent. The question Paul raises is, what should a Christian do if an unbelieving spouse leaves the marriage?

Paul says the believer "is not bound" in such a case. What this means has been disputed. Some think that Paul simply means that the believer is not bound to maintain the marriage if the partner opts out.<sup>41</sup> Others maintain that all the bonds of marriage have been removed; the person has been released entirely from every obligation of the former marriage and is free to marry again.<sup>42</sup> Support is found in 7:39: "A wife is bound as long as her husband lives; but if her husband is dead, she is free to be married..." To be bound is to remain married to your husband. Not to be bound is to be free to marry (cf. Romans 7:2f.).

This question is made more difficult by the fact that two different Greek verbs are translated "bound" in 7:15 and 7:39. In 7:39 (as in Romans 7:2), the verb *deo* is used. In the context of marriage, it refers to being bound by law and by duty to one's spouse as long as they live. In 7:15, *douleuo* is used in the perfect tense and means "is no longer in a state of bondage." Some think that since *deo* is not used in 7:15, Paul is not saying that a believer is free to remarry.<sup>43</sup> Others maintain that *douleuo* is a synonym for *deo* and is a stronger term, and therefore Paul is saying that a believer is clearly no longer bound to the unbeliever by law and is hence free to remarry.<sup>44</sup> It seems to us that the burden of proof rests firmly on the former interpretation. It is not easy to demonstrate that Paul's language in 7:15 means something less than his language in 7:39.

---

41 A. Robertson and A. Plummer, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the First Epistle of St. Peter to the Corinthians*, Edinburgh, 1911, p. 143. Heth and Wenham, *Jesus and Divorce*, pp. 94-96, 140-144.

42 R. H. Charles, *The Teaching of the New Testament on Divorce*, London, 1921, p. 58. H. Ridderbos, *Paul: An Outline of His Theology*, Transl. J. R. DeWitt, Grand Rapids, 1975, pp. 308-309, n. 139.

43 Heth and Wenham, *Jesus and Divorce*, pp. 94-95, 141-142.

44 John Murray, *Divorce*, pp. 74-75. David Atkinson, *To Have and To Hold*, p. 132, n. 18.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

We conclude that when Paul says, "let him depart, the brother or sister is not bound," the strong presumption is that he is saying that the believer is not obliged to prevent the divorce and is also free to remarry. In the circumstances of our culture, Paul would say that the believer is not obliged to go to court to attempt to stop the divorce, and may in fact undertake to make *de jure* what is already *de facto* by initiating the legal process of divorce.

Finally, Paul states that "God has called you to peace." Does he mean, (1) God has called you to peace, so you must now be tranquil in the midst of a bad marital situation; or (2) God has called you to peace, so be at peace as you find yourself free from your former marital obligations. Coming as it does at the end of verses 15, these words appear to wrap up the significance of "not being bound." Indeed, peace would be impossible if the unbelieving spouse were compelled against her will to live with the believer, or if the believer somehow perpetuated the marriage *de jure* when it no longer existed *de facto*.

#### 4. Applying Paul's instruction about desertion today

Are there other forms of "separation" today that may be considered equivalent to this leaving of the marriage of which Paul speaks? Specifically, what about cases of habitual physical abuse? Has that person deserted his spouse to the extent we may label it *de facto* divorce? We must be careful not to open the floodgate of excuses. On the other hand, we need to recognize the reality of the "separation". We should allow Sessions the liberty to discern with much prayer what would be the proper response in a particular circumstance.

Several considerations incline us to agree with those of our authorities who have maintained that desertion can occur as well by the imposition of intolerable conditions as by departure itself. We are struck by the fact that, taking Matthew 19 and 1 Corinthians 7 together, it appears that the Lord concedes the necessity of the abolition of marriage in certain cases precisely so as to protect a blameless spouse from intolerable conditions. Further, taking into account both the general principles of Biblical ethics and the Scripture's characteristic manner of ethical instruction, viz. the statement of commandments in a general form to which is added case law sufficient to indicate the manner of application, it seems to us that those Reformed authorities are correct who have argued that sins which are tantamount in extremity and consequence to actual desertion should be understood to produce similar eventualities.

What is more, a husband's violence, particularly to the degree that it endangers his wife's safety, if unremedied, seems to us, by any application of Biblical norms, to be as much a ruination of the marriage in fact as adultery or actual departure. Further, insofar as the "passivity" of the blameless spouse is an important prerequisite in Paul's permission of the dissolution of marriage on account of desertion, it seems right to note that in the case of physical abuse, for example, the blameless spouse is similarly victimized.



## APPENDICES

Finally, credible alternatives to this point-of-view seem to us to be wholly lacking Scriptural support. It is all very well to recommend separation as a temporary expedient to protect a battered wife, but perpetual separation amounts to a Roman Catholic doctrine of the indissolubility of marriage and could scarcely be justified as a Biblical alternative to divorce.

Indeed, separation of any kind as a means of dealing with marital difficulty and preventing divorce not only is neither recommended nor mentioned in Scripture, but seems to be contrary to a fundamental principle of Biblical spirituality, viz. that what ought not to be done, ought not to be approached.

We are quick to add, however, that the list of sins tantamount to desertion cannot be very long. To qualify, a sin must have the same extreme effect as someone's physical abandonment of his spouse. We are not unaware of the danger which lurks behind such a position in the temptation it may pose to some to spin out a vast array of marital sins equivalent to desertion. This danger, however, we conclude is best met in other ways than by an effort to forge a barrier to divorce sturdier than the Bible's own. In many more ways than this, the church's health and integrity depends upon her elders' ability and willingness to provide godly, wise, merciful and severe, and scrupulously Scriptural application of Biblical norms to human situations.

The fact remains that Scripture does not address the circumstance of an abusive husband. As is the case in any other area of Biblical ethics, one cannot extract from Scripture a comprehensive statement of all possible applications of a divine law. Rather, it is left to the church to apply Biblical norms, with the direction provided by the casuistry Scripture does supply, to the untold number of situations which must be faced. It is important to acknowledge that the view that "desertion" in 1 Corinthians 7 cannot be made to refer to anything but actual departure from house and home and the view we have stated above are both extrapolations from the Scriptural statements. No one can appeal to a Biblical statement concerning the duty or the liberty of a battered spouse.

### **5. Some concluding thoughts about remarriage,**

#### **1 Corinthians 7:39:**

"A wife is bound as long as her husband lives; but if her husband is dead, she is free to be married to whom she wishes, only in the Lord."

This verse reminds us that Scripture provides us with guidelines for remarriage. These guidelines begin with the principle given in this verse, though they do not stop there. We may sum up the Scriptural guidelines as follows.

First, Scripture allows for remarriage after the death of one's spouse as seen in this passage (cf. also Romans 7:3b). Remarriage is commended for widows who have difficulty restraining their sexual desire as a means of dealing with that need (1 Cor. 7:8, 9). Scripture even encourages younger widows to remarry due to the temptations and position they could be in were they not to do so (1 Tim. 5:14).

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Second, we have observed that a person divorced in accordance with the exception stated in Matthew 19:9 is free to remarry, because the exception relates to the sentence as a whole including both the verb "divorces" and also the verb "marries."

Third, we have seen in 1 Corinthians 7:10-11, if two believing spouses divorce, they are to remain unmarried, or else be reconciled. No remarriage to a third party is envisioned in this case. However, in a mixed marriage, according to 1 Cor. 7:12-15, the believing spouse is released ("is not bound") from the marital obligation to the unbelieving spouse when he divorces the believer and the believer is therefore free to remarry.

"But can those involved in an unbiblical divorce ever remarry? Or can the guilty spouse in a Biblical divorce remarry? Jesus was quite clear in saying that those who are involved in a remarriage after an improper divorce commit adultery. By this we understand not that they are in a continual state of adultery, but that they have committed an adulterous act by which they have entered into a new marriage relationship. It is a sinful act and should not be entertained as good or godly. Furthermore, the idea of seeking a divorce with the intention of remarrying someone else is clearly sinful. However, when one of the spouses in the former marriage remarries, we may conclude that the other is freed to remarry, because the former marriage relationship has been permanently broken by that remarriage."

The Church should be careful not to go beyond the Word of God in this matter. Quite often, persons who have been divorced for unbiblical reasons come to the Church with the desire to remarry, declaring they are repentant and desirous of living for God. They want their new union to be sanctified by the Word of God and prayer in a Christian ceremony. The Church must be careful not to sanction unbiblical remarriages. If a person is truly repentant, he or she will have a genuine desire to be reconciled with the estranged spouse. There are circumstances, however, where that has become impossible, for example where the former spouse has already remarried, or where the former spouse refuses reconciliation in such a way that he manifests himself to be an unbeliever. In such cases, remarriage to another person becomes a possibility.

Moreover, the committee believes that in the providence of God, in due time, such matters will resolve themselves. In the meantime, those divorced for unbiblical reasons should find love and counsel in the Church of Jesus Christ. If they are truly repentant, they should find the same treatment the woman taken in adultery received from Jesus.

But what about those cases where people have been in an unbiblical divorce and have already remarried? What should be the Church's response to them? The gentle use of pastoral oversight will ask parties to seek God's gracious forgiveness by repenting of their past sins in marriage and by rededicating their lives to Christ in the confidence of His forgiveness and His acceptance of their present marriage. That assumes, of course, genuine repentance on their part. We must remember that adultery and divorce are not the unforgivable sin, but that they along with other ungodly sins are covered by the blood of Christ.

**CHAPTER 3  
PASTORAL PERSPECTIVE ON MARRIAGE, DIVORCE, AND  
REMARRIAGE**

**I. PREVENTION OF MARITAL PROBLEMS**

**A. Statement of prevention rationale**

The proper nurturing of the couple in the life of the congregation before and during marriage is a part of supporting biblical faithfulness in marriage. The prevention of divorce is not only possible, but probable when the problems which lead to divorce are addressed and resolved in a biblical manner at early stages of development. Since it is the developed problem that does severe damage to the marriage, prevention of problem development is essential. Putting out the spark before it becomes a forest fire is both achievable and wise. Therefore, it is incumbent upon the church to do all it can to nurture marriages. For this purpose, we are providing the following guidelines and resources.

**B. Guidelines for prevention**

This list of guidelines is not exhaustive, but is intended simply to remind us of ways we can encourage and build up marriages and help prevent divorces from occurring.

1. Pastors may pursue continuing education in pre-marital and marital counseling.
2. Pastors and officers should seek assessment and enrichment of their own marriage and family.
3. Pastors and their wives are encouraged to establish a relationship with another, preferably older, pastor or elder (and his wife) who has a healthy marriage and is a man of wisdom.
4. Churches should provide pre-marital counseling for couples whether previously married or not (minimum of six sessions).
5. Pastors are urged to train other mature couples with strong marriages to do pre-marital counseling.
6. Churches should expand their educational programs to include classes for marriage enhancement and marital preparation.
7. Churches should promote books, conferences and seminars on biblical marriage and family development for the congregation.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

8. Pastors are encouraged to preach sermons on topics which will strengthen families in the church.
9. The church leadership should train small group leaders in the detecting and handling of a couple's troubled marriage.
10. Pastors should train Ruling Elders in proper church discipline which seeks to restore those who have been caught in a sin.

### C. Suggested outline for pre-marital counseling

This outline, provided by an experienced pastoral counselor, will help us reflect on the depth and breadth of our present efforts at pre-marital counseling. It is not meant to be definitive.

1. SESSION 1: Gathering general information
  - a. Determining their spiritual condition
    - 1) If Christian, have each given his testimony
    - 2) If non-Christian, present the gospel
  - b. Learning their background
    - 1) How they met
    - 2) Their interests and habits
    - 3) Their immediate families
    - 4) Their church experiences and personal beliefs
  - c. Determining their eligibility for marriage
    - 1) Would they be equally or unequally yoked?
    - 2) Are they presently living together or sexually involved?
    - 3) Are there detrimental health conditions?
    - 4) Inform them if there are reasons you cannot marry them.

**NOTE:** Much of the data can be gathered in a Data-Intake Form developed by the pastor in a Pre-Marital Inventory, a copy of which can be found in the A.P.P.L.E. (Active People Preparing to Love and Encourage) Training Manual referred to in the Resource section.)

2. SESSION 2: Dealing with finances (could use Larry Burkett tapes)
  - a. Looking at their financial history
    - 1) Their families' financial attitude; note patterns
    - 2) Whether they are in debt or debt free
    - 3) The dangers of credit card living
  - b. Helping them draw up a budget for common household expenses
    - 1) Include house, insurance (life and health), automobile, food, savings, medical needs, etc.
    - 2) Include tithes and other contributions

## APPENDICES

- 3) Consider where the money will be coming from, and how it is shared
  - c. Discussing a new will
3. SESSION 3: Discussing the family
  - a. Reviewing their family histories
    - 1) Whether traditional or single parent households have affected family beliefs
    - 2) Whether major unresolved family problems or estranged relationships exist
    - 3) Whether attitudes toward prospective in-laws are detrimental
  - b. Discussing Biblical concepts of the family
    - 1) Of marriage
    - 2) Of sex
    - 3) Of the roles of husband and wife
  - c. Considering their future family
    - 1) Discussing their ideas of family size
    - 2) Discussing their ideas of contraceptives; referring to a physician if appropriate
    - 3) Discussing generally any sexual inhibitions or misconceptions
  - d. Exploring past sexual activity, if any
    - 1) Whether immorality needs to be confessed
    - 2) Whether repentance needs to be demonstrated
    - 3) Whether forgiveness needs to be extended
4. SESSION 4: Dealing with sexual intimacy (could use Ed Wheat tapes)
  - a. What were their parental husband/wife models?
    - 1) Were there warm or cold relationships?
    - 2) Were they dominating or subjugating?
  - b. What is the Biblical model?
    - 1) The husband: loving leader, protector, provider
    - 2) The wife: loving helpmate, companion, under his leadership
  - c. Are there any sexual fears?
    - 1) Possibly having physical pain
    - 2) Physically satisfying each other
    - 3) Communicating likes and dislikes
    - 4) Holding strictly to fidelity
5. SESSION 5: Looking at common interests
  - a. Their friends
  - b. Their hobbies and recreation
  - c. Their educational backgrounds
  - d. And how disinterests may affect their relationships

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**NOTE:** The pastor or counselor may want to give personality and temperament tests to the couple in order to help them understand each other and better minister to each other as future husband and wife.

6. SESSION 6: Wrapping up the sessions
  - a. Discussing perspectives that have been discovered
  - b. Discussing behavior they have discovered about themselves and each other during the course of the counseling
  - c. Discussing implementation of necessary changes in perspectives and behavior discovered during the course of the counseling
  - d. Discussing wedding arrangements; it would probably be helpful to set aside a separate time to go through the entire wedding service
7. POST-WEDDING SESSIONS
  - a. Having check-ups at three months, six months, and a year
  - b. Asking whether any issues have arisen
  - c. Discussing progress on necessary changes which were identified in pre-marital counseling sessions

### D. Resources

#### 1. Personnel

##### For the personal growth and assessment of pastors

- a. Other pastors or local counselors
  - b. PCA conferences
  - c. World Harvest Mission, PO Box 2175, Jenkintown, PA., 19046.
  - d. (CCEF) Christian Counseling and Educational Foundation, 1790 East Willow Grove Ave., Laverock, PA., 19118
  - e. Wes Roberts, *Life Enrichment for Christian Leaders*, Christian Marriage Enrichment, 8000 East Girard, Suite 601, Denver, CO., 80231.
  - f. Diane Langberg, Ph. D., Psychologist and counselor for pastors and wives, 8206 High School Road, Elkins Park, PA., 19117.
  - g. Louis McBurney, M.D., Marble Retreat, 139 Bannock Burn, Marble, CO., 81623, 303-963-2499.
- #### 2. Seminars, Videos

##### For aid in marital counseling

- a. Larry Crabb, Dan Allender, and Tom Varney IBC (Institute of Biblical Counseling), 16075 W. Belleview Avenue, Morrison, CO., 80465 Includes seminars such as *Basic Counseling*, *Sexual Abuse*, *Parenting Adolescents*, *Next Step Seminars*. Also includes videos on counseling.

## APPENDICES

- b. Wayne Mack (CCEF), a correspondence course entitled *Marriage and Family Counseling*, 1790 East Willow Grove Ave., Laverock, PA., 19118.
- c. Wes Roberts, of Life Enrichment (ministry to hurting pastors), 14581 E. Tufts Ave., Denver, CO., 80015.

### For marriage enhancement

- a. Ed Wheat, Scriptural Counsel Inc., 130 North Spring St., Springdale, AR., 72764 *Love Life Seminar*.
- b. James Dobson, Focus on the Family, 4800 West Waco Drive, Waco, TX., 76796 Various series including *Turn Your Heart Toward Home*, *Communication in the Home*, *To Spark or Not To Spark*, *As For Me and My House*, *Busy Husbands*, *Lonely Wives*, *The Intimate Marriage*, *The Wife's and Husband's View of Submission*.
- c. Gary Smalley, Relationship Today Inc., Paoli Corporate Center, 16 Industrial Blvd., Paoli, PA., 19301, 800-232-3232. *Hidden Keys to Loving Relationships* (video with guide book), and *Love Is A Decision*.
- d. Howard Eyrich, 21203 Saddlemaker Dr., St. Charles, MO., 63303, 314-441-8821. *Family Life Seminar: Destroyers and Builders*.
- e. Bob and Rosemary Barnes, Sheridan House, Word Inc. - Videos. *Marriage: Making The Spark A Flame* (4 video series)
- f. Howard Hendricks, Dallas Theological Seminary, Attn. Distribution Center, 3909 Swiss Ave., Dallas, TX., 75204. *The Role and Responsibility of the Husband, The Role and Responsibility of the Wife*.
- g. Joseph Wolstencroft, The Institute for Family Strength (IFC), 682 Mulberry Street, Macon, GA 31201, 912-742-6940. *The Building Blocks of Family Strength Seminar*.

### For help in pre-marital counseling

- a. Some of the video series above.
  - b. Ed Wheat and Gloria Oaks Perkins, (address above) *Before the Wedding Night*.
  - c. Larry Burkett, Evangelical Films Inc., 1750 NW Hwy., Suite 250, Garland, TX., 75041, 800-527-4014. *How To Manage Your Money* (3 videos)
  - d. Howard Hendricks, (address above), *Preparing Young People for Marriage*.
3. Books

### For the personal growth and assessment of pastors

**Hybels, Bill, *Honest To God*, Zondervan.**  
**Morley, Patrick, *Man in the Mirror*, Wolgemuath and Hyatt.**

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### For aid in marital counseling

**Adams, Jay**, *The Christian Counselor's Manual*, Baker.

**Adams, Jay**, *Solving Marriage Problems*, Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company.

**Crabb, Larry**, *Effective Biblical Counseling*, Zondervan.

**Stuart, Robert**, *A.P.P.L.E. Training (Active People Preparing to Love and Encourage)*, available by writing to Dr. Stuart, 7433 NW 4th St., Plantation, FL., 33317-2204. A video is also being prepared to accompany the book.

### For marriage enhancement

**Barnes, Robert and Rosemary**, *Marriage: Keeping the Spark a Flame*, Banner.

**Blichington, W. Peter**, *Sex Roles and the Christian Family*, Tyndale House.

**Crabb, Larry**, *The Marriage Builder*, and *Men and Women: Enjoying the Difference*, Zondervan.

**Dad's Only**, a magazine with creative ideas for dads, 15110 Ave. of Science, San Diego, CA., 92128, 619-487-7099.

**Deal, William**, *God's Answer for the Unequally Yoked*, Good News Publishers.

**Harley, Willard**, *His Needs / Her Needs*, Fleming H. Revell Co.

**Mack, Wayne**, *Strengthening Your Marriage*, Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co.

**Sproul, R. C.**, *Discovering the Intimate Marriage*, Bethany House.

**Wright, H. Norman**, *Understanding the Man in Your Life*, Word Incorporated.

### For pre-marital counseling

**Barnes, Bob and Rosemary**, *Positive Parenting*, Banner.

**Elliot, Elisabeth**, *The Mark of a Man*, Fleming H. Revell Co.

**Eyrich, Howard**, *Three To Get Ready*, Baker.

**Lewis, Kay Oliver**, *The Christian Wedding Handbook*, Fleming H. Revell Co.

**Mack, Wayne**, *Preparing for Marriage God's Way*, Virgel W. Hensley, Inc. (6116 E. 32nd St., Tulsa, OK., 74315).

**McDowell, Josh and Lewis, Paul**, *Givers, Takers, and Other Kinds of Lovers*, Tyndale Publishers.

**Wheat, Ed**, *Intended for Pleasure*, and *Love Life for Every Married Couple*, Zondervan.

**Smalley, Gary**, *For Better, For Best* (for women), *If Only He Knew* (for men), *How To Become Your Husband's Best Friend*, Zondervan.

### For an overview of marriage, divorce, and remarriage

**Adams, Jay**, *Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage in the Bible*, Baker.

**Atkinson, David**, *To Have and To Hold*, Eerdmans.



## APPENDICES

**Heth, William, and Wenham, Gordon**, *Jesus and Divorce: The Problem with the Evangelical Consensus*, Thomas Nelson.

**House, Wayne, ed.**, *Divorce and Remarriage: Four Christian Views*, Intersarsity Press.

**Murray, John**, *Divorce*, Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co.

## II. PASTORAL CARE AND COUNSEL OF COUPLES WITH MARITAL DIFFICULTIES

### A. Understanding the couple

#### 1. Know the times

Marriage difficulties are a given. There is no way to escape them. Whenever two people (both having fallen natures) co-habit for any length of time, the negatives in each other's character will rise to the surface and cause conflict in the relationship. In fact, a primary factor in the decay of major civilizations has been the deterioration of the family unit. That deterioration starts with the couple. If left unchecked, divorce will occur at the rate of 50% in all marriages contracted in the United States.

#### 2. Know the people

Most people marry for wrong reasons. They may think it to be God's will, but when the reasons are analyzed and compared with the biblical reasons for marriage, selfishness normally surfaces. Most people marry not to glorify God or emulate the marriage of Christ to His Church, but to have their own needs met. A bride or groom do not normally look at marriage as a ministry to which they have been called by God. As a result, within two years of saying "I do", when the emotional and sexual part of love has waned, conflicts surface and character flaws are clearly seen.

If the conflicts are not recognized, confronted, and resolved, divorce becomes immanent. According to the American Academy of Matrimonial Lawyers, the following are the major causes of divorce:

- a. Lack of communication
- b. Divergent personal growth patterns (i.e. Selfishness)
- c. Sex, adultery, or lack of affection (i.e. sexual sin or failure to understand each other's sexuality)
- d. Money
- e. Lack of understanding

These and other issues must be addressed during marital counseling.

Complaints by husbands and wives against the other are universal. It doesn't matter whether the couples are from the north or the south, the east or the west. The complaints are common. When each sex is asked what grates them most about the opposite sex, the following complaints surface over and over again.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- a. Women's gripes against men
  - (1) Lack of leadership
  - (2) No sensitivity
  - (3) No understanding of who we are
  - (4) Doesn't listen
  - (5) Takes me for granted
  - (6) Thinks he knows it all
  - (7) Not affectionate (only wants sex)
  
- b. Men's gripes against women
  - (1) Seeks to control relationship (manipulation)
  - (2) Nags
  - (3) No understanding of who we are
  - (4) Lack of respect
  - (5) Demands too much
  - (6) Doesn't like sex

If these concerns are left unresolved, they fester into greater conflicts resulting in a deeply strained relationship which in most cases leads to divorce. In comparing the gripes with the causes of divorce, one can easily see the similarities.

### 3. Know the ministry

In over 50% of the marriages which are experiencing marital problems, one or more of the spouses will approach his or her local clergyman. The pastor, therefore, has to be willing and able to help his congregants work through the issues or conflicts in the marriage. Since most couples seek help at a crisis point, it will be rare that the marriage problems can be resolved in three or four sessions. The pastor must be prepared for three or four months of weekly counseling if both parties are sincerely trying to work through the difficulties. If one spouse is not genuinely concerned about resolving the problems, the time frame will be much longer.

The pastor will have to decide whether he can continue to counsel after four sessions, bring in a lay person to help, or refer to a professional. Pastors do need to recognize their limitations so that counseling doesn't overwhelm their other pastoral responsibilities. Most pastors are limited by time and by training and must carefully assess what their gifts are and where their time is to be spent. A pastor without any associates should spend no more than 5-6 hours per week in counseling. Even though he may not like counseling, a pastor needs to spend some time doing it in order to maintain touch with hurting and struggling people.

### **B. Guidelines for marital counseling.**

#### 1. Recognize the danger zones

Most pastors who fall into sexual sin become involved as a result of counseling a female member of the church. Take the following precautions:

## APPENDICES

- a. Never counsel a female alone.  
Have someone nearby, in the outer office, or preferably in the session with you. If possible, have another female who will disciple, encourage, and hold the female counselee accountable during the week. Never counsel after hours or on weekends without your wife being present with you.
  - b. Do not ride alone or eat in a restaurant with another female who is not a member of your family.  
Gossip spreads rapidly and your reputation can be quickly ruined.
  - c. In counseling with a female under proper circumstances beware of the emotional pull involved.  
You may find yourself becoming emotionally attracted to the counselee. Or you may discover she is becoming emotionally attracted to you. This is a sign to break off counseling and refer her (or the couple) to another for continued counseling.
  - d. Understand your own hurts  
If you are struggling with emotional hurts or relational difficulties yourself, you are vulnerable to an emotional attachment which can lead to sinful activity.
2. Know when to refer
    - a. Do no more than 5-6 hours of counseling per week if you are a senior pastor or solo pastor.
    - b. If both parties are cooperating, it still will take three or four months of intensive counseling to work through the issues.
    - c. Decide after four sessions whether you will continue to counsel with the couple or whether to refer.
    - d. Refer:
      - (1) If issues are intense and beyond your capabilities, or
      - (2) If you are not willing to do lengthy counseling with the couple.
  3. Develop a referral list
    - a. Meet with counselors in your community and determine if they are competent, biblical, and available for referrals.
    - b. Determine the specialties or areas of interest of the counselors.
    - c. Gather information from other pastors regarding counselors in your area.
    - d. Train lay people to help counsel those struggling in marriages.
  4. Have readily available a list of hotlines and crisis intervention centers.
    - a. Know the procedures for involving the social service or abuse prevention people in your area.
    - b. Understand the state law for reporting domestic or child abuse cases.
  5. In a crisis situation, if possible, bring another person with you when you attempt to minister.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

6. Establish rules of the office
  - a. Have regular times for counseling each week.
  - b. If counseling at night or on a weekend, have your wife with you.
  - c. Never counsel a female alone.
  - d. Develop data in-take forms.
    - (1) Have couples fill out this inventory
    - (2) Make it extensive enough to gather good information and to weed out people who are not really interested in counseling.
  - e. Supervise your lay counselors.
7. Involve your counselees in the church activities, especially a small group Bible study.

### C. Practical considerations

1. Monitor your own marriage
  - a. Continue dating your wife.
  - b. Spend time in meaningful communication.
  - c. Take overnight trips together.
  - d. Receive criticism and change your negative habits.
  - e. Seek counseling if wife says it is needed.
2. Develop a lay counseling program.
  - a. Have interested people watch and discuss the Larry Crabb video series on "Encouragement, Key to Sharing".
  - b. Offer a counseling class each year (Dr. Robert Stuart has developed a lay counselor training manual for the purpose of teaching pastoral counseling.).
  - c. Occasionally offer seminars that deal with helping those hurting in marriage.
  - d. Have men disciple men and women disciple women.
3. Follow up those you have counseled or referred with cards, phone calls, visits, or consultations.
  - a. Once a church member has been referred, the church's ministry to that person does not cease.
  - b. There needs to be continuing contact by the pastor, one or two elders, and some supportive lay people.
4. Start formal discipline when appropriate
  - a. First write to the uncooperative spouse and express disappointment for not counseling and request him or her to become involved in the counseling process.
  - b. If one spouse remains uncooperative or refuses to counsel, have the cooperating spouse in writing request Session intervention.
  - c. have the Session appoint a commission of two or three elders to meet with the parties, to strongly recommend counseling, and to order counseling if the parties are members of the church. If a spouse refuses

## APPENDICES

and continues with contumacious and unrepentant behavior, then the commission is to commence with formal discipline according to the *Book of Church Order*.

5. Institute family ministries.
  - a. Have yearly couples' retreats.
  - b. Have family retreats and campouts.
  - c. Sponsor family seminars and marriage workshops.
  - d. Have Sunday school class on marriage and the roles of husband and wife.
  - e. Develop a pre-marital counseling program.

### D. Resources

1. Personnel
  - a. Local counselors
  - b. Experts to help train the pastor and lay people to do counseling
  - c. Wes Roberts of Life Enrichment (ministry to hurting pastors), 14581 East Tufts Avenue, Denver, CO 80015.
2. Seminars
  - a. IBC (Institute of Biblical Counseling)  
Dr. Larry Crabb and Dr. Dan Allender  
16075 W. Belleview Avenue  
Morrison, CO 80465  
(303) 697-5425
  - b. A.P.P.L.E. Training  
Dr. Robert D. Stuart  
7433 NW Fourth Street  
Plantation, FL 33317-2204  
(305) 581-5910
  - c. Love is a Decision  
Gary Smalley and Dr. John Trent  
Today's Family  
Box 22111  
Phoenix, AZ 85028
  - d. Family Life Conference, A Weekend to Remember  
A Ministry of Campus Crusade for Christ International  
Family Ministry  
P.O. Box 23840  
Little Rock, AR 72221-3840  
(501) 223-8663

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 3. Books

#### To have a better understanding of biblical anthropology.

**Crabb, Lawrence**, *Understanding People*, Ministry Resource Library, a division of Zondervan Publishing House.

**Crabb, Lawrence**, *Inside Out*, Nav Press.

#### To build a biblical marriage.

**Crabb, Lawrence**, *The Marriage Builder*, Zondervan.

**Dobson, James C.**, *Straight Talk to Men and Their Wives*, Word Books.

**Groom, Nancy**, *Married Without Masks*, Nav Press.

**Smalley, Gary**, *If Only He Knew*, Zondervan.

**Wheat, Ed.**, *Love Life for Every Married Couple*, Zondervan.

**Wright, H. Norman**, *Communication: Keys to Your Marriage*, Regal Books.

**Mayhall, Jack and Carole**, *Opposites Attack*, Nav Press.

#### To understand one's sexuality.

**Dillow, Joseph C.**, *Solomon on Sex*, Thomas Nelson Publishers. 1977.

**Dobson, James**, *What Wives Wish Their Husbands Knew About Women*, Tyndale House Publishers.

**Hocking, David and Carole**, *Romantic Lovers: The Intimate Marriage*, Harvest House Publishers.

**Wheat, Ed.**, *Intended for Pleasure*, Fleming H. Revell Co.

**Wheat, Ed.**, *Love Live for Every Married Couple*, Zondervan.

**Unger, Ken**, *True Sexuality*, Tyndale House Publisher.

## III. DISCIPLINE AS IT PERTAINS TO COUPLES CONSIDERING DIVORCE

### A. Guidelines for discipline issues

#### 1. The local church's responsibility to become involved.

Maintaining the life-directing truth of Scripture is the church's responsibility to her members. In dealing with couples considering divorce or involved in the divorce process, the church must compassionately maintain the Bible's lifestyle standards. But elders must be careful not to regard discipline and compassion as competing truths of Scripture; they cannot exercise Biblical discipline apart from Biblical compassion.

The Westminster Confession states that the church must not leave persons considering divorce "to their own wills, and discretion, in their own case". Such a charge is startling to many in our society. "Mind your own business" is often the response to elders approaching a couple in trouble. Couples may call upon the church

## APPENDICES

to marry them and baptize their children. But problems between a husband and wife are often viewed as a private matter and not the elders' concern.

Such a charge will less likely be laid at the feet of properly trained elders who have been shepherds to their flock. This should begin with education in new members classes. Teach prospective members that their vow to "submit . . . to the government and discipline of the church" means that the elders will be active shepherds, caring for them, even to the point of embracing the fearful responsibility of stepping into problems between husband and wife. Often elders do not want to raise such issues in a new members class for fear of turning inquirers away, or giving them too much "hard doctrine". On the contrary, inquirers should know that they are considering membership in a church where the elders will love them enough to shepherd them in crisis. It is recommended that each church prepare a written membership covenant for new members describing, among other things, Biblical discipline as reflected in the *Book of Church Order*.

Biblical discipline, especially in matters of family strife, must be preceded by time spent with the family in "good" times, praying for them in their homes and sharing time and meals with them. An elder whose first visit to the family's home is to discuss marital strife will be severely hamstrung, if he is allowed to enter the home at all.

Active elder involvement with a family will also increase the likelihood of early elder involvement with problems. Too often the church faces a *fait accompli* by members who have made the decision to dissolve the marriage. Arriving late, the elder must try to get the member to reconsider his or her decision, rather than discussing the problems of the marriage.

Understanding that discipline in the narrow sense of seeking restoration of the marriage must be based upon discipline in the broad sense of compassionate involvement with members' lives, we are now prepared to consider what the church can do when a couple has such marital strife.

### **2. How does the local church become involved?**

How does the couple, or one of them, come to the Session with their marriage problem? Perhaps both spouses will come to an elder and ask for help. If only one spouse comes to the church for help, ask her to encourage her husband to come. But often only one spouse is willing to come to an elder. In such a case, the elder should ask her to write a letter to the Session to request pastoral care and that the elders become involved in her attempts at reconciliation. The Session may then meet with her and attempt to meet with her husband. Or, the Session may choose to appoint a commission of a teaching elder and one or two ruling elders to work with the family and report to the Session, rather than leaving the shepherding to one elder. But, the spouses should not be left to their own wills. If an elder becomes aware that a couple is having marital problems, it is that elder's responsibility to use appropriate, loving means to help the couple.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 3. What if both spouses will talk with an elder?

This is, of course, the best case scenario. If both members are willing to discuss their problems with a teaching or ruling elder, the church can appeal to each with the Word of God. It is not likely, however, that a few meetings with an elder will effectively deal with problems in the relationship. The church must recognize the need of professional counseling by men and women known by the church as understanding that their faith is inextricably woven into their counseling practices. Elders, especially teaching elders, should become familiar with local counselors and spend time with them to understand their approach to dealing with marital problems.

The elder should instruct the couple that, excepting sexual immorality, divorce is not an option for two people professing Christ. While Scripture allows divorce for sexual immorality, it does not command it, nor encourage it. The first priority is to seek forgiveness and reconciliation. Jesus is in the "business" of reconciling people and the church should be about her Savior's business. Husband and wife have the same Lord and have received forgiveness from Christ. How then can one deny the other forgiveness when it is sincerely sought?

The church must proclaim Christ and counsel each spouse regarding his or her sin against God. Forgiveness should start with repentance of the sin precipitating the crisis. Too often the church is willing to deal with the immediate sin (e.g. adultery, wife-beating) without asking God to expose other sins in the relationship. Such matters are hard to consider and require time and prayer by elders and counselors. But unless the couple recognizes and repents of sin in the relationship, the problems will reoccur.

The church should stand ready to assist the couple in other ways. The elders should guard against the couple withdrawing from fellowship in the church. Their friends may need to encourage them and make special efforts to include the couple in fellowship. If counseling is needed by money scarce, the church must find a way to help the couple pay. If the problem is physical abuse, a temporary home may be needed for one of the spouses.

### 4. What if one spouse refuses to talk with an elder?

This is a common situation. One spouse makes his decision apart from, or in spite of, elder involvement and separates and files for divorce. There are concurrent steps the church should take with each spouse.

#### a. For the spouse who will talk with an elder

First, the elders must counsel patience. Too often a spouse is willing to initiate legal process when she can and should wait.

Second, the elders must carefully approach the question of delving beneath the precipitating cause of the divorce to the underlying issues. The elders cannot allow themselves to be used by one spouse seeking the condemnation of the other's sin, while refusing to acknowledge, in most cases, some responsibility for the crisis. The elders



## APPENDICES

may face a member whose conduct evidences relief that the other spouse has committed a sin that allows the member to initiate divorce proceedings without guilt. The elders must exercise discretion and not allow themselves to be manipulated.

If the wife is the spouse willing to meet with the elders, she may feel intimidated as the only woman in the meeting. A godly woman friend could be encouraged to attend the meeting with the wife, or the elders can encourage her to bring her counselor to the meetings for support and assistance.

Third, the Session must make a judgment as to each spouse's willingness to seek reconciliation and which spouse, if any, has Biblical grounds to initiate dissolution of the marriage. If the Session determines that formal discipline is mandated, the *Book of Church Order* must be followed closely. Also, the church must make clear to the offended spouse and *to the rest of the church* that she is a member in good standing and should be supported by the church.

Fourth, the church should be ready to recommend legal counsel to the spouse. If the husband leaves, the wife should be able to talk to a lawyer to be sure she understands the demands and limits of divorce laws. Godly legal counsel can help her avoid steps that make reconciliation more difficult. But the elders should understand that the courts will grant a spouse's request to dissolve the marriage; present law in the various states requires scant, if any, ground for divorce. "Contesting a divorce" actually means contesting the arrangements regarding the children or finances, not whether the court will grant a divorce.

Fifth, diaconal ministry may be needed. Often a wife begins legal process for the very practical reason that her husband refuses financial support while they are living apart. Family members should be encouraged to help. If family assistance is insufficient, the church should consider whether financial assistance for living expenses can be provided to allow the wife to avoid initiating legal process during the period when attempts are being made by the church to reclaim her husband. Other appropriate assistance may include finding a home for a battered wife, assisting with child care and finding employment. Above all, elders should encourage church members to reach out to, not withdraw from, those facing divorce.

### **b. For the spouse who will not talk with an elder.**

First, every effort must be made to reclaim him. The elders must try to get the member to talk with them following Jesus' guidance of Matthew 18 in resolving disputes within the church if the member is contumacious. The same approach can be made with a non-member. The Session may want to appoint a commission to attempt to talk with the member and report to the Session and to institute formal disciplinary procedures as necessary.

There may be other church members whose aid can be enlisted by the elders. Let the member know that the elders want to hear both sides of the problem and that underlying issues will be explored. This can be done without excusing sin. If the elders are perceived by the member to have "taken sides" with the other spouse,

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

communication will be impossible. The member may refuse the first attempt to talk, but the elders must not be satisfied with an "obligatory" attempt. Be persistent.

If the spouse refuses any communication with the elders, then the church should write to the unwilling spouse of their concerns. Tell the spouse that the elders want to help the couple explore the problems of the marriage and recommend a counselor, if needed. Offer, if appropriate and the church is capable, to pay for counseling. Admonish the spouse that divorce will lead to grievous consequences for the couple, their children and even their children's children. Straight talk about sin and the reality of divorce is called for. Explain the financial hardship of running two homes on an income probably stretched to run one, the effects on the children and parents of weekend visitation, and the loneliness of holidays without the children. Advise the unwilling member of possible formal disciplinary actions if he does not seek healing of the marital difficulties.

### 5. What if the elders pursue formal discipline?

Elders should be familiar with the provisions in the *Book of Church Order* regarding discipline and they should be aware of actions which could invite a lawsuit. If the Session determines that formal discipline is required, the *Book of Church Order* must be followed closely. This committee commends to each Session for careful consideration the following advice given by James E. Ostenson:

- "1. Of the numerous lawsuits that have been filed by disciplined church members and church staff, there have been four primary causes:
  - a. Inconsistency by a church in exercising discipline -- disciplining some, while ignoring the discipline of others.
  - b. Abuses by churches of the discipline process -- spreading gossip, failing to follow established procedures, etc.
  - c. Failure by churches to communicate with members about the role of discipline in the life of the church, so that members do not know in advance that they may be subject to discipline.
  - d. Society's emphasis on the rights of the individual.
2. There is no guaranteed method of avoiding a lawsuit, but the following are recommendations for churches in practicing church discipline:
  - a. Give notice that the church practices discipline
    - (1) In church bylaws
    - (2) In formal written membership covenants
    - (3) As part of church membership training - provide a written Biblical statement as part of membership materials
    - (4) As a subject of preaching and teaching
  - b. Make sure the church is consistent in its practice of discipline, even when a potential case is particularly awkward.

## APPENDICES

- c. Determine the church's disciplinary procedures in advance of needing to use them. In the Presbyterian Church in America, the *Book of Church Order* covers all essential procedures. Be sure officers are familiar with the steps outlined there, and that they study them thoroughly before beginning a disciplinary matter.
- d. In handling a disciplinary case, stress accuracy. Basing actions on assumptions and impressions will lead to trouble.
- e. If legal action is threatened by the member charged consult a Christian attorney to review the procedures the church is following before proceeding.
- f. Limit the "audience" to the "community of interest". Unnecessary publication of the disciplinary matter is unethical and can lead to lawsuits. The *Book of Church Order* gives church courts discretion as to public announcements of church discipline. If the court decides to announce the discipline to the membership, the following are recommended guidelines:
  - (1) Hold a closed congregational meeting. Ask all visitors to leave.
  - (2) Read a brief statement from the Session which has been written ahead of time and deals with the case only generally, not in specific detail. Do not mention other individuals, who, while perhaps involved in the matter, were not members of the church subject to discipline.
  - (3) Discreetly tape record the meeting so there is a record of what was said. Also keep a copy of the written statement that was read.
  - (4) After reading a brief statement which focuses on Biblical reasons for the discipline, lead the congregation in prayer for the individual(s) involved and the church as a whole. Be sure that the scope of information disclosed is limited. It is not necessary to identify the specific sin involved -- a reference to "unrepentant sin" might suffice.
- g. Make certain there are no written announcements regarding the disciplinary matter. Never mention church discipline in a church newsletter or bulletin. Even a letter sent out to church members could potentially get into the hands of a non-member and could lead to a charge of "invasion of privacy" or one of the other claims being used by those suing their church.
- h. Maintain an attitude of planning your procedures in advance rather than just reacting to problems that develop. In the care of Christ's Church, there will inevitably be difficulties, but He will honor efforts to maintain the purity of His Bride.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- i. More than anything else, do church discipline "by the Book". Follow Scripture and the *Book of Church Order* meticulously. Many problems in discipline cases can be traced to church officers getting creative and ignoring established procedures."

Proceed slowly. No deadline need be immediately imposed and, although the uncertainty and pain of separation for the remaining spouse is great, the church must counsel patience. Allow time for the Holy Spirit to work in both spouses.

### B. Resources.

#### 1. Books

**Baker, Don**, *Beyond Forgiveness - The Healing Touch of Church Discipline*, Mulnomah Press.

**Buzzard, Lynn** and Lawrence Eck, *Tell It To The Church*, David C. Cook Publishing Company.

**Elliott, Elizabeth**, *Discipline, The Glad Surrender*, Revell.

**Gage, Joy P. & Kenneth G.**, *Restoring Fellowship*, Moody Press.

**MacNair, Donald J.**, *Restoration God's Way*, Great Commission Publications.

**Schaeffer, Francis A.**, *The Church Before the Watching World*, Inter Varsity.

**White, John and Blue, Ken**, *Healing the Wounds, The Costly Love of Church Discipline*, Inter-Varsity.

**Wray, Daniel E.**, *Biblical Church Discipline*, The Banner of Truth Trust.

#### 2. Pamphlets

**Buzzard, Lynn**, "Readiness For Reconciliation, A Biblical Guide", published by the Christian Conciliation Service, a ministry of the Christian Legal Society, P.O. Box 2059, Oak Park, IL 60303.

**Cassity, C. Fred**, Chairman of Mediation/Arbitration Subcommittee, Christian Legal Society, "The Resolution Of Disputes Between Christians", published by the Christian Legal Society, P.O. Box 2069, Oak Park, IL 60303.

**Gilchrist, Paul**, editor, *Divorce And Remarriage*, Documents of Synod, RPCES, p. 199.

## IV. PASTORAL CARE AND COUNSEL OF THOSE SEEKING REMARRIAGE

### A. Understanding the person seeking remarriage

#### 1. Know the times

Scripture tells us to know the times. We are to understand our culture, the change, and the people who respond to those factors. With first-time marriages ending in divorce at a fifty percent (50%) rate and second marriages failing at a much higher rate,

## APPENDICES

the church cannot avoid the resulting issues and problems. One issue is the fact that people will seek remarriage. These couples will approach the church, will seek counsel of the pastor, and will ask to be married.

The church will have to give spiritual direction to these people, minister to the families of the divorced, and make biblical decisions concerning the remarriage of a growing number of people. It is, therefore, incumbent upon the church and the local pastor to be aware of the times, to seek knowledge of the issues involved, and to make the Bible relevant to the life and struggle of the divorced.

### 2. Know the people

When one or more of the parties seeking to be remarried approaches the church to perform the ceremony, the pastor or counselor should be aware of the tensions, struggles, anxieties, and euphoria that may be taking place in the once-married party.

#### a. The emotional state

Depending upon the person and the length of time he or she has been divorced, the party desiring remarriage may be experiencing the following emotions which the pastor must somehow help the party work through, come to acceptance of, and apply biblical solutions to.

##### (1) Euphoria

The party may be on an emotional high. He or she may see the future spouse as God's special gift to him or her and an answer to prayer and to the frustrations of single life. Elated with the prospect of remarriage, the person may become blinded to issues he or she never dealt with in the previous marriage. The party may become numb to his or her own faults and the faults of his potential partner. Such numbness is a failure to realize that marriage is to be a reflection of Christ's marriage to His church. As a reflection, earthly marriage is to become a Christ-centered institution with each party seeking to love the Savior more by ministering his love to the other.

##### (2) Anxiety

The once married person may be experiencing anxiety. He or she was emotionally hurt in the first marriage and is a bit ambivalent to proceed with another. This person may feel pressured into this marriage by the future spouse who has dreamed of a blessed relationship for some time. Anxiety may indicate that the person has not completely worked through the process of loss (divorce being a loss), has not adequately "deconstructed" his prior marriage to come face to face with his own faults, has entered his present relationship too quickly after divorce, or is not entirely convinced he or she should be remarried. A formerly married person should not become seriously involved in another relationship until at least two (2) years have passed since the divorce was final or since the death of a former spouse.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### (3) Fear

The formerly married party may be experiencing fear which makes it hard for us to take the next step. He or she may fear falling into the old patterns of the past that contributed to the prior divorce. Or the fear may be directed at the future spouse becoming like the former. Or the fear may have to do with being a step-parent, an absentee parent, or a parent of a blended family. These are normal fears that need to be resolved, faced, or accepted.

### (4) Anger

Anger is a common emotion seen in the formerly married. This emotion may be overt or held inside. If inside, bitterness may take root, and bitterness is like an acid that eats the container (the person) from the inside out. The anger or bitterness may be directed at the former spouse or in-laws because of a hotly contested divorce, disagreement over parental right and responsibilities, or personally inflicted innuendos and emotional pain. It is important for the formerly married to attempt at least a reconciliation of friendship. If bitterness is involved, the party should ask for forgiveness of the bitterness even if it is provoked by the former spouse.

### (5) Guilt

The formerly married may still be carrying guilt from the former marriage. Now walking more closely with the Lord, he or she may have been convicted of past sins, faults, and unkindnesses. He or she may see remarriage as the opportunity to make amends for past sins. But this is not a reason for marriage. The person needs to confess the sins causing the guilt, seek forgiveness from the party he hurt, and attempt at least a reconciliation of friendship.

### (6) Stubbornness

This is more of an attitude than a feeling, but the pastor should be aware that some formerly married people will not care what the church says. He or she is here to be remarried, the church has no business in his or her former life, and no one can require him or her to submit to counseling. This person is basically present in the church or in the pastor's office by the request of the future spouse. A contumacious behavior is sinful and must be confronted with loving discipline if the person is a member of the church. If not, the church should counsel the future spouse, who is a member, about its concerns and beliefs that marriage is not appropriate at this time.

#### b. The cognitive state

The tendency of the formerly married will be to make decisions based upon one or more of the above emotional states. Good cognitive judgment based upon scriptural principles gets clouded by the emotions. God created mankind to emote, to experience the entire range of emotions. If man has been created with emotions, emotions are, therefore, good. But one definition of evil is the abuse, misuse, or perversion of anything good. In man's fallen state emotions are easily abused and misused. And

## APPENDICES

because people feel intensely and desire to feel good, they will tend to make choices based upon how they feel or what they desire to feel.

The pastoral counselor should recognize the tendency, point out areas where choices were made based on feelings, and direct his counselees to Scripture in order to think God's thoughts and make choices based on God's will.

### c. The relational state

All human beings were created to relate to God and to each other. Their motivational thirsts for security and significance were to be satisfied in God and his design for His creation. Man and woman were created to complete and complement each other - to give each other a soul oneness. Since the Fall, this oneness has been disrupted. The thirst for security and significance became misdirected. Sin entered the world and self-centeredness became the norm. Men and women still want security and significance, but sin causes them to seek it by illegitimate means, i.e., not through God's constructed order.

A formerly married person may see the future spouse as filling the void which he or she has been experiencing. A man may see his future wife as providing the significance he needs. Or a woman may view her future husband as satisfying the security she desires. Now, there is nothing wrong with having security and significance in a marriage, but if these thirsts are sought to be satisfied outside of the Main Thirst Quencher, God, they will never be fully satisfied.

Relationship, therefore, has to be first established with the One who is the fountain of living waters and secondly, with people who are at times God's vessels to carry His thirst-quenching water to those seeking the oasis of life in a second marriage. The formerly married (as well as all of us) may have the tendency to be focused more on the human relationship and not on his or her relationship with Christ Jesus.

### 3. Know the ministry

When a formerly married person approaches the pastor in order to be remarried, the pastor is encouraged to seek understanding of the emotional state of such a person, how he or she may come to the decision of remarriage and how the pull to relate with another may cloud his or her relationship with the Savior. The pastor is the shepherd of his people and must know his sheep. As difficult as it may seem, the shepherd is to have an understanding of counseling his sheep. If he doesn't, he must seek training, have others in his congregation aid in the shepherding (and train them), or refer to people skilled in the field of counseling.

The pastor is a busy man. His job is to equip the saints for ministry, but he can't equip if he has never been equipped himself. More and more people will seek to be remarried. The pastor is the first person to whom they will come. If he is not equipped to minister to them, to make the Bible relevant to the issues they face, he must seek to be equipped by reading various resources, attending appropriate seminars, or bringing in an expert to teach him and his congregation.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### B. Guidelines for remarriage

The local Session should establish its guidelines for remarriage. The position the church takes will clear up much confusion about the possibility of remarriage. The couple approaching the pastor for marriage can be handed a set of guidelines. The pastor can explain that the Session has made this a policy of the church. This will take pressure off him if there is a question about marrying the couple. The pastor should not be left in a position where he is the sole determinant in the remarriage of a couple. The following are suggested guidelines for remarriage which a local Session can adopt, modify, or just use as a reference.

1. Where the former spouse is deceased, remarriage is permitted. *Romans 7:2* "For the married woman is bound by law to her husband while he is living; but if her husband dies, she is released from the law concerning the husband."

*I Corinthians 7:39* "A wife is bound as long as her husband lives; but if her husband is dead, she is free to be married to whom she wishes, but only in the Lord."

**Question:** What if one spouse murders the other, serves time, is released and seeks remarriage?

**Answer:** Any question which is not directly covered by Scripture must be answered by reasonable inference or implication taking the whole counsel of God. The Session is responsible for making ecclesiastical decisions where not directly covered by Scripture. It is not the purpose of these guidelines to exegete or to answer every possible situation that may arise.

2. Where divorce occurred prior to one's conversion, remarriage may be permitted if the Session or its representative(s) after investigation and interview determines the following:
  - a. That the person in question is born-again and, therefore, a new creation, and
  - b. That attempts at reconciliation have been made with the former spouse according to biblical guidelines.

**Reasoning:**

- (1) *II Corinthians 5:17* "Therefore, if any man is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old things passed away; behold, new things have come".
  - (a) When a person has experienced the new birth, all sin is forgiven and all condemnation removed (*Romans 8:1*).
  - (b) Therefore, divorce prior to conversion doesn't preclude a remarriage to a Christian mate.



## APPENDICES

(c) Similarly, conversion does not necessarily require remarriage to a former spouse.

(2) **Reasoning:** Jesus is in the ministry of reconciliation. We, his disciples, should reflect his ministry. Furthermore, repentance ('shuv') has the element of returning and going back in the opposite direction. This direction is back toward relationship with the offended party, vertically with God and horizontally with people. The church, therefore, should strongly encourage a healing of any difficulties with a former spouse.

3. Where the Session or its representatives has determined that the divorce had occurred on Scriptural grounds, remarriage is permitted for the offended party.

Matthew 19:9 *"And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife, except for immorality, and marries another commits adultery."*

I Corinthians 7:15 *"Yet if the unbelieving one leaves, let him leave; and brother or sister is not under bondage in such cases; but God has called us to peace."*

4. Where a former spouse has remarried and the Session or its representatives is convinced that the parties seeking remarriage are born-again, remarriage is permitted.

**Reasoning:** Regardless of the reasons for the divorce or who was the offending party, if remarriage has occurred, the marital union is permanently broken. Marriage could never occur between the parties (Deuteronomy 24:1-4). Reconciliation is, therefore, impossible and the remaining former partner is eligible to remarry.

5. Where a person seeking remarriage has caused his or her prior marriage to end in divorce on non-biblical grounds, remarriage may be permitted if the Session or its representatives upon investigation and interview determines the following:

- a. The former spouse has remarried or refuses to reconcile the marriage; and
- b. He or she demonstrates genuine and heartfelt repentance over an extended period of time; and
- c. The Session is reasonably convinced that the person seeking remarriage and the future spouse are born-again; and
- d. The person seeking remarriage has submitted to counseling with an approved counselor of the Session's choosing.

**NOTE:** Please refer to the Biblical discussion on divorce and remarriage in Matthew 19:9.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

6. Where a "professing Christian" spouse has left his or her spouse, the offended party may seek a divorce and remarry only after the Session or its representatives has determined the following:
  - a. Reconciliation is impossible because of the contumacious behavior of the offending spouse and discipline under the guidelines of Matthew 18 and the *Book of Church Order* has been prosecuted to its conclusion; and
  - b. The Session has ecclesiastically decided to treat the offending spouse as an unbeliever (Matthew 18:17).

**NOTE:** If the "professing spouse" obtained a divorce on unbiblical grounds, the above determinants would also apply. Also, please read the biblical section on the exegesis of I Corinthians 7:10-15 for further aid, clarification, and understanding.

### **C. Concerns of those in the congregation who have been divorced**

1. Will a divorced person be allowed to participate in various activities and service opportunities in the church?

**Answer:** Divorce should never preclude opportunities to be involved in the church. As far as service opportunities are concerned, spiritual, psychological and relational maturity as well as giftedness are the primary requisites. The Session will have to make the evaluations on a case by case basis. A person's divorce may be considered as only one part of the evaluation process. The primary consideration should be the person's reputation in the church and the local community, not his or her divorce.

2. Will there be a stigma placed upon a divorced person?

**Answer:** Stigmas are the result of individual biases. The Session should do all it can to remove any stigma. It should attempt to assimilate divorced people into its membership by involvement on Sunday morning, explaining who they are, the difficulties they have and the need for the church to accept them openly and warmly into the fellowship.

### **D. Practical considerations for ministering to those contemplating remarriage**

1. Require the couple to submit to pre-marital counseling which should cover the following subjects:
  - a. A frank discussion of the prior marriage and pitfalls.

## APPENDICES

**Reasoning:** Before a new marriage is attempted, the person seeking remarriage should "deconstruct" his prior marriage. He or she needs to break it apart, face the old issues and patterns, and confront the person he or she was and may still be. This is a painful process, but if a new relationship is to last, the former married must analyze his or her former way of thinking and responding to an unpleasant situation. Such an activity and process will also help the person work through any grief process not yet completed. Divorce is a loss. It is a heart-wrenching experience that needs a time of healing in order to bring one to acceptance of the divorce, of the finalization of a relationship, and of oneself as being okay in the economy of God (if God's forgiveness is obtained). Because this process is no easy task and because working through grief takes time, it is recommended that a divorced person refrain from further entangling relationships for at least two years. Another serious relationship soon after divorce will retard the process of healing and working through the issues of the former marriage.

b. An honest discussion on sexuality

**Reasoning:** Men and women really don't know each other. There needs to be teaching and understanding on how each sex views the other, what stimulates the other, how to please each other in the love act. If over 50% of women are not experiencing orgasm, then something drastically is wrong. And what is wrong is usually the inability or the ignorance of the male to make love properly. A more literal study and understanding of the Song of Solomon would be very beneficial.

c. A look at personalities and temperaments

**Reasoning:** Personality testing (like the Myers/Briggs Test) should be given with proper and adequate explanation to follow. God has created us all differently. If we are to minister properly to our spouse, we need to know his or her personality. We are commanded by Scripture to understand our spouse. Testing is a tool which aids us in this endeavor.]

Temperament testing (like the Taylor/Johnson Temperament Analysis) helps the couple to see areas of weakness, compatibility and potential problems in dispute resolution.

Either a pastor will have to be trained to give and interpret these tests or he will have to ask a local counselor to perform the task.

d. An in-depth look at biblical responsibilities

**Reasoning:** It is astonishing how little married couples know about their biblical responsibilities and their roles as husband or wife. It is the responsibility of the church to teach each party what their biblical job description is and how to accomplish it. For instance, what does it mean

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

for a husband to love his wife as Christ loved the church? Or what is the meaning of biblical submission?

- e. A teaching on the different kinds of love that must be practiced in marriage

**Reasoning:** If you were to ask the average person to give you a definition of love, he or she would invariably describe something that had the concept of caring for another. Well, that is partially correct, but when we read the Scripture in its original languages, we discover many words for love, each having a different meaning. How do these words relate to marriage? If a marriage is to last, the parties need to be loving in a number of different ways.

- f. A teaching of vows

**Reasoning:** People in this society have not taken commitments seriously. A broken promise is not a big thing to people. But it is to God. People who are seeking remarriage have taken vows before, but the everlasting nature of them was not fulfilled. What makes this "go-round" any different? The seriousness of taking a vow before God must be stressed.

- g. A discussion, teaching, and practice of communication

**Reasoning:** The biggest complaint of spouses is a lack of communication. "My husband just doesn't listen to me", complains the wife. "Oh, yeah," responds the husband, "She doesn't understand me". Pastors and counselors must teach the skills of communication as well as establish for his counselees ground rules for good healthy arguments.

- h. An honest discussion of the problems that normally occur in blended families

**Reasoning:** Remarriage often brings two families together. One spouse becomes the step-parent to the other's children. Occasionally, there is a mixture of children from both parents living under the same roof. Such a situation produces a new dynamic and creates additional tensions and problems.

- i. Encouragement to reconcile a friendship with the former spouse

**Reasoning:** Although remarriage to a former spouse may be impossible, the party seeking remarriage needs to attempt a reconciliation of friendship with the former spouse. Friendship may never be attained, but the attempt should be made. The purpose for such an act is to complete the process of healing the loss occurred in divorce,

## APPENDICES

to complete any process of forgiveness still needed, and to benefit the children if there are any.

**NOTE:** There are other subjects which undoubtedly should be covered. However, the process of preparing a person for remarriage is not a quick and easy one. A pastor may not have the time nor the skills. He should either solicit help, refer to a biblical counselor, or be adequately trained to counsel.

2. Give the parties a spiritual gifts test.

**Reasoning:** This allows them to discover their spiritual gifts, helps them to see in what way God has graced them, and gives them direction in the areas of their use to the church. Once tested, plug them into the appropriate ministry in your church.

3. Place them in a small group (preferably a group with the same or similar affinities).

**Reasoning:** This helps to assimilate them into the church and fosters acceptance within the church community.

4. Encourage them to participate in Sunday School and various church functions.

**Reasoning:** This helps them to feel part of the church body and aids in removing any stigma they may feel as being formerly married.

5. Once the person is remarried, introduce the person and the new spouse one Sunday morning as newly married.

**Reasoning:** It helps complete the process of assimilation into the church membership. It shows the members that the leadership supports the couple. It aids in the removal of stigma caused by the prior divorce. It enhances the couple's acceptance by the local church body.

### E. Resources

1. Personnel

- a. A local counselor may do the counseling and/or administer the testing required. Prior to use of or referral to any counselor, determine the counselor's approach to therapy. Find out where and how the Bible fits into the counselor's philosophy of therapy. If you disagree or have reservations, do not refer to that counselor.

- b. Experts may help to train the pastor and the lay people to do counseling.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 2. Seminars

- a. IBC (Institute of Biblical Counseling)  
Dr. Larry Crabb and Dr. Dan Allender  
16075 W. Belleview Avenue  
Morrison, CO 80465  
(303) 697-5425
- b. A.P.P.L.E. Training (Active People Preparing to Love and Encourage)  
Dr. Robert D. Stuart  
7433 NW 4th Street  
Plantation, FL 33317-2204
- c. Love is a Decision  
Gary Smalley and Dr. John Trent  
Today's Family
- d. Family Life Conference, A Weekend to Remember  
A Ministry of Campus Crusade for Christ International  
Family Ministry  
P.O. Box 23840  
Little Rock, AR 72221-3840  
(501) 223-8663

### 3. Books

#### To have a better understanding of biblical anthropology:

**Crabb, Lawrence.** *Understanding People.* Grand Rapids: Ministry Resource Library, a division of Zondervan Publishing House, 1977.  
**Crabb, Lawrence.** *Inside Out.* Colorado Springs: Nav Press, 1988.

#### To gain insight in counseling couples for marriage and remarriage:

**Stohman, Robert F. and Hiebert, William J.** *Premarital Counseling,* Lexington, Massachusetts: Lexington Books, D. C. Heath and Company, 1980.  
**Wright, H. Norman.** *Premarital Counseling,* Chicago: Moody Press, 1977.

#### To help determine if a person has gone through steps of reconciliation:

**Jones, John Edward.** *Reconciliation.* Minneapolis; Bethany House Publishers, 1984  
**Talley, Jim.** *Reconciliation Differences.* Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1991.

## APPENDICES

### To build a biblical marriage:

**Crabb, Lawrence.** *The Marriage Builder.* Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980.

**Dobson, James C.** *Straight Talk to Men and Their Wives.* Waco, Texas: Word Books, 1980.

**Groom, Nancy.** *Married Without Masks.* Colorado Springs: Nav Press, 1989.

**Smalley, Gary.** *If Only He Knew.* Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1982.

**Wheat, Ed.** *Love Life for Every Married Couple.* Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980.

**Wright, H. Norman.** *Communication: Key to Your Marriage.* Ventura: Regal Books, 1974.

**Mayhall, Jack and Carole.** *Opposites Attack.* Colorado Springs: Nav Press, 1990.

### To understand one's sexuality:

**Dillow, Joseph C.** *Solomon on Sex.* New York and Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, Inc., 1977.

**Dobson, James.** *What Wives Wish Their Husbands Knew About Women.* Wheaton: Tyndale House Publishers, 1985.

**Hocking, David and Carole.** *Romantic Lovers: The Intimate Marriage.* Eugene, OR: Harvest House Publishers, 1986.

**Wheat, Ed.** *Intended for Pleasure.* Old Tappan, NJ: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1981

**Wheat, Ed.** *Love Life for Every Married Couple.* Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980.

**Unger, Ken.** *True Sexuality.* Wheaton: Tyndale House Publisher, Inc., 1987.

### To understand the single parent:

**Barnes, Robert G. Jr.** *Single Parenting.* Wheaton: Tyndale House publishers, Inc., 1988.

**Smoke, Jim.** *Living Beyond Divorce, The Possibilities of Remarriage.* Eugene, Oregon: Harvest House Publishers, 1984.

**Mowday, Lois** *The Snare.* Colorado Springs: Nav Press. 1988.

**Brown, Michael A.** *Second Class Christians? A New Approach to the Dilemma of Divorced People in the Church.* Downers Grove: Intervarsity Press, 1989.

### To understand personality:

**Lawrence, Gordon.** *People Types and Tiger Stripes.* Gainesville, Florida: Center for Applications of Psychological Type, Inc., 1982.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Keirsey, David. *Portraits of Temperament*. Del Mar, California: Prometheus Nemesis Book Co., 1987

Keirsey, David and Bates, Marilyn. *Please Understand Me*. Del Mar, California: Prometheus Nemesis Books, 1978.

### V. PASTORAL CARE AND COUNSEL OF THE CHILDREN OF DIVORCED PARENTS

#### A. Understanding the child of divorced parents

##### 1. Know the times

The single-parent family is the most rapidly growing family form in America. Since 1960 the female-headed family has doubled and is outgrowing the typical husband-wife family at a rate of two and a half times faster. One out of every five school age children lives in a single parent household. Furthermore, it has been estimated that as many as fifty percent (50%) of all children born in the next ten years will experience the loss of a parent (mostly the father) through divorce. For most of the affected children, divorce will be experienced as a personal, familial, and social loss.

Since remarriage is quite common within a few years, these children will be faced with still more emotional struggles - the remarriage of a parent, the living with a step-parent, and/or the living in a blended family (i.e., a family with children from two or more different families).

Pre-marital counseling of those seeking remarriage should, therefore, include frank discussions of the potential or present problems that children will or may be experiencing. Most remarriages have not given adequate consideration to the psychological, social, or familial effects upon the children. Since most pastors are not and will never be experts in the counseling of children, it is recommended that a child psychologist or similar expert be solicited to help counsel children and instruct the couple seeking remarriage of the present or potential problems that such a remarriage may expect.

##### 2. Know the People

It is not the intent of this committee's report to make pastors experts on children of divorced parents. A pastor is wise to seek aid and assistance from those whose ministries are directed toward children and adolescents. What the pastor should understand is the various emotional states that such children may experience in order to properly counsel the parent and to determine if the child needs help.

Children have little or no say in the divorce of their parents. Yet the hurt they must endure is enormous. They are not as resilient as the modern-day libertines would have us believe. Studies are showing that the emotional scars from the trauma still remain years later. The following are some reactions and feelings by children to the divorce of their parents.



## APPENDICES

### a. Resentment

Since they feel the tension and experience the turmoil of divorce, children tend to become resentful toward one or more parents and/or toward God. They may think, "Why did they bring me into the world? I didn't ask to be born? Why didn't God do something to bring my Daddy back? It isn't fair". Or they resent the new step-parent who tries to fill the shoes of the lost parent. They may think, "Look, I didn't ask for him to be my father. You picked him out. I don't have to like him or even cooperate with him".

### b. Anger

Anger is a little stronger than resentment. Bitterness could be taking root. Older children may experience this more deeply and act it out with behavior that is obnoxious, unkind, inconsiderate, stubborn, and at times violent.

### c. Guilt

Some children tend to blame themselves for their parents' failure. They may have heard their name called out in an argument or felt the angered look of a parent and took it personally. They may have thought it was their stubborn or disobedient behavior that caused a fight which eventually ended in divorce. Small children are especially tender and susceptible to taking the heavy burden of the marriage failure on their own shoulders.

### d. Fear

A child's emotional and economic security is shattered by the breakup of his parents. He becomes fearful of the future. "Will I see Daddy anymore? Will I be loved? Where will we live? What about my friends?" are all questions that may arise. The best security a child has are two loving parents who nurture him to the point of facing the world alone. Divorce fractures this and thrusts the child into a cold and cruel world before he is ready. One parent can never give the total security a child needs. And so fear can easily enter the child's psyche.

### e. Depression

Experiencing the collapse of his familial world, the child can sink into depression. If his own little world (the family system) couldn't protect him, what can? The child may look at himself as worthless. "If I were a better or different kid, Dad would have stayed", he may think. His self-worth is lowered, and positive reinforcement can't come from the parent from whom he needs it most -- the parent who isn't there. Fear may also contribute to the depression. Older children may develop a fear of commitment (They saw betrayal.) or fear of falling in love (They saw a bad result.) or a fear of making decisions (They saw wrong ones made.). All these emotions add to the withdrawal of the child into himself, and then he becomes a prime candidate for depression which may even lead to suicide.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### f. Lack of love

Children almost always feel the loss of love when their parents divorce, even when one parent is showering them with affection and consoling them with the loss of the other parent. Children innately know that love does not walk away from personal responsibility. When the leaving parent says, "I love you and always will," the affected child sees these words as hollow. What he is thinking is, "Oh yeah, if you really loved me, you would work this out with mommy." Love seeks answers, not excuses, and either parent usually comes up with excuses.

In the same manner, when a parent wants to remarry, the child could be thinking, "If she really loved me, she wouldn't marry him, or she would ask Daddy back, or she wouldn't want to bring him into our little nest."

### g. Loss

Children of divorced parents may feel cheated. They experience loss -- of companionship of a parent, of celebrating holidays together, of establishing family traditions, of family structure, of economic stability, of normal existence. One teenager asked her mother a hundred times why she and her father divorced. The answer she kept hearing was, "Everybody is happier this way." Well, this teen wasn't happier. She missed her dad's hugs, the walks in the park with him, the fun times together. Divorce is usually the result of selfishness, and so, because of the self-centeredness of one or more parent, the children suffer loss.

### h. Confusion

Divorce abruptly changes life which causes children to experience confusion and conflict. Not knowing what caused the divorce or what was going on, children are suddenly put in a quandary. This confusion stays with them for a long period of time.

And if a new marriage brings in children from the step-parent, conflict usually results. Children invariably think the step-parent favors his or her own children. They, therefore, feel less love and complain to their natural parent who usually takes their side and speaks to the step-parent, who disagrees. Before you know it, there is turmoil between the parents and the children.

Discipline is another problem area in blended families. One parent has normally not disciplined his or her children as sternly as the other. In fact, he or she may have been quite lax. Now, when the step-dad disciplines his step-children who were not used to the method nor the intensity, the natural mom may complain, demand he not discipline "her" kids, or defend "her" children.

A problem in discipline leads to a problem with authority. A problem with authority leads to confusion and problems in relationships.

## APPENDICES

### i. Being different

Some children feel that they are not like the other kids anymore. They can't do what they used to do. The school may have a "Dad's Day" and Dad isn't there to participate. There may not be any money to participate in a favorite sport or buy the dress for the prom. Older children may have to baby-sit younger ones and, therefore, can't linger with friends after school.

Not only may they feel different, they may feel isolated because of their difference. Because they can't linger with friends, they may not get invited to the special parties or outings or social events. It is not uncommon for these children to feel lonely and helpless.

### 3. Know the ministry

To help single-parents and their children cope with their situation and to foster a better relationship for families of the remarried, the church must provide services and programs that meet the special needs of the children and the parents. Possible programs are single-parent support groups, children's peer support groups, parenting classes, latch-key programs after-school teen activities, counseling referrals, counseling programs, divorce recovery workshops, Pioneer or Awana programs, adult home Bible groups, and service-oriented projects.

Parents have to be encouraged to pursue social and physical activities, especially those that involve peers. The tendency of a single parent is to withdraw because of lack of energy, low motivation, or smothering of the child. Once remarried, the couple needs to be continually active, particularly with other couples.

### **B. Practical considerations for ministering to those contemplating remarriage when children are involved.**

1. Require the person with children to make a list of the problems he or she thinks each child is having at present as a result of the prior divorce or loss of a parent.
  - a. Have the fiance' make a separate list based on his or her observations.
  - b. Compare these lists and bring up other areas of possibilities such as various emotional states of children of divorce.
  - c. Be frank in your discussions because the children are an integral part to remarriage. Remind the future step-parent that when he or she marries the parent, the children are part of the package.
  - d. Suggest methods to overcome some of the problem areas -- which should include the seeking of family counseling.
2. Require the person with children to make a list of potential problems or foreseeable conflicts as a result of this remarriage.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- a. Have the fiance' do the same.
  - b. Compare lists and see how realistic they are.
  - c. Discuss openly the potential problem areas and formulate a plan to prevent them from occurring or to overcome them if they do occur.
3. Require that the children visit with the pastor.
- a. Explore their feelings about the divorce, about their future step-parent, and about their relationship with both natural parents.
  - b. Determine if they need professional counseling.
4. Encourage the parent to have his or her children involved with the church youth programs, including Sunday Schools.
- a. Have the youth leaders monitor their participation and social adaptation.
  - b. Have youth leaders encourage other children to socialize with them.
  - c. Consider establishing a peer counseling program at your church since kids will more readily talk with peers than with adults.
  - d. Encourage your youth leaders to:
    - (1) Visit the child at his or her home.
    - (2) Call the child and let him know he is missed when he is sick or could not attend a youth function. Or send the child a "We missed you" postcard from the youth group.
    - (3) Assure the child that the youth leader is always available to talk.
    - (4) Attend athletic events, special activities, and/or school plays in which the child is involved.
    - (5) Send birthday cards.
    - (6) Demonstrate unconditional love at all times especially when the child is frustrating.
    - (7) Pray daily for the specific needs of the child and ask God for wisdom to touch the life of this child in a unique way.
    - (8) Give the child personal attention outside the normal youth activities. Take him to a ballgame. Go out for ice cream.
  - e. Have the church sponsor after-school programs.
5. Encourage the parent and potential step-parent to participate with the children in various church activities.
6. Encourage the parent to maintain social friendships and participate in fellowship activities without the children.
7. If remarriage is decided upon, have a ceremony which recognizes and includes the step-children. (See suggested Ceremony below.)

## APPENDICES

### C. Resources

#### 1. Personnel

- a. A local counselor could be of great help. Prior to any referral or request for aid, determine the counselor's relationship with Christ, his or her approach to therapy, and how the Bible fits into this approach.
- b. A trained lay person who loves kids, has had experience in ministering to them, and is willing to help them overcome the difficulties in divorce and remarriage should be sought, encouraged, and used in the church's ministry.

#### 2. Ministries

- a. Fresh Start Seminars, Inc.  
751 North Wayne Avenue  
Wayne, PA 19087  
800-882-2799
- b. Dad, The Family Shepherd  
P.O. Box 21445  
Little Rock, AR 72221
- c. Rainbows for All God's Children  
1111 Tower Road  
Schaumburg, IL 60173

#### 3. Books

##### To help understand children of divorce:

**Barr**, Debbie, *Caught in the Crossfire*, Pyranee Books.

**Hart**, Archibald, *Children and Divorce*, Word Publishing.

**Johnson**, Laurence and Rosenfeld, Georglyn, *Divorced Kids*, Thomas Nelson Publishing.

**Wallenstein**, Judith and Blakeslee, *Second Chance*, Ticknor & Fields.

##### To help understand the changed family dynamic:

**Nordtvedt**, Matilda, *Daddy Isn't Coming Home*, Zondervan.

**Spilke**, Francine Susan, *The Family That Changed: A Child's Book About Divorce*, Crown.

**Phillips**, Carolyn E., *Our Family Got Divorced*, Regal Books.

**Danziger**, Paula, *The Divorce Express*, Delacorte Publishing Co.

##### To help children cope:

**Stein**, Sarah Bonnett, *On Divorce: An Open Family Book for Parents and Children Together*, Walker and Co.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**Berger, Terry**, *A Friend Can Help*, Advanced Learning concepts.  
**Rofes, Eric E.**, Editor, *The Kids' Book of Divorce*, Lewis Publishing Co.  
**Berger, Terry**, *How Does It Feel When Your Parents Get Divorced?*  
Julian Messner/Simon and Schuster Publishubg Co.

### D. Addendum:

#### Ceremony For Recognition Of Children At Remarriage

This part of a remarriage ceremony may be inserted after the prayer for blessing the covenantal union and before the lighting of the unity candle. In any event, it should be inserted prior to the declaration of marriage.

#### RECOGNITION OF CHILDREN

**Minister:** The ring(s) that you have exchanged symbolizes the bond and commitment that you \_\_\_\_\_(groom)\_\_\_\_\_ and you \_\_\_\_\_(bride)\_\_\_\_\_ have just made. As we bring praise for the bringing of you two together, we also give thanks for the merging of families. As a result of your union, you \_\_\_\_\_(whichever party is becoming a step-parent to live-in children)\_\_\_\_\_ have committed yourself to rearing \_\_\_\_\_(children's name)\_\_\_\_\_ in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. As an Israelite was to take in his deceased brother's family and raise the children within his own family environment, so, too, have you agreed to take in as your own the child of \_\_\_\_\_(groom or bride)\_\_\_\_\_.

**BRING CHILDREN FORWARD** (Young ones may be carried by grandparents or close friends.)

**Minister:** As part of the family which the bonds of matrimony have united, we recognize \_\_\_\_\_(children) \_\_\_\_\_ and the significant role he/she/they play(s) in this marriage today celebrated. The love and the hope which God sends to you through the gift of children find expression in Psalm 127:3-5.

Behold, children are a gift of the Lord;  
The fruit of the womb is a reward.  
Like arrows in the hand of a warrior,  
So are the children on one's youth.  
How blessed is the man whose quiver is full of them;  
They shall not be ashamed,  
When they speak with their enemies in the gate.

## APPENDICES

### EXPLANATION OF THE MEDALLION \*

**Minister:** I understand you, \_\_\_(groom)\_\_\_ and you, \_\_\_(bride)\_\_\_ have a medallion to present to \_\_\_(children)\_\_\_\_. The medallion has engraved upon it three intertwined circles which represent the linkage of all members of this family into a bond of love. It also depicts the way in which children are a part of the family unit -- not alone or separated from their parent and step-parent, but an integral part of a relationship which begins today. Each time \_\_\_(children)\_\_\_ look(s) upon the medallion, he/she could be reminded of the love both parents have for him/her.

### PRESENTATION OF THE FAMILY MEDALLION (OR NECKLACE)

**Minister:** Do you \_\_\_(groom)\_\_\_ and you \_\_\_(bride)\_\_\_ now wish to present a family medallion (or necklace) to \_\_\_(children)\_\_\_ as a symbol for family unity and \_\_\_(children's name)\_\_\_ love?

Bride and Groom: "We do."

**Minister:** Take the medallion(s) [or necklace(s)] from the Best Man and place it (them) upon each child repeating after me these words in unison:

Bride and Groom: (repeat after minister):

"We pledge our continuing love for you \_\_\_(name)\_\_\_, \_\_\_(name)\_\_\_, and we promise to cherish you/ and to hold you close to our hearts./ We promise to raise you/ in the nurture and admonition of the Lord/ and to give you the security/ of a family in Christ."

### PRAYER FOR THE FAMILY

(Have children remain standing -- some with the Best Man and some with Bridesmaids. When the couple is presented and they leave to proceed from the church, have the children follow after them and the wedding party after the children.)

### SPECIAL MUSIC (optional)

**NOTE:** Proceed to part of service that has the lighting of the Unity Candle.

\* Medallion information: Rev. Roger Coleman, % The Westport Allen Center, 706 West 42nd Street, Kansas City, MO 64111, (816) 753-3886

## VI. The Church's Ministry to the Separated and Divorced

### A. Understanding the separated and divorced

#### 1. Know the times

The single parent family is the fastest growing in the United States. During the past two decades, the single parent household, i.e., the separated or divorced has increased at a rate 2 1/2 times that of a two-parent family. Along with the rapid growth has come an awareness that single mothers are experiencing a considerable amount of emotional and psychological stress. Added to these stresses are the anxieties felt from rejection in the churches. The separated and divorced have complained about being treated as second class citizens in the family of God.

The church will have to give both spiritual direction to these people, minister to them and their children, and give practical wisdom to them for coping with life's struggles.

#### 2. Know the people

##### a. The emotional state

The separated and divorced person experiences many varied emotions, some of which are similar in description as those listed in Section IV. A. 2. a. (Pastoral Care and Counsel of Those Seeking Remarriage), but different in intensity. For example, fear and anxiety are quite prevalent and attack the single parent in an acute way. Fear of the future, what will happen next, whether happiness will ever occur are haunting thoughts which can paralyze the individual. Fear of loneliness and not being accepted by former friends or church members may preoccupy the separated. The tendency will be to make choices based upon these fears and not upon good cognitive judgment. Wanting to feel secure and significant will lead them to wrong decisions and inappropriate friendships.

##### b. The cognitive state

See IV. A. 2. b. Two possibilities could occur in the exercise of the cognitive functions. The separated may make decisions based on his or her will to please, for the desire to overcome loneliness and make friendships is a strong survival instinct. The wrong friendships, or a quick marriage could result.

On the other hand, the separated or divorced may make decisions based on the hurt or guilt he or she may feel. This will normally catapult them into depression or isolation. They don't want to be around people; so they take themselves out of the mainstream to avoid further hurt.

The pastoral counselor should recognize the tendencies, encourage proper choices, and bring them to a point where they can risk further hurt.



## APPENDICES

### c. The relational state

See IV. A. 2. c. Separated and divorced people still need to relate. Since God created them as relational beings they must continue to exercise this capacity and become involved with others. Withdrawal from relationships is a strong possibility. The church must prevent this.

### 3. Know the ministry

The pastor as the shepherd of his flock should realize that the separated and divorced feel estranged from the church and its members. They may think they have been stigmatized or branded as second class citizens. In fact, there are church members who are predisposed against them. The pastor needs to root out the bias and plug the separated and divorced into the ministries of the church. He should solicit session members to aid him in the assimilation of the separated and divorced into the membership of the church as well as the appropriate ministries of the church.

Of course, the session will have to make evaluations on a case by case basis whether a separated person may undertake a ministry. For instance, if reconciliation to a spouse or former spouse has been proposed, then the person should be working on the matters that would heal the marriage. Involvement in a ministry may hinder the process.

Furthermore, a person may be in an unrepentant state of sin. If so, then participation in a church ministry or program would be inappropriate. In fact, the process of discipline should have commenced.

## B. Guidelines for ministry

### 1. Converse with the separated and divorced.

Many people who have become or who are in the process of divorce have felt themselves unseen, unknown, and untouched by the church. Even though most churches benignly neglect these people, neglect is still painful.

It is wrong to assume that the separated or divorced prefer silence on the subject of their marriage or the position in which they find themselves. Talking to them shows concern, and concern care. They already are treated like lepers by some friends. They surely don't want to be lepers in the church.

Conversing with them doesn't mean to force yourself on them. Pray for opportunities to speak, but in any event show cordiality and sincerity in greeting them if only in passing.

Do not worry what to say to them. Even if your words are "I just didn't know what to say", they convey concern. And remember, divorced people really don't need your guidance and wisdom nearly so much as the warmth of your smile and the sincerity of your words.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### 2. Act of their behalf.

If you sincerely care for the separated and divorced person, you will act on his or her behalf. If he or she needs a place to live, help him or her find it. If a shoulder is needed to cry on, give him or her yours. Introduce him or her to people who could help meet a need.

### 3. Include them in activities and ministries.

The reason why most separated and divorced people feel like they don't fit in is because in many churches they don't. Most church ministries focus on families, not the divorced or single parent. Most church functions are designed around family activities.

It is not specialized programs, as helpful as they are, that these people need. Rather a genuine awareness of their existence among the congregation is needed more. They need love and the feeling of belonging. So encourage congregants to include them in special activities, to invite them to special events and programs, and to ask them to their homes.

As a church, include them in ministry opportunities. They want to feel part of the team, contribute to the goals of the team, and make themselves useful to the team. Let them serve in some capacity, for serving is conforming to the image of Christ. And the job of the pastor is to disciple his sheep so that they do mature in Christ.

### 4. Reach out and touch them.

The separated and divorced have been deeply hurt and in some cases greatly traumatized by their divorce and the splitting of families. They need people to acknowledge their hurt, give them a hug, and to extend warmth and acceptance. These brothers and sisters more than others need to be physically touched. Yet when a godly brother or sister hugs a person of the opposite sex, sexual innuendos rush to the surface and rumors fly about.

Divorced people often feel they have become a threat to other marriages. Those who are insecure and have rocky marriages are the ones who fan the gossip fires. This is a shame, for the body of Christ is to hurt with each other and rejoice with each other. When the arm suffers, the whole body hurts. What often happens in churches is that the arm is hurting and the rest of the body wants to amputate it for fear of contamination.

The separated and divorced will always be part of the church. They will be a fast growing part of the church. In fact, most of the church families have been or will be touched by divorce in one way or another, whether it be through direct family split or a child of a member gets divorced. The church has the job of recognizing these people, ministering to them, and encouraging others to fellowship with them.

## APPENDICES

### C. Resources

#### 1. Personnel

- a. Local counselors may be able to give insight on ministering to the separated and divorced.
- b. Experts in the field may come to train pastors and lay people to do counseling and sponsor programs for the separated and divorced.

#### 2. Seminars

- a. Fresh Start Seminars, Inc.  
751 North Wayne Avenue  
Wayne, PA 19087
- b. Fresh Start is one of several ministries that offers a three-day divorce recovery program. It is founded by Rev. Bob Burns, Associate Pastor at Perimeter Presbyterian Church (PCA), Atlanta, Georgia.

#### 3. Books

To have a better understanding of biblical anthropology:

**Crabb, Lawrence**, *Understanding People*, Ministry Resource Library, a division of Zondervan Publishing.  
**Crabb, Lawrence**, *Inside Out*, Nav Press.

To understand the separated and divorced:

**Smoke, Jim**, *Suddenly Single*, Fleming H. Revell.

To help determine if a person has gone through steps of reconciliation:

**Jones, John Edward**, *Reconciliation*, Bethany House.  
**Talley, Jim**, *Reconciliation Differences*, Thomas Nelson Publishers.

To help in recovering from divorce:

**Augsburger, David**, *Caring Enough to Forgive; Caring Enough Not to Forgive*, Regal.

**Burns, Bob**, *Through The Whirlwind: A Proven Path to Recovery From the Devastation of Divorce*, Oliver Nelson. (Bob is the founder and Board Chairman of Fresh Start Seminars, Inc.)

**Smoke, Jim**, *Growing Through Divorce*, Harvest House.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### To understand the single parent:

**Barnes, Robert F. Jr.**, *Single Parenting*, Tyndale House.

**Smoke, Jim**, *Living Beyond Divorce, The Possibilities of Remarriage*, Harvest House.

**Mowday, Lois**, *The Snare*, Nav Press.

**Brown, Michael A.**, *Second Class Christians? A New Approach to the Dilemma of Divorced People in the Church*, Intervarsity Press.

### To look at sex from the single perspective:

**Jones, Tom**, *Sex and Love When You're Single Again*, Oliver Nelson. (Tom is the former pastor of Immanuel Presbyterian Church, Belleville, Illinois, and is Associate Director of Fresh Start Seminars, Inc.)

**White, John**, *Eros Defiled*, Intervarsity Press.

## CONCLUSION

### I. A SUMMARY OF THE FINDINGS OF THE COMMITTEE

The Committee was asked to consider:

A. Whether the Westminster Confession of Faith, Chapter 24.6, is more lax or more restrictive than Scripture, and whether the committee would suggest any revisions to that article of confession.

In answer to the first part of this request, the Committee finds the Westminster Confession of Faith is neither more lax nor more restrictive than Scripture. Since the Confession contains Jesus' concern for the permanence of marriage, and since the Confession contains Jesus' statement about adultery and Paul's statement about desertion, it faithfully reflects Scripture's teaching about marriage, divorce, and remarriage.

In answer to the second part of this request, the Committee agrees that the present wording of the Confession is adequate. However, if the Assembly should desire to do so, the Committee suggests that the Pauline teaching concerning the separation of believers on other than biblical grounds (I Cor. 7:10, 11), namely, that they must remain unmarried or else be reconciled, could be stated more explicitly in any revision that might be attempted in the future of the Westminster Confession of Faith 24.6.

B. Whether a Christian may have other legitimate grounds for divorce, besides desertion by an unbelieving spouse, or adultery (for example, inveterate physical abuse, marital rape or other sexual abuse, attempted murder, or equally serious violations of the marriage covenant).

## APPENDICES

We find that Scripture teaches there is only one biblical justification for a divorce, namely, "sexual immorality" which breaks the one-flesh relationship. Jesus did not intend by the exception clause to open wide the door for divorce. *Porneia* is used by Jesus to refer only to those sexual sins that clearly destroy the marital union.

In I Corinthians 7:10-15, Paul is not giving a second ground for divorce. He is responding to those real life situations where divorce has become a *fait accompli*. According to verses 10-11, if two believers divorce, they are to remain single or be reconciled. According to verses 12-15, if an unbelieving spouse divorces a believing spouse, the believer is not bound as he or she would be if the deserting spouse had been a believer.

In Paul's day, the separation spoken of in I Corinthians 7:10-15 was itself an act of divorce. In our day such separation is not regarded as such. Therefore, the believing spouse whose unbelieving spouse separates from him or her is left in an anomaly, i.e., divorced and free to remarry in the eyes of God (and His Word), but not divorced in the eyes of the State. To resolve this anomaly the Committee holds that the believing spouse may initiate legal action to make her biblical divorce legal in the eyes of the State.

The Committee believes that when there are words and actions on the part of one spouse that threatens the life of the other spouse and/or children, that the one(s) threatened should be counseled by the Session, or representative thereof, to remove themselves from the threatening situation and the abuser should be urged to seek counsel. Such a procedure will protect those threatened. When the abuser does not cease these words and actions, the Session should investigate whether these words and actions are in effect breaking the one-flesh relationship by "hating" the abused spouse and not "nourishing and cherishing" this one (Eph. 5:28-29). In counseling the abuser, the reality of his Christian faith should be ascertained. When it is determined by the Session that the abuser does not appear to them to be Christian and the abuse continues, the Pauline teaching about an unbeliever leaving a believer should be applied.

We realize that there are some who will see our viewpoint on desertion as a relaxing of standards, as an opening of the door to all sorts of reasons for divorce. As a Committee, we repudiate such an inference for our viewpoint remains solidly within the Reformed consensus. We believe this less wooden construction of desertion is a more faithful representation of Scripture.

C. Whether there are recommended guidelines and resources for pastoral care and counsel of couples with marital difficulties, persons considering divorce or remarriage after divorce, divorced persons, and children and other family members affected by divorce.

There are recommended guidelines and resources the Committee has sought to provide the Church. Ruling and teaching elders are encouraged to review these guidelines and practical considerations that have been presented in Chapter 3 of the report, and to use them as appropriate.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

The recommended resources include books, videos and seminars to help elders shepherd their flock. Though not necessarily agreeing with all aspects of these resources, we do recommend that they be reviewed and used insofar as they are consistent with biblical principles.

### II. RECOMMENDATIONS TO THE 19TH GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE PCA

1. That the General Assembly receive the report of the Ad-Interim Committee on Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage as a reliable summary of the Historical and Biblical Data and as drawing from that data valid conclusions.
2. That the General Assembly go on record affirming that the Westminster Confession of Faith 24.6 is neither more lax nor more restrictive than Scripture.
3. That the General Assembly adopt the following conclusions regarding marriage, divorce, and remarriage:
  - a. That according to both the institution of marriage and its regulation in Scripture, marital vows are to be kept until death.
  - b. That nevertheless, Scripture does provide for the dissolution of marriage under certain circumstances.
  - c. That the innocent spouse is free to remarry when the other spouse commits sexual immorality (porneia, Mt. 19:9), in the sense understood in the Committee report (Chapter 2, Section II.D.3.f.).
  - d. That while divorce is permitted to the offended spouse, divorce is not mandated in the case of porneia, however, and forgiveness is always to be offered to the one who has sinned (cf., e.g., Mt. 6:12, 14, 15).
  - e. That when believers separate for other than Biblical grounds, they should remain unmarried or else be reconciled (I Cor. 7:11).
  - f. That when an unbeliever separates from the marriage relationship with a believer, the believer is free from that marriage and free to remarry (I Cor. 7:15).
  - g. That under extreme circumstances, a Session may properly judge that such desertion (separation) has occurred, even though the offending spouse is still physically present in the home ("desertion" being viewed in the sense understood in the Committee report, Chapter 2, Section II.E.4.).
  - h. That the believer in the aforementioned case is free to make the Biblical divorce a legal divorce in the eyes of the State.
  - i. That in matters pertaining to sexual immorality and desertion, the pastor and Session are responsible for providing counsel, direction and judgment, according to the Scriptures.
4. That the General Assembly publish this report for the churches to study, and that the Ad Interim Committee be allowed to add to this report one section it

## APPENDICES

was unable to complete in time for this Assembly, the section on "Resources" (chapter 3, section I. C.).

5. That the General Assembly recommend to ruling and teaching elders their careful consideration and implementation of the guidelines and resources provided in Chapter 3, "Pastoral Perspective on Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage."
6. That the Ad Interim Committee on Marriage, Divorce, and Remarriage be dismissed.
7. That the General Assembly be requested to release this statement to the press:

"In light of the current focus on sexuality and the public confusion generated through the recent controversy on that subject within the Presbyterian Church (USA), the Presbyterian Church in America (PCA), a distinctly different denomination, strongly reaffirms its commitment to the Bible's teaching on sex and marriage.

"The PCA reaffirms that sex is a gift from God which should be expressed only in marriage between a man and a woman. Therefore all sexual intercourse outside marriage, including homosexuality and lesbianism, is contrary to God's Word (the Bible), and is sin. We acknowledge with tears that those who continuously and unrepentantly sin shall not inherit the Kingdom of God, and we also joyfully acknowledge that God in the gospel of Jesus Christ forgives repentant sinners and welcomes such forgiven, cleansed and changed sinners into the Church of Jesus Christ (I Corinthians 6:9-11)."

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

APPENDIX Q

CERTIFICATE OF INCORPORATION  
OF  
CONTINUING PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH

**FIRST.** -- The name of this corporation is Continuing Presbyterian Church.

**SECOND.** -- Its registered office in the State of Delaware is to be located at 229 South State Street, in the City of Dover, County of Kent. The registered agent in charge thereof is The Prentice-Hall Corporation System, Inc., at 229 South State Street, Dover, Delaware.

**THIRD.** -- The purpose of the corporation is to engage in any lawful act or activity for which corporations may be organized under the general Corporation Law of Delaware.

All assets of the corporation shall be principally and directly dedicated exclusively to religious and educational work. The corporation shall not engage in business activities for profit and no part of any net earnings of the corporation shall inure to the benefit of any member, director or officer of the corporation, or any private individual, save and except that reasonable compensation may be paid for services rendered to or for the corporation affecting one or more of its purposes, and no member, director or officer of the corporation, or private individual, shall be entitled to share in the distribution of any of the corporate assets on dissolution of the corporation. No substantial part of the activities of the corporation shall be the carrying on of secular propaganda, or otherwise attempting to influence legislation.

Notwithstanding any other provision of these articles, the corporation shall not conduct or carry on any activities not permitted by an organization exempt under Section 501(c)(3) of the Internal Revenue Code and its regulations as they now exist or as they may hereafter be amended, or by any organization contributions to which are deductible under Section 170 (c)(2) of such Code and regulations.

Upon the dissolution or liquidation or other winding up of this corporation, all of its assets, principal and income, subject to the payment of its debts, shall be distributed to an organization which is exempt under Section 501(c)(3) of the Internal Revenue Code.

**FOURTH.** -- The corporation shall not have any capital stock, and the conditions of membership shall be as stated in the By-Laws.

**FIFTH.** -- The names and places of residence of the incorporators are as follows:

<b>NAMES</b>	<b>RESIDENCES</b>
W. Jackson Williamson	701 Fort Dale Road Greenville, Alabama 36067
Leon F. Hendrick	1424 Pinehurst Jackson, Mississippi 39202



## APPENDICES

Gordon Kennedy Reed	105 River Street Greenville, South Carolina 29601
Cecil Williamson, Jr.	221 Cone Drive Selma, Alabama 36707
Harry Norval Miller, Jr.	52 Adams Avenue Montgomery, Alabama 36104
Morton Howison Smith	5422 Clinton Boulevard Jackson, Mississippi 39209
Donald Bray Patterson	4611 Trawick Drive Jackson, Mississippi 39211

**SIXTH.** -- The activities and affairs of the corporation shall be managed by a board of directors. The number of directors which shall constitute the whole board shall be such as from time to time shall be fixed by, or in the manner provided in, the By-Laws, but in no case shall the number be less than three. The directors need not be members of the corporation unless so required by the By-Laws. The board of directors shall be elected by the members at the annual meeting of the corporation to be held on such date as the By-Laws may provide, and shall hold office until their successors are respectively elected and qualified. The By-Laws shall specify the number of directors necessary to constitute a quorum. The board of directors may, by resolution or resolutions, passed by a majority of the whole board, designate one or more committees, which to the extent provided in said resolution or resolutions or in the By-Laws of the corporation shall have and may exercise all the powers of the board of directors in the management of the activities and affairs of the corporation and may have power to authorize the seal of the corporation to be affixed to all papers which may require it; and such committee or committees shall have such name or names as may be stated in the By-Laws of the corporation or may be determined from time to time by resolution adopted by the board of directors. The directors of the corporation may, if the By-Laws so provide, be classified as to term of office. The Corporation may elect such officers as the By-Laws may specify, who shall, subject to the provision of the Statute, have such titles and exercise such duties as the By-Laws may provide. The board of directors is expressly authorized to make, alter or repeal the By-Laws of this corporation.

This corporation may in its By-Laws confer powers upon its board of directors in addition to the foregoing, and in addition to the powers and authorities expressly conferred upon them by the Statute, provided that the board of directors shall not exercise any power of authority conferred herein or by Statute upon the members.

**SEVENTH.** -- Meetings of members may be held without the State of Delaware, if the By-Laws so provide. The books of the corporation may be kept (subject to any provision contained in the Statutes) outside the State of Delaware at such place or places as may be from time to time designated by the board of directors.

**EIGHTH.** -- The corporation reserves the right to amend, alter, change or repeal any provision contained in this Certificate of Incorporation, in the manner now or

MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

hereafter prescribed by the Statute, and all rights conferred upon members herein are granted subject to this reservation.

**We, The Undersigned**, being each of the incorporators hereinbefore named, for the purpose of forming a corporation pursuant to Chapter I of Title 8 of The Delaware Code, do make this Certificate, hereby declaring and certifying that the facts herein stated are true, and accordingly have hereunto set our hands and seals this 21st day of September, A.D. 1973.

W. Jackson Williamson

Leon F. Hendrick

Gordon K. Reed

Cecil Williamson, Jr.

Harry Norval Miller, Jr.

Morton Howison Smith

Donald B. Patterson

**NOTE:** This original Certificate of Incorporation was later amended to change the name to Presbyterian church in America (A Corporation).

## APPENDICES

### APPENDIX R

#### **PREFATORY STATEMENT:**

**For the purpose of conducting civil matters, Presbyterian Church in America is a civil corporation organized and existing under the laws of the State of Delaware. As in any civil corporation, the Presbyterian Church in America has a certificate of incorporation and bylaws under which it is to operate in regard to these civil matters. These bylaws should never be amended to include procedures for conducting ecclesiastical business but only for the conduct of civil business in our society.**

### **CORPORATE BYLAWS OF PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN AMERICA (A CORPORATION) as Amended by the 19th General Assembly**

#### **ARTICLE I. NAME AND LOCATION.**

Section 1. The name of this corporation shall be Presbyterian Church in America (A Corporation).

Section 2. The registration of the corporation of the Presbyterian Church in America will be designated by the Board of Directors and reported annually in the corporate minutes. The official business address of the corporation is the office of the Administrative Committee.

Other offices for transaction of business shall be located at such places as the General Assembly or its Permanent Committees shall designate.

#### **ARTICLE II. MEMBERS AND MEETINGS OF THE CORPORATION**

Section 1. The members of the corporation shall be those duly ordained Teaching Elders (Ministers) enrolled in a Presbytery affiliated with the Presbyterian Church in America, and those Ruling Elders representing local congregations, which congregations are affiliated with Presbyteries affiliated with the Presbyterian Church in America who have been designated or commissioned to attend the next General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America. Such Teaching Elders and Ruling Elders shall be designated or commissioned by Presbyteries or Congregations in accordance with rules and regulations prescribed by the Book of Church Order (14-2). Such individuals shall be the members of the corporation until the next meeting of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in America at which time the members of the Corporation shall be those individuals designated or commissioned as hereinabove set forth to attend such General Assembly.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Section 2. The annual meeting of the Corporation shall be at such time and such place as designated by the General Assembly.

Section 3. Special meetings of the membership of Corporation in General Assembly may be called in accordance with the Book of Church Order (14-3).

Section 4. A quorum for the transaction of business at any meeting of the membership in General Assembly shall be that prescribed in the Book of Church Order (14-5).

Section 5. The Moderator shall call all meetings to order and shall preside until his successor has been selected and takes office. If the Moderator is unable to act, the Stated Clerk shall call the Assembly to order and preside over its sessions until a Moderator has been elected.

Section 6. Proxies shall not be allowed at General Assembly meetings of the membership.

### ARTICLE III. BOARD OF DIRECTORS

Section 1. The business affairs of the Corporation, as distinguished from the ecclesiastical matters, shall be managed by the Board of Directors, which shall have such powers and duties as are set forth in the charter of the Corporation and the By-laws.

Section 2. The Board of Directors shall consist of the members of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly. Each director shall hold office as a director as long as he remains a member of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly.

Section 3. The Board of Directors may establish such subcommittees as may be deemed necessary or desirable and vest such subcommittees with such authority as may be deemed proper.

Section 4. A Stated Meeting of the Board of Directors shall be held during each General Assembly. Notice shall not be required for this Stated Meeting. A regular meeting, without notice, may be held at each regular meeting of the Administrative Committee.

Section 5. Special Meetings of the Board of Directors may be called by the Chairman or by a majority of the Board. Written notice stating the place, date and hour of such special meeting shall be delivered by the Secretary at least 10 days prior to the date of the meeting. Such notice should specify the purpose of the meeting. A director may waive such notice; and attendance at such a meeting shall constitute a waiver of such notice.

## APPENDICES

Section 6. A majority of the Board of Directors shall constitute a quorum.

Section 7. There shall be no voting by proxy.

### ARTICLE IV. OFFICERS.

Section 1. The officers of the Corporation shall be the Chairman of the Board and President, the Secretary, the Treasurer, and such assistant secretaries and treasurers as may be deemed desirable by the Board of Directors. The Board of Directors may elect assistant secretaries and treasurers. In the event that the Secretary or the Treasurer is unable to act, the Board of Directors shall be authorized to appoint a provisional Secretary or a provisional Treasurer to serve until a regular Secretary or Treasurer may be elected by the next General Assembly.

Section 2. The Chairman of the Administrative Committee shall serve as Chairman of the Board of Directors and as the President of the Corporation. The Chairman shall preside at all meetings of the Board of Directors and shall appoint the members of all subcommittees of the Board. He shall sign such instruments as may be required and shall perform such duties as may be assigned by the Board of Directors of the members of the Corporation in General Assembly.

Section 3. The Stated Clerk of the General Assembly shall serve as the Secretary of the Corporation. The Secretary shall have such duties and responsibilities as set forth in the Book of Church Order and the Rules Of Assembly Operation for the Stated Clerk. He shall be immediately responsible to the Administrative Committee. The Secretary shall prepare and forward all notices required by law or by these Bylaws, and shall have general charge of the corporate books and records. He shall sign such instruments as may be required, and perform the duties incident to the office of Secretary, and such duties as may be assigned by the Board of Directors or the members of the Corporation in General Assembly.

Section 4. The Stated Clerk of the General Assembly shall serve as the Treasurer of the Corporation. The Treasurer shall be the custodian of the funds and securities belonging to the Corporation, and not otherwise designated to one of the three program Committees. He shall receive, deposit and disburse such funds as directed by the General Assembly, including any provisions set forth in the Book of Church Order. He shall keep an accurate account of the finances of the Corporation, not only of the funds in his custody, but, by means of monthly reports from the other committees, of their funds also, on a uniform form, which he shall provide. He shall prepare, or have prepared, such reports of the financial condition of the Corporation as may be required, and, in general, perform all of the duties incident to the office of Treasurer. He shall be bonded in an amount to be determined by the Administrative Committee.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

### ARTICLE V. THE PARTICULAR PERMANENT COMMITTEES

A. The Administrative Committee of General Assembly.

The business affairs of the Corporation as distinguished from the ecclesiastical matters, and those not specifically assigned to one of the other permanent committees by these Bylaws or an act of the General Assembly, shall be managed by the Administrative Committee, which serves as the Board of Directors provided in the Charter of Incorporation, subject to such rules and regulations as may be prescribed by the General Assembly, including all applicable provisions of the Book of Church Order.

B. The Committee for Christian Education and Publications.

The affairs of the Church in the areas of Christian education and publications are assigned to the Committee for Christian Education and Publications, whose duties and authority shall be designated by the General Assembly.

C. The Committee on Mission to North America.

The affairs of the Church involved in its extension in the United States and Canada are assigned to the Committee on Mission to North America, whose duties and authority shall be designated by the General Assembly.

D. The Committee on Mission to the World

The affairs of the Church in the area of world missions outside of the United States and Canada are assigned to the Committee on Mission to the World, whose duties and authority shall be designated by the General Assembly.

E. Other Committees

The Assembly may elect or appoint other committees of either a permanent or temporary character to handle particular matters of business as designated by the Assembly. The business handled by such committees shall be limited to those matters assigned by the Assembly.

F. Boards of Agencies

When it is necessary for the handling of civil matters, the General Assembly may authorize one of its committees or agencies to incorporate and to form a board. The relationship of the board to the Assembly remains as a committee, and the provisions of the corporation charter and bylaws shall be in conformity with the constitution of the Church.

### ARTICLE VI. OTHER BOARDS AND AGENCIES

The Assembly has authority to make exceptions to the above guidelines for some boards, agencies and committees not specifically covered by the BCO, by making amendments to these bylaws spelling out the specific exceptions, as well as approving corporation bylaws in conformity with these exceptions.

1. The Board of Trustees of the Insurance, Annuity and Relief Funds of the Presbyterian Church in America, hereinafter referred to as "Trustees", shall

## APPENDICES

exercise such powers and conduct such business as delegated to it by the General Assembly from time to time. Specifically, but not in limitation thereof, the Trustees shall administer the Retirement plans, the group insurance plans and the ministerial relief programs of the Corporation.

No action of the General Assembly or the Corporation shall conflict with provisions of the "Trust Agreement for the Annuity Fund for Ministers of the Presbyterian Church in America," the "Trust Agreement for the Annuity Fund for Lay Employees of the Presbyterian Church in America," "the Trust Agreement for the Money Purchase Pension Plan of the Presbyterian Church in America," "the Trust Agreement for the Voluntary Tax-Sheltered Annuity Plan of the Presbyterian Church in America," and "the Presbyterian Church in America Health and Welfare Benefit Trust" without amendment of said Trust Agreements as provided in the Trust Agreements.

The Trustees will make a report to each General Assembly through the Committee of Commissioners on Insurance, Annuities and Relief.

The Trustees shall be twelve (12) in number, divided into four (4) classes of three (3) men each serving for four (4) year terms. Trustees shall be eligible for re-election to a second four-year term after which there must be a one-year interval before further re-election. The Board may make requests to the Presbyteries to nominate specific men to the Board. The General Assembly shall elect at each Assembly a class of Trustees to begin service immediately following the conclusion of the Assembly. Each member of the Trustees must be either a Teaching Elder, Ruling Elder or Deacon in the Presbyterian Church in America. The Trustees are not subject to the provisions of the BCO, Chapter 15 relating to proportionate representation of all Presbyteries or for equal representation of Teaching and Ruling Elders.

2. The Board of Trustees of Covenant College shall consist of twenty-eight members each elected to a four-year term. The Board is divided into four classes of seven men each such that the terms of one-fourth of the Board members expire each year. There is no required formula for dividing the members of a class between teaching and ruling elders. A Trustee shall be eligible at the end of any full four-year term for re-election to a second four-year term, after which there must be a one-year interval before re-election. The General Assembly of the PCA may choose to elect Trustees to fill unfinished terms of Trustees who vacated their office before their term expired.

The Trustee who is elected to fill the unfinished term is eligible, if reelected, to serve one additional successive term, after which a one-year period must elapse before he is eligible for reelection.

Up to four men of denominations with which the PCA is in ecclesiastical fellowship may be elected, one to each class. In addition, the Board may make requests to the Presbyteries to nominate specific men to the Board and may submit to the Assembly Nominating Committee letters of recommendation concerning particular nominees from the presbyteries. Furthermore, the Board may recommend one nominee per class from another NAPARC member denomination for consideration by the Assembly

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Nominating Committee, with a maximum of two such members permitted on the Board at one time.

3. The Board of Trustees of Covenant Theological Seminary shall consist of not less than twelve and not more than thirty-two members [currently twenty-four]. The members of the Board of Trustees are each elected to a four-year term. The Board is divided equally into four classes, the terms of one-fourth of the Board members expiring each year. A Trustee shall be eligible at the end of any full four-year term for re-election to a second four-year term, after which there must be a one-year interval before re-election. The General Assembly of the PCA may choose to elect Trustees to fill unfinished terms of Trustees who vacated their office before their term expired. The Trustee who is elected to fill the unfinished term is eligible, if reelected, to serve one additional successive term, after which a one-year period must elapse before he is eligible for reelection.

Each Trustee shall be an ordained teaching or ruling elder of the Presbyterian Church in America and elected by the General Assembly, except that up to two members of each class may be elders of denominations with which the PCA is in ecclesiastical fellowship. There is no required formula for dividing the members of a class between teaching and ruling elders. In addition, the Board may make requests to the Presbyteries to nominate specific men to the Board and may submit to the Assembly Nominating Committee letters of recommendation concerning particular nominees from the presbyteries. Furthermore, the Board may recommend one nominee per class from another NAPARC member denomination for consideration by the Assembly Nominating Committee, with a maximum of two such members permitted on the Board at one time.

4. The Directors of Ridge Haven, Inc. shall consist of ten (10), divided into five (5) classes of two (2) men each serving five (5) year terms. The General Assembly shall elect at each Assembly a Class of Directors to begin service immediately following the conclusion of the Assembly.

Each member of the Board of Directors must be either a Teaching or Ruling Elder in the Presbyterian Church in America. The members of the Board of Directors of Ridge Haven are not subject to the BCO Chapter 14 relating to proportionate representation of all Presbyteries or for equal representation of Teaching and Ruling Elders. Directors shall be eligible for reelection to a second five year term after which there must be a one year interval before further reelection.

5. Investor's Fund for Building and Development shall consist of eight members, to serve in four classes of two men each. Each member of the Board of Trustees must be a Teaching Elder or a Ruling Elder in the PCA. A trustee shall not be eligible for re-election to the board until one year after his term expires, except that if he has served two years or less he shall be eligible for immediate re-election.

Trustees shall be elected by a majority vote of the members of the General Assembly of the PCA in accordance with (including the additional



## APPENDICES

qualifications specified in) the Bylaws, the Rules for Assembly Operations and the BCO of the PCA, all as duly amended from time to time. Nominations for the board of trustees shall be presented to the General Assembly by the nominating committee of the PCA.

6. The Board of Trustees of the PCA Foundation shall be comprised of four classes of two men each who may be Teaching Elders, Ruling Elders or Deacons of the PCA. At least two members of the total Board must be Teaching Elders.

### ARTICLE VII. FISCAL MATTERS.

Section 1. The fiscal year of the Corporation shall be from January 1 through December 31 of each year, commencing January 1, 1991. The General Assembly shall annually designate the auditors of the Corporation on recommendation from the Administrative Committee, which auditing firm shall make an audit of the financial affairs of the Corporation and of each Permanent Committee promptly following the close of each fiscal year. The expenses of such audit shall be prorated among the Corporation and each Permanent Committee.

Section 2. All funds of the Corporation shall be deposited from time to time to the credit of the Corporation in such banks, savings and loan institutions, trust, or other depositories as the permanent committees by resolution may select. Committees, Boards and Agencies of the General Assembly may maintain their own separate bank accounts.

Section 3. All checks, drafts, or other orders for the payment of money, notes, or other evidences of indebtedness issued in the name of the Corporation shall be signed by such officer or officers of the Corporation as the Administrative Committee shall designate. All checks, drafts, or other orders for the payment of money, notes, or other evidences of indebtedness issued in the name of any of the permanent committees shall be signed by such representative of the committee as the committee by resolution shall designate.

### ARTICLE VIII. ECCLESIASTICAL MATTERS.

Section 1. The ecclesiastical Constitution of the Church is defined in the Book of Church Order, Preface III. The provisions of the Constitution shall control over any provisions of these Bylaws that may be in conflict therewith.

### ARTICLE IX. AMENDMENTS TO THE BYLAWS

These Bylaws may be amended by a majority vote at any annual or special meeting of the General Assembly.

## APPENDIX S

### PREFATORY STATEMENT:

In keeping with the concept that the Bylaws are designed for the conduct of Presbyterian Church in America (A Corporation) in regard to civil matters, the Rules of Assembly Operations is designed to serve the General Assembly itself as an ecclesiastical organization. Therefore, care should be taken that these Rules contain only that which is essential for the Biblical and efficient operation of the General Assembly ecclesiastically.

## RULES FOR ASSEMBLY OPERATIONS as Amended by the 19th General Assembly

### ARTICLE I. ORGANIZATION OF A GENERAL ASSEMBLY'S MEETING

1-1. The General Assembly shall be called to order at the designated time by the Moderator, and shall begin with a worship service, including a season of prayer, a sermon or exhortation by the retiring Moderator, and the celebration of the Lord's Supper.

1-2. The Stated Clerk shall present a report on the enrollment of Commissioners, and declare if a quorum is present. If it is present, then the Assembly shall be declared to be properly constituted for the transaction of business.

1-3. The first order of business shall be the election of a Moderator. There shall be only one nominating speech not to exceed five minutes for each nominee. No seconding speeches shall be permitted.

1-4. If more than one Commissioner is nominated, election shall be by ballot, on ballots provided by the Stated Clerk. Tellers appointed by the Stated Clerk shall gather and count the ballots, and report the tabulation to the Stated Clerk. If no nominee receives a majority of the votes cast, a second ballot shall be called on the two nominees who received the highest number of votes on the first ballot. The Moderator shall declare an election when a nominee receives a majority of the votes cast by the commissioners present and voting.

1-5. As soon as a Moderator shall have been declared elected he shall assume his constitutional duties as Moderator.

### ARTICLE II. THE MODERATOR

2-1. The Moderator shall preside at all sessions of the Assembly except when he may invite another Commissioner to act temporarily as the presiding officer.

2-2. The Moderator shall call the succeeding Assembly to order and preside over its sessions until a successor has been elected. Ordinarily he shall present a retiring Moderator's sermon or exhortation. If the Moderator is unable to act, the Stated Clerk

## APPENDICES

shall call the Assembly to order and preside over its sessions until a Moderator has been elected.

2-3. Any former moderator attending a General Assembly shall have the privilege of the floor.

### ARTICLE III. THE STATED CLERK

3-1. The Stated Clerk shall perform the duties assigned by the *Book of Church Order*, the Rules for Assembly Operations, and the Bylaws of the Presbyterian Church in America, (A Corporation). The Stated Clerk shall serve as chief administrative officer of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly. As such, he shall be responsible, under the supervision and subject to the direction of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly, for carrying out and executing the appropriate duties and responsibilities of said Committee. The Stated Clerk shall be authorized to employ, with the approval of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly, a Business Administrator. All other staff personnel for said Committee shall then be employed by the Business Administrator with the approval and consent of the Stated Clerk.

3-2. The Stated Clerk shall have the following responsibilities to the General Assembly:

- a. In his office as an elder he may, as appropriate, advise and counsel, and upon invitation, preach and teach.
- b. His duties are clerical, and as an ordained elder in the denomination he has no special role as spiritual leader or teacher to the denomination.
- c. He shall be responsible for the recording of the transactions of each General Assembly.
- d. He shall carefully preserve all of the records of each General Assembly.
- e. He shall obtain and grant abstracts from the Assembly records whenever properly required or requested.
- f. He shall prepare and distribute a *Handbook for Commissioners* so as to reach commissioners one month prior to the convening of each General Assembly.
- g. He shall gather and assemble the items of business that come before each Assembly and refer such items of business to the proper committee or committees.
- h. He shall be responsible for publishing the minutes and statistical reports of the Presbyterian Church in America and periodically updating the digest of the minutes.
- i. He shall be the Parliamentarian of the General Assembly but may fulfill this function through the use of Assistant Parliamentarians whom he recommends to the Moderator for his appointment.
- j. He shall be an ex officio member of the Committee on Interchurch Relations.
- k. He shall be available to give advice to the boards and agencies of the Presbyterian Church in America if, as, and when so requested.
- l. He shall be responsible for the oversight of the PCA Historical Center for the preservation of the archives of the Presbyterian Church in America.
- m. Under the supervision of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly, he shall propose the docket of the General Assembly and shall be available to

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

advise the General Assembly on means to expedite and complete the business of the General Assembly.

- n. He shall be responsible for notifying all appropriate persons of the decisions of the General Assembly.
- o. He shall serve as the secretary and treasurer of Presbyterian Church in America.
- p. He shall receive progress reports and/or minutes from the committees appointed by the General Assembly, including special committees.
- q. He shall have the privilege of the floor in all matters pertaining to his office at the General Assembly, to present necessary information on business before the meeting concerning the work and report of any committee on which he serves, and at such times when the moderator, the coordinators, the executive directors, chairmen of Assembly committees and agencies (or their designated representative), or any commissioner may request that he clarify matters before the court.
- r. He shall serve as custodian of the rolls of each General Assembly.
- s. He shall be the correspondent with the lower courts of the church.
- t. He shall be authorized to make public statements for and on behalf of the denomination only insofar as such statements are warranted on the basis of specific actions of the General Assembly.

**3-3.** The Stated Clerk shall have responsibility to the Administrative Committee of General Assembly as follows:

- a. He shall work under the supervision of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly between the meetings of General Assembly.
- b. He shall perform such duties as the Administrative Committee of General Assembly shall direct.
- c. He shall recommend a person to fill the office of Business Administrator, such recommendation to be made to the Administrative Committee of General Assembly. He shall employ such Business Administrator, with the prior approval of this Administrative Committee. The person filling the office of Business Administrator shall be responsible directly to the Stated Clerk, and through the Business Administrator the necessary personnel and equipment shall be obtained and utilized -- all under the overall oversight of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly.
- d. He shall make a full report to the Administrative Committee of General Assembly each year pertaining to his assessment of and evaluation of the performance by himself and those under his supervision and control during the year, which full report shall be submitted by this Administrative Committee to the General Assembly. This Administrative Committee shall have the responsibility of adding its comments, recommendations and suggestions to such report which shall include an evaluation of the performance of the person filling the office of the Stated Clerk.

**3-4.** The Administrative Committee of General Assembly has the responsibility of nominating to the General Assembly the person to fill the office of the Stated Clerk. Additional nominations may be made from the floor of the Assembly through the regular process for additional nominations.

## APPENDICES

3-5. The qualifications for the person to fill the office of the Stated Clerk shall be as follows:

- a. He must be either a Teaching or Ruling Elder in the Presbyterian Church in America.
- b. He must be conversant with the history and distinctives of the Presbyterian and Reformed tradition and in particular of the history and distinctives of the Presbyterian Church in America.
- c. He must possess a competent knowledge of the Book of Church Order of the Presbyterian Church in America.
- d. He must have demonstrated managerial and organizational skills.
- e. He must be loyal to the standards of the Presbyterian Church in America and be able to fairly represent the actions of each General Assembly. He must be conversant with the breadth of Reformed thinking in the Presbyterian Church in America and able to communicate with the members of Presbyterian Church in America and with representatives of other Reformed denominations.
- f. He must be able to work in a capable, sensitive manner with persons who are in positions of responsibility in the Presbyterian Church in America organization structure.
- g. He must understand and be committed to the proposition set out in *BCO* 14-1, 3: "The work of the Church as set forth in the Great Commission is one work. . . . Therefore, such person must recognize and be committed to implementing the important principle of the interdependency of each Court, Committee and Agency of the PCA.
- h. He must have an appreciation of the whole church of the Lord Jesus Christ as defined in *BCO* 1-3 and thus be able to work with the leaders of all branches of this true Church.

### ARTICLE IV. COMMITTEES AND AGENCIES

4-1. The affairs and programs of the General Assembly shall be conducted primarily through its Permanent Committees and Agencies.

4-2. The Permanent Committees are those specifically created by the *Book of Church Order*:

- Administrative Committee (AC)
- Christian Education and Publications (CE&P)
- Mission to the World (MTW)
- Mission to North America (MNA)

The Administrative Committee shall function as a service committee to the General Assembly and the denomination. The Committees on Christian Education, Mission to North America and Mission to the World shall be known as Program Committees.

- 4-3. The Agencies are:
- Covenant Theological Seminary
  - Covenant College
  - Ridge Haven Conference Center

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Insurance, Annuities and Relief  
Investors Fund for Building and Development  
PCA Foundation

The relationship of the Agencies to the Assembly remains as a committee although they may be incorporated separately for civil purposes. The composition and responsibilities of the Agencies are set forth in the Bylaws.

- 4-4.** The Special Committees are:  
Interchurch Relations Committee  
Committee on Constitutional Business  
Nominating Committee  
Committee on Review of Presbytery Records  
Theological Examining Committee

**4-5.** The membership of committees or agencies shall be limited to the same constitutional provisions (*BCO* 14-1, 12) as those of the permanent committees: namely, that those who have served for at least a full term, or at least two years of a partial term on one of the Assembly's permanent committees or agencies shall not be eligible for reelection to an Assembly committee or agency until one year has elapsed, unless provision has been approved by the agency Bylaws. Nominations shall be handled according to the *BCO* 14-2, 11. These provisions shall not apply to Ad Interim committees, study committees or other committees appointed.

**4-6.** No individual shall serve on more than one Assembly committee, or agency at one time, except those who serve as permanent committee representatives on the Administrative Committee of General Assembly and those who serve on the Nominating Committee, Committee on Review of Presbytery Records, Ad Interim Committees.

**4-7.** Employees of the Assembly's committees or agencies are not eligible for office on an Assembly's committee or agency which administers matters directly related to their area of employment.

**4-8.** The chief administrative officer of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly shall be the Stated Clerk. The chief administrative officer of the three program committees shall be the Coordinators and of the agencies shall be the Executive Directors or Presidents.

**4-9.** The three program committees shall nominate annually a coordinator for election by the General Assembly. The Administrative Committee shall nominate annually a Stated Clerk for election by the General Assembly. If the nominee has not been examined by the Theological Examining Committee such an examination must take place prior to the election when it is a first time employment. A new coordinator shall assume office at the end of the Assembly meeting, or at such time thereafter as designated by the General Assembly.

## APPENDICES

**4-10.** Permanent Committees may appoint subcommittees for specific tasks or areas of responsibility assigned by the General Assembly, according to the following guidelines:

- a. Membership of subcommittees may include persons not elected to the permanent committee, provided the subcommittee chairman is a permanent committee member.
- b. All policies and procedures of a subcommittee must be approved by the permanent committee prior to implementation.
- c. The staff of a subcommittee is controlled by the permanent committee through its coordinator.

**4-11.** The budget for each permanent committee and agency shall be submitted to the Administrative Committee of General Assembly which shall independently evaluate the proposed budget of each permanent committee and agency and report to the Assembly its considered opinion on the adoption. In order to protect the fiduciary responsibility of the Agencies, the financial coordination and independent evaluation of the agencies' proposed budgets by the Administrative Committee is for "audit purposes only".

Should modifications in budgets be deemed necessary by the Assembly, special care shall be taken that changes not be made in such a way as to threaten the continuity or effectiveness of the committee's or agency's ministry. Budgets of permanent committees and agencies that are agreed upon by the Administrative Committee may be changed only by a two-thirds vote of the Assembly commissioners present and voting at the time the budget is submitted for adoption. In the event the Administrative Committee disagrees with the budget submitted by one of the committees or boards, in whole or any item thereof, the General Assembly may adopt either the committee's or board's budget or the Administrative Committee's recommended budget by simple majority. The requirement of a two-thirds vote of the General Assembly applies only to changes not recommended by the Administrative Committee, initiated on the floor of the Assembly. With respect to the agencies financial coordination is to the Assembly from the agencies, and to the agencies from the Assembly, and the Administrative Committee is a "filter upward" and has no downward authority.

**4-12.** All funds received by the Corporation that are designated for the benefit of any particular permanent committee shall be disbursed by the Treasurer to the proper committee. There shall be no equalization of funds so designated. Any funds received by the Corporation not designated as being for the benefit of a particular Permanent Committee shall be distributed by the Treasurer as directed by the General Assembly.

**4-13.** Each permanent committee, by resolution adopted by a majority of its committee members, may designate the place, date, and time for regular meetings of the committee, which should be held as needed, but no less than twice a year. Written or printed notice of such resolution should be given to all committee members within a reasonable time after the adoption thereof. Notice of the time, place or purpose of such regular meetings of the permanent committee shall not be required to be given.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**4-14.** Special meetings of the permanent committees may be called at any time or place by the Chairman of the committee, or by a majority of the committee members. Written notice stating the place, date, and hour of such special meeting shall be delivered by the Chairman of the committee to each committee member at least ten days prior to the date of such meetings, and such notice should specify the purpose of such special meetings. Attendance of a committee member at such a meeting will constitute a waiver of notice of such meeting. The act of the majority of the committee members present at a meeting at which a quorum is present shall be the act of the committee.

**4-15.** A majority of a permanent committee shall constitute a quorum.

**4-16.** The Chairman, Vice-Chairman, Secretary and any other officers of each permanent committee shall be elected annually at the last regular meeting of the committee prior to the meeting of the General Assembly. Notice of this meeting shall include notice to the effect that these elections shall take place.

**4-17.** In the event any administrative personnel employed by a committee and approved by the General Assembly resigns, dies or is unable to act, such committee may employ a provisional replacement, who has been examined and approved by the Assembly's Theological Examining Committee, and who shall serve until the next General Assembly.

### **ARTICLE V. ADMINISTRATIVE COMMITTEE OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY**

**5-1.** The Administrative Committee of General Assembly shall consist of twenty (20) members: (a) Eleven members in classes elected through the standard nomination and election procedure, (b) one member each from the following program committees or agencies: (1) Christian Education and Publication; (2) Covenant College; (3) Covenant Theological Seminary; (4) Insurance, Annuities and Relief; (5) Investor's Fund for Building and Development; (6) Mission to North America; (7) Mission to the World; (8) PCA Foundation; (9) Ridge Haven Conference Center.

The eleven members at large shall serve a term of four years. The chairman of the Administrative Committee shall be one of its members at large.

Each program committee and agency shall designate its member each year at the last meeting of the committee or board before the meeting of General Assembly. The chief administrative officers of the program committees and agencies may attend any meeting of the Administrative Committee. They shall be entitled to the privilege of the floor but shall not have a vote and must be excluded when an executive session is called.

### **ARTICLE VI. PROGRAM COMMITTEES**

#### **6-1. The Committee for Christian Education and Publications.**

The affairs of the Church in the areas of Christian education and publications are assigned to the Committee for Christian Education and Publications, whose duties and authority shall be designated by the General Assembly.



## APPENDICES

### **6-2. The Committee on Mission to North America.**

The affairs of the Church involved in its extension in the United States and Canada are assigned to the Committee on Mission to North America, whose duties and authority shall be designated by the General Assembly.

### **6-3. The Committee on Mission to the World.**

The affairs of the Church in the area of world missions outside of the United States and Canada are assigned to the Committee on Mission to the World, whose duties and authority shall be designated by the General Assembly.

## **ARTICLE VII. SPECIAL COMMITTEES**

### **7-1. Interchurch Relations Committee.**

There shall be an Interchurch Relations Committee composed of three teaching elders and three ruling elders who may serve two consecutive, three-year terms of office. There shall be a ruling elder and a teaching elder to serve as alternates.

The committee shall serve as liaison between the Presbyterian Church in America and other denominations and church councils as approved by the Assembly.

### **7-2. Committee on Constitutional Business.**

There shall be a Committee on Constitutional Business composed of eight members divided into four classes of two members each serving four-year terms. Each class shall be composed of one teaching elder and one ruling elder. There shall be one teaching elder and one ruling elder to serve as alternates.

The Committee on Constitutional Business shall, between the General Assembly meetings:

- (1) Function as advisor to the Stated Clerk when requested by him. Such advice shall be for information only and without binding authority and shall not be reported to the General Assembly.
- (2) Receive from the Stated Clerk all non-judicial references submitted by presbyteries under *BCO* 41-1 and 41-4, and, if it accedes to the request, give its advice to the presbytery sending the non-judicial reference. Such advice shall be for information only and without binding authority or precedent but shall be included as a part of the annual report of the Stated Clerk to the General Assembly.

The Committee on Constitutional Business shall, during the General Assembly meetings:

- (1) Advise the General Assembly of the effect of any proposed amendment to the constitution (including but not limited to overtures requesting amendment submitted under *RAO* 10-5 and 10-6). Such advice to the General Assembly shall be given at the time the proposed amendment is submitted for action.
- (2) Report directly to the General Assembly on all constitutional inquiries submitted to it by the General Assembly.

The committee shall not be separately funded but administratively will operate as subcommittee of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly.

### **7-3. Theological Examining Committee.**

In accordance with *BCO* 14-1, 14 there shall be a Theological Examining Committee composed of three teaching elders and three ruling elders of three classes of

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

two men each. There shall also be one teaching elder and one ruling elder as alternates to fill any vacancy that may occur during the year.

### 7-4. Nominating Committee.

The Assembly's Nominating Committee shall operate under the following guidelines:

- a. Every member of the Nominating Committee should make a reasonable effort to attend the next General Assembly.
- b. The Nominating Committee should be reminded of paragraph *BCO* 14-1, 9 regarding proportionate representation wherever possible.
- c. No presbytery shall ordinarily be represented by more than one person nominated for any given Committee. This includes alternates.
- d. A typed biographical form must accompany each name submitted to the Nominating Committee. All nominees should be contacted by their Presbyteries to ascertain their availability and willingness to serve prior to submission of names to General Assembly's Nominating Committee.
- e. Presbyteries should send names of nominees on forms to the Stated Clerk's office no later than four months prior to the General Assembly. The Stated Clerk will then make the forms available to the Convener of the Nominating Committee.
- f. A list of members, by Presbytery currently serving on the Permanent Committees should be furnished to the Convener of the Nominating Committee by the Stated Clerk. The Directory of the current Assembly Committees should indicate the Presbytery of each committee member.
- g. "In addition to the new nominees from Presbyteries, alternates not assuming any vacancies during a year will be automatically considered by the Nominating Committee as candidates for nomination to that same committee..." (*BCO* 14-1, 11)
- h. The committee shall present its nominations to the Assembly through the commissioner's Handbook or Supplement. This presentation shall include a brief statement regarding each nominee.
- i. Additional nominations may be made in writing on forms supplied by the Stated Clerk, which shall include consent of the nominee to serve, if elected, and a brief statement regarding the nominee. The nominee is to give consent to only one nomination. The deadlines for these nominations is the close of the afternoon session of the second day of the Assembly. The Clerk's office shall issue a supplement to the Assembly's Nominating Committee report during the third day's business sessions.
- j. The time for the election shall be docketed as a special order. Only those commissioners present or on the floor of the Assembly shall be eligible to vote. The voting procedures may be conducted either by voice vote or by standing vote, or by use of ballots as determined by the General Assembly.
- k. In the event of the resignation of any member of an Assembly elected committee or agency, such resignation should be presented to the Office of the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly. The Stated Clerk, shall, after consultation with the Chairman of the respective committee or board, be authorized to accept such resignation on behalf of the Assembly. He is to report such actions to the next General Assembly, and arrange for the

## APPENDICES

nomination of a replacement by the Assembly's Nominating Committee, where such replacement is appropriate.

### **7-5. Committee on Review of Presbytery Records.**

- a. The Committee on Review of Presbytery Records shall be comprised of one representative from each presbytery elected by the Presbytery in the manner set forth in *BCO* 14-1, 11 for the election of the Nominating Committee. A person who is serving as a member of or on the staff of one of the permanent or special committees, or boards of the General Assembly shall be eligible to serve on this committee.
- b. The Committee shall be scheduled to meet prior to the opening session of the Assembly, usually at the same time during which the Committees of Commissioners shall be meeting.
- c. A chairman and vice-chairman for the following year shall be elected by the committee from members who shall be serving the second year of their term.

## **ARTICLE VIII. AD INTERIM COMMITTEES**

**8-1.** The Assembly may elect or appoint ad interim or study committees of a temporary character to handle particular matters of business as designated by the Assembly.

**8-2.** Only two (2) ad interim study committees may be appointed or continued in any given year, (with no committee continuing with undesignated Administrative Committee funding beyond the third year of its inception and no more than two (2) committees existing in any one (1) year), and any additional committees would have to be approved by a two-thirds vote of commissioners, with financing provided from outside the Administrative Committee budget.

**8-3.** The total number of committee members per committee is not to exceed seven (7) members. Each committee's appointment and/or extension must be ratified by a majority vote of the commissioners.

**8-4.** All ad interim and study committees shall be considered by the General Assembly for appointment or extension at the time during the General Assembly docket of the **Administrative Committee's report** so that **due consideration** be given as to their priority and their effect on the budgets.

## **ARTICLE IX. THE ASSEMBLY ARRANGEMENTS**

**9-1.** There shall be a General Assembly Local Arrangements Committee, which shall function under the Administrative Committee. Final approval of all decisions regarding the Assembly shall rest in the Administrative Committee. The Assembly's Administrative Committee and the Local Arrangements Committee shall operate under a Manual approved by the Administrative Committee.

- 9-2.** The Local Arrangements Committee shall be composed of the following:
- a. The Chairman of the Local Arrangements Committee, who is appointed by the host presbytery.
  - b. The Treasurer of the local committee

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- c. Other members of the local committee as set forth in the General Assembly Arrangements Manual.
- d. The Stated Clerk of the General Assembly.
- e. The Business Administrator of the Administrative Committee.

**9-3** Worship services shall be included as approved by the Assembly. The Administrative Committee must approve any non-PCA speaker.

**9-4** The Administrative Committee shall set a suitable registration fee, subject to the approval of the General Assembly.

**9-5** The Administrative Committee must approve any non-PCA exhibitors in accordance with the following:

**Guidelines for Displays at the Assembly.**

Subject to space available, priorities for exhibitors will be as follows:

- a. Committees of the Presbyterian Church in America, including agencies or institutions with which they have formally, through their minutes, established a working relationship.
- b. Agencies or institutions with which the General Assembly, through its minutes has established a working relationship.
- c. Agencies and institutions which in the opinion of the Committee have objectives, policies, or programs in general conformity with those of the Presbyterian Church in America.
- d. A disclaimer statement should be printed in the General Assembly Docket distributed to all commissioners, stating in effect that permission granted to place an exhibit does not mean the Presbyterian Church in America necessarily fully endorses the exhibitor's product, services, or objectives. These guidelines are to serve as the ordinary guidelines. If the Administrative Committee feels that an exception must be made, it has the authority to do so, and is to report such actions and the reasons to the next Assembly.

## ARTICLE X. COMMUNICATIONS AND OVERTURES

**10-1** A communication to the General Assembly is formal correspondence received by the Stated Clerk from other churches, from interchurch agencies to which this Church may be related, from committees of this Church on matters which can not be included in regular reports, and from organized bodies outside the Church proper having business with the General Assembly.

**10-2** Ordinarily, communications from individuals shall not be received by the General Assembly, unless they originate with persons who have no other access to the Assembly. If the Assembly desires to receive and consider any such communications, other than as information, the Stated Clerk shall recommend reference to the proper Assembly committee. Letters, telegrams, or telephone calls from communicants or congregations of the Presbyterian Church in America are not proper communications, and are not to be received by the Assembly.

**10-3** The Stated Clerk shall recommend to the Assembly reference for all proper communications.

## APPENDICES

**10-4** An overture ordinarily is the request of a presbytery for action by the General Assembly upon a specific matter.

**10-5** Upon receipt the Stated Clerk shall refer to the Committee on Constitutional Business all overtures requesting amendment of the *Book of Church Order*. Upon receipt the Stated Clerk shall forward all overtures concerning presbytery boundaries or a new presbytery to the Subcommittee on Boundaries appointed by and under the jurisdiction of the Assembly's permanent Committee on Mission to North America which shall report to the Permanent Committee and shall report to the Assembly through the Committee of Commissioners on Mission to North America. All other overtures shall be referred by the Clerk to the appropriate Committee of Commissioners. All overtures shall be printed in the *Handbook* with reference for consideration indicated.

**10-6** All overtures requiring references to the Committee on Constitutional Business shall be delivered by at least sixty (60) days prior to the opening of the General Assembly to the Stated Clerk in order to be referred to the committee. No overture requiring reference to the permanent committee on Constitutional Business received later than sixty (60) days prior to the opening of the General Assembly by the Stated Clerk shall be referred or considered by the General Assembly convening in that year.

**10-7** All other overtures shall be delivered to the Stated Clerk at least ninety (90) days prior to the opening of the General Assembly in order to be included in the *Handbook* for the next meeting of the General Assembly.

**10-8.** Overtures received after the *Handbook* is printed, and at least one (1) month (31 days) prior to the opening of the General Assembly shall be reported to the Assembly by the Stated Clerk, together with reference.

**10-9.** No overtures received by the Stated Clerk less than one month prior to the opening of the meeting of the General Assembly shall be referred to or considered by the General Assembly convening in that year. No bill or overture shall be accepted for consideration upon the floor of General Assembly subsequent to the final published date set by the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly for publication of the commissioner's *Handbook* for the General Assembly unless said matter receive two-thirds vote of the assembled commissioners.

**10-10.** No overture will be considered by the General Assembly until it first has been presented to a presbytery. If approved by the presbytery, it will come before the Assembly as the overture of that court. An overture requested by an individual communicant, a teaching elder, or a session, but rejected by the presbytery, may be presented to the Assembly, provided the fact that it was rejected by the presbytery is clearly stated with the overture.

**10-11.** All communications or overtures which propose or request that General Assembly appoint a study committee for any purpose shall contain as a part of the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

request or proposal a statement of the maximum amount to be budgeted for the study committee. (See RAO VIII.)

### ARTICLE XI. REPORTS TO THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

**11-1** The permanent committees, agencies, special committees and Ad Interim committees of the Assembly shall make annual reports, which shall be transmitted to the Stated Clerk by at least ninety (90) days prior to the opening of the General Assembly. These reports shall be referred to the proper committee of commissioners by the Stated Clerk, except that Nominations Committee, Committee on Review of Presbytery Records, Standing Judicial Commission and Ad-Interim committees shall report directly to the General Assembly.

**11-2.** Informational presentation of some special aspects of the work reported by a Committee of Commissioners shall be limited to five minutes.

**11-3.** All other business brought to the General Assembly shall ordinarily be referred to a Committee of Commissioners except reports of the Standing Judicial Commission, the Committee on Constitutional Business, the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records, the Nominating Committee, and Ad Interim Committees, which shall report directly to the Assembly.

### ARTICLE XII. NEW BUSINESS

**12-1.** Any matter presented in any form which has not been received by the Stated Clerk prior to the opening of the General Assembly shall be treated as new business.

**12-2.** New business must be presented to the Assembly before the close of the second day of business.

**12-3.** The Committee on Constitutional Business shall be available as a reference committee, to assist the Clerk in referring all new business coming to the Assembly.

**12-4.** The appropriate committee shall receive and consider all such references, deliberate and report to the Assembly in compliance with the directions of these Rules.

**12-5.** All matters introduced as new business, if received, and touching on constitutional matters, including requested rulings by the Moderator on questions of order involving constitutional questions, shall be referred in writing to the Committee on Constitutional Business for consideration.

**12-6.** The Committee on Constitutional Business shall consider each such constitutional matter referred to it, and make recommendation directly to the Assembly.

### ARTICLE XIII. COMMITTEE OF COMMISSIONERS

**13-1.** All business shall ordinarily come to the floor of the Assembly for final action through Committees of Commissioners, except reports of the Standing Judicial Commission, the Committee on Constitutional Business, the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records, the Nominating Committee, and Ad Interim Committees, which shall report directly to the Assembly.

## APPENDICES

The following Committees of Commissioners shall handle the matters indicated:

### Reports of Overtures, Committees, Resolutions or Communications

1. Administration	Permanent Comm.	Touching Administrative matters
2. Bills and Overtures	Of General nature	
3. Christian Education and Publications	Permanent Comm.	Touching Christian Education Publications
4. Covenant College	Trustees	Touching Covenant College
5. Covenant Seminary	Trustees	Touching Covenant Seminary
6. Insurance & Annuities	Trustees	Touching insurance & annuities
7. Interchurch Relations	Permanent Comm.	Touching comity, cooperation relations to other churches
8. Investor's Fund	Trustees	Touching Investor's Fund
9. Mission to North America	Permanent Comm.	Touching home missions
10. Mission to the World	Permanent Comm.	Touching world missions
11. PCA Foundation	Trustees	Touching PCA Foundation
12. Ridge Haven	Directors	Touching Ridge Haven

**13-2.** Each Presbytery shall, prior to the meeting of the Assembly, elect one of its commissioners to each of the Committees of Commissioners, dividing them as to ruling and teaching elders by a formula established by the Stated Clerk. In the event that Presbytery does not have sufficient teaching elders to supply the Committees thus assigned, the presbytery may, at its own discretion, elect ruling elders to these committees. In the event that Presbytery is not able to supply members for all the committees, the Presbytery may select the committees to which they wish to appoint representatives. Commissioners serving on permanent committees or sub-committees of the Assembly or the staffs thereof are not eligible to serve on any Committees of Commissioners.

**13-3.** The Conveners of the committees shall be designated by the Moderator.

**13-4.** The committee may be scheduled to meet prior to the opening session of the Assembly to handle the business referred by the Stated Clerk, as published in the Handbook.

**13-5.** The Committee of Commissioners shall proceed as follows:

- a. At the proper time each committee shall assemble in its assigned room, elect a chairman and a secretary, review material in hand, appoint sub-committees as may be necessary, and begin its work.
- b. Each committee shall be available to reconvene to consider additional references that may come from the floor of the Assembly.
- c. Meetings of a Committee of Commissioners shall ordinarily be open to the public as non-participating visitors, to the extent made possible by the physical facilities of the available meeting room. If such visitors desire the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

committee to consider a proposal on some item of business that is before the committee, this must be presented in writing.

- d. No new items of business, not referred to the Committee by the Assembly, may be considered by the Committee.
- e. The Chairman and representatives of the permanent committee and agencies, and the Coordinator and appropriate staff members shall be available for consultation with the Committee of Commissioners reviewing their work.
- f. After the Committee of Commissioners has received input from the permanent committee, coordinator, staff members and visitors, it should then go into executive session as it frames and adopts its report to the General Assembly. It must be in executive session when it actually adopts the report.
- g. The Committee of Commissioners may invite other persons for consultative purposes, when this is felt necessary to the Committee's performance of its business.

**13-6.** The report of the Committee of Commissioners shall be brief and concise. It shall include the following:

- a. A list of all items referred to and considered by the Committee.
- b. A statement of the issues discussed.
- c. A report of all recommendations contained in an agency or committee report under consideration. (If any of the recommendations contained in a report were not approved, this shall be reported with reasons. New recommendations may be added, with words of explanation. Amendments to original recommendations shall be reported and explained.)
- d. A Statement of the division of the vote on every official recommendation made to or by the Committee.
- e. Reference to overtures by number with brief statement of content and recommended answer.
- f. Reference to communications by number with brief statement of content and recommended answer.
- g. Only such portions of narrative sections of the printed reports as are necessary to make the report of the Committee of Commissioners intelligible.
- h. A note that the audit of the reporting Committee has been received and that the Committee is taking any necessary action on any recommendation of its audits.
- i. Where a study committee is proposed in any communication or overture, a statement of the maximum amount is to be budgeted for the study committee.

**13-7.** The Chairman of the permanent committee or his designated representative shall be granted the privilege of the floor of the Assembly by the Chairman of the Committee of Commissioners to present the report of the permanent committee to the Assembly. No report printed in the Handbook shall be read in full to the Assembly. The Chairman of the Committee of Commissioners shall present the recommendations of the Committee of Commissioners to the Assembly. The Chairman of the permanent committee or his designated representative shall have the privilege of defending the position of the permanent committee on any recommendations in which the Committee of Commissioners differ from the permanent committee's report.



## APPENDICES

**13-8.** Minutes of the permanent committee shall be submitted to the Committee of Commissioners for review. Copies of the Minutes shall be sent by the Stated Clerk to the members of Committees of Commissioners one month prior to the opening of the General Assembly.

**13-9.** Informational presentation of some special aspects of the work reported by a Committee of Commissioners shall be limited to five minutes.

**13-10.** Any recommendation affecting the Budget of the Assembly or the Coordination of the program of the church shall be referred to the Committee of Commissioners on Administration.

**13-11.** The completed report of a Committee of Commissioners shall contain the full text of the report and shall be handled as follows:

- a. Typed, double spaced, original by Assembly stenographers.
- b. Proofread and signed by the Chairman of the Committee; and then delivered to the Stated Clerk when duplicated copies are available for the commissioners.
- c. Docketed by the Program Committee (Moderator, Stated Clerk) for consideration by the Assembly.
- d. Presented to the Assembly by the Chairman or his designate, by reading through the entire text of the report from the original typed copy. The Assembly may waive the reading of any particular report by a majority vote of the commissioners present and voting. Any change ordered by the Assembly shall be noted and included by the Chairman with the assistance of the Stated Clerk on the original copy.
- e. The report, as adopted by the Assembly, shall be filed with the Recording Clerk for the permanent record.

**13-12.** No partial report of a Committee of Commissioners shall be presented without the consent of the Assembly.

**13-13. Guidelines for Keeping Minutes of Permanent Committees of the General Assembly**

- a. The Minutes of Assembly Committees should be kept either in a lock-type record book, with numbered pages, or be printed, mimeographed, or otherwise reproduced.
- b. The Minutes should be typewritten or printed, or reproduced from typewritten masters, and should be neat and legible.
- c. The opening paragraphs of the Minutes should contain the following information (which need not, however, be divided into numbered or separate items):
  1. The kind of meeting: regular, called, adjourned regular, or adjourned called;
  2. The name of the Committee;
  3. The date and time of the meeting, and the place;
  4. The name of the Chairman, and if someone other than the regular Secretary served as a Clerk Pro-tem, his name should be indicated;

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

5. If the Minutes of the previous meeting were not approved at that meeting, a record of their having been read and approved by this session should be indicated, including the date of the Minutes being so approved.
  6. The names of those present at the meeting should be recorded, indicating whether they were teaching elders or ruling elders, and the presbytery represented in each case. The names of alternate ruling elders and their respective churches should also be included, and the names of visitors should be included.
- d. The contents of the Minutes should include the following items:
1. The names of persons leading in opening and closing prayers at all sessions;
  2. In the event of a called meeting, the portion of the call stating the purpose of the meeting should be recorded verbatim in the Minutes;
  3. The Minutes should record the actions of the committee, including all motions adopted and business transacted, together with such additional information as the Committee deems desirable for historical purposes. Ordinarily in Church Courts motions that are lost are not included in the record unless an affirmative vote for the lost motion is recorded, in which case the lost motion must be shown. Each main motion should normally be recorded in a separate paragraph. Subsidiary and procedural motions may be recorded in the same paragraph with the main motion to which they pertain. Main motions may be recorded in the same paragraph, if they are closely related and pertain to the same item of business.
- e. It may be desirable to number these paragraphs consecutively, and to give a title over each paragraph indicating succinctly the content of business included. This is not mandatory, but is desirable for the later reading of the Minutes. For historical purposes, some notes as to the extent and kind of debate may be included, but Minutes should never reflect the secretary's opinion, favorable or otherwise, on anything said or done.
- f. The Minutes of the Committees should appear in the Minute book in the order in which the meetings occur. When a previous action of the Committee is cited, the date should be given, and the volume and page and paragraph number.
- g. The Minutes of each meeting should be signed by the Secretary.
- h. The Coordinator, if there be one, and if not, the Chairman, shall be responsible for the custody of the Minutes of the Committee. He is responsible for the presentation to the General Assembly for approval of all Minutes of the Committee which have been approved by the Committee not previously approved by the General Assembly. All other Minutes of the Committee to which specific reference is made in the Minutes submitted to the General Assembly for approval shall be submitted for purposes of information.
- i. A copy of the **Guidelines for Keeping Committee Minutes** should be kept with the Minutes of the Committee.
- j. An up-to-date copy of the bylaws and manual of the Committee, if such exist, should be kept with the Minutes.

## APPENDICES

### 13-14. Guidelines for Examining Committee Minutes.

- a. Minutes of Assembly Committees shall be examined for conformity to:
  1. The primary and secondary standards of the Church, as to substance of the actions recorded;
  2. The Assembly's Guidelines for Keeping Minutes of Permanent Committees of the General Assembly, as to form, structure, and minimum content, and
  3. Appropriate standards as to the use of the English language.
- b. Each set of committee Minutes should be read by at least two members of the Committee of Commissioners;
- c. The committee may divide its work so that two or more members examine them primarily as to form, and two or more members may examine them primarily as to substance.
- d. The findings of the committee with respect to the Minutes of each permanent committee shall be reported under the following categories as appropriate:
  1. **Notations:** Typographical errors, misspellings, improper punctuation, non-prejudicial statements of fact, etc., may be reported under this category. Also failures to provide proper or sufficient information or identification, prejudicial misstatements of fact, etc., may be reported under this category.
  2. **Exceptions:** Violations of the Assembly's Guidelines for Keeping Minutes of Permanent Committees of the General Assembly and actions which in substance appear not to conform to the Standards of the Presbyterian Church in America, or to be out of accord with the deliverances of the General Assembly, should be reported under this category.
- e. The Committee shall prepare a report concerning the Minutes of the permanent committee. The filling out of a form, designed for the purpose for each Committee, shall meet the requirement for this section. After action by the Assembly, one copy of the report shall be sent by the Stated Clerk to the permanent committee. A second copy shall be retained by the Stated Clerk in a permanent file. A third copy shall be kept in the records of the Committee, which shall be maintained in a suitable binder. The custody of the records of the committee shall be the responsibility of the Stated Clerk in the period between the General Assemblies.
- f. Notations and exceptions in the Committee's reports shall be disposed of as follows:
  1. Notations shall normally be sent to the Committees by the Stated Clerk without being read before the General Assembly or recorded in its Minutes.
  2. Exceptions shall be read before the Assembly, recorded in its Minutes, and disposed of as the Assembly determines.
  3. The Assembly shall adopt an appropriate motion with respect to the Minutes of each Permanent Committee, the following being examples:
    - a. That the Minutes of the Committee of \_\_\_\_\_ be approved without exception (show dates of Minutes being approved);
    - b. That the Minutes of the Committee of \_\_\_\_\_ be approved with the exceptions noted (show dates of Minutes being approved).

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

- g. The permanent committee shall take note in their minutes of exceptions taken by the Assembly, together with the corrections or explanations adopted by the committee to rectify them. Committees shall advise the next General Assembly of the disposition they have made of the exceptions.
- h. Reports to the Assembly from the permanent committees concerning disposition of exceptions taken by the past Assembly shall normally be referred to the committee.

### ARTICLE XIV. REVIEW OF PRESBYTERY RECORDS.

**14-1.** It is the right and the duty of the General Assembly to review, at least once a year, the records of the presbyteries of the Presbyterian Church in America (*BCO* 40-1).

The operation of this committee shall be considered a General Assembly expense.

**14-2.** The Committee shall assemble at the proper time in its assigned room, elect a secretary, and, if desired, someone to give the report, appoint such sub-committees as may be necessary, and begin its work in accordance with *BCO* 40-2 to 40-6, and set forth in this chapter.

**14-3.** The chairman of the Committee, or a member of the Committee elected for the purpose, shall present the report of the Committee to the Assembly.

**14-4.** The report of the Committee shall be concise. It shall include the following:

- a. A list of the Minutes, by Presbyteries, received by the Committee.
- b. A list of the Presbyteries which have not submitted Minutes, if any.
- c. A report concerning the Minutes of each Presbytery.
- d. Any recommendation to the Assembly. A statement of the division of the vote on each recommendation shall be included. Any recommendation which may affect the budget of the Assembly shall be referred to the Committee of Commissioners on Administration.
- e. A list of members present.

**14-5.** The completed report of the Committee shall be prepared and handled in the same manner as reports of the Committees of Commissioners as set forth in *RAO* 13-11.

**14-6.** No partial report of the Committee shall be presented without the consent of the Assembly.

**14-7.** Guidelines for the submission and distribution of the Minutes of Presbyteries.

- a. The Stated Clerk of each presbytery is to provide the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly with three (3) copies of all minutes that are to be reviewed and the data required by 14-10, h.
- b. The minutes that are to be reviewed shall ordinarily include the unreviewed approved minutes of all presbytery meetings that have been held up to seventy-five days prior to the opening of the General Assembly (see *BCO* 40-1).

## APPENDICES

- c. The minutes that are to be reviewed shall be mailed to the office of the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly not less than sixty (60) days prior to the opening of the Assembly.
- d. The Stated Clerk of the General Assembly, in consultation with the Chairman of the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records, is to distribute copies of the minutes to the members of the Committee no later than thirty (30) days prior to the opening of the Assembly in such a manner that at least two members of the Committee shall read the minutes of each Presbytery.
- e. The members of the Committee are to read the minutes assigned to them, to prepare a report concerning each set of minutes utilizing a form provided by the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly, and to report at the time of the meeting of the Committee.

**14-8.** The Stated Clerks of the presbyteries, or their representatives, should be prepared to meet with the Committee to answer questions and to clarify any possible discrepancy. Any discrepancy that is an exception of substance (see RAO 14-9, c, 3) shall always be reported to the Assembly. Exceptions of form shall be forwarded to the presbyteries without being read to the Assembly. In such cases, the committee should make every reasonable effort to consult with the clerk of the presbytery (or his designate) before finalizing the report to the General Assembly.

### **14-9. Guidelines for Examining Presbytery Minutes**

- a. Presbytery Minutes shall be examined for conformity to:
  1. the primary and secondary standards of the Church, as to substance of the actions recorded (see *BCO* 40-2).
  2. the Assembly's **Guidelines for Keeping Presbytery Minutes**, as to form, structure, and minimum content, and
  3. appropriate standards as to the use of the English language.
- b. Each set of Presbytery Minutes should be read by at least two members of the Committee on Review of Presbytery Records.
- c. The findings of the Committee with respect to the Minutes of each Presbytery shall be reported under the following categories as appropriate:
  1. **Notations:** Typographical errors, misspellings, improper punctuation, non-prejudicial statements of fact, and other minor variation in form, may be reported under this category. Also failures to provide proper or sufficient information or identification, prejudicial misstatements of fact, etc., may be reported under this category.
  2. **Exceptions of Form:** Violations of the Assembly's **Guidelines for Keeping Presbytery Minutes**, rules of order, etc. should be reported under this category. These exceptions shall be sent to the stated clerks of presbyteries who do not have to respond in writing to the Assembly to this category of exception.

If corrections in form are not reflected in subsequent minutes, they shall become exceptions of substance. These exceptions shall also be sent to the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly so he may aid presbyteries in matters of form. He shall also include copies of exceptions of form in the Minutes he sends to Review of Presbytery Records.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

3. **Exceptions of Substance:** Apparent violations of the Constitution of the Presbyterian Church in America, actions out of accord with the deliverances of the General Assembly, matters of impropriety and important delinquencies and significant violations of the RAO should be reported under this category. The Stated Clerk shall also include copies of exceptions of substance in the Minutes he sends to Review of Presbytery Records.
- d. The Committee shall prepare a report concerning the Minutes of each Presbytery. The filling out of a form, designed for the purpose and approved by the Assembly shall meet the requirement of this section. After action by the Assembly, the original shall be retained by the Stated Clerk in a permanent file, one copy shall be sent by the Stated Clerk to the particular presbytery and a second shall be kept in the records of the Committee, which shall be maintained in a suitable binder, and shall be retained by the Stated Clerk between Assemblies.
- e. Notations and exceptions in the Committee's reports shall be disposed of as follows:
  1. Notations shall normally be sent to the Presbyteries by the Stated Clerk without being read before the General Assembly or recorded in its Minutes.
  2. Exceptions of form shall be sent to the stated clerks of presbyteries by the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly without being read to the Assembly or recorded in its minutes. The exceptions of form shall include violations of guidelines in RAO 14-10, c, f, and g.
  3. Exceptions of substance shall be read before the Assembly, and disposed of as the Assembly determines and if adopted printed by the Assembly in its minutes.
  4. That the minutes of the Presbytery be approved without exception or:  
(a.) with exceptions of form; and (b.) with exceptions of substance as noted.
- f. The Presbyteries shall take note in their Minutes of exceptions taken by the Assembly, together with the corrections or explanations adopted by the Presbytery to rectify them. Presbyteries shall advise the next General Assembly of the disposition they have made of the exceptions (together with specific reference to Presbytery's action as recorded in its Minutes) in this manner:
  1. Presbytery agrees with the exceptions and corrects its record (if possible), corrects its actions (if possible) and promises to be more careful in the future. Or,
  2. Presbytery respectfully disagrees with the exception, states its grounds and refers the exception back to the Assembly for action.
- g. Reports to the Assembly from the Presbyteries concerning disposition of exceptions taken by the past Assembly shall normally be referred to the Committee without being read before the Assembly. The Committee shall examine such reports and shall report to the Assembly its judgment as to the suitability of the disposition that has been made. Committees shall also present recommendations concerning all exceptions taken by previous Assemblies or Committees that have not been disposed of suitably.

## APPENDICES

### 14-10. Guidelines for Keeping Presbytery Minutes

- a. The Minutes of Presbytery should be kept in a lock-type record book or if printed, be bound. In either case, the pages shall be numbered.
- b. The Minutes should be neat and legible and shall be printed, typewritten or reproduced from typewritten masters.
- c. The opening paragraphs of the Minutes should contain the following information (which need not, however, be divided into numbered or separate items):
  1. The kind of meeting: stated, called, adjourned stated, or adjourned called;
  2. The name of the Presbytery;
  3. The date and time of the meeting, and the place;
  4. The name of the Moderator, and if someone other than the regular Stated Clerk served as a Clerk Pro-tem, his name should be indicated.
  5. If the Minutes of the previous meeting were not approved at that meeting, a record of their having been read and approved by this session should be indicated, including the date of the Minutes being so approved;
  6. The names of those present at the meeting should be recorded, indicating whether they were teaching elders, or ruling elders, and the church represented in each case. The names of alternate ruling elders and their respective churches should also be included, and the names of visitors should be included.
  7. Excuses for teaching elders and churches, and unexcused teaching elders and churches should be noted.
- d. The contents of the Minutes should include the following items:
  1. The names of persons leading in opening and closing prayers at all sessions.
  2. In the event of a called meeting, the portion of the call stating the purpose of the meeting should be recorded verbatim in the Minutes.
  3. The Minutes should record the actions of the Presbytery, including all motions adopted and business transacted, together with such additional information as the Presbytery deems desirable for historical purposes. Ordinarily in Church Courts motions that are lost are not included in the record, unless an affirmative vote for the lost motion is recorded, in which case the lost motion must be shown. Each main motion should normally be recorded in a separate paragraph. Subsidiary and procedural motions may be recorded in the same paragraph with the main motion to which they pertain. Main motions may be recorded in the same paragraph if they are closely related and pertain to the same item of business. It may be desirable to number these paragraphs consecutively, and to give a title over each paragraph indicating succinctly the content of business included. This is not mandatory, but is desirable for the later reading of the Minutes. For historical purposes, some note as to the extent of and kind of debate may be included, but Minutes should never reflect the clerk's opinion, favorable or otherwise, on anything said or done.
- e. All points of order and appeals, whether sustained or lost, together with the reasons given by the Chair for his ruling, should be included. This is for the

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

sake of any case that may be carried to a higher court. The complete record of the Presbytery's actions should be recorded for this purpose.

- f. Additional guidelines, adapted from Robert's Rules of Order:
  - 1. The names of the mover and the seconder of a motion should not be entered into the Minutes unless ordered by the Presbytery.
  - 2. When a count has been ordered, or the vote is by ballot, the number of votes on each side should be entered.
  - 3. The proceedings of a committee of the whole should not be entered in the Minutes, but the fact that the assembly went into the committee as a whole, and the committee report should be recorded.
  - 4. When a question is considered informally, the same information should be recorded as under the regular rules, since the only formality in the proceedings is in the debate.
  - 5. Committee reports that are adopted by the Presbytery may be handled in either of two ways. They may be entered directly into the record at the time when they are presented, and it should be reflected as the report of a committee adopted by the Presbytery. The other way by which they may be handled is to give the report as an appendix, to which reference is made by motion in the body of the Minutes. Reports and other matters that are received as information should be retained by the Clerk of the Presbytery, but need not be printed with the Minutes, unless so directed by the Presbytery.
- g. The Minutes should be signed by the Clerk.
- h. At least once a year the Minutes of Presbytery should include, in addition to the Minutes themselves, the following items:
  - 1. A directory of the Presbytery, including a listing of all of the regular Committees of Presbytery.
  - 2. A roll of the Presbytery, including a list of all teaching elders, with their addresses; and of all churches, with the name and address of the Clerk of Session, and the address of the church.
  - 3. A list of all candidates under care of the Presbytery, including the addresses.
  - 4. A list of all licentiates of the Presbytery, including the addresses.
  - 5. An up-to-date copy of the Standing Rules of the Presbytery.
- i. The Stated Clerk of each Presbytery is responsible for the custody of the Minutes of the Presbytery. He is responsible for presenting to the General Assembly for its review all Minutes of the Presbytery which have been approved by the Presbytery and which have not been previously reviewed by the General Assembly. Minutes submitted must be photocopies from final corrected originals signed by the clerk. If a presbytery has its Minutes bound at regular intervals, Minutes of meetings which were held before the time set in RAO 14-7, b may be submitted as reproductions of the typewritten originals.
- j. The Minutes of the Presbytery should include a copy of the report from the Stated Clerk of the General Assembly concerning the Minutes reviewed by the Assembly.



## APPENDICES

### ARTICLE XV. STANDING JUDICIAL COMMISSION

**15-1.** There shall be a Standing Judicial Commission composed of twenty-four members in accordance with *BCO* 15-4. The Standing Judicial Commission shall have oversight of appeals, complaints and judicial references from lower courts. The Standing Judicial Commission will report directly to the General Assembly.

The Standing Judicial Commission shall not be separately funded but administratively will operate as a subcommittee of the Administrative Committee of General Assembly.

**15-2.** Any judicial reference, complaint or appeal to the General Assembly shall be assigned to the Standing Judicial Commission, which will, if the case is found in order, proceed to adjudicate the case.

**15-3.** The Standing Judicial Commission may appoint a judicial panel of not less than three of its members to hear the case in accordance with the provisions of the Rules of Discipline in the BCO and these Rules of Assembly Operation. Such judicial panels shall be composed of those qualified members of the Standing Judicial Commission who are geographically nearest to the case. Such a judicial panel shall propose a recommended decision(s) to the Standing Judicial Commission.

**15-4.** Proposed decision(s) of any judicial panel shall be circulated to the entire Standing Judicial Commission. It shall act upon the recommended decision(s) without further hearings unless a party to the case, or a commission member, requests a review of the case by the Standing Judicial Commission as a whole. The commission may or may not grant such a review; except such review must be granted when requested by a dissenting member of the panel or by at least four qualified members of the commission. If granted, such review shall be only on the record of the case; but the commission may allow oral arguments by the parties.

**15-5.** Judgments of the Standing Judicial Commission are binding on the parties until the approval or disapproval of the General Assembly, unless one-fourth or more of the Standing Judicial Commission members eligible and voting dissent. Any member of the Standing Judicial Commission may write a dissenting opinion which shall be presented to the General Assembly along with the Commission's report of the case.

**15-6.** Specific procedures for processing judicial references, appeals and complaints are found in a Manual for Standing Judicial Commission, a copy of which Manual together with any amendments thereto shall be mailed to the clerk of session of each church and to the stated clerk of each presbytery.

### ARTICLE XVI. ASSEMBLY EXPENSES

**16-1.** Each congregation of the denomination shall be encouraged each year to make a specific subscription donation to assist in defraying the expenses of the General Assembly, whether a commissioner is sent to the Assembly or not. Such subscription donation shall cover the registration for one representative from the congregation. All other commissioners shall be encouraged to make a similar donation. A copy of the *Minutes* and the *Handbook* will be sent to the donors and those paying the subscription donation/ registration fee without additional charge.

## MINUTES OF THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY

Churches are encouraged to make this annual donation, whether or not they send a commissioner to the Assembly. The General Assembly shall set the amount of the subscription donation/registration for the next General Assembly.

**16-2.** The expenses of the Recording Clerks of the General Assembly will be borne by the Assembly.

**16-3.** All other expenses of the General Assembly shall be divided between the four major Permanent Committees on the percentage basis of distributing undesignated gifts.

### ARTICLE XVII. PARLIAMENTARY PROCEDURE

**17-1.** Except as otherwise specifically provided in these Rules, Robert's Rules of Order, Newly Revised shall be the standard in parliamentary procedure.

**17-2.** The Chairman shall lead the Assembly in a brief prayer before making his report. The entire report of each Committee of Commissioners, including narrative, shall be read before any comment. The Assembly may waive the reading of any particular report by a majority vote of the commissioners present and voting.

When a minority of a Committee wishes to present a minority report, the member reporting for the minority shall have the privilege of presenting the minority report and moving it as a substitute for the portion of the majority report affected.

**17-3.** Each recommendation in each report must be read, considered, and acted upon separately.

- a. The Chairman moves the adoption, no second is necessary for a committee recommendation.
- b. The Moderator asks: Is there objection or question?
- c. Hearing no objection or question, the Moderator states: It is adopted. (The above procedure is known as the "Short Form of Voting.")
- d. When it is necessary to postpone action on the completion of a report for some subsequent action of the Assembly, such as the approval of the budgets, or other special items, the report shall be approved as a whole pending the completion of these other items. At the time that the other items come to the floor, only these matters may be considered by the Assembly, since the report as a whole will have already been adopted.

#### **17-4. Procedure in debating a question:**

- a. The Chairman or his designate may answer questions concerning the report addressed to him through the Moderator.
- b. The Chairman shall have an opportunity to make the final statement in debate.
- c. No Commissioner may speak on the same question more than once until all desiring to speak have done so.
- d. Debate on the main motion shall be limited to ten (10) minutes unless extended. When a main motion has been debated for ten (10) minutes, the Moderator shall put the question to the Assembly: "Does the Assembly desire to extend the time an additional five (5) minutes?" A simple majority will

## APPENDICES

decide the question. If the majority decides not to extend debate, the Moderator will call the question. If an amendment of a substitution is on the floor, the question of extending time on the main motion shall be repeated after the vote on the amendment or substitute. If time is extended, the question of extension will again be put every succeeding five (5) minutes until the motion is concluded. Each Commissioner shall be limited to three (3) minutes on the same question unless the Court by a simple majority grants additional time.

- e. Debate shall be free and open, with equal time being given to proponents and opponents in so far as possible.

### **17-5. Procedure for Receiving and Acting Upon the Reports of Judicial Commissions**

- a. The Chairman of the Judicial Commission (or a designated reporter), who shall in all cases have voted with the majority, shall read the judgment in the report of the commission which should include its findings, its judgment, and its minute explanatory, if there is such.
- b. The Chairman (or the designate), who shall in all cases have voted with the majority, shall recommend the approval of the judgment.
- c. The Moderator shall then present the question to approve or disapprove the judgment without question, debate or discussion (cf. *BCO 15-5*).
- d. Prior to the vote on the question, a commissioner may raise, by motion, a strictly constitutional issue. This is a debatable motion. The General Assembly may approve the motion and refer the constitutional issue to a study committee. The General Assembly shall then proceed according to the provisions of *BCO 15-5*.
- e. The Assembly shall vote on the recommendation.
- f. If the recommendation is adopted or approved, the minutes of the commission and its report shall be placed in the hands of the Stated Clerk of General Assembly, and the report entered upon the record of the court and handled in accordance to *BCO 15*. Any judgment required shall be carried out.

### **17-6. Special Provisions**

- a. The Assistants to the Stated Clerk shall have the privilege of the floor when requested by the Moderator to render some specific service to the court.
- b. All motions shall be presented in writing and read before being voted upon.

## **ARTICLE XVIII. AMENDMENT OR SUSPENSION OF RULES**

The Rules of Assembly Operations may be amended or suspended only by a two thirds vote of those voting which must also be a majority of the total enrollment of commissioners. A motion to amend is debatable. A motion to suspend is not debatable.



